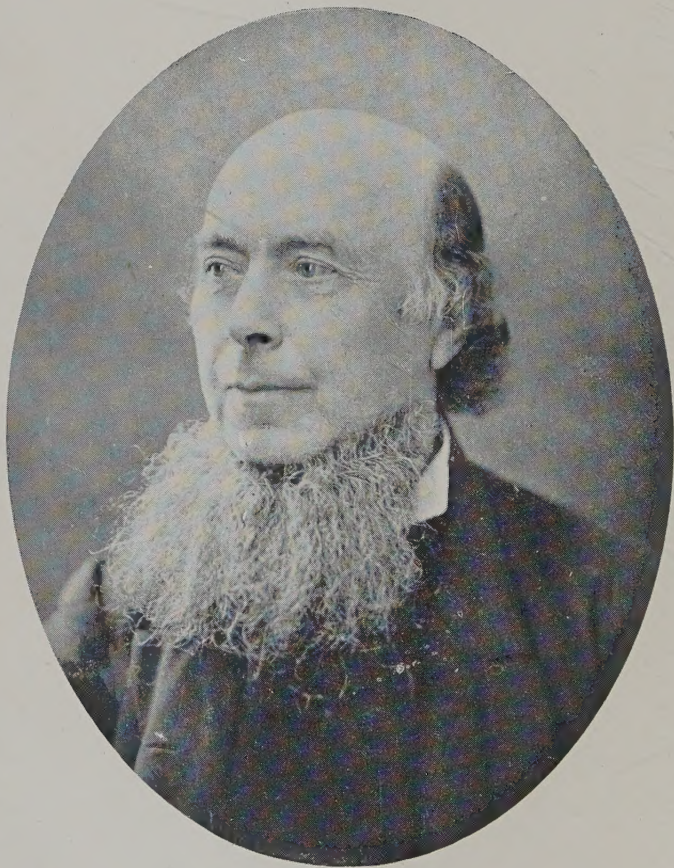




CHARLES CHINIQUY

1809 — 1899

FIFTY YEARS
IN THE
CHURCH OF ROME

FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME

The thrilling life story of Pastor
Chiniquy who was for twenty-five
years a Priest in the Roman
Catholic Church.

BY CHAS. CHINIQUY

FIRST PRINTED IN 1885

*Has been through numerous editions. The
present edition is issued in response to
widespread request for this intensely
interesting volume.*

THE PROTESTANT TRUTH SOCIETY (INC.)
184, FLEET STREET :: :: LONDON, E.C.4

FIFTY YEARS
IN THE
CHURCH OF ROME

The history of the movement for
the reformation of the Church of
Rome, from the time of the
Council of Trent to the present day.

BY JAMES CHURCHILL

WITH A PREFACE BY THE REV. J. H. WILSON

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY THE WICKLIFFE PRESS
of the Protestant Truth Society
WICKLIFFE AVENUE, 104 HENDON LANE
FINCHLEY, LONDON, N.3

I DEDICATE THIS BOOK

(I.) TO THE LIBERTY-LOVING PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES.

AMERICANS ! You are sleeping on a volcano, and you do not suspect it ! You are pressing on your bosom a viper which will bite you to death, and you do not know it.

Read this book, and you will see that Rome is the most implacable and deadly enemy of your schools, your institutions, your so dearly-bought rights and liberties.

Read this book, and you will not only understand that it is to Rome you owe the rivers of blood and the unspeakable horrors of the civil war ; but you will also learn that Romanism and Liberty cannot live on the same ground.

Read this book, and you will not only see that Abraham Lincoln was murdered by Rome, but you will learn that Romanism, under the mask of religion, is nothing but a permanent political conspiracy against all the most sacred rights of man and the most holy laws of God.

In these pages you will not learn to hate Roman Catholics. No ! But you will learn to be more than ever watchful in guarding the precious treasures of Freedom bestowed upon you by your fathers.

(II.) TO ALL FAITHFUL MINISTERS OF THE GOSPEL.

MINISTERS of the Gospel ! Rome is the great danger ahead for the Church of Christ, and you do not understand it. The atmosphere of light, honesty, truth, and holiness in which you are born, makes it almost impossible for you to realise the dark mysteries of idolatry, immorality, degrading slavery, hatred of the Word of God, concealed behind the walls of that modern Babylon. You are too honest to suspect them ; and your precious time is too much taken by the sacred duties of your ministry, to study the long labyrinth of argumentations which form the bulk of controversial books. Besides that, the majority of the books of controversy against Rome are of such a dry character, that though many begin to read them, very few have the courage to go to the end. The consequence is an ignorance of Romanism which becomes more and more deplorable and fatal every day.

It is that ignorance which paralyses the arm of the Church of Christ, and makes the glorious word "Protestant" senseless, almost a dead word. For who does really protest against Rome to-day ?—where are those who sound the trumpet of alarm ?

Modern Protestants have not only forgotten what Rome was, what she is, and what she will ever be: the most irreconcilable and powerful enemy of the Gospel of Christ; but they consider her almost as a branch of the Church whose corner-stone is Christ.

Faithful minister of the Gospel! I present you this book that you may know that the Church of Rome, who shed the blood of your forefathers, is still at work to-day at your very doors. Read it, and you will see the inside life of Popery with the exactness of photography.

The superstitions, the ridiculous and humiliating practices, the secret and mental agonies of the monks, the nuns, and the priests, will be shown to you as they were never shown before. In this book, the errors of Romanism are discussed and refuted with a clearness, simplicity and evidence which my twenty-five years of priesthood only could teach me. The book I offer you is an arsenal filled with the best weapons you ever had to fight, and, with the help of God, conquer the foe.

The learned and zealous champion of Protestantism in Great Britain, Rev. Dr. Badenoch, wrote to a friend: "I do not think there is a Protestant work more thrilling in interest and more important at the present time. It is not only full of incidents, but also of arguments on the side of truth with all classes of Romanists, from the bishops to the parish priests. I know of no work which gives so graphically the springs of Roman Catholic life, and, at the same time, meets the plausible objections to Protestantism in Roman Catholic circles."

The venerable, learned, and so well known Rev. Dr. Kemp, Principal of the Young Ladies' College of Ottawa, Canada, only a few days before his premature death, wrote: "Mr. Chiniquy has submitted every chapter of his *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome* to me: I have read it with care and with the deepest interest; and I commend it to the public favour in the highest terms. It is the only book I know that gives anything like a full and authentic account of the inner workings of Popery on this continent, and so effectively unmasks its pretence to sanctity. Besides the most interesting biographical incidents, it contains incisive refutations of the most plausible assumptions and deadly errors of the Roman Church."

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

THE BIBLE AND THE PRIEST OF ROME	13
---	----

CHAPTER II.

SCHOOLDAYS AT ST. THOMAS—THE MONK AND CELIBACY ...	16
--	----

CHAPTER III.

THE CONFESSION OF CHILDREN	19
-----------------------------------	----

CHAPTER IV.

THE SHEPHERD WHIPPED BY HIS SHEEP	25
--	----

CHAPTER V.

THE PRIEST, PURGATORY, AND THE POOR WIDOW'S COW ...	31
---	----

CHAPTER VI.

FESTIVITIES IN A PARSONAGE	35
-----------------------------------	----

CHAPTER VII.

THE FIRST COMMUNION	39
----------------------------	----

CHAPTER VIII.

EDUCATION IN THE ROMAN CATHOLIC COLLEGE	42
--	----

CHAPTER IX.

MORAL AND RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION IN ROMAN COLLEGES ...	47
---	----

CHAPTER X.

PROTESTANT CHILDREN IN THE NUNNERIES OF ROME	53
---	----

CHAPTER XI.

ROME AND EDUCATION	57
---------------------------	----

CHAPTER XII.

THEOLOGY OF ROME: ANTI-SOCIAL AND ANTI-CHRISTIAN ...	68
--	----

CHAPTER XIII.

THE VOW OF CELIBACY	75
----------------------------	----

CHAPTER XIV.

THE IMPURITIES OF THE THEOLOGY OF ROME ...	...	...	82
--	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER XV.

THE PRIESTS OF ROME AND THE HOLY FATHERS ...	...	89
--	-----	----

CHAPTER XVI.

THE ROMAN CATHOLIC PRIESTHOOD ...	...	94
-----------------------------------	-----	----

CHAPTER XVII.

NINE STARTLING CONSEQUENCES OF TRANSUBSTANTIATION ...	100
---	-----

CHAPTER XVIII.

VICARAGE, AND LIFE AT ST. CHARLES, RIVIERRE BOYER ...	106
---	-----

CHAPTER XIX.

THE BURNING OF "LE CANADIEN" BY THE CURATE OF ST. CHARLES ...	...	113
--	-----	-----

CHAPTER XX.

GRAND DINNER OF THE PRIESTS—A MANIAC SISTER ...	118
---	-----

CHAPTER XXI.

I AM APPOINTED VICAR OF THE CURATE OF CHARLESBOURGH	125
---	-----

CHAPTER XXII.

THE CHOLERA MORBUS OF 1834 ...	...	131
--------------------------------	-----	-----

CHAPTER XXIII.

I AM NAMED A VICAR OF ST. ROCHE, QUEBEC CITY ...	136
--	-----

CHAPTER XXIV.

ENORMOUS SUMS OF MONEY MADE BY THE SALE OF MASSES ...	139
---	-----

CHAPTER XXV.

QUEBEC MARINE HOSPITAL—THE FIRST TIME I CARRIED THE "BON DIEU" (THE WAFER GOD) IN MY VEST POCKET ...	147
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVI.

MY FIRST LESSON ON TEMPERANCE ...	151
-----------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXVII.

CONVERSION OF PROTESTANTS TO THE CHURCH OF ROME ...	160
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE NIGHT EXCURSION WITH TWO THIEVES ...	166
--	-----

CHAPTER XXIX.

CHAMBERS AND HIS ACCOMPLICES CONDEMNED TO DEATH— ASKED ME TO PREPARE THEM FOR THEIR TERRIBLE FATE	172
--	-----

CHAPTER XXX.

THE MIRACLES OF ROME	181
-----------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXI.

DEGRADATION AND RUIN OF BEAUPORT THROUGH DRUNKENNESS	192
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE HAND OF GOD IN THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE TEMPER- ANCE SOCIETY IN BEAUPORT AND VICINITY	196
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXIII.

TEMPERANCE SOCIETIES IN THE NEIGHBOURING PARISHES ...	201
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE GOD OF ROME EATEN BY A RAT	206
---------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXXV.

VISIT OF A PROTESTANT STRANGER—HE THROWS AN ARROW INTO MY PRIESTLY SOUL, NEVER TO BE TAKEN OUT	211
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXVI.

ERECTION OF THE COLUMN OF TEMPERANCE	214
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXVII.

SENT TO SUCCEED REV. MR. VARIN, CURATE OF KAMOURASKA	220
--	-----

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

THE GIRL IN THE GARB OF A MAN IN THE SERVICE OF THE CURATES OF QUEBEC AND EBOULEMENTS	226
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXIX.

NOVICIATE IN THE MONASTERY OF THE OBLATES OF MARY IMMACULATE OF LONGUEUIL	232
---	-----

CHAPTER XL.

I GIVE MY REASONS FOR LEAVING THE OBLATES TO BISHOP BOURGET	243
---	-----

CHAPTER XLI.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE LAST CONFLICT	247
---	-----

CHAPTER XLII.

MY SERMON ON THE VIRGIN MARY. MY FIRST SERIOUS DOUBTS ABOUT THE CHURCH OF ROME	255
---	-----

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE HOLY FATHERS. PURGATORY AND THE SUCKING PIG OF THE POOR MAN OF VARENNES	264
--	-----

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE VALLEY OF THE MISSISSIPPI. INTEMPERANCE OF THE BISHOP AND PRIESTS OF DETROIT	271
---	-----

CHAPTER XLV.

I DECLINE SENDING A RICH WIDOW TO A NUNNERY TO ENRICH THE BISHOP. A PLOT TO DESTROY ME	276
---	-----

CHAPTER XLVI.

THE PLOT TO DESTROY ME—THE INTERDICT	284
---	-----

CHAPTER XLVII.

I ARRIVE AT CHICAGO AND SELECT THE SPOT FOR MY COLONY	292
---	-----

CHAPTER XLVIII.

IMPOSTURES AND CRIMINAL LIFE OF THE PRIEST IN BOURBONNAIS	297
---	-----

CHAPTER XLIX.

CORRESPONDENCE WITH THE BISHOP	304
---------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER L.

THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION OF THE VIRGIN MARY	315
---	-----

CHAPTER LI.

THE ABOMINATIONS OF AURICULAR CONFESSION	320
---	-----

CHAPTER LII.

CONDUCT OF PRIESTS AT THE ECCLESIASTICAL RETREAT ...	333
--	-----

CHAPTER LIII.

I DETERMINE TO RESIST BISHOP O'REGAN TO HIS FACE—DRAGS ME AS A PRISONER TO URBANA IN 1856—ABRAHAM LINCOLN DEFENDS ME	342
---	-----

CHAPTER LIV.

EXCOMMUNICATION BY THREE DRUNKEN PRIESTS	...	...	348
--	-----	-----	-----

CHAPTER LV.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN AND THE PROSECUTION	...	...	356
-------------------------------------	-----	-----	-----

CHAPTER LVI.

MY SAD PREVISIONS ABOUT MY DEFENDER, ABRAHAM LINCOLN.			
—ROME, THE IMPLACABLE ENEMY OF THE UNITED STATES			373

CHAPTER LVII.

THE FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE			
UNITED STATES DRAWN FROM THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST	...		381

CHAPTER LVIII.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN'S ASSASSINATION BY A TOOL OF THE			
PRIESTS	...	...	394

CHAPTER LIX.

THE BISHOP IS WRONG AND WE ARE RIGHT	...	...	410
--------------------------------------	-----	-----	-----

CHAPTER LX.

M. DESAULNIER IS NAMED VICAR-GENERAL OF CHICAGO TO			
CRUSH US	...	...	419

CHAPTER LXI.

I WRITE TO POPE PIUS IX	...	...	431
-------------------------	-----	-----	-----

CHAPTER LXII.

CHRIST OFFERS HIMSELF AS A GIFT—I AM FORGIVEN, RICH,			
HAPPY AND SAVED—BACK TO MY PEOPLE	...	...	438

CHAPTER LXIII.

THE SOLEMN RESPONSIBILITIES OF MY NEW POSITION—WE			
GIVE UP THE NAME OF ROMAN CATHOLICS TO CALL OUR-			
SELVES CHRISTIAN CATHOLICS	...	...	450

CHAPTER LXIV.

BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF THE PRINCIPAL EVENTS FROM MY CON-			
VERSION	...	...	462

FR. CHINIQUY'S DAUGHTER VINDICATES HER FATHER

FR. CHINIQUY'S story is written in a kindly Christian spirit. He speaks the truth in love and does not indulge in denunciation.

Some Roman Catholic writers, following the methods of their moralists have, however, tried the denunciatory method against Fr. Chiniquy by either denial of his evidence or defamation of his good name.

The *New York Times* of September 29th, 1942, recounted the "Chiniquy Libel Case," in which Mme. Rebecca Morin, the wife of Professor Morin of McGill University, and daughter of Fr. Charles Chiniquy, sued the Roman Catholic newspaper, *La Croix*, for libel. That paper had stated that Mme. Morin's mother had only been Chiniquy's "concubine," and her father not legally married to her because he had been a Catholic priest under the vow of chastity. The case was tried before Chief Justice A. A. E. Greenshields, of the Province of Quebec. His lordship found for the plaintiff and awarded damages to Mme. Morin of \$3,000, thus upholding the name and honour of her father and mother.

Fr. Chiniquy was ninety years old when he died. Just before his death he made confession before a notary public and a doctor of medicine that he remained Protestant, declaring:

I commit my soul into the hands of the Almighty God, my Creator, by the mediation of Jesus Christ alone, my Divine Redeemer, whose merits are infinite. . . . I cannot return to the bondage of the Church of Rome.

FIFTY YEARS IN THE CHURCH OF ROME.

CHAPTER I.

The Bible and the Priest of Rome.

MY father, Charles Chiniquy, born in Quebec, had studied in the Theological Seminary of that city, to prepare himself for the priesthood. But a few days before making his vows having been the witness of a great iniquity in the high quarters of the Church, he changed his mind, studied law, and became a notary.

Married to Reine Perrault, daughter of Mitchel Perrault, in 1808, he settled at first in Kamoraska, where I was born, on the 30th July, 1809.

About four or five years later my parents emigrated to Murray Bay. That place was then in its infancy, and no school had yet been established. My mother was, therefore, my first teacher.

Before leaving the Seminary of Quebec, my father had received from one of the superiors, as a token of esteem, a beautiful French and Latin Bible. That Bible was the first book, after the A B C, in which I was taught to read. My mother selected the chapters which she considered the most interesting for me; and I read them every day with the greatest attention and pleasure. I was even so much pleased with several chapters, that I read them over and over again till I knew them by heart.

When eight or nine years of age, I had learned by heart the history of the creation and the fall of man; the deluge; the sacrifice of Isaac; the history of Moses; the plagues of Egypt; the sublime hymn of Moses after crossing the Red Sea; the history of Samson; the most interesting events of the life of David; several Psalms; all the speeches and parables of Christ; and the whole history of the sufferings and death of our Saviour as narrated by John.

One day, while I was reading the history of the sufferings of the Saviour, my young heart was so much impressed that I could hardly enunciate the words, and my voice trembled. My mother, perceiving my emotion, tried to say something on the love of Jesus for us, but she could not utter a word—her voice was suffocated by her sobs. She leaned her head on my forehead, and I felt two streams of tears falling from her eyes on my cheeks. I could not contain myself any longer. I wept also; and my tears were mixed with hers. The holy Book fell from my hands, and I threw myself into my dear mother's arms.

No human words can express what was felt in her soul and in mine in that most blessed hour ! No ! I will never forget that solemn hour, when my mother's heart was perfectly blended with mine at the feet of our dying Saviour.

We were some distance from the church, and the roads, in rainy days, were very bad. On the Sabbath days the neighbouring farmers, unable to go to church, were accustomed to gather at our house in the evening. Then my parents used to put me up on a large table in the midst of the assembly, and I delivered to those good people the most beautiful parts of the Old and New Testaments. The breathless attention, the applause of our guests, and—may I tell it—often in tears of joy, which my mother tried in vain to conceal, supported my strength and gave me the courage I wanted, to speak when so young before so many people. When my parents saw that I was growing tired, my mother, who had a fine voice, sang some beautiful French hymns.

On one of the beautiful Spring days of 1818, when my father was writing in his office, and my mother was working with her needle, singing one of her favourite hymns, and I was at the door, playing and talking to a fine robin which I had so perfectly trained that he followed me wherever I went. All of a sudden I saw the priest coming near the gate. The sight of him sent a thrill of uneasiness through my whole frame. It was his first visit to our home.

I hastily ran to the door, and whispered to my parents, "The curate is coming. The last sound was hardly out of my lips when the Rev. Mr. Courtois was at the door, and my father, shaking hands with him, gave him a welcome.

That priest had been born in France, where he had a narrow escape, having been condemned to death under the bloody administration of Robespierre. He had found refuge, with many other French priests, in England, whence he came to Quebec, and the bishop of that place had given him the charge of the parish of Murray Bay.

His conversation was animated and interesting for the first quarter of an hour. It was a real pleasure to hear him. But of a sudden his countenance changed as if a dark cloud had come over his mind, and he stopped talking. My parents had kept themselves on a respectable reserve with the priest. They seemed to have no other mind but to listen to him. The silence which followed was exceedingly unpleasant for all the parties. It looked like the heavy hour which precedes a storm. At length the priest, addressing my father, said, "Mr. Chiniquy, is it true that you and your child read the Bible ?"

"Yes, sir," was the quick reply, "my little boy and I read the Bible, and what is still better, he has learned by heart a great number of its most interesting chapters. If you will allow it, Mr. Curate, he will give you some of them."

"I did not come for that purpose," abruptly replied the priest; "but do you know that you are forbidden by the holy Council of Trent to read the Bible in French ?"

"It makes very little difference to me whether I read the Bible in French, Greek, or Latin," answered my father, "for I understand these languages equally well."

"But are you ignorant of the fact that you cannot allow your child to read the Bible?" replied the priest.

"My wife directs her own child in the reading of the Bible, and I cannot see that we commit any sin by continuing to do in the future what we have done till now in that matter."

"Mr. Chiniquy," rejoined the priest, "you have gone through a whole course of theology; you know the duties of a curate; you know it is my painful duty to come here, get the Bible from you, and burn it."

My grandfather was a fearless Spanish sailor (our original name was Etchiniquia), and there was too much Spanish blood and pride in my father to hear such a sentence with patience in his own house. Quick as lightning he was on his feet. I pressed myself, trembling, near my mother, who trembled also.

At first I feared lest some very unfortunate and violent scene should occur; for my father's anger in that moment was really terrible.

Fortunately, my father had subdued himself after the first moment of his anger. He was pacing the room with a double-quick step; his lips pale and trembling.

The priest was closely watching all my father's movements; his hands were convulsively pressing his heavy cane, and his face was giving the sure evidence of a too well-grounded terror. It was clear that the ambassador of Rome did not find himself infallibly sure of his position on the ground he had so foolishly chosen to take.

At last, after having paced the room for a considerable time, my father suddenly stopped before the priest, and said, "Sir, is that all you have to say here?"

"Yes, sir," said the trembling priest.

"Well, sir," added my father, "you know the door by which you entered my house; please take the same door and go away quickly."

The priest went out immediately. I felt an inexpressible joy when I saw that my Bible was safe. I ran to my father's neck, kissed him and thanked him for his victory. And to pay him, in my childish way, I jumped upon the large table, and recited in my best style, the fight between David and Goliath. Of course, in my own mind, my father was David, and the priest of Rome was the giant whom the little stone from the brook had stricken down.

Thou knowest, O God, that it is to that Bible, read on my mother's knees, I owe, by Thy infinite mercy, the knowledge of the truth to-day; that the Bible had sent to my heart and intelligence rays of light which all the sophisms of Rome could never extinguish.

CHAPTER II.

Schooldays at St. Thomas—The Monk and Celibacy.

IN the month of June, 1818, my parents sent me to an excellent school at St. Thomas. One of my mother's sisters resided there, who was the wife of an industrious miller called Stephen Eschenbach. They had no children, and they received me as their own son.

I met there with one of my ancestors on my mother's side whose name was F. Amour des Plaines. He was an old and brave soldier, and would sometimes show us the numerous wounds he had received in battles in which he had fought for his country.

The school of Mr. Allen Jones, to which I had been sent, was worthy of its wide-spread reputation. I have never known any teacher who deserved more, or who enjoyed in a higher degree the respect and confidence of his pupils.

He was born in England, and belonged to one of the most respectable families there. He received the best education which England could give to her sons. After having gone through a perfect course of study at home, he had gone to Paris, where he had also completed an academical course. He was perfectly master of the French and English languages. And it is not without good reasons that he was surrounded by a large number of scholars from every corner of Canada. The children of the best families of St. Thomas were, with me, attending the school of Mr. Jones. But as he was a Protestant, the priest was much opposed to him, and every effort was made by that priest to induce my relatives to take me away from that school and send me to the one under his care.

The name of that priest was Loranger. He had a swarthy countenance, and in person was lean and tall. His preaching had no attraction, and he was far from being popular among the intelligent part of the people of St. Thomas.

There was then in St. Thomas a personage who was unique in his character. He never mixed with the society of the village, but was, nevertheless, the object of much respectful attention and inquiry from everyone. He was one of the former monks of Canada, known under the name of Capucin or Recollets, whom the conquest of Canada by Great Britain had forced to leave their monastery. He was a clockmaker, and lived honourably by his trade. His little white house was in the very midst of the village.

Brother Mark, as he was called, was a remarkably well-built man ; high stature, large and splendid shoulders, and the most beautiful hands I ever saw. His long black robe, tied around his waist by a white sash, was remarkable for its cleanliness. His life was really a solitary one, always alone with his own sister, who kept his house.

Every day that the weather was propitious, Brother Mark

spent a couple of hours in fishing, and as I was myself exceedingly fond of that exercise, I used to meet him often along the banks of the beautiful rivers of St. Thomas.

There was a mixture of timidity and dignity in the manners of Brother Mark which I have found in no one else. He was fond of children; and nothing could be more graceful than his smile every time that he could see that I appreciated his kindness, and that I gave him proof of my gratitude. But that smile, and any other expression of joy, were very transient. On a sudden he would change, and it was obvious that a mysterious cloud was passing over his heart.

The Pope had released the monks of the monastery to which he belonged from their vows of poverty and obedience. The consequence was that they would become independent, and even rich, by their own industry. The Pope had given them the permission they wanted, that they might earn an honest living. But what a strange and incredible folly to ask the permission of a Pope to be allowed to live honourably on the fruits of one's own industry !

These poor monks, having been released from their vows of obedience, were no longer the slaves of a man; but were now permitted to go to heaven on the sole condition that they would obey the laws of God and the laws of their country ! But into what a frightful abyss of degradation men must have fallen, to believe that they required a license from Rome for such a purpose. This is, nevertheless, the simple truth. That excess of folly, and that supreme impiety and degradation are among the fundamental dogmas of Rome. The infallible Pope assures the world that there is no possible salvation for anyone who does not sincerely believe what he teaches in this matter.

But the Pope who had so graciously relieved the Canadian monks from their vows of obedience and poverty, had been inflexible in reference to their vows of celibacy. From this there was no relief.

The honest desires of the good monk to live according to the laws of God, with a wife whom heaven might have given him, had become an impossibility—the Pope vetoed it.

One day, as I was amusing myself with a few other young friends near the residence of Brother Mark, I heard loud cries coming from the monk's house. I was horrified at the sight that met my eyes, and although I desired to enter the house, I was sternly refused admission by the person in charge, and from the sad nature of the occurrence it was but right and proper that young people should be kept from such a sight.

I had a sincere affection for the good brother. He had invariably been so kind to me ! I insisted, and respectfully requested to be allowed to enter. Though young and weak, it seemed that my friendly feelings towards the suffering brother would add to my strength, and enable me to be of some service. But my request was sternly rejected, and I had to go back to the street among the crowd which was fast gathering. The singular mystery in which they were trying to wrap the poor

monk filled me with anxiety.

But that trouble was soon changed into an unspeakable confusion when I heard the convulsive laughing of the low people, and the shameful jokes of the crowd, after the doctor had told the nature of the wound which was causing the unfortunate man to bleed almost to death. I was struck with such horror that I fled away.

O cruel and godless Church of Rome ! How many souls hast thou deceived and tortured ! How many hearts hast thou broken with that celibacy which Satan alone could invent ! This unfortunate victim of a most degrading religion, did not, however, die from his rash action ; he soon recovered his usual health.

Having, meanwhile, ceased to visit him, some months later I was fishing along the river in a very solitary place. The fish were abundant and I was completely absorbed in catching them, when, on a sudden, I felt on my shoulder the gentle pressure of a hand. It was brother Mark's.

With an affectionate and trembling voice he said to me, "My dear child, why do you not any more come to see me ?"

I did not dare to look at him after he had addressed me these words. I liked him on account of his acts of kindness to me. But the fatal hour when in the street before the door, I had suffered so much on his account—that fatal hour was on my heart as a mountain which I could not put away—I could not answer him.

He then asked me again with the tone of a criminal who sues for mercy : "Why is it, dear child, that you do not come any longer to see me ? You know that I love you."

"Dear Brother Mark," I answered, "I will never forget your kindness to me. I will for ever be grateful to you. I wish that it would be in my power to continue, as formerly, to go and see you. But I cannot, and you ought to know the reason why I cannot."

I had pronounced these words with downcast eyes. I was a child, with the timidity and happy ignorance of a child. But the action of that unfortunate man had struck me with such a horror that I could not entertain the idea of visiting him any more.

He spent two or three minutes without saying a word, and without moving. But I heard his sobs and his cries, and his cries were those of despair and anguish, the like of which I have never heard since.

He took me in his arms and pressed me to his bosom—his tears here were mingled with mine. But I could not speak—the emotions of my heart were too much for my age. I sat on a cold and damp stone, in order not to faint. He fell on his knees by my side.

"My God ! my God ! what a wretched man I am !"

*

*

*

*

The twenty-five years that I have been a priest of Rome have revealed to me the fact that the cries of desolation I heard that day were but the echo of the cries of desolation which go out from almost every nunnery, every parsonage and every house where human beings are bound by the ties of the Romish celibacy.

God knows that I am a faithful witness of what my eyes have seen and my ears have heard, when I say to the multitudes which the Church of Rome has bewitched with her enchantments: Wherever there are nuns, monks and priests, who live in forced violation of the ways which God has appointed for man to walk in, there are torrents of tears, there are desolated hearts, there are cries of anguish and despair which say in the words of brother Mark:

Oh! how wretched and miserable I am!

CHAPTER III.

The Confession of Children.

NO words can express to those who have never had any experience in the matter, the consternation, anxiety and shame of a poor Romish child, when he hears, for the first time, his priest saying from the pulpit, in a grave and solemn tone, "This week, you will send your children to confession. Make them understand that this action is one of the most important in their lives, that for every one of them, it will decide their eternal happiness or misery. Fathers and mothers, if, through your faults, or his own, your child is guilty of a bad confession—if he conceals his sins and commences lying to the priest, who holds the place of God Himself, this sin is often irreparable. The devil will take possession of his heart: he will become accustomed to lie to his father confessor, or rather to Jesus Christ, of whom he is a representative. His life will be a series of sacrileges; his death and eternity those of the reprobate. Teach him, therefore, to examine thoroughly his actions, words and thoughts, in order to confess without disguise."

I was in the church of St. Thomas when these words fell upon me like a thunderbolt. I had often heard my mother say, when at home, and my aunt since I had come to St. Thomas, that upon the first confession depended my eternal happiness or misery.

Pale and dismayed, I left the church, and returned to the house of my relatives. I took my place at the table, but could not eat, so much was I troubled. I went to my room for the purpose of commencing my examination of conscience and to try to recall all my sinful actions, words and thoughts. Although scarcely over ten years of age, this task was really overwhelming for me. I knelt down to pray to the Virgin

Mary for help ; but I was so much taken up with the fear of forgetting something, and of making a bad confession, that I muttered my prayers without the least attention to what I said. It became still worse when I began counting my sins. My memory became confused, my head grew dizzy ; my heart beat with a rapidity which exhausted me, and my brow was covered with perspiration. After a considerable length of time spent in those painful efforts, I felt bordering on despair, from the fear that it was impossible for me to remember everything. The night following was almost a sleepless one; and when sleep did come, it could scarcely be called a sleep, but a suffocating delirium. In a frightful dream, I felt as if I had been cast into hell, for not having confessed all my sins to the priest. In the morning I awoke, fatigued and prostrated by the phantoms of that terrible night. In similar troubles of mind were passed the three days which preceded my first confession. I had constantly before me the countenance of that stern priest who had never smiled upon me. He was present in my thoughts during the day, and in my dreams during the night, as the minister of an angry God, justly irritated against me on account of my sins. Forgiveness had indeed been promised to me, on condition of a good confession ; but my place had also been shown to me in hell, if my confession was not as near perfection as possible. Now, my troubled conscience told me that there were ninety-nine chances against one, that my confession would be bad, whether by my own fault I forgot some sins, or I was without that contrition of which I had heard so much.

Thus it was that the cruel and perfidious Church of Rome took away from my young heart the good and merciful Jesus, whose love and compassion had led me to shed tears of joy when I was beside my mother. The Saviour whom that Church made me to worship, through fear, was not the Saviour who called the little children unto Him, to bless them and take them in His arms. Her impious hands were soon to torture and defile my childish heart, and place me at the feet of a pale and severe looking man—worthy representative of a pitiless God. I was made to tremble with terror at the footstool of an implacable divinity, while the Gospel asked from me only tears of love and joy, shed at the feet of the incomparable Friend of sinners. At length came the day of confession; or rather of judgment and condemnation. I presented myself to the priest.

Mr. Loranger was no longer priest of St. Thomas. He had been succeeded by Mr. Beaubien, who did not favour our school any more than his predecessor. He had even taken upon himself to preach a sermon against the heretical school, by which we had been excessively wounded. Mr. Beaubien had, then, the defect of lisping and stammering. This we often turned into ridicule, and one of my favourite amusements was to imitate him.

It had been necessary for me to examine myself upon the

number of times I had mocked him. This circumstance was not calculated to make my confession easier, or more agreeable. At last the dreaded moment came. I knelt at the side of my confessor. My whole frame trembled. I repeated the prayer preparatory to confession, scarcely knowing what I said. By the instructions which had been given us before confession, we had been made to believe that the priest was the true representative—yea, almost the personification of Jesus Christ. The consequence was, that I believed my greatest sin had been that of mocking the priest. Having always been told that it was best to confess the greatest sins first, I commenced thus: "Father, I accuse myself of having mocked a priest."

Scarcely had I uttered these words, "mocked a priest," when this pretended representative of the humble Saviour, turning towards me, and looking in my face in order to know me better, asked abruptly, "What priest did you mock, my boy?" I would rather have chosen to cut out my tongue than to tell him to his face who it was. I therefore kept silence for awhile. But my silence made him very nervous and almost angry. With a haughty tone of voice he said, "What priest did you take the liberty of thus mocking?"

I saw that I had to answer. Happily his haughtiness had made me firmer and bolder. I said, "Sir, you are the priest whom I mocked."

"But how many times did you take upon you to mock me, my boy?"

"I tried to find out," I answered, "but I never could."

"You must tell me how many times; for to mock one's own priest is a great sin."

"It is impossible for me to give you the number of times," answered I.

"Well, my child, I will help your memory by asking you questions. Tell me the truth. Do you think you have mocked me ten times?"

"A great many times more, sir."

"Fifty times?"

"Many more still."

"A hundred times?"

"Say five hundred times, and perhaps more," answered I.

"Why, my boy, do you spend all your time in mocking me?"

"Not all; but unfortunately I do it very often."

"Well may you say *unfortunately*, for so to mock your priest, who holds the place of our Lord Jesus Christ, is a great misfortune, and a great sin for you. But tell me, my little boy, what reason have you for mocking me thus?"

In my examinations of conscience I had not foreseen that I should be obliged to give the reasons for mocking the priest; and I was really thunderstruck by his questions. I dared not answer, and I remained for a long time dumb, from the shame that overpowered me. But with a harassing perseverance the priest insisted upon my telling why I had mocked him;

telling me that I should be damned if I did not tell the whole truth. So I decided to speak, and said, "I mocked you for several things."

"What made you first mock me?" continued the priest.

"I laughed at you because you lisped. Among the pupils of our school, it often happens that we imitate your preaching to excite laughter."

"Have you often done that?"

"Almost every day, especially in our holidays, and since you preached against us."

"For what other reasons did you laugh at me, my little boy?"

For a long time I was silent. Every time I opened my mouth to speak courage failed me. However, the priest continuing to urge me, I said at last, "It is rumoured in town that you love girls; that you visit the Misses Richards every evening, and this often makes us laugh."

The poor priest was evidently overwhelmed by my answer, and ceased questioning me on this subject.

"What are your other sins?"

I began to confess them in the order in which they came to my memory. But the feeling of shame which overpowered me in repeating all my sins to this man was a thousand times greater than that of having offended God.

When I had confessed all the sins I could remember, the priest began to ask me the strangest questions on matters about which my pen must be silent. I replied, "Father, I do not understand what you ask me."

"I question you on the sixth commandment (seventh in the Bible). Confess all. You will go to hell, if through your fault you omit anything."

Thereupon he dragged my thoughts to regions which, thank God, had hitherto been unknown to me.

I answered him: "I do not understand you," or "I have never done these things."

Then skilfully shifting to some secondary matter, he would soon, slyly and cunningly, come back to his favourite subject—namely, sins of licentiousness.

His questions were so unclean that I blushed, and felt sick with disgust and shame. More than once I had been, to my regret, in the company of bad boys; but not one of them had offended my moral nature so much as this priest had done. Not one of them had ever approached the shadow of the things from which that man tore the veil, and which he placed before the eye of my soul. In vain did I tell him that I was not guilty of such things; that I did not even understand what he asked me: he would not let me off. Like the vulture bent upon tearing the poor bird that falls into his claws that cruel priest seemed determined to defile and ruin my heart.

At last he asked me a question in a form of expression so bad that I was really pained. I felt as if I had received a shock from an electric battery; a feeling of horror made

me shudder. I was so filled with indignation that, speaking loud enough to be heard by many, I told him: "Sir, I am very wicked; I have seen, heard, and done many things which I regret; but I never was guilty of what you mention to me. My ears have never heard anything so wicked as what they have heard from your lips. Please do not ask me any more of those questions; do not teach me any more evil than I already know."

The remainder of my confession was short. The firmness of my voice had evidently frightened the priest, and made him blush. He stopped short and began to give me some good advice, which might have been useful to me if the deep wounds which his questions had inflicted upon my soul had not so absorbed my thoughts as to prevent me from giving my attention to what he said.

He gave me a short penance and dismissed me.

I left the confessional irritated and confused. From the shame of what I had just heard from the mouth of that priest I dared not lift my eyes from the ground. I went into a retired corner of the church to do my penance—that is, to recite the prayers he had indicated to me. I remained for a long time in Church. I had need of a calm after the terrible trial through which I had just passed.

I left the church only when forced to do so by the shades of night, and came to my uncle's house with that feeling of uneasiness caused by the consciousness of having done a bad action.

Though my uncle, as well as most of the principle citizens of the village of St. Thomas, had the name of being a Roman Catholic, he yet did not believe a word of the doctrines of the Roman Church. He laughed at the priests, their masses, their purgatory, and especially their confession. He did not conceal that, when young he had been scandalised by the words and actions of a priest in the confessional. He spoke to me jestingly. This increased my trouble and my grief. "Now," said he, "you will be a good boy. But if you have heard as many new things as I did the first time I went to confess, you are a very learned boy;" and he burst into laughter.

My aunt, who was a devoted Roman Catholic, said to me, "Your heart is relieved, is it not, since you confessed all your sins?" I gave her an evasive answer, but I could not conceal the sadness that overcame me. I thought I was the only one from whom the priest had asked those polluting questions. But great was my surprise, on the following day, when going to school I learned that my fellow pupils had not been happier than I had been. The only difference was, that instead of being grieved, they laughed at it. "Did the priest ask you such and such questions?" they would demand, laughing boisterously. I refused to reply, and said, "Are you not ashamed to speak of these things?"

I soon perceived that even young school girls had not been less polluted and scandalised by the questions of the priest

than the boys. Although keeping at a distance, so as to prevent us from hearing all they said, I could understand enough to convince me that they had been asked about the same questions.

I should be misunderstood were it supposed that I mean to convey the idea that this priest was more to blame than others, or that he did more than fulfil the duties of his ministry in asking these questions. Such, however, was my opinion at the time, and I detested that man with all my heart until I knew better. I had been unjust towards him, for this priest had only done his duty. He was only obeying the Pope and his theologians. His being a priest of Rome was, therefore, less his crime than his misfortune.

The misfortune of Mr. Beaubien, like that of all the priests of Rome, was that of having bound himself by terrible oaths not to think for himself, or to use the light of his own reason.

Many Roman Catholics, even many Protestants, refuse to believe this. It is, notwithstanding, a sad truth. The priest of Rome is an automaton—a machine which acts, thinks, and speaks in matters of morals and of faith, only according to the order and the will of the Pope and of his theologians.

Had Mr. Beaubien been left to himself, he was naturally too much of a gentleman to ask such questions. But no doubt he had read Liguori, Dens, Debreyne, authors approved by the Pope, and he was obliged to take darkness for light, and vice for virtue.

CHAPTER IV.

The Shepherd Whipped by his Sheep.

SHORTLY after the trial of auricular confession, my young friend, Louis Cazeault, accosted me on a beautiful morning and said, "Do you know what happened last night?"

"No," I answered. "What was the wonder?"

"You know that our priest spends almost all his evenings at Mr. Richard's house. Everybody thinks he goes there for the sake of the two daughters. Well, in order to cure him of that disease my uncle, Dr. Tashe, and six others, masked, whipped him without mercy as he was coming back at eleven o'clock at night. It is already known by every one in the village, and they split their sides with laughing.

My first feeling on hearing that news was one of joy. Ever since my first confession I felt angry every time I thought of that priest. His questions had so wounded me that I could not forgive him. I had enough self-control, however, to conceal my pleasure, and I answered my friend:

"You are telling me a wicked story; I can't believe a word of it."

"Well," said young Cazeault, "come at eight o'clock this evening to my uncle's. A secret meeting is to take place then. No doubt they will speak of the pill given to the priest last night. We shall place ourselves in our little room as usual, and shall hear everything, our presence not being suspected."

"I will go," I answered.

I went to school at the usual hour. Most of the pupils had preceded me. Divided into groups of eight or ten, they were engaged in a most lively conversation. Bursts of convulsive laughter were heard from every corner. I could very well see that something uncommon had taken place in the village.

I approached several of these groups, and all received me with the question:

"Do you know that the priest was whipped last night as he was coming from the Misses Richards?"

"That is a story invented for fun," said I. "You were not there to see him, were you? You therefore know nothing about it; for if anybody had whipped the priest he would not surely boast of it."

"But we heard his screams," answered many voices.

"What was he then screaming out?" I asked.

"He shouted at the top of his voice, 'Help, help! Murder!'"

"But you were surely mistaken about the voice," said I. "It was not the priest who shouted, it was somebody else. I could never believe that any body would whip a priest."

"But," said several, "we ran to his help and we recognised the priest's voice. He is the only one who lisps in the village."

"And we saw him with our own eyes," said several.

The school bell put an end to this conversation. On my arrival home I found my uncle and aunt engaged in a very

warm debate on the subject. My uncle wished to conceal the fact that he was among those who had whipped him. But he gave the details so precisely, he was so merry over the adventure, that it was easy to see that he had a hand in the plot.

A quarter of an hour before the meeting my friend came to me and said: "Make haste, the members of the Association are coming."

At this call all my good resolutions vanished. I hushed the voice of my conscience, and a few minutes later I was placed in an angle of that little room, where for more than two hours I learned many scandalous things about the lives of the priests.

Dr. Tache presided. He opened the meeting in a low tone of voice. At the beginning of his discourse I had some difficulty to understand what he said. He spoke as one who feared to be overheard when disclosing a secret to a friend. But after a few preliminary sentences he forgot the rule of prudence which he had imposed upon himself, and spoke with energy.

Mr. Etienne Tache was naturally eloquent. He seemed to speak on no question except under the influence of the deepest conviction. His short and cutting sentences did not reach the ear only; they penetrated even the secret folds of the soul. He spoke in substance as follows:—

"Gentlemen,—I am happy to see you here more numerous than ever. The grave events of last night have, no doubt, decided many of you to attend debates which some began to forsake, but the importance of which, it seems to me, increases day by day. The question debated in our last meeting—'The Priests'—is one of life and death, not only for our young and beautiful Canada, but in a moral point of view it is a question of life and death for our families, and for every one of us.

"There is, I know, only one opinion among us on the subject of priests; and I am glad that this opinion is not only that of all educated men in Canada, but also of learned France—nay, of the whole world. The reign of the priest is the reign of ignorance, of corruption, and of the most barefaced immorality, under the mask of the most refined hypocrisy. The reign of the priest is the death of our schools; it is the degradation of our wives, the prostitution of our daughters; it is the reign of tyranny.

"We have only one good school, I will not say in St. Thomas, but in all our country. This school in our midst is a great honour to our village. Now see the energy with which all the priests who come here work for the closing of that school. They use every means to destroy that focus of light which we have started, and which we support by so many sacrifices.

"With the priest of Rome our children do not belong to us: he is their master. Let me explain. The priest honours us with the belief that the bodies, the flesh and bones of our children, are ours, and that our duty in consequence is to clothe and feed them. But the nobler and more sacred part—namely, the intellect, the heart, the soul, the priest claims as

his own patrimony, his own property. The priest has the audacity to tell us that to him alone it belongs to enlighten those intelligences, to form those hearts, to fashion those souls as it may best suit him. He has the impudence to tell us that we are too silly or perverse to know our duties in this respect. We have not the right of choosing our school teachers. We have not the right to send a single ray of light into those intellects. By the confessional the priests poison the springs of life in our children. They initiate them into such mysteries of iniquity as would terrify old galley slaves. By their questions they reveal to them secrets of corruption such as carries the germs of death into the very marrow of their bones, and that from the earliest years of their infancy. Before I was fifteen years old I had learned more real blackguardism from the mouth of my confessor than I learned ever since in my life as a physician for twenty years.

"A few days ago I questioned my little nephew, Louis Cazeault, upon what he had learned in his confession. He answered me ingenuously, and repeated things to me which I would be ashamed to utter in your presence, and which you, fathers of families, could not listen to without blushing. And just think, that not only of little boys are those questions asked, but also of our dear little girls. Are we not the most degraded of men if we do not set ourselves to work in order to break the iron yoke under which the priest keeps our dear country, and by means of which he keeps us, with our wives and children, at his feet like vile slaves?"

"While speaking to you of the deleterious effect of the confessional upon our children, shall I forget its effects upon our wives and upon ourselves? Need I tell you that, for most women, the confessional is a rendezvous of coquetry and love? Do you not feel as I do myself, that by means of the confessional the priest is more the master of the hearts of our wives than ourselves? Is not the priest the private and public confidant of our wives? Do not our wives go invariably to the feet of the priest, opening to him what is most sacred and intimate in the secrets of our lives as husbands and as fathers? The husband belongs no more to his wife as her guide through the dark and difficult paths of life: it is the priest! We are no more their friends and natural advisers. Their anxieties and their cares they do not confide in us. They do not expect from us the remedies for the miseries of life. Towards the priest they turn their thoughts and desires. He has their entire and exclusive confidence. In a word, it is the priest who is the real husband of our wives!

"Were the priest an angel, were he not made of flesh and bones just as we are, were not his organisation absolutely the same as our own, then might we be indifferent to what might take place between him and our wives, whom he has at his feet, in his hands—even more, in his heart. But what does my experience tell me, not only as a physician, but as a citizen of St. Thomas? What does it tell you? Our experience tells

us that the priest, instead of being stronger, is weaker than we generally are with respect to women. His sham vows of perfect chastity, far from rendering him more invulnerable to the arrows of Cupid, expose him to be made more easily the victim of that god, so small in form, but so dreadful a giant by the irresistible power of his weapons and the extent of his conquests.

"As a matter of fact, of the last four priests who came to St. Thomas, have not three seduced many of the wives and daughters of our most respectable families? And what security have we that the priest who is now with us does not walk in the same path? Is not the whole parish filled with indignation at the long nightly visits made by him to two girls whose dissolute morals are a secret to nobody."

"At our last meeting the opinions were divided at the beginning of the discussion. Many thought it would be well to speak to the bishop about the scandal caused by those nightly visits. But the majority judged that such steps would be useless, since the bishop would do one of two things—namely, he would either pay no attention to our just complaints, as has often been the case, or he would remove this priest, filling his place with one who would do no better. That majority, which became a unanimity, acceded to my thought of taking justice into our own hands. The priest is our servant. We pay him a large tithe. We have therefore claims upon him. He has abused us, and does so every day by his public neglect of the most elementary laws of morality. In visiting every night that house whose degradation is known to everybody, he gives to youth an example of perversity the effects of which no one can estimate. It had been unanimously decided that he should be whipped. Without telling you by whom it was done, you may be assured that Mr. Beaubien's flagellation of last night will never be forgotten by him.

"Heaven grant that this brotherly correction be a lesson to teach all priests of Canada that their golden reign is over, that the eyes of the people are opened."

This discourse was listened to with deep silence, and Dr. Tache saw by the applause that followed that his speech had been the expression of everybody.

Next followed a gentleman named Dubord, who in substance spoke as follows:—

"Mr. President:—I was not among those who gave the priest the expression of public feeling with the energetic tongue of the whip. I wish I had been, however; I would heartily co-operate in giving that lesson to the priests of Canada. Let me give my reason. "My daughter, who is twelve years old, went to confession as did others a few weeks ago. It was against my will. I know by my own experience that of all actions confession is the most degrading in a person's life. I can imagine nothing so well calculated to destroy for ever one's self-respect as the modern invention of the confessional. Now, what is a person without self-respect—especially a woman?"

Without this all is lost to her for ever.

"In the confessional, a girl's thoughts are polluted, her tongue is polluted, her heart is polluted—yes, and for ever polluted! Do I need tell you this? You know it as well as I do. Though you are now all too intelligent to degrade yourselves at the feet of a priest, though it is long since you have been guilty of that meanness, not one of you has forgotten the lessons of corruption received when young in the confessional. Those lessons are engraved on your memory, your thoughts, your heart, and your souls, like the scar left by the red-hot iron upon the brow of the slave, to remain a perpetual witness of his shame and servitude. The confessional is a place where one gets accustomed to hear, and repeat without a scruple, things which would cause even a prostitute to blush!

"Why are Roman Catholic nations inferior to nations belonging to Protestantism? Only in the confessional can the solution of that problem be found. And why are Roman Catholic nations degraded in proportion to their submission to the priest? It is because the oftener the individuals composing those nations go to confession the more rapidly they sink in the scale of intelligence and morality. A terrible example of this I had in my own house.

"As I said a moment ago, I was against my daughter going to confession; but her poor mother, who is under the control of the priest, earnestly wanted her to go. Not to have a disagreeable scene in my house, I had to yield to the tears of my wife."

"On the day following that of her confession they believed I was absent; but I was in my office, with the door sufficiently open to allow me to hear what was said. My wife and daughter had the following conversation:—

"What makes you so thoughtful and sad, my dear Lucy, since you went to confession? it seems to me you should feel happier since you had the privilege of confessing your sins."

"Lucy made no answer. After a silence of two or three minutes her mother said: 'Why do you weep, dear child? Are you ill?'

"Still no answer from the child. You may well suppose that I was all attention. I had my suspicions about the dreadful ordeal which had taken place. My heart throbbed with uneasiness and anger.

"After a short time my wife spoke to her child with sufficient firmness to force her to answer. In a trembling voice and half suppressed with sobs my dear little daughter answered: 'Ah mamma, if you knew what the priest asked me, and what he said to me in the confessional, you would be as sad as I am.'

"But what did he say to you? He is a holy man. You surely did not understand him if you think he said anything to pain you."

"Dear mother,' as she threw herself into her mother's arms, 'do not ask me to confess what that priest said! He told to

me things so shameful that I cannot repeat them. But that which pains me most is the impossibility of banishing from my thoughts the hateful things which he has taught me. His impure words are like the leeches put upon the chest of my friend Louise—they could not be removed without tearing the flesh. What must have been his opinion of me to ask such questions ! ’

“My child said no more, and began to sob again.

“After a short silence my wife rejoined :

“‘I’ll go to the priest. I’ll tell him to beware how he speaks in the confessional. I have noticed myself that he goes too far with his questions. I, however, thought that he was more prudent with children. After the lesson that I’ll give him, be sure that you will have only to tell your sins, and that you will be no more troubled by his endless questions. I ask of you, however, never to speak of this to anybody, especially never let your poor father know anything about it ; for he has little enough religion already, and this would leave him without any at all.’

“I could contain myself no longer. I rose, and abruptly entered the parlour. My daughter threw herself, weeping, into my arms. My wife screamed with terror, and almost fell into a swoon. I said to my child : ‘If you love me, put your hand on your heart, and promise me that you’ll never go to confession again. Fear God, my child ; walk in His presence, for His eye seeth everywhere. Remember that day and night He is ready to forgive us. Never place yourself again at the feet of a priest, to be defiled and degraded by him ! ’

“This my daughter promised me.

“When my wife had recovered from her surprise I said to her : ‘Madam, for a long time the priest has been everything and your husband nothing to you. There is a hidden and terrible power that governs your thoughts and affections, as it governs your deeds—it is the power of the priest. This you have often denied ; but Providence has decided to-day that this power should be forever broken for you and for me. I want to be the ruler in my own house ; and from this moment the power of the priest over you must cease, unless you prefer to leave my house for ever. The priest has reigned here too long ! But now that I know he has stained and defiled the soul of my daughter, his empire must fall ! Whenever you go and take your heart and secrets to the feet of the priest, be so kind as not to come back to the same house with me.’

Three other discourses followed that of Mr. Dubord, all of which were pregnant with details and facts going to prove that the confessional was the principal cause of the deplorable demoralisation of St. Thomas.

If, in addition to all that, I could have mentioned before that association what I already knew of its corrupting influences, certainly the determination of its members to make use of every means to abolish the usage would have been strengthened.

CHAPTER V.

The Priest, Purgatory, and the Poor Widow's Cow.

THE day following that of the meeting at which Mr. Tache had given his reasons for boasting that he had whipped the priest, I wrote to my mother: "For God's sake come for me; I can stay here no longer. If you knew what my eyes have seen and my ears have heard for some time past, you would not delay your coming a single day."

Indeed, such was the impression left upon me by that flagellation, and by the speeches which I had heard, that had it not been for the crossing of the St. Lawrence, I would have started for Murray Bay on the day after the secret meeting at which I had heard things that so terribly frightened me. How I regretted the happy and peaceful days spent with my mother in reading the beautiful chapters of the Bible, so well chosen by her to instruct and interest me! Happily my parents' desire to see me again was as great as mine to go back with them. So that a few weeks later my mother came for me.

I arrived at home on the 17th of July, 1821, and spent the afternoon and evening till late by my father's side. With what pleasure did he see me working difficult problems in algebra, and even in geometry! for under my teacher, Mr. Jones, I had really made rapid progress in those branches. More than once I noticed tears of joy in my father's eyes when, taking my slate, he saw that my calculations were correct. He also examined me in grammar.

How sweet to me, but how short, were those hours of happiness passed between my good mother and my father! We had family worship. I read the fifteenth chapter of Luke, the return of the prodigal son. My mother then sang a hymn of joy and gratitude, and I went to bed with my heart full of happiness to take the sweetest sleep of my life. But, O God! what an awful awakening Thou hadst prepared for me!

At about 4 o'clock in the morning heartrending screams fell upon my ear. I recognised my mother's voice.

"What is the matter, my dear mother?"

"Oh, my dear child, you have no more a father! He is dead!" In saying these words she lost consciousness and fell on the floor!

While a friend who had passed the night with us gave her proper care, I hastened to my father's bed. I pressed him to my heart, I kissed him, I covered him with my tears, I moved his head, I pressed his hands, I tried to lift him up on his pillow: I could not believe that he was dead! It seemed to me that even if dead he would come back to life—that God would not thus take my father away from me at the very moment when I had come back to him after so long an absence! I knelt to pray to God for the life of my father. But my tears and cries were useless. He was dead!

Two days after he was buried. My mother was so over-

whelmed with grief that she could not follow the funeral procession. I remained with her as her only earthly support.

Though I was very young, I could understand the greatness of our loss, and I mingled my tears with those of my mother.

What pen can portray what takes place in the heart of a woman when God takes suddenly her husband away in the prime of his life, and leaves her alone, plunged in misery, with three small children, two of whom are even too young to know their loss ! How long are the hours of the day for the poor widow who is left alone, and without means, among strangers ! How painful the sleepless night to the heart which has lost everything ! How empty a house is left by the eternal absence of him who was its master, support, and father. Every object in the house and every step she takes remind her of her loss and sinks the sword deeper which pierces her heart ! Oh, how bitter are the tears which flow from her eyes when her youngest child, who as yet does not understand the mystery of death, throws himself into her arms and says : 'Mamma, where is papa ? Why does he not come back ? I am lonely !'

My poor mother passed through those heartrending trials.

Only a few days had elapsed after the burial of my father when I saw Mr. Courtois, the parish priest, coming to our house (he who had tried to take away our Bible from us) He had the reputation of being rich, and as we were poor and unhappy since my father's death, my first thought was that he had come to comfort and to help us. I could see that my mother had the same hopes. She welcomed him as an angel.

From his very first words, however, I could see that our hopes were not to be realised. He tried to be sympathetic, and even said something about the confidence we should have in God, especially in times of trial; but his words were cold and dry. Turning to me he said : "Do you continue to read the Bible, my little boy ?"

"Yes, sir," answered I, with a voice trembling with anxiety, for I feared that he would make another effort to take away that treasure, and I had no longer a father to defend it.

Then addressing my mother, he said : "Madam, I told you that it was not right for you and your child to read that book."

The priest then continued : "Madam, there is something due for the prayers which have been sung, and the services which you requested to be offered for the repose of your husband's soul. I will be very much obliged to you if you will pay me that little debt."

"Mr. Courtois," answered my mother, "my husband left me nothing but debts. I have only the work of my own hands to procure a living for my three children, the eldest of whom is before you. For these little orphans' sakes, if not for mine, do not take from us the little that is left."

"But, madam, you do not reflect. Your husband died suddenly and without any preparation; he is therefore in the flames of purgatory. If you want him to be delivered, you must necessarily unite your personal sacrifices to the prayers

of the Church and the masses which we offer."

"As I said, my husband has left me absolutely without means, and it is simply impossible for me to give you any money," replied my mother.

"But, madam, your husband was for a long time the only notary of Mal Bay. He surely must have made much money. I can scarcely think that he has left you without any means to help him now that his sufferings are far greater than yours."

"My husband did indeed coin much money, but he spent still more. Thanks to God, we have not been in want while he lived. But lately he got this house built, and what is still due on it makes me fear that I will lose it. He also bought a piece of land not long ago, only half of which is paid, and I will, therefore, probably not be able to keep it. Hence I may soon, with my poor orphans be deprived of everything that is left to us."

"But, madam, the masses offered for the rest of your husband's soul must be paid," answered the priest.

My mother covered her face with her handkerchief and wept.

As for me, I did not mingle my tears with hers this time. My feelings were not those of grief, but of anger and unspeakable horror. My eyes were fixed on the face of that man who tortured my mother's heart. I looked with tearless eyes upon the man who added to my poor mother's anguish, and made her weep more bitterly than ever. My hands were clenched, as if ready to strike. All my muscles trembled; my teeth chattered as if from intense cold. My greatest sorrow was my weakness in the presence of that big man.

After a long silence my mother raised her eyes, reddened with tears, on the priest, and said: "Sir, you see that cow in the meadow, not far from our house? Her milk and the butter made from it form the principal part of my children's food. I hope you will not take her away from us. If, however, such a sacrifice must be made to deliver my poor husband's soul from purgatory, take her as payment of the masses to be offered to extinguish those devouring flames."

"The priest instantly rose, saying, "Very well, madam."

Our eyes anxiously followed him; but instead of walking towards the little gate which was in front of the house, he directed his steps towards the meadow, and drove the cow before him in the direction of his home.

At that sight I screamed with despair: "O my mother! he is taking our cow away! What will become of us?"

Lord Nairn had given us that splendid cow when it was three months old. Her mother had been brought from Scotland, and belonged to one of the best breeds of that country. I fed her with my own hands, and had often shared my bread with her. I loved her as a child always loves an animal which he has brought up himself. She seemed to understand and love me also. From whatever distance she could see me, she would run to me to receive my caresses, and whatever else I might have to give her. My mother herself milked her; and her rich milk was such delicious and substantial food for us.

My mother also cried out with grief as she saw the priest taking away the only means which heaven had left her to feed her children.

Throwing myself into her arms, I asked her: "Why have you given away our cow? What will become of us? We shall surely die of hunger."

"Dear child," she answered, "I did not think the priest would be so cruel as to take away the last resource which God had left us. Ah! if I had believed him to be so unmerciful I would never have spoken to him as I did. As you say, my dear child, what will become of us? But have you not often read to me in your Bible that God is the Father of the widow and the orphan? We shall pray to that God who is willing to be your Father and mine; He will listen to us, and see our tears. Let us kneel down and ask of Him to be merciful to us, and give us back the support of which the priest has deprived us."

We both knelt down. She took my right hand with her left, and, lifting the other towards heaven, she offered a prayer to the God of mercies for her poor children such as I have never since heard. Her words were often choked by her sobs. But when she could not speak with her voice, she spoke with her burning looks raised to heaven, and with her uplifted hand. I also prayed to God with her, and repeated her words, which were broken by my sobs.

When her prayer ended she remained for a long time pale and trembling. Cold sweat was flowing on her face, and she fell on the floor. I thought she was going to die. I ran for cold water, which I gave her, saying: "Dear mother! O do not leave me alone on earth." After drinking a few drops she felt better, and taking my hand, she put it to her trembling lips; then drawing me near her, and pressing me to her bosom, she said: "Dear child, if you ever become a priest, *I ask of you never be so hard-hearted towards poor widows as are the priests of to-day.*" While she said these words, I felt her burning tears falling upon my cheek.

The memory of those tears has never left me. I felt them constantly during the twenty-five years I spent in preaching the inconceivable superstitions of Rome.

How long, O Lord, shall that insolent enemy of the Gospel, the Church of Rome, be permitted to fatten herself upon the tears of the widow and of the orphan by means of that cruel and impious invention of paganism—purgatory? Wilt Thou not be merciful unto so many nations which are still the victims of that great imposture? Oh, do remove the veil which covers the eyes of the priests and people of Rome, as Thou hast removed it from mine! Make them to understand that their hopes of purification must not rest on these fabulous fires, but only on the blood of the Lamb shed on Calvary to save the world.

CHAPTER VI.

Festivities in a Parsonage.

GOD had heard the poor widow's prayer. A few days after the priest had taken our cow she received a letter from each of her two sisters, Genevieve and Catherine.

The former who was married to Etienne Eschenbach, of St. Thomas, told her to sell all she had and come, with her children, to live with her. "We have no family," she said, "and God has given us the good things of this life in abundance. We shall be happy to share them with you and your children."

The latter, married in Kamouraska to the Hon. Amable Dionne, wrote: "We have learned the sad news of your husband's death. We have lately lost our only son. We wish to fill the place with Charles, your eldest. Send him to us. We shall bring him up as our own child, and before long he will be your support. In the meantime, sell by auction all you have, and go to St. Thomas with your two younger children. There, Genevieve and myself will supply your wants."

In a few days all our furniture was sold. Unfortunately, though I had carefully concealed my cherished Bible, it disappeared. I could never discover what became of it. Had mother herself, frightened by the threats of the priest, relinquished that treasure? or had some of our relatives believing it to be their duty, destroyed it? I do not know.

On the following day, in the midst of bitter tears and sobs, I bade farewell to my poor mother and young brothers. They went to St. Thomas on board a schooner, and I crossed in a sloop to Kamouraska.

My uncle and aunt Dionne welcomed me with every mark of the most sincere affection. Having soon made known to them that I wished to become a priest, I began to study Latin under the direction of Rev. Mr. Morin, vicar of Kamouraska. That priest was esteemed to be a learned man. He was about forty or fifty years old and had been priest of a parish in the district of Montreal. But, as is the case with the majority of priests, his vows of celibacy had not proved a sufficient guarantee against the charms of one of his beautiful parishioners. This had caused a great scandal. He consequently lost his position, and the bishop had sent him to Kamouraska, where his past conduct was not so generally known. He was very good to me, and I soon loved him with sincere affection.

One day, about the beginning of the year 1822, he called me aside and said: "Mr. Varin (the parish priest) is in the habit of giving a great festival on his birthday. Now, the principal citizens of the village wish on the occasion to present him with a bouquet. I am appointed to write an address, and to choose some one to deliver it before the priest. You are the one whom I have chosen."

"But I am very young," I replied.

"Your youth will only give more interest to what we wish

to say and do," said the priest.

"Well, I have no objection to do so, provided the piece is not too long, and that I have it soon to learn it well."

It was already prepared. The time of delivering it soon came. The best society of Kamouraska, composed of about fifteen gentlemen and as many ladies, were assembled in the beautiful parlours of the parsonage. Mr. Varin was in their midst. Suddenly, Squire Paschal Tache, the seigneur of the parish, and his lady entered the room, holding me by each hand, and placed me in the midst of the guests. My head was crowned with flowers, for I was to represent the angel of the parish, whom the people had chosen to give to their vicar the expression of public admiration and gratitude. When the address was finished, I presented to the priest the bouquet.

Mr. Varin was moved to tears before hearing half of the address, and the eyes of many were moistened when the pastor, with a voice trembling and full of emotion, expressed his joy at being so appreciated by his parishioners.

As soon as the happy pastor had expressed his thanks, the ladies sang two or three beautiful songs. The door of the dining-room was then opened, and we could see a long table laden with the most delicious meats and wines.

I had never before been present at a priest's dinner. The honourable position given me at that little fete permitted me to see it in all its details.

Besides Mr. Varin and his vicar there were three other priests, who were artistically placed in the midst of the most beautiful ladies of the company. The ladies, after honouring us with their presence for an hour or so, left the table and retired to the drawing-room. Scarcely had the last lady disappeared when Mr. Varin rose: "Gentlemen, let us drink to the health of the amiable ladies, whose presence has thrown so many charms over the first part of our little fete."

Following the example of Mr. Varin, each guest filled and emptied his long wine-glass in honour of the ladies.

Squire Tache then proposed "The health of the most venerable and beloved priest of Canada, the Rev. Mr. Varin." Again the glasses were filled and emptied, except mine; for I had been placed at the side of my uncle Dionne, who, sternly looking at me as soon as I had emptied my first glass, said: "If you drink another I will send you from the table. A little boy like you should not drink, but only touch the glass with his lips."

It would have been difficult to count the healths which were drank after the ladies had left us.

When my turn to propose a health came I wished to be excused, but they would not exempt me. So I had to say about whose health I was most interested. I rose upon my two short legs, and turning to Mr. Varin, I said, "Let us drink to the health of our Holy Father, the Pope."

Nobody had yet thought of our Holy Father the Pope, and

the name mentioned under such circumstances by a child, appeared so droll to the priests and their merry guests that they burst into laughter, stamped their feet and shouted, "Bravo! bravo! To the health of the Pope!" Everyone stood up, and the glasses were filled and emptied as usual.

So many healths could not be drunk without their natural effect—intoxication. The first that was overcome was a priest, Noel by name. He was a tall man and a great drinker. I had noticed more than once, that instead of taking his wine-glass he drank from a large tumbler. The first symptoms of his intoxication, instead of drawing sympathy from his friends, only increased their noisy bursts of laughter. He endeavoured to take a bottle to fill his glass, but his hand shook, and the bottle, falling on the floor, was broken in pieces. Wishing to keep up his merriment he began to sing a Bacchic song, but could not finish. He dropped his head upon the table, quite overcome, and trying to rise, he fell heavily upon his chair. While all this took place the other priests and all the guests looked at him, laughing loudly. At last, making a desperate effort, he rose, but after taking two or three steps, fell headlong to the floor. His two neighbours went to help him, but they were not in a condition to help him. Twice they rolled with him under the table.

The first scene seemed strange enough to me, for I had never before seen a priest intoxicated. But what astonished me most was the laughter of the other priests over that spectacle. Another scene, however, soon followed which made me sadder. My young companion and friend, Achilles Tache, had not been warned, as I had, only to touch the wine with my lips. More than once he had emptied his glass. He also rolled upon the floor before the eyes of his father who was too full of wine to help him. He cried aloud, "I am choking!" I tried to lift him up, but I was not strong enough. I ran for his mother. She came accompanied by another lady, but the vicar had carried him into another room, where he fell asleep.

Poor Achilles! he was learning, in the house of his own priest to take the first step of that life of debauchery and drunkenness which twelve or fifteen years later was to rob him of his manor, take from him his wife and children, and to make him fall a victim to the bloody hand of a murderer.

When the priests and their friends had sung, laughed and drank for more than an hour, Mr. Varin rose and said: "The ladies must not be left alone all the evening. Will not our joy and happiness be doubled if they are pleased to share them with us?"

This proposition was received with applause, and we passed into the drawing-room, where the ladies awaited us. Several pieces of music, well executed, gave new life to this part of the entertainment. This resource, however was soon exhausted. Besides, some of the ladies could well see that their husbands were half drunk, and they felt ashamed. Madam Tache could not conceal the grief she felt, caused by what had happened

to her dear Achilles. Had she some presentiment, as many persons have, of the tears which she was to shed one day on his account ?

Mr. Varin feared nothing more than an interruption in those hours of lively pleasure, of which his life was full, and which took place in his parsonage. "Well, well, ladies and gentlemen, let us entertain no dark thoughts on this evening, the happiest of my life ! Let us play blind man's buff."

"Let us play blind man's buff !" was repeated by everybody.

On hearing the noise, the gentlemen who were half asleep by the fumes of wine seemed to awaken as if from a long dream.

"But whose eyes shall be covered first ?" asked the priest.

"Your's, Mr. Varin," cried all the ladies. "We look to you for the good example, and we shall follow it."

"The power and unanimity of the jury by which I am condemned cannot be resisted. I feel that there is no appeal."

Immediately one of the ladies placed her nicely perfumed handkerchief over the eyes of the priest, took him by the hand, led him to an angle of the room, and having pushed him gently with her delicate hand, said: "Mr. Blindman ! Let everyone flee ! Woe to him who is caught !"

The priest went to the right and then to the left, threw his arms suddenly now here and then there. His legs evidently bent under their burden ; he panted, perspired, coughed, and everyone began to fear that the trial might be carried too far, and beyond propriety. But suddenly, by a happy turn, he caught the arm of a lady who in teasing him had come too near. In vain the lady tries to escape. She struggles, turns round, but the priest's hand holds her firmly.

While holding his victim with his right hand he wishes to touch her head with his left, in order to know and name the pretty bird he had caught. But at that moment his legs gave way. He falls, and drags with him his beautiful parishioner, She turns upon him in order to escape, but he soon turns on her in order to hold her better.

All this, though the affair of a moment, was long enough to cause the ladies to blush and cover their faces. Never in all my life did I see anything so shameful as that scene. This ended the game. Everyone felt ashamed. I make a mistake when I say *everyone*, because the men were almost too intoxicated to blush. The priests also were either too drunk or too much accustomed to such scenes to be ashamed.

On the following day every one of those priests celebrated mass, and ate what they called the body and blood, the soul and divinity of Jesus Christ, just as if they had spent the previous evening in prayer and meditation on the laws of God.

CHAPTER VII.

The First Communion.

FOR the Roman Catholic child, how beautiful and yet how sad is the day of his first communion ! How many joys and anxieties by turn arise in his soul when for the first time he is about to eat what he has been taught to believe is his God ! How many efforts has he to make, in order to destroy the manifest teachings of his own rational faculties ! I confess with deep regret that I had almost destroyed my reason, in order to prepare myself for my first communion. Yes, I was almost exhausted when the day came that I had to eat what the priest had assured us was the true body, the true blood, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ. I was about to eat Him, not in a symbolical, or commemorative, but in a literal way. I was to eat His flesh, His bones, His hands, His feet, His head, His whole body ! I had to believe this or be cast for ever into hell, while, all the time, my eyes, my hands, my mouth, my tongue, my reason, told me that what I was eating was only bread !

Has there ever been, or will there ever be, a priest or a layman to believe what the Church of Rome teaches on this dreadful mystery of the Real Presence ? Shall I say that I believed in the real presence of Jesus Christ in the communion ? I believed in it as all those who are good Roman Catholics believe. Whatever is essential to a reasonable act of faith had been destroyed in me on that point, as it is destroyed in every priest and layman in the Church of Rome. My reason as well as my external senses had been, as much as possible, sacrificed at the feet of that terrible modern god, the Pope ! I had been guilty of the incredibly foolish act, of which all good Roman Catholics are guilty—I had said to my intellectual faculties, and to all my senses, "Hush ! you are liars ! I had believed to this day that you had been given to me by God in order to enable me to walk in the dark paths of life, but, behold ! the holy Pope teaches me that you are only instruments of the devil to deceive me !"

What is a man who resigns his intellectual liberty, and who cares not to believe in the testimony of his senses ? Is he not acting the part of one who has no gift or power or intelligence ? A good Roman Catholic must reach that point !

When Jesus said, "If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin ; but now they have no cloke for their sin : he that hateth Me hateth My Father also : if I had not done among them the works which no other man did, they had not had sin : but now have they both seen and hated Me and My Father" (John xv : 22-24), He showed that the sin of the Jews consisted in not having believed in what their eyes had seen and their ears had heard. But behold, the Pope says to Roman Catholics that they must not believe in what their hands undoubtedly handle and their eyes most clearly see ! The Pope sets aside the testimony most approved by Jesus.

As the moment of taking the communion drew near, two feelings were at war in my mind, each struggling for victory. I rejoiced in the thought that I would soon have full possession of Jesus Christ, but at the same time I was troubled and humbled by the absurdity which I had to believe before receiving that sacrament. Though scarcely twelve years old, I had sufficiently accustomed myself to reflect on the profound darkness which covered that dogma. I had been also greatly in the habit of trusting my eyes, and I thought that I could easily distinguish between a small piece of bread and a full-grown man ! Besides, I extremely abhorred the idea of eating human flesh and drinking human blood, even when they assured me that they were the flesh and blood of Jesus Christ Himself. But what troubled me most was the idea that God, who was represented to me as being so great, so glorious, so holy, being eaten by me like a piece of common bread ! Terrible then was the struggle in my young heart, where joy and dread, faith and unbelief, by turns had the upper hand.

While that secret struggle, known only to God and to myself, was going on I had often to wipe off the cold perspiration which came on my brow. With all the strength of my soul I prayed to God and the Holy Virgin to be merciful unto me.

The Church of Rome is evidently the most skilful human machine the world has ever seen. Those who guide her in the dark paths which she follows are often men of deep thought. They understand how difficult it would be to get calm, honest, and thinking minds to receive that monstrous dogma of the real corporal presence of Jesus Christ in the communion. They well foresaw the struggle which would take place even in the minds of children at the supreme moment when they would have to sacrifice their reason on the altar of Rome. In order to prevent those struggles, always so dangerous to the Church, nothing has been neglected to distract the mind and draw the attention to other subjects than that of the communion itself.

First, at the request of the parish priest, helped by the vanity of the parents themselves, the children are dressed as elegantly as possible. The young communicant is clothed in every way best calculated to flatter his own vanity also. The church building is pompously decorated. The charms of choice vocal and instrumental music form part of the fête. The most odorous incense burns around the altar and ascends in a sweet-smelling cloud towards heaven. The whole parish is invited, and people come from every direction to enjoy a most beautiful spectacle. Priests from neighbouring churches are called, in order to add to the solemnity of the day. The officiating priest is dressed in the most costly attire. This is the day on which silver and gold altar-cloths are displayed before the eyes of the wondering spectators. Often a lighted wax taper is placed in the hand of each young communicant, which itself would be sufficient to draw his whole attention ; for a single false motion would be sufficient to set fire to the clothes of his neighbour, or his own, a misfortune which has happened more than once in my presence.

Now, in the midst of that new and wonderful spectacle: of singing Latin psalms, not a word of which he understands; in view of gold and silver ornaments, which glitter everywhere before his dazzled eyes; busy with the holding of a lighted taper, which keeps him constantly in fear of being burned alive, can the young communicant think for a moment of what he is about to do?

Poor child! his mind, ears, eyes, nostrils, are so much taken up with these new, striking, and wonderful things that, while his imagination is wandering from one object to another, the moment of communion arrives, without leaving him time to think of what he is about to do! He opens his mouth and the priest puts upon his tongue a flat thin cake of unleavened bread, which either firmly sticks to his palate or melts in his mouth, soon to go down into his stomach just like the food he takes three times a day!

The first feeling of the child, then, is that of surprise at the thought that the Creator of heaven and earth, the Saviour of the world, could so easily pass down his throat!

Now, follow those children to their homes after that great and monstrous comedy. See their gait! Listen to their conversation and their bursts of laughter! Study their manners, their coming in, and their going out, their glances of satisfaction on their fine clothes, and the vanity which they manifest in return for the congratulations they receive on their fine dresses. Notice the lightness of their actions and conversation immediately after their communion, and tell me if you find anything indicating that they believed in the terrible dogma they have been taught!

No, they have not believed in it, neither will they ever do so with the firmness of faith which is accompanied by intelligence. The poor child thinks he believes, and he sincerely tries to do so. He believes in it as much as it is possible to believe in a most monstrous and ridiculous story, opposed to the simplest notions of truth and common sense.

That first communion has made of him, for the rest of his life, a real machine in the hands of the Pope. It is the first but most powerful link of that long chain of slavery which the priest and the Church pass around his neck. The Pope holds the end of that chain, and with it he will make his victim go right or left at his pleasure, in the same way that we govern the lower animals. If those children have made a good first communion they will be submissive to the Pope, according to the energetic word of Loyola. They will be in the hands of the Supreme Pontiff of Rome just what the stick is in the hand of the traveller—they will have no will, no thought of their own.

My soul has known the weight of those chains. It has felt the ignominy of that slavery! But the great Conqueror of souls has cast down a merciful eye upon me. He has broken my chains, and with His Holy Word He has made me free!

CHAPTER VIII.

Education in the Roman Catholic College.

I FINISHED, at the College of Nicolet, in the month of August, 1829, my classical course of study which I had begun in 1822. I could have learned in three or four years what was taught in those seven. It took us three years to study the Latin grammar, when twelve months would have sufficed for all we learned of it. It is true that during that time we were taught some of the rudiments of the French grammar, with the elements of arithmetic and geography. But all this was so superficial, that our teachers often seemed more desirous to pass away our time than to enlarge our understandings.

I can say the same thing of the *Belles Lettres* and of rhetoric, which we studied in two years. A year of earnest study would have sufficed to learn what was taught us during these twenty-four months. As for the two years devoted to the study of logic, and of the subjects classed under the name of philosophy, it would not have been too long a time if those questions of philosophy had been honestly given us. But the student in the college of the Church of Rome is condemned to the torments of Tantalus. He has indeed the refreshing waters of Science put to his lips, but he is constantly prevented from tasting them. To enlarge and seriously cultivate the intelligence in a Roman Catholic college is a thing absolutely out of the question. More than that, all the efforts of the principals in their colleges and convents tend to prove to the pupil that his intelligence is his greatest and most dangerous enemy—that it is like an untameable animal, which must constantly be kept in chains. Every day the scholar is told that his reason was not given him that he might be guided by it, but only that he might know the hand of the man by whom he must be guided. All the resources of language, all the most ingenious sophisms, all the passages of both the Fathers and the Holy Scriptures bearing on this question are arranged and perverted with inconceivable art to demonstrate to the pupil that his reason has no power to teach him anything else than that it must be subjected to the Supreme Pontiff of Rome, who is the only foundation of truth and light given by God to guide the intelligence.

Rome, in her colleges and convents, brings up, or raises up the youth from their earliest years; but to what height does she permit the young man or woman to be raised? Never higher than the feet of the Pope! As soon as his intelligence, guided by the Jesuits, has ascended to the feet of the Pope, it must remain there. The Pope! That is the great object towards which all the intelligence of the Roman Catholics must be converged. It is the sun of the world, the foundation and support of Christian civilisation.

What a privilege it is to be lazy, stupid, and sluggish in a college of Rome! How soon such an one gets to the summit

of science, and becomes master of all knowledge. ! One needs only to kiss the feet of the Pope, and fall into a perfect slumber there. The Pope thinks for him ! It is he (the Pope) who will tell him what he can and should think, and what he can and should believe !

Though my intelligence often revolted against the fables with which I was nurtured, I yet forced myself to accept them as Gospel truths ; and though I often rebelled against the ridiculous sophisms which were babbled to me as the only principles of truth and Christian philosophy, yet as often did I impose silence on my reason, and force it to submit to the falsehoods which I was obliged to take for God's truth ! But, as I have just confessed it, notwithstanding my goodwill to submit to my superiors, there were times of terrible struggle in my soul, when all the powers of my mind seemed to revolt against the degrading fetters which I was forced to forge.

I shall never forget the day when, in the following terms, I expressed to my Professor of Philosophy, the Rev. Charles Harper, doubts which I had conceived concerning the absolute necessity of the inferior to submit his reason to his superior : "When I shall have completely bound myself to obey my superior, if he abuses his authority over me to deceive me by false doctrines, or if he commands me to do things which I consider wrong and dishonest, shall I not be lost if I obey him ? "

He answered : "You will never have to give an account to God for the actions that you do by the order of your legitimate superiors. If they were to deceive you, being themselves deceived, *they alone* would be responsible for the error, which you would have committed. Your sin would not be imputed to you as long as you follow the golden rule which is the base of all Christian philosophy and perfection—humility and obedience ! "

Little satisfied with that answer, when the lesson was over I expressed my reluctance to accept such principles to several of my fellow students. Among them was Joseph Turcot, who died some years ago when, I think, he was Minister of Public Works in Canada. He answered me : "The more I study what they call their principles of Christian philosophy and logic, the more I think that they intend to make asses of every one of us ! "

On the following day I opened my heart to the venerable man who was our principal—the Rev. Mr. Leprohon. I used to venerate him as a saint and to love him as a father. I frankly told him that I felt very reluctant in submitting myself to the crude principles which seemed to lead us into the most abject slavery of our reason and intelligence. I wrote down his answer :

"My dear Chiniquy, how did Adam and Eve lose themselves in the Garden of Eden, and how did they bring upon us all the deluge of evils by which we are overwhelmed ? Is it not because they raised their miserable reason above that of God ? They had the promise of eternal life if they had submitted their

reason to that of their Supreme Master. They were lost on account of their rebelling against the authority, the reason of God. Thus it is to-day. All the evils, the errors, the crimes by which the world is overflowed come from the same revolt of the human will and reason against the will and reason of God. God reigns yet over a part of the world, the world of the elect, through the Pope, who controls the teachings of our infallible and holy Church. In submitting ourselves to God, who speaks to us through the Pope, we are saved. We walk in the paths of truth and holiness. But we would err, and infallibly perish, as soon as we put our reason above that of our superior, the Pope, speaking to us in person, or through some of our superiors who have received from him the authority to guide us."

"But," said I, "if my reason tells me that the Pope, or some of those other superiors who are put by him over me, are mistaken, and that they command me something wrong, would I not be guilty before God if I obey them?"

"You suppose a thing utterly impossible," answered Mr. Leprohon, "for the Pope and the bishops who are united to him have the promise of never failing in the faith. They cannot lead you into any errors, nor command you anything against the law of God. But supposing for a moment that they would commit any error, and that they would compel you to believe or do something contrary to the teachings of the Gospel, God would not ask of you any account of an error committed when you are obeying your legitimate superior."

I had to content myself with that answer, which I put down word for word in my note-book. But in spite of my respectful silence, the Rev. Mr. Leprohon saw that I was yet uneasy and sad. In order to convince me of the orthodoxy of his doctrines, he instantly put into my hands the two works of De Maistre, *Le Pape*, and *Les Soirées de St. Petersbourg*, where I found the same doctrines supported. My superior was honest in his convictions. He sincerely believed in the sound philosophy and Christianity of his principles, for he had found them in these books approved by the "infallible Popes."

I will mention another occurrence to show the inconceivably intellectual degradation to which we had been dragged at the end of seven years of collegiate studies. About the year 1829 the curate of St. Anne de la Parade wrote to our principal to ask the assistance of the prayers of all the students of the College of Nicolet in order to obtain the discontinuance of the following calamity: "For more than three weeks one of the most respectable farmers was in danger of losing all his horses from the effects of sorcery! From morning to night, and during most of the night, repeated blows of whips and sticks were heard falling upon these poor horses, which were trembling, foaming, and struggling! We can see nothing! The hand of the wizard remains invisible. Pray for us, that we may discover the monster, and that he may be punished as he deserves."

Such were the contents of the priest's letter ; and as my superior sincerely believed in that fable I also believed it, as well as all the students of the college who had a *true piety*. On that shore of abject and degrading superstitions I had to land after sailing seven years in the bark called a college of the Church of Rome !

I know that the priests of Rome can show a certain number of intelligent men in every branch of science who have studied in their colleges. But these remarkable men had from the beginning secretly broken for themselves the chains with which their superiors had tried to bind them. For peace sake they had outwardly followed the rules of the house, but they had secretly trampled under the feet of their noble souls the ignoble fetters which had been prepared for their understanding.

Give me the names of the remarkable and intelligent men who have studied in a college of Rome, and have become real lights in the firmament of science, and I will prove that nine-tenths of them have been persecuted, excommunicated, tortured, some even put to death for having dared to think for themselves.

Galileo was a Roman Catholic, and he is surely one of the greatest men whom science claims as her most gifted sons. But was he not sent to a dungeon ? Was he not publicly flogged by the hands of the executioner ? Had he not to ask pardon from God and man for having dared to think differently from the Pope about the motion of the earth around the sun ?

Copernicus was surely one of the greatest lights of his time, but was he not censured and excommunicated for his admirable scientific discoveries ?

France does not know any greater genius among her most gifted sons than Pascal. He was a Catholic. But he lived and died ex-communicated.

The Church of Rome boasts of Bossuet, the Bishop of Meaux, as one of the greatest men she ever had. Yes ; but has not Veuillot, the editor of *L'Univers*, who knows his man, confessed and declared before the whole world that Bossuet was a disguised Protestant ?

Where can we find a more amiable or learned writer than Montalembert, who has so faithfully and bravely fought the battle of the Church of Rome in France during more than a quarter of a century ? But has he not publicly declared on his death-bed that that Church was an apostate and idolatrous Church from the day that she proclaimed the dogma of the Infallibility of the Pope ? Has he not virtually died an ex-communicated man for having said with his last breath that the Pope was nothing else than a false God ?

Voltaire studied in a Roman Catholic college, and it was probably when at their school that he nerved himself for the terrible battle he has fought against Rome. That Church will never recover from the blow which Voltaire has struck at her in France.

Cavour, in Italy, had studied in a Roman Catholic college also, and under that very roof it is more than probable that

his noble intelligence had sworn to break the ignominious fetters with which Rome had enslaved his fair country.

Papineau studied under the priests of Rome in their college at Montreal. From his earliest years that Eagle of Canada could see and know the priests of Rome as they are; he had weighed them in the balance; he fathomed the dark recesses of their anti-social principles; he felt his shoulders wounded and bleeding under the ignominious chains with which they dragged Canada in the mire for nearly two centuries. Papineau was a pupil of the priests; and I have heard several priests boasting of that as a glorious thing. But the echoes of Canada are still repeating the thundering words with which Papineau denounced the priests as the most deadly enemies of the education and liberty of Canada! He was one of the first men of Canada to understand that there was no progress, no liberty possible for our beloved country so long as the priests would have the education of our people in their hands. The whole life of Papineau was a struggle to wrest Canada from their grasp. Everyone knows how he constantly branded them, without pity, during his life, and the whole world has been witness of the supreme contempt with which he refused their services, and turned them out at the hour of his death!

When, in 1792, France wanted to be free, she understood that the priests of Rome were the greatest enemies of her liberties. She turned them out from her soil or hung them on her gibbets.

Canada's children will continue to flee from the country of their birth so long as the priest of Rome holds the influence which is blasting everything that falls within his grasp, on this continent as well as in Europe; and the United States will soon see their most sacred institutions fall, one after another, if the Americans continue to send their sons and daughters to the Jesuit colleges and nunneries.

The colleges and nunneries of the priests are the secret places where the enemies of progress, equality and liberty are holding their councils and fomenting that great conspiracy the object of which is to enslave the world at the feet of the Pope.

The colleges and nunneries of Rome are the schools where the rising generations are taught that it is an impiety to follow the dictates of their own conscience, hear the voice of their intelligence, read the Word of God, and worship their Creator according to the rules laid down in the Gospel.

It is in the colleges and nunneries of Rome that men learn that they are created to obey the Pope in everything—that the Bible must be burnt, and that liberty must be destroyed at any cost all over the world.

CHAPTER IX.

Moral and Religious Instruction in Roman Catholic Colleges.

IN order to understand what kind of moral education students in Roman Catholic colleges receive, one must only be told that from the beginning to the end they are surrounded by an atmosphere in which nothing but paganism is breathed. The models of eloquence which we learned by heart were almost exclusively taken from pagan literature. In the same manner pagan models of wisdom, of honour, of chastity were offered to our admiration. Our minds were constantly fixed on the masterpieces which paganism has left. The doors of our understanding were left open only to receive the rays of light which paganism has shed on the world. Homer, Socrates, Lycurgus, Virgil, Horace, Cicero, Tacitus, Cæsar, Xenophon, Demosthenes, Alexander, Lucretia, Regulus, Brutus, Jupiter, Venus, Minerva, Mars, Diana, etc., etc., crowded each other in our thoughts.

It may be said that the same pagan writers, orators and heroes are studied, read and admired in Protestant colleges. But there the infallible antidote, the Bible, is given to the student. Just as nothing remains of the darkness of night after the splendid morning sun has arisen on the horizon, so nothing of the fallacies, superstitions and sophisms of Paganism can trouble or obscure the mind on which that light from heaven, the Word of God, comes every day with its millions of shining rays. How insignificant is the poetry of Homer when compared with the sublime songs of Moses ! How pale is the eloquence of Demosthenes, Cicero, Virgil, etc., when read after Job, David, or Solomon ! How quickly crumble down the theories which those haughty heathens of old wanted to raise over the intelligence of men when the thundering voice from Sinai is heard ; when the incomparable songs of David, Solomon, Isaiah or Jeremiah are ravishing the soul !

But alas ! for me and my fellow-students in the college of Rome ! No sun ever appeared on the horizon to dispel the night in which our intelligence was wrapped. The dark clouds with which Paganism had surrounded us were suffocating us, and no breath from heaven was allowed to come and dispel them. Moses with his incomparable legislation, David and Solomon with their divine poems, Job with his celestial philosophy, Jeremiah, Isaiah, and Daniel with their sublime songs, Jesus Christ Himself with His soul-saving Gospel, as well as His apostles Peter, John, Jude, James and Paul—these were all put on the Index ! They had the liberty to speak to us, and we were forbidden to read and hear them !

It is true that the Church of Rome, as an offset to that, gave us her principles, precepts, fables and legends, that we might be attached to her, and that she might remain the mistress of our hearts. But these doctrines, practices, principles and fables seemed to us so evidently borrowed from Paganism—they were so cold, so naked, so stripped of all true poetry, that if the

Paganism of the ancients was not left absolute master of our affections, it still claimed a large part of our souls. To create in us a love for the Church of Rome our superiors depended greatly on the works of Chateaubriand. The *Gene du Christianisme* was the book of books to dispel all our doubts, and attach us to the Pope's religion. But this author, whose style is sometimes really beautiful, destroyed by the weakness of his logic, the Christianity which he wanted to build up. We could easily see that Chateaubriand was not sincere, and his exaggerations were to many of us a sure indication that he did not believe in what he said. The works of De Maistre, the most impudent history-falsificator of France, were also put into our hands as a sure guide in our philosophical and historical studies. The *Memoirs du Conte Valmont*, with some authors of the same stamp, were much relied upon by our superiors to prove to us that the dogmas, precepts and practices of the Roman Catholic religion were brought from heaven.

For instance, our superiors had convinced us that scapulars, medals, holy water, etc., would be of great service to us in battling with the most dangerous temptations, as well as in avoiding the most common dangers of life. Consequently we all had scapulars and medals, which we kept with the greatest respect, and even kissed morning and evening with affection, as if they were powerful instruments of the mercy of God to us. How great, then, was our confusion and disappointment when we discovered in the Greek and Latin historians that those scapulars and medals and statuettes were nothing but a remnant of Paganism, and that the worshippers of Jupiter, Minerva, Diana and Venus believed themselves also free, as we did, from all calamity when they carried them in honour of these divinities ! The further we advanced in the study of Pagan antiquity, the more we were forced to believe that our religion, instead of being born at the foot of Calvary, was only a pale and awkward imitation of Paganism. The modern Pontifex Maximus (the Pope of Rome), who, as we were assured, was the successor of St. Peter, the Vicar of Jesus Christ, resembled the "Pontifex Maximus" of the great republic and empire of Rome as much as two drops of water resemble each other. Had not our Pope preserved not only the name, but also the attributes, the pageantry, the pride, and even the garb of that high Pagan priest ? Was not the worship of the saints absolutely the same as the worship of the demigods of olden time ? Was not our purgatory minutely described by Virgil ? Were not our prayers to the Virgin and to the saints repeated, almost in the same words, by the worshippers who prostrated themselves before the images of their gods, just as we repeated them every day before the images which adorn our churches ? Was not our holy water in use among the idolators, and for the same purpose for which it was used among us ?

We knew by history the year in which the magnificent temple consecrated to *all the gods*, bearing the name of Pantheon,

had been built at Rome. We were acquainted with the names of several of the sculptors who had carved the statues of the gods in that heathen temple, at whose feet the idolators bowed respectfully, and words cannot express the shame we felt on learning that the Roman Catholics of our day, under the very eyes and with the sanction of the Pope, still prostrated themselves before the SAME IDOLS, in the SAME TEMPLE, and to obtain the SAME FAVOURS.

When we asked each other the question, "What is the difference between the religion of heathen Rome and that of Rome to-day?" more than one student would answer: "The only difference is in the name. The idolatrous temples are the same; the idols have not left their places. To-day, as formerly, the same incense burns in their honour! Nations are still prostrated at their feet to give them the same homage and to ask of them the same favours; but instead of calling this statue Jupiter, we call it Peter; and instead of calling that one Minerva or Venus, we call it St. Mary."

I earnestly desired to be an honest and sincere Roman Catholic. These impressions and thoughts distracted me greatly, inasmuch as I could find nothing in reason to diminish their force. Unfortunately, many of the books placed in our hands by our superiors to confirm our faith, form our moral character, and sustain our piety and our confidence in the dogmas of the Church of Rome, had a frightful resemblance to the histories I had read of the gods and goddesses. The miracles attributed to the Virgin Mary often appeared to be only a reproduction of the tricks and deceits by which the priests of Jupiter, Venus, Minerva, etc., used to obtain their ends and grant the requests of their worshippers.

I could cite hundreds of such miracles which shocked my faith and caused me to blush in secret at the conclusion to which I was forced to come, in comparing the worship of ancient and modern Rome. I will only quote two of these modern miracles, which are to be found in one of the books the best approved by the Pope, entitled, *The Glories of Mary*.

First miracle. "The great favours bestowed by the Holy Virgin upon a nun named Beatrix, of the Convent of Frontebraldo, show how merciful she is to sinners. This fact is related by Cesanus and by Father Rho. This unfortunate nun, having been possessed by a criminal passion for a young man, determined to leave her convent and elope with him. She was the doorkeeper of the convent, and having placed the keys at the feet of a statue of the Holy Virgin, she boldly went out, then led a life of prostitution during fifteen years.

"One day, accidentally meeting the purveyor of her convent, and thinking she would not be recognised by him, she asked him news of Sister Beatrix.

"'I know her well,' answered this man, 'she is a holy nun, and is mistress of the novices.'

"At these words Beatrix was confused; but to understand what it meant, she changed her clothing, and going to the

convent inquired after Sister Beatrix.

"The Holy Virgin instantly appeared to her in the form of the statue at whose feet she had placed the keys at her departure. The Divine Mother spoke to her in this wise: 'Know, Beatrix, that in order to preserve your honour I have taken your place and done your duty since you have left your convent. My daughter, return to God and be penitent, for my Son is still waiting for you. Try, by the holiness of your life, to preserve the good reputation which I have earned you.' Having thus spoken, the Holy Virgin disappeared. Beatrix re-entered the convent, donned her religious dress, and, grateful for the mercies of Mary, she led the life of a saint." (*Glories of Mary*, chap. vi. sec. 2).

Second miracle. Rev. Father Rierenberg relates that there existed in a city called Aragona a beautiful and noble girl by the name of Alexandra, whom two young men loved passionately. One day, maddened by the jealousy each one had of the other, they fought together, and both were killed. Their parents were so infuriated at the young girl, the author of these calamities, that they killed her, cut her head off, and threw her into a well. A few days after, St. Dominic, passing by the place, was inspired to approach the well and to cry out, "Alexandra, come here!" The head of the deceased immediately placed itself upon the edge of the well, and entreated St. Dominic to hear its confession. Having heard it, the Saint gave her the communion in the presence of a great multitude of people, and then he commanded her to tell them why she had received so great a favour. She answered that though she was in a state of mortal sin when she was decapitated, yet as she had a habit of reciting the holy rosary, the Virgin had preserved her life.

The head, full of life, remained on the edge of the well two days before the eyes of a great many people, and then the soul went to purgatory. But fifteen days after this the soul of Alexandra appeared to St. Dominic, bright and beautiful as a star, and told him that one of the surest means of removing souls from purgatory was the recitation of the rosary in their favour. (*Glories of Mary*, chap. viii. sec. 2).

Persons who have never studied in a Roman Catholic college will hardly believe that such fables were told us as an appeal for us to become Christians. But, God knows, I tell the truth. Is it not a profanation of a holy word to say that Christianity is the religion taught the students in Rome's Colleges?

During the last years of my studies my superiors often confided to me the charge of the library. Once it happened that, as the students were taking a holiday, I remained alone in the college, and shutting myself in the library I began to examine all the books. I was not a little surprised to discover that the books which were most proper to instruct us stood on the catalogue of the library marked among the forbidden books. I felt an inexpressible shame on seeing with my own eyes that none but the most indifferent books were placed in our hands—

that we were permitted to read authors of the third rank only (if this expression is suitable to such whose only merit consisted in flattering the Popes, and in concealing or excusing their crimes). Several students more advanced than myself had already made the observations to me.

Among the forbidden books of the college I found a splendid Bible. It seemed to be of the same edition as the one whose perusal had made the hours pass away so pleasantly when I was at home with my mother. I seized it with the transports of a miser finding a lost treasure. I lifted it to my lips, and kissed it respectfully. I pressed it against my heart, as one embraces a friend from whom he has long been separated.

The next day Rev. Mr. Leprohon, our director, called me to his room during the recreation, and said: "You seem to be troubled, and very sad to-day. I noticed that you remained alone while the other scholars were enjoying themselves so well. Have you any cause of grief? or are you sick?"

I could not sufficiently express my love and respect for this venerable man. He was at the same time my friend and benefactor. For four years he and Rev. Mr. Brassard had been paying my board; for, owing to a misunderstanding between myself and my uncle Dionne, he had ceased to maintain me at college. By reading the Bible the previous day I had disobeyed my benefactor, Mr. Leprohon; for when he entrusted me with the care of the library he made me promise not to read the books in the forbidden catalogue.

It was painful to me to sadden him by acknowledging that I had broken my word of honour, but it pained me far more to deceive him by concealing the truth. I therefore answered him: "You are right in supposing that I am uneasy and sad. I confess there is one thing which perplexes me greatly among the rules that govern us. I never dared to speak to you about it; but as you wish to know the cause of my sadness, I will tell you. You have placed in our hands, not only to read, but to learn by heart, books, which are, as you know, partly inspired by hell, and you forbid us to read the only book whose every word is sent from heaven! You permit us to read books dictated by the Spirit of darkness and sin, and you make it a crime for us to read the only book written under the dictation of the Spirit of light and holiness. This conduct on your part, and on the part of all the superiors of the college, disturbs and scandalizes me! Shall I tell you, your dread of the Bible shakes my faith."

Mr. Leprohon answered me: "I have been the director of this college for more than twenty years, and I have never heard from the lips of any of the students such remarks and complaints as you are making to me to-day. Have you no fear of being the victim of a deception of the devil, in meddling with a question so strange and so new for a scholar whose only aim should be to obey his superiors?"

"It may be," said I, "that I am the first to speak to you in this manner, for it is very probable that I am the only student

in this college who has read the Holy Bible in his youthful days. I have already told you there was a Bible in my father's house, which disappeared only after his death, though I never could know what became of it. I can assure you that the perusal of that admirable book has done me a good that is still felt. It is, therefore, because I know by a personal experience that there is no book in the world so good, and so proper to be read, that I am extremely grieved, and even scandalized by the dread you have of it. I acknowledge to you I spent the afternoon of yesterday in the library reading the Bible. I found things in it which made me weep for joy and happiness—things that did more good to my soul and heart than all you have given me to read for six years. And I am so sad to-day because you approve of me when I read the words of the devil, and condemn me when I read the Word of God."

My superior answered: "Since you have read the Bible, you must know that there are things in it on matters of such a delicate nature that it is improper for a young man, and more so for a young lady to read them."

"I understand," answered I; "but these delicate matters of which you do not want God to speak a word to us, you know very well that Satan speaks to us about them day and night. Now, when Satan speaks about and attracts our thoughts towards an evil and criminal thing, it is always in order that we may like it and be lost. But when the God of Purity speaks to us of evil things (of which it is pretty much impossible for men and women to be ignorant), He does it that we may hate and abhor them, and He gives us grace to avoid them. Well, then, since you cannot prevent the devil from whispering to us things so delicate and dangerous to seduce us, how dare you hinder God from speaking of the same things to shield us from their allurements?"

Though Mr. Leprohon's intelligence was as much wrapped up in the darkness of the Church of Rome as it could be, his heart had remained honest and true; and while I respected and loved him as my father, though differing from him in opinion, I knew he loved me as if I had been his own child. He was thunderstruck by my answer. He turned pale, and I saw tears about to flow from his eyes. He sighed deeply, and looked at me some time reflectingly, without answering. At last he said: "My dear Chiniquy, your answer and your arguments have a force that frightens me, and if I had no other but my own personal ideas to disprove them, I acknowledge I do not know how I would do it. But I have something better than my own weak thoughts. I have the thoughts of the Church, and of our Holy Father the Pope. *They forbid us to put the Bible into the hands of our students.* This should suffice to put an end to your troubles. To obey his legitimate superiors in all things and everywhere is the rule a Christian scholar like you should follow; and if you have broken it yesterday, I hope it will be the last time."

CHAPTER X.

Protestant Children in the Nunneries of Rome.

WE read in the history of Paganism that parents were often, in those dark ages, slaying their children upon the altars of their gods, to appease their wrath or obtain their favours. But we now see a stranger thing. It is that of Christian parents forcing their children into the temples and to the very feet of the idols of Rome, under the fallacious notion of having them educated ! While the Pagan parent destroyed only the temporal life of his child, the Christian parent, for the most part, destroys his eternal life. The Pagan was consistent : he believed in the almighty power and holiness of his gods ; he sincerely THOUGHT that they ruled the world, and that they blessed both the victims and those who offered them. But where is the consistency of the Protestant who drags his child and offers him as a sacrifice on the altars of the Pope ! Does he believe in his holiness or in his supreme and infallible power of governing the intelligence ? Then why does he not go and throw himself at his feet and increase the number of his disciples ? The Protestants who are guilty of this great wrong are wont to say, as an excuse, that the superiors of colleges and convents have assured them that their religious convictions would be respected, and that nothing should be said or done to take away or even shake the religion of the children. Our first parents were not more cruelly deceived by the seductive words of the serpent than the Protestants are this day by the deceitful promises of the priests and nuns of Rome.

I had been myself a witness of the promise given by our superior to a judge of the State of New York, when, a few days later, that same superior, the Rev. Mr. Leprohon, said to me, " You know some English, and this young man knows French enough to enable you to understand each other. Try to become his friend and to bring him over to our holy religion. His father is a most influential man in the United States, and this, his only son, is the heir to an immense fortune. Great results for the future of the Church in the neighbouring republic might follow his conversion."

I replied : " Have you not forgotten the promise you have made to his father, never to say or do anything to shake or take away the religion of this young man ? "

My superior smiled at my simplicity, and said : " When you shall have studied theology you will know that Protestantism is not a religion, but that it is the negation of religion. Protesting cannot be the basis of any doctrine. Thus, when I promised Judge Pike that the religious convictions of his child should be respected, and that I would not do anything to change his faith, I did promise the easiest thing in the world, since I promised not to meddle with a thing *which had no existence.*"

Convinced, or rather blinded by the reasoning of my superior, which is the reasoning of every superior of a college or nun-

nery, I set myself to work from that moment to make a good Roman Catholic of that young friend; and I would probably have succeeded had not a serious illness forced him, a few months after, to go home, where he died.

Protestants who may read these lines will, perhaps be indignant against the deceit and knavery of the Superior of the College of Nicolet. But I will say to those Protestants, It is not on that man, but on yourselves, that you must pour out your contempt. The Rev. Mr. Leprohon was honest. He acted conformably to principles which he thought good and legitimate, and for which he would have cheerfully given the last drop of his blood. He sincerely believed that your Protestantism is a mere negation of all religion, worthy of the contempt of every true Christian. It was not the first priest of Rome who was contemptible, dishonest, and a traitor to his principles, but it was the Protestant who was false to his Gospel and to his own conscience by having his child educated by the servants of the Pope. Moreover, can we not truthfully say that the Protestant who wishes to have his children bred and educated by a Jesuit or a nun is *a man of no religion?* and that nothing is more ridiculous than to hear such a man begging respect for his *religious principles!* A man's ardent desire to have his religious convictions respected is best known by respecting them himself.

The Protestant who drags his children to the feet of the priests of Rome is either a disguised infidel or a hypocrite. It is simply ridiculous for such a man to speak of his religious convictions or beg respect for them. His very humble position at the feet of a Jesuit or a nun, begging respect for his faith, is a sure testimony that he has none to lose. If he had any He would not be there, an humble and abject suppliant. He would take care to be where there could be no danger to his dear child's immortal soul.

When I was in the Church of Rome, we often spoke of the necessity of making superhuman efforts to attract young Protestants into our colleges and nunneries, as the shortest and only means of ruling the world before long. And as the mother has in her hands, still more than the father, the destinies of the family and of the world, we were determined to sacrifice everything in order to build nunneries all over the land, where the young girls, the future mothers of our country, would be moulded in our hands.

One day I had embarked in the boat of a fisherman on the coast of one of those beautiful islands which the hand of God has placed at the mouth of the Gulf of St. Lawrence. In a few minutes the white sail, full-blown by the morning breeze, had carried us nearly a mile from the shore. There we dropped our anchor, and soon our lines carried by the current, offered the deceitful bait to the fishes. But not one would come. One would have thought that the sprightly inhabitants of these limpid waters had acted in concert to despise us. In vain did we move our lines to and fro to attract the attention of

the fishes ; not one would come ! We were tired. We lamented the prospect of losing our time, and of being laughed at by our friends on the shore who were waiting the result of our fishing to dine. Nearly one hour was spent in this manner, when the Captain said, "Indeed, I will make the fishes come."

Opening a box, he took out handfuls of little pieces of fishes and threw them broadcast on the water.

I was looking at him with curiosity, and I received with a feeling of unbelief the promise of seeing, in a few moments, more mackerel than I could pick up. These particles of fish, falling upon the water, scattered themselves in a thousand different ways. The rays of the sun, sporting among these numberless fragments, and thousands of scales, gave them a singular whiteness and brilliancy. They appeared like a thousand diamonds, full of movement and life, that sported and rolled themselves, running at each other, while rocking upon the waves. As these innumerable little objects withdrew from us they looked like the milky way in the firmament. The rays of the sun continued to be reflected upon the scales of the fishes in the water, and to transform them into as many pearls, whose whiteness and splendour made an agreeable contrast to the deep green colour of the sea.

While looking at that spectacle, which was so new to me, I felt my line jerked out of my hands, and soon had the pleasure of seeing a magnificent mackerel lying at my feet. My companions were as fortunate as I was. The bait so generously thrown away had perfectly succeeded in bringing us not only hundreds, but thousands of fishes, and we caught as many of them as the boat could carry.

The Jesuits and the nuns are the Pope's cleverest fishermen, and the Protestants are the mackerel caught upon their baited hooks. Never fishermen knew better to prepare the perfidious bait than the nuns and Jesuits, and never were more stupid fishes caught than Protestants in general.

"But," say many Protestants, "where can we get safer securities than the morals of our girls will be sheltered than in those convents ? The faces of those good nuns, their angelic smiles, even their lips, from which seems to flow a perfume from heaven—are not these the unfailing signs that nothing will taint the hearts of our dear children when they are under the care of those holy nuns ?"

I believed myself for a long time that there was something true in all the display of peace and happiness which I saw reflected in the faces of a good number of nuns. But how soon my delusions passed away when I read with my own eyes, in a book of the *secret rules* of the convent, that one of their rules is *always*, especially in the presence of strangers, to have an appearance of joy and happiness, even when the soul is overwhelmed with grief and sorrow ! The motives given to the nuns, for thus wearing a continual mask, is to secure the esteem and respect of the people, and to win more securely the young ladies to the convent !

The nun in her cell is forced to play a sacrilegious comedy to deceive the world and to bring new recruits to the monastery. And the Protestants, the disciples of the Gospel, the children of light, suffer themselves to be deceived by this impious comedy. The poor nun's heart is often full of sorrow, and her soul is drowned in a sea of desolation; but she is obliged, under oath, always to appear gay! Unfortunate victim of the most cruel deception that has ever been invented, that poor daughter of Eve, deprived of all the happiness that heaven has given, tortured night and day by honest aspirations which she is told are unpardonable sins, she has not only to suppress in herself the few buds of happiness which God has left in her soul; but, what is more cruel, she is forced to appear happy in anguish of shame and of deception.

Ah! if the Protestants could know, as I do, how much the hearts of those nuns bleed, how almost every one of them dies at an early age, broken-hearted, instead of speaking of their happiness and holiness they would weep at their profound misery. Instead of helping Satan to build up and maintain those sad dungeons by giving both their gold and their children, they would let them crumble into dust, and thus check the torrents of silent though bitter tears which those cells hide from our view.

Protestants! when upon life's way you are tempted to admire the smiling lips and unstained faces of the Pope's nuns, please think of those charming lakes which I saw in the prairies of Illinois, and remember the innumerable reptiles and toads that swarm at the bottom of those deceitful waters. When, by the light of divine truth, Protestants see behind these perfect mockeries by which the nun conceals with so much care the hideous misery which devours her heart, they will understand the folly of having permitted themselves to be so easily deceived by appearances. Then they will bitterly weep for having sacrificed to that modern Paganism the future welfare of their children, of their families and of their country!

"But," says one, "the education is so cheap in the nunnery." I answer, "The education in convents, were it twice cheaper than it is now, would still cost twice more than it is worth. It is in this circumstance that we can repeat and apply the old proverb. 'Cheap things are always too highly paid for.'" In the first place, the intellectual education in the nunnery is completely null. The great object of the Pope and the nuns is to captivate and destroy the intelligence. The moral education is also of no account; for what kind of morality can a young girl receive from a nun who believes that she can live as she pleases as long as she likes it—that nothing evil can come of her, neither in this life or the next, provided only she is devout to the Virgin Mary?

Let Protestants read the *Glories of Mary*, by St. Liguori, a book which is in the hands of every nun and every priest, and they will understand what kind of morality is practised and taught inside the walls of the Church of Rome.

CHAPTER XI.

Rome and Education.

THE word EDUCATION is a beautiful word. It comes from the Latin *educare*, which means to raise up, to take from the lowest degrees to the highest spheres of knowledge. The object of education is, then, to feed, expand, raise, enlighten, and strengthen the intelligence. We hear the Roman Catholic priest making use of that beautiful word education as often, if not oftener, than the Protestant. But that word "education" has a very different meaning among the followers of the Pope than among the disciples of the Gospel.

The meaning of the word education among Protestants is as far from the meaning of the same word among Roman Catholics as the southern pole is from the northern pole. When a Protestant speaks of Education, that word is used and understood in its true sense. When he sends his little boy to a Protestant school, he honestly desires that he should be reared up in the spheres of knowledge as much as his intelligence will allow. When that little boy is going to school, he soon feels that he has been raised up to some extent, and he experiences a sincere joy, a noble pride, for this new, though at first very modest raising; but he naturally understands that this new and modest upheaval is only a stone to step on and raise himself to a higher degree of knowledge, and he quickly makes that second step with an unspeakable pleasure. When the son of a Protestant has acquired a little knowledge, he wants to acquire more. When he has learned what *this* means, he wants to know what *that* means also. Like the young eagle, he trims his wings for a higher flight, and turns his head upward to go farther up in the atmosphere of knowledge. A noble and mysterious ambition has suddenly seized his young soul. Then he begins to feel something of that unquenchable thirst for knowledge which God Himself has put in the breast of every child of Adam.

When God created man in His own image, He endowed him with an intelligence and moral faculties worthy of the high dignity of His own beloved children. He Himself put in us aspirations and instincts by which we were to be constantly longing after the oceans of light, truth and knowledge, whose waves wash His eternal throne. It is that thirst after more knowledge, that constant longing after more light, which constitutes the difference between man and brute. Man has received from God an intelligence which, though clouded now by sin, is to him what the helm is to the ship which crosses the boundless ocean; he has a conscience, an immortal soul which binds him to God, and he feels it. His destinies are glorious, they are infinite, and he knows it. Though a dethroned king, he feels that he is still a king. The 6,000 years which have passed over him since his fall have not yet effaced the kingly title which God Himself wrote on his forehead,

when He told him, "Multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it" (Gen. i: 28). With that glorious, that divine mission of subduing the air and the light, the wind and the waves, the seas and the earth, the roaring thunder and the flashing lightning, constantly before his eyes, man marches to the conquest of the world with the calm certitude of his power and the glorious aspirations of his royal dignity.

The object of education, then, is to enable man to fulfil that kingly mission of ruling, subduing the world, under the eyes of his Creator. Let us remember that it is not from himself, nor from any angel, but it is from God Himself that man has received that sublime mission. Yes, it is God Himself who has implanted in the bosom of humanity the knowledge and aspirations of those splendid destinies which can be attained only by "Education."

It ought to be a duty with both Roman Catholics and Protestants to assist the pupil in his flight towards the regions of science and learning. But is it so? No. When you, Protestants, send your children to school, you put no fetters to their intelligence; they rise with fluttering wings day after day. Though their flight at first is slow and timid, how happy they feel at every new aspect of their intellectual horizon!

He has now reached what he thought, at first, to be the highest regions of thought and knowledge; but he hears again the same stimulating cries from below, encouraging him to still higher flight towards the loftiest dominion of knowledge and philosophy, till he enters the regions where lies the source of all truth, and light and life. For he has also heard the voice of his God speaking through His Son Jesus Christ, crying, "Come unto Me! Fear not! Come unto Me! I am the Light, the Way! Come to this *higher* region where the Father, with the Son and the Spirit, reign in endless light." Thus does the Protestant scholar, making use of his intelligence as the eagle of his wing, go on from weakness unto strength, from the timid flutter to the bold, confident flight, from one degree to another still higher, from one region of knowledge to another still higher, till he loses himself in that ocean of light and truth and life which is God.

Thus it is that the only truly *great* nations in the world are Protestants! Thus it is the truly *powerful* nations in the world are Protestants! Thus it is, the *only free* nations in the world are Protestants! The Protestant nations are the only ones that acquit themselves like men in the arena of this world; Protestant nations only march as giants at the head of the civilised world. Everywhere they are the advanced guard in the ranks of progress, science and liberty, leaving far behind the unfortunate nations whose hands are tied by ignominious iron chains of Popery.

After we have seen the Protestant scholar raising himself, on his eagle wings, to the highest spheres of intelligence, happiness and light, and marching unimpeded towards his splendid destinies, let us turn our eyes toward the Roman

Catholic student, and let us consider and pity him in the supreme degradation to which he is subjected.

That young Roman Catholic scholar is born with the same bright intelligence as the Protestant one; he is endowed by his Creator with the same powers of mind as his Protestant neighbour; he has the same impulses, the same noble aspirations implanted by the hand of God in his breast. He is sent to school apparently like the Protestant boy, to receive what is called "Education." He at first understands that word in its true sense; he goes to school in the hope of being *raised*, elevated as high as his intelligence and his personal efforts will allow. His heart beats with joy, when at once the first rays of light and knowledge come to him.

But here begin the disappointments and tribulations of the Roman Catholic student! for he is allowed to raise himself—yes, but when he has raised himself high enough to be on a level with the big toes of the Pope he hears piercing, angry threatening cries coming from every side—"Stop! stop! Do not raise yourself higher than the toes of the Holy Pope! . . . Kiss those holy toes . . . and stop your upward flight! Remember that the Pope is the only source of science, knowledge and truth!"

Some will perhaps answer me here: "Has not Rome produced great men in every department of science? I answer, Yes; as I have done once before. Rome can show us a long list of names which shine among the brightest lights of the firmament of science and philosophy. She can show us her Copernices, her Galileos, her Pascals, her Bossuets, her Lame-nais, etc., etc. But it is at their risk and peril that those giants of intelligence have raised themselves to the highest regions of philosophy and science.

On the 22nd June, 1663, Galileo was obliged to fall on his knees in order to escape the cruel death to which he was to be condemned by the order of the Pope; and he signed with his own hand the following retraction: "I abjure, curse and detest the error and heresy of the motion of the earth," etc., But God would not allow that such a giant intellect should be entirely strangled by the bloody hands of that implacable enemy of light and truth—the Pope. Sufficient strength and life had remained in Galileo to enable him to say when rising up, "This will not prevent the earth from moving."

The infallible decree of the infallible Pope, Urban VIII., against the motion of the earth, is signed by the Cardinals Felia, Guido, Desiderio, Antonio, Bellingerio, and Fabriccio. It says: "In the name and by the authority of Jesus Christ, the plentitude of which resides in his Vicar, the Pope, that the proposition that the earth is not the centre of the world, and that it moves with a diurnal motion is absurd, philosophically false, and erroneous in faith."

What a glorious thing for the Pope of Rome to be infallible! He infallibly knows that the earth does not move around the sun! And what a blessed thing for the Roman Catholics to

be governed and taught by such an *infallible* being. In consequence of that infallible decree, you will admire the following act of humble submission of two celebrated Jesuit astronomers, Lesueur and Jacquier: "Newton assumes in his third book the hypothesis of the earth moving round the sun. The proposition of that author could not be explained, except through the same hypothesis: we have, therefore, been forced to act a character not our own. *But we declare our entire submission to the decrees of the Supreme Pontiff of Rome against the motion of the earth.*" (Newton's *Principia*, vol. iii., p. 450). These two learned Jesuits tell a most contemptible and ridiculous lie to save themselves from the implacable wrath of that great light-extinguisher whose throne is in the city of Rome.

Lamenais, a Roman Catholic priest, who lived in this very century, was one of the most profound philosophers and eloquent writers which France has ever had. But Lamenais was publicly excommunicated for having raised himself high enough in the regions of Gospel light to see that "liberty of conscience" was one of the great privileges which Christ has brought from heaven for all the nations, and which He has sealed with His blood. No man has ever raised himself higher in the regions of thought and philosophy than Pascal; but the wings of that giant eagle were clipped by the Pope. Pascal was an outcast in the Church of Rome. He lived and died an excommunicated man.

If, at any step made by the Protestant through the regions of science and learning, he asks God or man to tell him how he can proceed any further without fear of falling into some unknown and unsuspected abyss, both God and man tell him what Christ said to His apostles—that he has eyes to see, ears to hear, and an intelligence to understand; he is reminded that it is with his own eyes and not his neighbour's eyes, he must look; that it is with his own ears, and not with another's ears, he must hear; and that it is with his own intelligence, and not another's intelligence, he must understand. And when the Protestant has made use of his own eyes to see, and his own ears to hear, and his own intelligence to understand, he nevertheless feels again his feet uncertain on the trembling waves of the mysterious and unexplored regions of science and learning which spread before him as a boundless ocean all the echoes of heaven and earth bring to his ears the simple but sublime words of the Son of God: "If a son ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask for an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?"

Emboldened with this infallible promise of the Saviour, which has ennobled and made him almost divine, the Protestant student ceases to tremble and fear; a new strength has been given to his feet, a new power to his mind. For he has

gone to his Father for more light and strength. Nay, he has boldly asked not only the assistance and the help of the Spirit of God, but the very presence of His Spirit in his soul to guide and strengthen him. The assurance that the great God who has created heaven and earth is his Father, his loving Father, has absolutely raised him above himself ; it has given a new, I dare say, a divine impulse, to all his aspirations for truth and knowledge. It has put in his breast the assurance that, sustained by the love, and the light, and the help of that great infinite, eternal God, he feels himself as a giant able to cope with any obstacle.

Had the Newtons, the Franklins, the Fultons, the Morses been Romanists, their names would have been lost in the obscurity which is the natural heritage of the abject slaves of the Popes. Being told from their infancy that no one had any right to make use of his "private judgment," intelligence, and conscience in the research of truth, they would have remained mute and motionless at the feet of the modern and terrible god of Rome, the Pope. But they were Protestants ! In that great and glorious word "Protestant" is the secret of the marvellous discoveries with which they have changed the face of the world. They were Protestants !

But as this will look like an exaggeration on my part, allow giant strides to the conquest of the world, why is it that the Roman Catholic nations not only remain stationary, but give evidence of a decadence which is, day after day, more and more appalling and remediless ? Go to their schools and give a moment of attention to the principles which are sown in the young intelligences of their unfortunate slaves, and you will have the key to that sad mystery.

What is not only the first, but the daily school lesson taught to the Roman Catholic ? Is it not that one of the greatest crimes which a man can commit is to follow his "private judgment" ? which means that he has eyes, but cannot see ; ears, but cannot hear ; and intelligence, but he cannot make use of it in the research of truth and light and knowledge, without danger of being eternally damned. His superiors—which mean the priests and the Pope—must see for him, hear for him, and think for him. Yes, the Roman Catholic is constantly told in his school that the most unpardonable and damnable crime is to make use of his own intelligence and follow *his own private judgment* in the research of truth. He is constantly reminded that man's own private judgment is **his greatest enemy**.

But when the Protestant nations are marching with such me to force the Church of Rome to come here and speak for herself. Please pay attention to what she has to say about the intellectual faculties of men. Here are the very words of the so-called Saint Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuit Society.

"As for holy obedience, this virtue must be perfect in every point—in execution, in will, in intellect ; doing which is enjoined

with all celerity, spiritual joy and perseverance ; persuading ourselves that everything is just, suppressing every repugnant thought and judgment of one's own in a certain obedience ; and let every one persuade himself, that he who lives under obedience should be moved and directed, under Divine Providence, by his superior, JUST AS IF HE WERE A CORPSE (*perinde acsi cadaver esset*) which allows itself to be moved and led in every direction."

Yes ! Protestants, when you send your child to school, it is that he may more and more understand the dignity of man. Your object is to enlighten, expand and raise his intelligence. But know it well, not from my pen, but from the solemn declaration of Rome. The young Roman Catholic goes to school not only that his intelligence may be fettered, clouded and paralyzed, but that it may be killed. It is only when he will be like a *corpse* before his *superior* that the young Roman Catholic will have attained to the highest degree of perfect manhood ! Is not such a doctrine absolutely anti-Christian and anti-social ?

Is it not a good thing for the world in general, and for the Roman Catholics in particular, that though they are taught to become like corpses, to have no will, no understanding, no judgment of their own in the presence of their superiors, there are many who can never attain to that perfection of intellectual degradation and death ! Yes, in spite of the efforts, in spite of the teaching of their Church, a few Roman Catholics retain some life, some will, some intelligence, some judgment of their own which prevents them from becoming complete brutes. They now and then refuse to descend to the damp, dark, and putrid abode of the corpses. They want to breathe the fresh and pure air of liberty which God has given to man. They raise their humiliated forehead from the ignominious tomb which their Church has dug for them, and they give some sign of life. But at every such sign of life given by an individual or by a people in the Church of Rome, be sure that you will see the flashing light and hear the roaring thunders of the Vatican directed against the rebel who dares to refuse to become a *corpse* before his superiors.

But that you may better understand the degrading tendencies of the principles which are as the fundamental stone of the moral and intellectual education of Rome, let me put before your eyes another extract of the Jesuit teachings, which I take again from the *Spiritual Exercises*, as laid down by their Ignatius Loyola : "That we may in all things attain the truth, that we may not err in anything, we ought ever to hold as a fixed principle that what I see white I believe to be black, if the superior authorities of the Church define it to be so."

You all know that it is the avowed desire of Rome to have public education in the hands of the Jesuits. She says everywhere that they are the best, the model teachers. Why so ? Because they more boldly and more successfully than any other of her teachers aim at the destruction of the intelligence and

conscience of their pupils. Rome proclaims everywhere that the Jesuits are the most devoted, the most reliable of her teachers; and she is right, for when a man has been trained a sufficient time by them, he most perfectly becomes a moral corpse. His superiors can do what they please with him. When he knows that a thing is white as snow he is ready to swear that it is black as ink if his superior tells him so. But some may be tempted to think that these degrading principles are exclusively taught by the Jesuits; that they are not the teaching of the Church, and that I do an injustice to the Roman Catholics when I give, as a general iniquity, what is the guilt of the Jesuits only. Listen to the words of that infallible Pope Gregory XVI., in his celebrated Encyclical of the 15th August, 1832. "If the holy Church so requires, let us sacrifice our own opinions, our knowledge, *our intelligence*, the splendid dreams of our imagination, and the most sublime attainments of the human understanding."

It was when considering those anti-social principles of Rome that the learned and profound thinker, Gladstone, wrote: "No more cunning plot was ever devised against the freedom, the happiness and the virtue of mankind than Romanism" ("Letter to Earl Aberdeen"). Now, Protestants, do you begin to see the difference of the object of education between a Protestant and a Roman Catholic school? Do you begin to understand that there is a greater distance between the word "Education" among you, and the meaning of the same word in the Church of Rome, than between the Southern and Northern poles? By education you mean to raise man to the higher sphere of manhood. Rome means to lower him below the most stupid brutes. By education you mean to teach man that he is a free agent, that liberty within the limits of the laws of God and of his country is a gift secured to every one; you want to impress every man with the noble thought that it is better to die a free man than to live a slave. Rome wants to teach that there is only one man who is free, the Pope, and that all the rest are born to be his slaves in thought, will, and action.

Now, that you may still more understand to what a bottomless abyss of human degradation and moral depravity these anti-Christian and anti-social principles of Rome lead her poor blind slaves, read what Liguori says in his book, *The Nun Sanctified*: "The principal and most efficacious means of practising obedience due to superiors, and of rendering it meritorious before God, is to consider that in obeying them we obey God Himself, and that by despising their commands we despise the authority of our Divine Master. When, thus, a religious receives a precept from her prelate, superior or confessor, she should immediately execute it, *not only to please them* but principally to please God, whose will is made known to her by their command. In obeying their command, in obeying their directions, she is more certainly obeying the will of God than if an angel came down from heaven to manifest his will to her. Bear this always in your mind, that the obedience which

you practise to your superiors is paid to God. If, then, you receive a command from one who holds the place of God, you should observe it with the same diligence as if it came from God Himself. Blessed Egidus used to say that it is more meritorious to obey man for the love of God than God Himself. It may be added that there is more certainty of doing the will of God by obedience to our superior than by obedience to Jesus Christ, should He appear in person and give His commands. St. Phillip de Neri used to say that religious shall be most certain of not having to render an account of the actions performed through obedience ; for these the superiors only who commanded them shall be held accountable." The Lord said once to St. Catherine of Sienna, "Religious will not be obliged to render an account to *Me* of what they do through obedience ; for that I will demand an account from the superior. This doctrine is conformable to Sacred Scripture : 'Behold, says the Lord, as clay is in the potter's hand, so are you in My hands, O Israel !' (Jeremiah xvii : 6). A religious man must be in the hands of the superiors to be moulded as they will. Shall the clay say to him that fashioneth it, What art thou making ? The potter ought to answer, Be silent ; it is not your business to inquire what I do, but to obey and receive whatever form I please to give you."

The Church of Rome's only object in giving what she calls education, is to teach her slaves that they must obey their superiors in everything, as God Himself. All the rest of her teaching is only a mask to conceal her plans. History is never taught in her schools ; what she calls history is a most shameful string of falsehoods. Of course she does not dare to say a word of truth about her past struggles against the principles of light and liberty, when she covered the whole of Europe with tears, blood and ruins. Writing, reading, arithmetic, geography and grammar are taught to a certain degree in her schools, but all these teachings are nothing else but covered roads through which the priest wants to reach the citadel of the heart and intelligence of his poor victim, and take an absolute possession of them. Those things are taught every day only to have a daily opportunity to persuade the pupil that he must never make any use of his private judgment in anything, and that he must submit his intelligence, his conscience, his will, to the intelligence, conscience, and will of his superior if he wants to save himself from the eternal fire of hell.

The Church of Rome shows her great wisdom in enforcing that dogma of the entire and blind subjection of the will and intelligence of the inferior to the superior. For the very moment that a Roman Catholic thinks that it is his right and sacred duty to follow the dictates of his own conscience and intelligence, he is lost to the Church of Rome. It is only when a man has entirely silenced and absolutely killed his intelligence, it is only when he has become a perfect moral corpse, that he can believe that his priest, even his drunken priest, has

the power to change a wafer, or any other piece of bread, into the Great God, for whom and by whom everything has been created. It is only when the intelligence of man has become a dead carcase that he can believe that a miserable sinner has the supreme power to force the Son of God to come, in His divine and human person, into his pockets to follow him everywhere he wants to go, even to the bar of the low tavern, that He may become his companion of debauch and drunkenness. Do you see, now, why the Church of Rome cannot let her poor young slaves go to your schools? In your schools, the first thing you inculcate to the pupil is that his intelligence is the great gift of God, by which man is distinguished from the brute; that he must enlighten, form, feed, cultivate his intelligence, which is to him what the helm is to the ship, Christ with His holy Word, being the pilot. You see, now, why the Church of Rome abhors your schools. It is because you want to make *men*, and she wants to make *brutes*. You want to raise man to the highest sphere to which his intelligence can allow him to reach; she wants to keep him in the dust, at the feet of the priests! you want to form free citizens, she wants to form abject and obedient slaves of the priests; you teach man to keep his sacred promises and stand by his oath, she teaches him that the Pope has the right to dissolve the most sacred promises and to annul all his caths, even the oath of allegiance to his country. You tell your pupils that so long as they keep themselves within the limits of the laws of their country they are responsible only to God for their consciences. They tell their pupils that it is not to God, but to the priest that he must go to give an account of his conscience.

Considering the great benefit which will come to the country if all the children are taught in the same school, they are soon ready to make any sacrifice in order to have the Roman Catholic and the Protestant children under the same roof, to receive the same light, and the same moral food and same instruction. As true patriots, the legislators understand that if they wish their beloved country to be strong and happy, the first thing they must do is to make the young generation one in mind, in heart. If the Protestant and Roman Catholic children are taught in the same school, they will know each other and love each other when young, and those sacred ties of friendship which will bind them in the spring of life will be strengthened when their reason will be matured and enlightened by a good education under the same respected and worthy teachers. As Christian men, the legislators would perhaps like to keep the Bible, and have short prayers in the schools; but as patriots, they feel that those things, though good and sacred, are an unsurmountable barrier to the Roman Catholic. The delicate conscience of the bishops and priests cannot allow such things in the school attended by their lambs! Through respect for the sacred rights of the Roman Catholic conscience, the legislators in many places throw the Bible overboard, and they

say to God: "Please get out of our schools, and do excuse us if we order our teachers to ignore your existence!" They say to Jesus Christ: "We have not forgotten your sublime and touching words, 'Suffer little children to come unto Me.' No doubt you would like to press our dear little ones on your loving heart, and bless them for a moment in the schools, we cannot even allow them to speak to you a single word there. Please be not offended if we turn you out from those very schools where you were so welcome formerly. We are forced to that sad extremity through the respect we owe to the tender consciences of our fellow-citizens of the Church of Rome. You know that they cannot allow their children to speak to you together with ours." But when those awful, not to say sacrilegious sacrifices have been made by the Protestant legislators to appease the implacable God of Rome—when, through respect for the scruples of the bishops and priests of Rome, the great God of heaven, with His Son Jesus Christ, have been unceremoniously turned out from the schools—when the Word of God has been prohibited, and the Bible is thrown overboard, is the Moloch god appeased? Will the Roman Catholic bishop and priest tell their children that they may unite with yours to go and receive education from the same teachers? No! But assuming, then, a sublime air of indignation, they turn against you as mad dogs; they call your schools *godless schools*! good only to form thieves, infidels, and atheists!

Do you see now that all those dignified scruples of conscience about reading the Bible, praying with you, etc., were only a mask to deceive you, and to make you fall into a snare? Do you not perceive now that they did not care a straw for the Bible and the prayers in schools? but they wanted your legislators to compromise themselves before the Christian world, lose their moral strength in the eyes of a great part of the nation, divide your ranks, your means, your strength, and beat you on that great question of education. They will take such airs of martyrs when you try to force their children to your schools that many honest and unsuspecting Protestants will be completely deceived by them. At first they could not, they said, trust the children in your hands, because you read the Word of God, you prayed and blessed God in the school. But now that the Bible and God are turned out from the schools, they baptize them by the most ignominious names which can be given—they call them "*godless schools*!" Have you ever seen a more profoundly ignominious and sacrilegious trick? Will not legislators open their eyes to that strange act of deception, of which they are the victims? Will they not come out quickly from the traps laid before them by the bishops and the priests of Rome?

For what is a school without God to sit in its midst, to sit as a father, and to form the young hearts and evoke the young intellect? What is a boy, what is a girl, what is a woman or a man without God? What is a family, what is a people, without God? It is a monstrosity, it is a body without life,

it is a world without light, it is a cistern without water. Let us hope that, before long, patriotic and Christian legislators will remember that the Bible is the foundation of the greatness of Protestant nations. Do not forget it, Protestants ! It is to the Bible the United States owe their liberty, power, prestige, and strength. It is the Bible that has ennobled the hearts of your heroes, improved the minds of your poets and orators, and strengthened the arms of your warriors ! Yes ! it is because your soldiers have brought with them, everywhere, the Bible, pressed on their hearts, that they have conquered the enemies of liberty. Let the disciples of the Gospel, the children of God, and the redeemed of Christ hasten to request their legislators to invite the Saviour of the world to come back and bless their dear children in the school. For it is not only in your homes and churches that Jesus tells you, "Suffer the little children to come unto Me." It is particularly in the school.

Oh ! give two or three minutes to those dear little ones, that they may press themselves on His bosom, bless Him for having saved them on the Cross, and proclaim His mercies by singing one of those hymns which they like so much. By this noble act of national reparation you will take away from the hands of the priests the only weapon with which they can hurt you ; you will destroy the only argument they use with a true force against your schools when they call them godless schools. Do not fear any more the priests and the prelates of Rome. Do not yield any more and give up your privilege to please them and reconcile them to your schools. You will never be able to reconcile them to your schools, for there is light in your schools and they want darkness. There is freedom and liberty in your schools ; they want slavery ! There is life in your schools, and it is only on dead corpses that their church can have a chance to live a few years more. You see, by a sad experience, that their scruples of conscience against the Bible and the prayer of the school are mere hypocrisy just thrown into the eyes of the public. Do not say, with some honest but deluded Protestant : Is it not enough that that child should learn his religion at home ? No, it is not enough ; for it is our nature that we want two witnesses to believe a thing. What comes to our mind only through one witness remains uncertain ; but let two good witnesses confirm a fact, and then we accept it. Your child wants two witnesses to believe the necessity of the sacredness of religion. His Christian home is surely a good witness to your child, but it is not enough ; what he has heard from you must be confirmed by his school teacher. Without this second witness, nine times out of ten your children will be sceptics and infidels. Besides that, the very idea of God brings with it the obligation to bless, love and adore Him everywhere.

CHAPTER XII.

Theology of the Church of Rome: Anti-Social and Anti-Christian.

ONE of the most celebrated diplomatists of France, Talleyrand, the Roman Catholic Bishop of Autun, once said, "Language is the art of concealing one's thoughts." Never was there a truer expression, if it had reference to the awful deceptions practised by the Church of Rome under the pompous name of "theological studies."

Theology is the science which treats of the laws of God. Nothing, then, is more noble than the study of theology. How solemn were my thoughts and elevated my aspirations when, in 1829, under the guidance of the Rev. Messrs. Raimbault and Leprohon, I commenced my theological course of study at Nicolet, which I was to end in 1833.

I supposed that my books of theology were to bring me nearer to my God by the more perfect knowledge I would acquire, in their study, of His holy will and His sacred laws.

The principal theologians which we had in our hands were "Les Conférences d'Anger," Bailly, Dens, St. Thomas, but above all Liguori, who has since been canonised. Never did I open one without offering up a fervent prayer to God and to the Virgin Mary for the light and grace of which I would be in need. But how shall I relate my surprise when I discovered that, in order to accept the principles of the theologians which my Church gave me for guides I had to put away all principles of truth, of justice, of honour and holiness. What long and painful efforts it cost me to extinguish, one by one, the lights of truth and of reason kindled by the hand of my merciful God in my intelligence. For to study theology in the Church of Rome signifies to learn to speak falsely, to deceive, to commit robbery, to perjure oneself; it means how to commit sins without shame, it means to plunge the soul into every kind of iniquity and turpitude without remorse.

I know that Roman Catholics will squarely deny what I now say. I am aware also that a great many Protestants, too easily deceived by the fine whitewashing of the exterior walls of Rome, will refuse to believe me. Nevertheless they may rest assured that it is true, and my proof will be irrefutable. The truth may be denied by many, but my witnesses cannot be contradicted. They are none other than the Roman Catholic theologians themselves, approved by infallible Popes. These very men who corrupted my heart, perverted my intelligence and poisoned my soul, will be my witnesses.

Liguori, in his treatise on oaths, Question 4, asks if it is allowable to use ambiguity, or equivocal words, to deceive the judge when under oath, and at No. 151 he answers: "It is a certain and a common opinion amongst all divines that for a just cause it is lawful to use equivocation in the ways laid down, and to confirm it with an oath; and by a just cause

we mean all that can do any good to the body or the soul." Here is the text:

"*Certum est et commune apud omnes quod, ex justa causa, licitum sit uti æquivocatione modis expositis, et cum juramento affirmare. . . Et justa causa esse potest quicunque fines honestus ad servanda bona spiritui vel corporali utilia.*" (Mor. Theol. t. ii. cap. ii. de jur. p. 316, n. 151).

"A culprit, or a witness, questioned by a judge, but in an illegal manner, may swear that he knows nothing of the crime about which he is questioned, though he knows it well, mentally meaning that he knows nothing of it in such a manner as to answer.

When the crime is very secret and unknown to all, Liguori says the culprit or the witness must deny it under oath. Here are his own words:

"*Idem si testis ex alio capite, non teneatur deponere; nempe si ipsi constat crimen caruisse culpa, vel si sciat crimen, sed sub secreto, cum nulla præcesserit infamia.*" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 319, n. 153).

"He may swear that he knows nothing, when he knows that the person who committed the crime committed it *without malice* (as affir. Salm. to. 17 c. 2, no. 159, and Elb 145); or again, if he knows the crime, but secretly, and there has been no scandal" (as we are assured by Card., no. 151).

"When a crime is well concealed, the witness, and even the criminal, may and even must swear that the crime has not been committed. The guilty party may yet do likewise, when a half proof cannot be brought against him."

Here is the Latin text:

"*Reus vel testis non tenetur iudicio, respondere si crimen fuerit omnino occultum; tunc enim potest, imo tenetur testis dicere reum non commisisse. Et idem potest reus, si non adest semiplena probatio*" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 320, n. 154).

Liguori asks himself, if an accused, legally interrogated by a judge, may deny his crime under oath, when the confession of the crime might cause his condemnation, and be disadvantageous to him if he answers:—

"It is altogether probable that when the accused fears a sentence of death, or of being sent to prison, or exiled, he may deny his crime under oath, understanding that he has not committed this crime in such a manner as to be obliged to confess it." Here is the Latin text:—

"*Queritur 2 Au reus legitime interrogatus possit negare crimen, etiam cum juramento, si grave damnum, ex confessione ipsi immineat. Sed satis probabiliter Lugo de Justitia d 10, n. 15; Tamb., lib. 3. et aliis pluribus dicunt, posse reum si sibi immineat poena mortis, vel carceris, aut exilii, perpetui, &c., negare crimen, etiam, cum juramento (saltem sine peccato gravi) subintelligendo se non commisisse, quatenus teneatur illud fateri, modo sit spes vitandi pœnam*" (Mor. Theol. t. ii. p. 321, n. 156).

"He who has sworn to keep a secret is not obliged to keep

his oath, if any consequential injury to him or to others is thereby caused."

"If anyone has sworn before a judge to tell the truth, he is not obliged to say secret things" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 340).

Liguori asks whether a woman accused of the crime of adultery, which she has really committed, may deny it under oath? He answers: "Yes, provided she has been to confess, and received absolution; for then," he says, "the sin has been pardoned, and has really ceased to exist."

Quæritur 2. An adultera possit negare adulterium viro suo? Resp. Si adulterium sacramentaliter confessa sit, potest respondere; 'Innocens sum ab hoc crimine,' quia per confessionem est jam oblatum" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 322).

Liguori maintains that one may commit a minor crime in order to avoid a greater crime. He says: "It is right to advise anyone to commit a robbery or a fornication in order to avoid a murder."

"Hinc docet id Sanch, n. 19 cum Cajet. Sot. parato aliquem occidere licet posse suaderi, ut ab eo furetur, vel ut fornicatur" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 157, n. 57).

Liguori asks: "May a servant open the door for a prostitute? Croix denies it, but Liguori affirms it."

Quæritur 3. Utrum liceat famulo ostium meretrici aperere? Negat Croix. At communius affirmant Theologi.

Quæritur 4. (Liguori): "Quæritur an liceat famulo deferre salam vel subjicere humeros domino ascendenti ad fornicandum et similia. Bus. et alii, affirmant, quorum, sententia probabilior videtur" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 182, n. 166).

"May a servant bring a ladder and help his master to go up and commit adultery? Buss. and others think that he may do it, and I am of the same opinion."

"A servant has the right to rob his master, a child his father, and a poor man the rich!"

The Salmanticenses say that a servant may, according to his own judgment, pay himself with his own hands more than was agreed upon as a salary for his work, if he finds that he deserves a larger salary; "and," says Liguori, "this doctrine appears just to me."

"Attamen Salm. de 4 præc. n. 137, dicunt famulum posse etiam ex proprio judicio sibi compensare suam operam, si ipse certe judicet se majus stipendium mereri. Quod sane videtur satis probabile mihi." (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 246, n. 524).

A poor man, who has concealed the goods and effects of which he is in need, may swear that he has nothing.

Indigens, bonis absconditis ad sustentationem, potest judici respondere se nihil habere (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 321, n. 158).

In like manner an heir who, without taking an inventory, conceals his goods, when they are not mortgaged for a debt, may swear that he has concealed nothing, understanding the goods with which he was to pay. (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 321, n. 158).

"There are many opinions about the amount which may be

stolen to constitute a mortal sin. Navar, has said, too scrupulously, that to steal a half piece of gold is a mortal sin ; while others, too lax, hold that to steal less than ten pieces of gold, cannot be a serious sin. But Tol. Mech. Less. etc., have more wisely ruled that to steal two pieces of gold constitutes a mortal sin."

Dubium 2, Liguori: "*Variae ea de re sunt sententiae. Nav. nimis scrupulose statuit medium regalum ; alii nimis laxe 10 aureos ; moderatius, Tol. Med. Less. etc., duos regales, etsi minus sufficiat, si notabiliter noceat.*" (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 248, n. 526).

It is a crime to steal a small piece of a relic. There is no doubt as to its being a sin in the district of Rome, since Clement VIII. and Paul V. have excommunicated those who committed such thefts. But this theft is not a serious thing when committed outside of the district of Rome, unless it be a very rare and precious relic, as the wood of the Holy Cross, or some of the hair of the Virgin Mary ! (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 256 n. 532).

Dubium 3, Liguori: "If anyone steals small sums at different times, either from the same or from different persons, not having the intention of stealing large sums, nor of causing a great damage, his sin is not mortal ; particularly if the thief is poor, and if he has the intention to give back what he has stolen."

"*Si quis ex occasione furatur sive uni, sive pluribus, non intendens notabile aliquid acquirere, nec proximo graviter nocere, non peccat graviter, neque ea simul sumpta unum mortale constituunt, si vel restituere non possit vel animam habeat restituendi.*" (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 257, n. 533).

"If several persons steal from the same master, in small quantities, each in such a manner as not to commit a mortal sin, though each one knows that all these little thefts together cause a considerable damage to their master, yet no one of them commits a mortal sin, even when they steal at the same time."

"*Si plures modica furentur, nemo peccat graviter, etsi mutuo sciant grave damnum domino fieri. Et hoc, etiamsi singuli eodem tempore furentur*" (Mor. Theol. t. iii., p. 259, n. 536).

The theologians of Rome assure us that we may, and even that we must, conceal and disguise our faith.

"Though lying is forbidden, we may be allowed to conceal the truth, or to disguise it under ambiguous or equivocal words or signs, for a just cause, and when there is no necessity to confess the truth. If by that means one can rid himself of dangerous pursuits, he is permitted to use it ; for in general it is not true to say that, when interrogated by a public authority about his faith, you are not only allowed to conceal it, but it is often more to the glory of God and the interest of your neighbour. If, for example, you are among heretical people, you can do more good by concealing your faith ; or if, by declaring it, you are to cause great trouble or death. It is temerity to expose one's life" (Mor. Theol. t. ii., p. 116, n.n. 12, 13, 14).

The Pope has the right to release from all oaths.

"As for an oath made for a good and legitimate object, it

seems that there should be no power capable of annulling it. However, when it is for the good of the public, a matter which comes under the immediate jurisdiction of the Pope, who has the supreme power over the Church, the Pope has full power to release from that oath." (St. Thomas, Ques. 89, art 9, vol. iv.).

The Roman Catholics have not only the right, but it is their duty to kill heretics.

"Excommunicatus privatur omni alia civili communicatione fidelium, ita ut ipsi non possit cum aliis, et si non sit toleratus, etiam aliis cum ipso non possint communicare; idque in casibus hoc versu comprehensis,—Os, orare, communio, mensa negatur."

Translated: "Any man excommunicated is deprived of all civil communication with the faithful, in such a way that if he is not tolerated they can have no communication with him, as it is in the following verse: 'It is forbidden to kiss him, pray with him, salute him, to eat or do any business with him.'" (St. Liguori, vol. ix., p. 62).

"Quanquam heretici tolerandi non sunt ipso illorum demerito, usque tamen ad secundam correptionem expectandi sunt, ut ad sanam redeant ecclesiæ fidam; qui vero post secundam correptionem in suo errore obstinati permanent, non modo excommunicationis ententia, sed etiam sæcularibus principibus exterminandi tradendis sunt."

Translated: "Though heretics must not be tolerated because they deserve it, we must bear with them till, by a second admonition, they may be brought back to the faith of the Church. But those who, after a second admonition, remain obstinate in their errors must not only be excommunicated, but they must be delivered to the secular powers to be exterminated."

"Quanquam heretici revertentes, semper recipiendi sint ad pœnitentiam quoties cumque relapsi fuerint; non tamen semper sunt recipiendi et restituendi ad bonorum hujus vitæ participationem . . . recipiuntur ad pœnitentiam . . . non tamen ut liberentur a sententia mortis."

Translated: "Though the heretics who repent must always be accepted to penance, as often as they have fallen, they must not in consequence of that always be permitted to enjoy the benefits of this life. When they fall again they are admitted to repent. But the sentence of death must not be removed." (St. Thomas, vol. iv., p. 91).

"Quum quis per sententiam denuntiatur propter apostasiam excommunicatus, ipso facto, ejus subditi a dominio et juramento fidelitatis ejus liberati sunt."

"When a man is excommunicated for his apostacy, it follows from that very fact that all those who are his subjects are released from the oath of allegiance by which they were bound to obey him." (St. Thomas, vol iv., p. 91).

Every heretic and Protestant is condemned to death, and every oath of allegiance to a government which is Protestant or heretic is abrogated by the Council of Lateran, held in A.D. 1215. Here is the solemn decree and sentence of death,

which has never been repealed, and which is still in force:

"We excommunicate and anathematise every heresy that exalts itself against the holy, orthodox and Catholic faith, condemning all heretics, by whatever name they may be known! for though their faces differ, they are tied together by their tails. Such as are condemned are to be delivered over to the existing secular powers, to receive due punishment. If laymen, their goods must be confiscated. If priests, they shall first be degraded from their respective orders and their property applied to the use of the church in which they have officiated. Secular powers of all ranks and degrees are to be warned, induced and, if necessary, compelled by ecclesiastical censure, to swear that they will exert themselves to the utmost in the defence of the faith, and extirpate all heretics denounced by the Church who shall be found in their territories. And whenever any person shall assume government, whether it be spiritual or temporal he shall be bound to abide by this decree.

"If any temporal lord, after being admonished and required by the Church, shall neglect to clear his territory of heretical depravity, the metropolitan and the bishops of the province shall unite in excommunicating him. Should he remain contumacious for a whole year, the fact shall be signified to the Supreme Pontiff, who will declare his vassals released from their allegiance from that time, and will bestow the territory on Catholics to be occupied by them, on the condition of exterminating the heretics and preserving the said territory in the faith.

"Catholics who shall assume the cross for the *extermination* of heretics shall enjoy the same indulgences and be protected by the same privileges as are granted to those who go to the help of the Holy Land. We decree, further, that all who may have dealings with heretics, and especially such as receive, defend or encourage them, shall be excommunicated. He shall not be eligible to any public office. He shall not be admitted as a witness. He shall neither have the power to bequeath his property by will, nor to succeed to any inheritance. He shall not bring any action against any person, but any one can bring an action against him. Should he be a judge, his decision shall have no force, nor shall any cause be brought before him. Should he be an advocate, he shall not be allowed to plead. Should he be a lawyer, no instruments made by him shall be held valid, but shall be condemned with their author." (3rd Canon of 2nd Council of Lateran).

But why let my memory and my thoughts linger any longer in these frightful paths, where murderers, liars, perjurers and thieves are assured by the theologians of the Church of Rome that they can lie, steal, murder and perjure themselves as much as they like, without offending God, provided they commit those crimes according to certain rules approved by the Pope for the good of the Church.

The great Legislator of the world, the only Saviour of

nations has said: "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God." A nation can be great and strong only according to the truths which form the basis of her faith and life. "Truth," is the only bread which God gives to the nations that they may prosper and live. Deceitfulness, duplicity, perjury, adultery, theft, murder, are the deadly poisons which kill the nations.

Then, the more the priests of Rome, with their theology, are venerated and believed by the people, the sooner that people will decay and fall. "The more priests the more crimes," has said a profound thinker; for then the more hands will be at work to pull down the only sure foundation of society. How can any man be sure of the honesty of his wife as long as a hundred thousand priests tell her that she may commit any sin with her neighbour in order to prevent him from doing something worse? or when she is assured that, though guilty of adultery, she can swear she is as pure as an angel!

What will it avail to teach the best principles of honour, decency and holiness to a young girl, when she is bound to go many times a year to a bachelor priest, who is bound in conscience to give her the infamous lessons of depravity under the pretext of helping her to confess all her sins?

How will the rights of justice be secured, and how can the judges and juries protect the innocent and punish the guilty, so long as the witnesses are told by one hundred thousand priests that they can conceal the truth, give equivocal answers, and even perjure themselves under a thousand pretexts?

What Government, either monarchical or republican, can be sure of a lease of existence? how can they make their people walk with a firm step in the ways of light, progress and liberty, as long as there is a dark power over them which has the right, at every hour of the day or night, to break and dissolve all the most sacred oaths of allegiance?

Armed with his theology, the priest of Rome has become the most dangerous and determined enemy of truth, justice and liberty. He is the most formidable obstacle to every good Government, as he is, without being aware of it, the greatest enemy of God and man.

CHAPTER XIII.

The Vow of Celibacy.

WERE I to write all the ingenious tricks, pious lies, shameful stories called miracles, and sacrilegious perversions of the Word of God made use of by superiors of seminaries and nunneries to entice their poor victims into the trap of perpetual celibacy, I should have to write volumes, instead of a short chapter.

Sometimes the trials and obligations of married life are so exaggerated that they may frighten the strongest heart. At other times the joys, peace and privileges of celibacy are depicted with such brilliant colours that they fill the coldest mind with enthusiasm.

Oh! how the merciless priest of Rome becomes eloquent in depicting celibacy as the only way to heaven, or in showing the eternal fires of hell ready to receive cowards and traitors who, after having put their hand to the plough of celibacy, look back! He speaks of the disappointment and sadness of so many dear friends, who expected better things of them. He points out to them their own shame when they will again be in a world which will have nothing for them but sneers for their want of perseverance and courage. He overwhelms them with a thousand pious lies about the miracles wrought by Christ in favour of His virgins and priests. He bewitches them by numerous texts of Scripture, which he brings as evident proof of the will of God in favour of their taking the vows of celibacy, though they have not the slightest reference to such vows.

The text of which the strangest abuses are made by the superiors to persuade the young people of both sexes to bind themselves by those shameful vows is Matt. xix. 12, 13: "For there are eunuchs which were born from their mother's womb; and there are some eunuchs which were made eunuchs of men; and there are eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it."

Upon one occasion our superior made a very pressing appeal to our religious feelings from this text, to induce us to make the vow of celibacy and become priests. But the address, though delivered with a great deal of zeal, seemed to us deficient in logic.

The next day was a day of rest. The students in theology who were preparing themselves for the priesthood, with me, talked seriously of the singular arguments of the last address. It seemed to them that the conclusions could not in any way be drawn from the selected text, and therefore determined to respectfully present their objections and their views, which were also mine, to the superior; and I was chosen to speak for them all.

At the next conference, after respectfully asking and ob-

taining permission to express our objections with our own frank and plain sentiments, I spoke as follows:

"Dear and venerable Sir,—You told us that the following words of Christ, '*There be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake,*'—show us evidently that we must make the vow of celibacy and make ourselves eunuchs if we want to become priests. Allow us to tell you respectfully, that it seems to us that the mind of our Saviour was very different from yours when He pronounced these words. In our humble opinion, the only object of the Son of God was to warn His disciples against one of the most damnable errors which were to endanger the very existence of nations. He was foretelling that there would be men so wicked and blind as to preach that the best way for men to go to heaven would be to make eunuchs of themselves. Allow us to draw your attention to the fact that in that speech Jesus Christ neither approves nor disapproves of the idea of gaining a throne in heaven by becoming eunuchs. He leaves us to our common sense and to some clearer parts of Scripture to see whether or not He approves of those who would make eunuchs of themselves to gain a crown in heaven. Must we not interpret this text as we interpret what Jesus said to His apostles, 'The time cometh that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service' ? (John xvi: 1, 2).

"Because our Saviour has said that there would be men who would think that they would please God (and of course gain a place in heaven) by killing His disciples, are we, therefore, allowed to conclude that it would be our duty to kill those who believe and follow Christ? Surely not. Well, it seems to us that we are not to believe that the best way to go to heaven is to make ourselves eunuchs, because our Saviour said that some men had got that criminal and foolish notion into their minds! Christian nations have always looked with horror upon those who voluntarily become eunuchs. Common sense, as well as the Word of God, condemns those who thus destroy in their own bodies that which God in His wisdom gave them for the wisest and holiest purposes. Would it not, therefore, be a crime which every civilized and Christian nation would punish, to preach publicly and with success to the people that one of the surest ways for a man to go to heaven would be to make himself a eunuch? How can we believe that our Saviour could ever sanction such a practice? Moreover, if being eunuchs would make the way to heaven surer and more easy, would not God be unjust for depriving us of the great privilege of being born eunuchs, and thus being made ripe fruits for heaven?

"It seems to us that that text does not in any way require us to believe that an eunuch is nearer the kingdom of God than he who lives according to the laws which God gave to man in the earthly paradise. If it was not good for man to be without his wife when he was so holy and strong as he was in the Garden of Eden, how can it be good now that he is so weak

and sinful? Our Saviour clearly shows that He finds no sanctifying power in the state of an eunuch, in His answer to the young man who asked Him, 'Good master, what must I do that I may have eternal life?' (Matt. xix: 16). Did the good Master answer him in the language we heard from you two days ago—namely, that the best way to have eternal life is to make yourself a eunuch—make a solemn vow never to marry? No; but He said, 'Keep the commandments'! Were the blessed Saviour to-day in your place, and I should ask Him, 'What must I do to be saved, and to show the way of God to my brethren?' would He not say to me, 'Keep the commandments'? But where is the commandment of God in the Old or New Testament, to induce us to make such a vow as that of celibacy? The promise of a place in heaven is not attached in any way to the vow of celibacy. Christ has not a word about that doctrine. Allow us to respectfully ask, if the views concerning the vows of celibacy entertained by Christ had been like yours, is it possible that He would have forgotten to mention them when He answered the solemn question of that young man? Is it possible that He would not have said a single word about a thing which you have represented to us as being of such vital importance to those who sincerely desire to know what to do to be saved? Is it not strange that the Church should attach such an importance to that vow of celibacy, when we look in vain for such an ordinance in both the Old and New Testaments? How can we understand the reasons or the importance of such a strict and, we dare say unnatural obligation in our day, when we know very well that the holy apostles themselves were living with their wives, and that the Saviour had not a word of rebuke for them on that account?"

This free expression of our common views on the vows of celibacy evidently took our superior by surprise. He answered me, with an accent of indignation which he could not suppress: "Is that all you have to say?"

"It is not quite all we have to say," I answered; "but before we go further we would be much gratified to receive from you the light we want on the difficulties I have just stated?"

"You have spoken as a true heretic," replied Mr. Leprohon, with unusual vivacity; "and were it not for the hope which I entertain that you have said these things to receive the light you want rather than to present and support the heretical side of such an important question, I would at once denounce you to the bishop. You speak of the Holy Scriptures just as a Protestant would do. You appeal to them as the only source of Christian truth and knowledge. Have you forgotten that we have the holy traditions to guide us, the authority of which is equal to that of the Scriptures? You are correct when you say that we do not find any direct proof in the Bible to enforce the vows of celibacy upon those who desire to consecrate themselves to the service of the Church. But if we do not find the obligation of that vow in the Bible, we find it in the holy

traditions of the Church. It is an article of faith that the vow of celibacy is ordered by Jesus Christ, through His Church. The ordinances of the Church, which are nothing but the ordinances of the Son of God, are clear on that subject, and bind our consciences just as the commandments of God upon Mount Sinai; for Christ has said, those who do not hear the Church must be looked upon as heathens and publicans. There is no salvation to those who do not submit their reason to the teachings of the Church. You are not required to understand all the reasons for the vow of celibacy; but you are bound to believe in its *necessity* and *holiness*, as the Church has pronounced her verdict upon that question. It is not your business to argue about those matters; but your duty is to obey the Church, as dutiful children obey a kind mother. But who can have any doubt about the necessity of the vows of celibacy when we remember that Christ had ordered His apostles to separate themselves from their wives?—a fact on which no doubt can remain after hearing St. Peter say to our Saviour, ‘Behold, we have forsaken all and followed thee; what shall we have, therefore?’ (Matt. xix: 27). Is not the priest true representative of Christ on earth? In his ordination, is not the priest made the equal and in a sense the superior of Christ? for when he celebrates Mass he commands Christ, and the very Son of God is bound to obey! It is not in the power of Christ to resist the orders of the priest. He must come down from heaven every time the priest orders Him. The priest shuts Him up in the holy tabernacles or takes Him out of them, according to his own will. By becoming priests of the New Testament you will be raised to a dignity which is much above that of angels. From these sublime privileges flows the obligation to the priest to raise himself to a degree of holiness much above the level of the common people, a holiness equal to that of the angels. Surely, since the priests are the messengers and angels of God on earth they must be clad with angelic holiness and purity. Does not Paul say that the state of virginity is superior to that of marriage? Does not that saying of the apostle show that the priest, whose hands every day touch the divine body and blood of Christ, must be chaste and pure, and must not be defiled by the duties of married life? That vow of celibacy is like a holy chain which keeps us above the filth of this earth and ties us to heaven. Jesus Christ, through His holy Church, commands that vow to His priests as the most efficacious remedy against the inclinations of our corrupt nature. According to the holy Fathers, the vow of celibacy is like a strong high tower, from the top of which we can fight our enemies, and be perfectly safe from their darts and weapons. I will be happy to answer your other objections, if you have any more,” said Mr. Leprohon.

“We are much obliged to you for your answers,” I replied, “and we will avail ourselves of your kindness to present you with some other observations. And, firstly, we thank you for having told us that we find nothing in the Word of God to

support the vows of celibacy, and that it is only by the traditions of the Church that we can prove their necessity and holiness. It was our impression that you desired us to believe that the necessity of that vow was founded on the Holy Scriptures. If you will allow it, we will discuss the traditions another time, and will confine ourselves to-day to the different texts to which you referred in favour of celibacy. When Peter says, 'We have given up everything,' it seems to us that he had no intention of saying that he had for ever given up his wife by a vow. For St. Paul positively says, many years after, that Peter had his wife: that he was not only living with her in his own house, but was travelling with her when preaching the Gospel. The words of Scripture are of such evidence on that subject that they can neither be obscured by any shrewd explanation, nor by any tradition, however respectable it may appear.

"Though you know the words of Paul on that subject, you will allow us to read them: 'Have we not power to eat and drink? Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?' (I. Cor ix: 4, 5). St. Peter saying, 'We have forsaken everything,' could not then mean that he had made a vow of celibacy, and that he would never live with his wife as a married man. Evidently the words of Peter mean only that Jesus had the first place in his heart—that everything else, even the dearest objects of his love, as father, mother, wife, were only secondary in his affections and thoughts. Your other text about the angels who do not marry, from which you infer the obligation and law of the vow of celibacy, does not seem to us to bear on that subject as much as you have told us. For, be kind enough to again read the text: 'Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.' (Matt. xxii: 29, 30). You see that when our Saviour speaks of men who are like angels, and who do not marry, He takes care to observe that He speaks of the state of men *after the resurrection*. If the Church had the same rule for us that Christ mentioned for the angelic men to whom He refers, and would allow us to make a vow never to marry after the resurrection, we would not have the slightest objection to such a vow.

"You see that our Saviour speaks of a state of celibacy; but He does not intimate that that state is to begin on this side of the grave. Why does not our Church imitate and follow the teachings of our Saviour? Why does she enforce a state of celibacy before the resurrection, while Christ postpones the promulgation of this law till after that great day? Christ speaks of a perpetual celibacy only in heaven! On what authority, then, does our Church enforce that celibacy on this side of the grave, when we still carry our souls in earthly vessels? You tell us that the vow of celibacy is the best remedy

against the inclinations of our corrupt nature ; but do you not fear that your remedy makes war against the great one which God prepared in His wisdom ? Do we not read in our own Vulgate : *‘Propter fornicationem autem unus quisque uxorem suam habeat, et unaquaque virum suum’* ? ‘To avoid fornication let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.’ (II. Cor. vii : 2).

“Is it not too strange, indeed, that God does tell us that the best remedy He had prepared against the inclinations of our corrupt nature is in the blessings of a holy marriage ?

The sound of my last words were still on my lips when our venerable superior, unable any longer to conceal his indignation, abruptly interrupted me, saying :

“I do exceedingly regret to have allowed you to go so far. This is not a Christian and humble discussion between young Levites and their superior, to receive from him the light they want. It is the exposition and defence of the most heretical doctrines I have ever heard. Are you not ashamed, when you try to make us prefer your interpretations of the Holy Scriptures to that of the Church ? Is it to you, or to His holy Church, that Christ promised the light of the Holy Ghost ? Is it to you who have to teach the Church, or the Church who must teach you ? Is it you who will govern and guide the Church, or the Church who will govern and guide you ? My dear Chiniquy, if there is not a great and prompt change in you and in those whom you pretend to represent, I fear much for you all. You show a spirit of infidelity and revolt which frightens me. Just like Lucifer, you rebel against the Lord ! Do you not fear to share the eternal pains of his rebellion ? Whence have you taken the false and heretical notions you have, for instance, about the wives of the apostles ? Do you not know that you are supporting a Protestant error, when you say that the apostles were living with their wives in the usual way of married people ? It is true that Paul says that the apostles had women with them, and that they were even travelling with them. But the holy traditions of the Church tell us that those women were holy virgins, who were travelling with the apostles to serve and help them in different ways. They were ministering to their different wants—washing their underclothes, preparing their meals, just like the housekeeper whom the priests have to-day.

“But only a word more, and I am done. If you accept the teaching of the Church, and submit yourselves as dutiful children to that most holy Mother, she will raise you to the dignity of the priesthood, a dignity much above kings and emperors in this world. If you serve her with fidelity, she will secure to you the respect and veneration of the whole world while you live, and procure you a crown of glory in heaven.

“But if you reject her doctrines, and persist in your rebellious views against one of the most holy dogmas ; if you continue to listen to the voice of your own deceitful reason rather than to the voice of the Church, in the interpretation of the Holy Scrip-

tures, you become heretics, apostates, and Protestants ; you will lead a dishonoured life in this world, and you will be lost for all eternity."

Our superior left us immediately after these fulminating words. Some of the theological students, after his exit, laughed heartily, and thanked me for having so bravely fought and gained so glorious a victory. Two of them, disgusted by the sophisms and logical absurdities of our superior, left the seminary a few days later.

At first it appeared to me that I was only combating, in a respectful way, against my old friend, Rev. Mr. Leprohon ; but I had received it from his own lips that I had really fought against the Lord ! After spending a long dark night of anguish and remorse, my first action, the next day, was to go to confession, and ask my confessor, with tears of regret, pardon for the sins I had committed and the scandal I had given. Had I listened to the voice of my conscience, I certainly would have left the seminary that day ; for they told me that I had confounded my superior and pulverised all his arguments. Reason and conscience told me that the vow of celibacy was a sin against logic, morality, and God.

But I was a most sincere Roman Catholic. I had, therefore, to fight a new battle against my conscience and intelligence, so as to subdue and silence them for ever ! Many a time it was my hope, before this, to have succeeded in slaughtering them at the foot of the altar of my Church ; but that day, far from being for ever silenced and buried, they had come out again with renewed force, to waken me from the terrible illusions in which I was living. Nevertheless, after a long and frightful battle, my hope was that they were perfectly subdued and buried under the feet of the holy fathers, the learned theologians, and the venerable Popes, whose voice only I was determined now to follow. I felt a real calm after that struggle. It was evidently the silence of death, although my confessor told me it was the peace of God. More than ever I determined to have no knowledge, no thought, no will, no light, no desires, no science but that which my Church would give me through my superior. I was fallible, she was infallible ! I was a sinner, she was the immaculate spouse of Jesus Christ ! I was weak, she had more power than the great waters of the ocean ! I was but an atom, she was covering the whole world with her glory ! What could I fear in humbling myself at her feet ?

With these sentiments of a most profound and perfect respect for my Church, I irrevocably consecrated myself to her service on the 4th of May, 1832, by making the vow of celibacy and accepting the office of sub-deacon.

CHAPTER XIV.

The Impurities of the Theology of Rome.

LET those who understand Latin, read *The Priest, the Woman, and the Confessional*, and decide as to whether or not the sentiments therein contained are not enough to shock the feelings of the most depraved. And let it be remembered that all those abominations have to be studied, learnt by heart, and thoroughly understood by men who have to make a vow never to marry! For it is not till after his vow of celibacy that the student is *initiated* into those mysteries of iniquity.

Has the world ever witnessed such a sacrilegious comedy? A young man about twenty years of age has been enticed to make a vow of perpetual celibacy, and the very next day the Church of Rome put under the eye of his soul the most infamous spectacle! She fills his memory with the most disgusting images! She tickles all his senses and pollutes his ears, not by imaginary representations but by realities which would shock the most abandoned in vice! For, let it be well understood, that it is absolutely impossible for one to study those questions of Roman Theology, and fathom those forms of iniquity without having his body as well as his mind plunged into a state most degrading. Moreover, Rome does not even try to conceal the overwhelming power of this kind of teaching; she does not even attempt to make it a secret from the victims of her incomparable depravity, but BRAVELY TELLS them that the study of those questions will act with an irresistible power upon their organs, and without a blush says "that pollution must follow!!!"

In order that the Church of Rome may more certainly destroy her victims, and that they may not escape from the abyss which she has dug under their feet, she tells them "There is no sin for you in those pollutions!" (Dens, vol. i., p. 315). But Rome must bewitch so as better to secure their destruction. She puts to their lips the cup of her enchantments, the more certainly to kill their souls, dethrones God from their consciences, and abrogates His eternal laws of holiness. What answer does Rome give to those who reproach her with the awful impurity of her theology? "My theological works," she answers, "are all written in Latin; the people cannot read them. No evil, no scandal, therefore, can come from them!" But this answer is a miserable subterfuge. Is this not the public acknowledgement that her theology would be exceedingly injurious to the people if it were read and understood by them?

By saying, "My theological works are written in Latin therefore the people cannot be defiled, as they do not understand them," Rome does acknowledge that these works would only act as a pestilence among the people, were they read and understood by them. But are not the one hundred thousand priests of Rome bound to explain in every known tongue, and present to the mind of every nation, the theology contained in those

books ? Are they not bound to make every polluting sentence in them flow into the ears, imaginations, hearts, and minds of all the married and unmarried women whom Rome holds in her grasp ?

I exaggerate nothing when I say that not fewer than half a million women every day are compelled to hear in their own language, almost every polluting sentence and impure notion of the diabolical sciences. And here I challenge, most fearlessly, the Church of Rome to deny what I say when I state that the daily average of women to go to confession to each priest is ten. But let us reduce the number to five. Then the one hundred thousand priests who are scattered over the whole world, hear the confessions of five hundred thousand women every day ! Well, now, out of one hundred women who confess, there are at least ninety-nine whom the priest is bound in conscience to pollute, by questioning them on unnameable matters. How can one be surprised at the rapid downfall of the nations who are under the yoke of the Pope ?

The public statistics of the European, as well as of American nations, show that there is among Roman Catholics nearly double the amount of prostitution, bastardy, theft, perjury, and murder, than is found among Protestant nations. Where must we, then, look for the cause of those stupendous facts, if not in the corrupt teachings of the theology of Rome ? How can the Roman Catholic nations hope to raise themselves in the scale of Christian dignity and morality as long as there remain one hundred thousand priests in the midst, bound in conscience every day to pollute the minds and the hearts of their mothers, their wives, and their daughters ! And here let me say, once for all, that I am not induced to speak as I do from any motive of contempt or unchristian feeling against the theological professors who have initiated me into those mysteries of iniquity. The Rev. Mr. Raimbault and Leprohon, were, and in my mind they still are, as venerable as men can be in the Church of Rome. As I have been myself, and as all the priests of Rome are, they were plunged without understanding it, into the abyss of the most stolid ignorance.

Every time our theological teachers gave us our lessons, it was evident that they blushed in the inmost parts of their souls. Their consciences as honest men were evidently forbidding them, on the one hand, to open their mouths on such matters while, on the other hand, as slaves and priests of the Pope, they were compelled to speak without reserve.

After our lessons in theology, we students used to be filled with such a sentiment of shame that sometimes we hardly dared to look at each other ; and, when alone in our rooms, those horrible pictures were affecting our hearts, in spite of ourselves, as the rust affects and corrodes the hardest and purest steel. More than one of my fellow-students told me, with tears of shame and rage, that they regretted to have bound themselves by perpetual oaths to minister at the altars of the Church.

One day one of the students, called Desaulnier, who was sick in the same room with me, asked me: "Chiniquy, what do you think of the matters which are the object of our present theological studies? Is it not a burning shame that we must allow our minds to be so polluted?"

"I cannot sufficiently tell you my feelings of disgust," I answered. "Had I known sooner that we were to be dragged over such a ground, I certainly never would have nailed my future to the banners under which we are irrevocably bound to live."

"Do you know," said Desaulnier, "that I am determined never to consent to be ordained a priest; for when I think of the fact that the priest is bound to confer with women on all these polluting matters, I feel an insurmountable disgust and shame."

"I am not less troubled," I replied. "My head aches and my heart sinks within me, when I hear our theologians telling us that we will be in conscience bound to speak to females on these impure subjects. But sometimes this looks to me as if it were a bad dream, the impure phantoms of which will disappear at the first awakening. Our Church, which is so pure and holy that she can only be served by the spotless virgins, surely cannot compel us to pollute our lips, thoughts, souls, and even our bodies, by speaking to strange women on matters so defiling!"

"But we are near the hour at which the good Mr. Leprohon is in the habit of visiting us. Will you," I said, "promise to stand by me in what I will ask him on this subject? I hope to get from him a pledge that we will not be compelled to be polluted in the confessional by the women who will confess to us. The purity and holiness of our superior is of such a high character, that I am sure he has never said a word to females on those degrading matters."

A few minutes after this our superior entered to kindly inquire how we had rested the night before. Having thanked him for his kindness, I opened the volumes of Dens and Liguori which were on our table and, with a blush, putting my fingers on one of the infamous chapters referred to, I said to him:

"After God, you have the first place in my heart since my mother's death, and you know it. I take you, not only as my benefactor, but also, as it were, as my father and mother. You will therefore tell me all I want to know in these hours of anxiety, through which God is pleased to make me pass. To follow your advice, not to say your commands, I have lately consented to receive the order of sub-deacon, and I have in consequence taken the vow of perpetual celibacy. But I will not conceal the fact from you, I had not a clear understanding of what I was then doing; and Desaulnier has just stated to me, that until recently he had no more idea of the nature of that promise, nor of the difficulties which we now see ahead of us in our priestly life, than I had.

"But Dens, Liguori, and St. Thomas have given us notions

quite new in regard to many things. They have directed our minds to the knowledge of the laws which are in us, as well as in every child of Adam. They have, in a word, directed our minds into regions which were quite new and unexplored by us ; and I dare say that every one of those whom we have known, whether in this house or elsewhere, who have made the same vow, could tell the same tale.

"However, I do not speak for them ; I speak only for myself and Desaulnier. For God's sake, please tell us if we will be bound in conscience to speak in the confessional, to the married and unmarried females, in such impure and defiling questions as are contained in the theologians before us ?"

"Most undoubtedly," replied Rev. Mr. Leprohon ; "because the learned and holy theologians whose writings are in your hands are positive on that question. It is absolutely necessary that you should question your female penitents on such matters ; for, as a general thing, girls and married women are too timid to confess those sins of which they are even more frequently guilty than men, therefore they must be helped by questioning them."

"But have you not," I rejoined, "induced us to make an oath that we should always remain pure and undefiled ? How is it then, that to-day you have put us in such a position that it is almost an impossibility for us to be true to our sacred promise ? For the theologians are unanimous that those questions put by us to our female penitents, together with the recital of their secret sins, will act with such an irresistible power upon us that we will be polluted. Would it not be better for us to feel those things in the holy bonds of marriage, with our wives, and according to the laws of God, than in company and conversation with strange women ? Because, if we are to believe the theologians which are in our hands, no priest—not even you, my dear Mr. Leprohon, can hear the confessions of women without being defiled."

Here Desaulnier interrupted me, and said : "My dear Mr. Leprohon, I concur in everything Chiniquy has just been telling you. Would we not be more chaste and pure by living with our lawful wives, than by daily exposing ourselves in the confessional in the company of women whose presence will irresistibly drag us into the most shameful pit of impurity ? I ask you, my dear sir, what will become of my vow of perfect and perpetual chastity, when the seducing presence of my neighbour's wife, or the enchanting words of his daughter, will have defiled me through the confessional. After all, I may be looked upon by the people as a chaste man ; but what will I be in the eyes of God ? The people may entertain the thought that I am a strong honest man ; but will I not be a broken reed ? Will God not be the witness that the irresistible temptations which will have assailed me when hearing the secret sins of some sweet and tempting woman, will have deprived me of that glorious crown of chastity for which I have so dearly paid ? Men will think that I am an angel of purity ;

but my own conscience will tell me that I am nothing but a skilful hypocrite. For according to all the theologians, the confessional is the tomb of the chastity of the priests ! If I hear the confessions of women, I will be like all the other priests, in a tomb, well painted and gilded on the outside, but within full of corruption."

Francis Desaulnier, just as he had foretold me, refused to be a priest. He remained all his life in the orders of the sub-deaconate, in the College of Nicolet, as a Professor of Philosophy. He was a man who seldom spoke in conversation, but thought very much. He was a good logician and a profound mathematician ; and although affable to everyone, he was not communicative. I was probably the only one to whom he opened his mind concerning the great questions of Christianity—faith, history, the Church and her discipline. He repeatedly said to me: " I wish I had never opened a book of theology. Our theologians are without heart, soul or logic. Many of them approve theft, lies and perjury ; others drag us, without a blush, into the most filthy pits of iniquity. Every one of them would like to make an assassin of every Catholic. According to their doctrines, Christ is nothing but a Corsican brigand, whose bloody disciples are bound to destroy all the heretics with fire and sword. Were we acting according to the principles of those theologians we would slaughter all Protestants with the same coolness of blood as we would shoot down the wolf which crosses our path. With their hands still reddened with the blood of St. Bartholomew, they speak to us of charity, religion and God, as if there were neither of them in the world."

Desaulnier's fearless and energetic words had evidently made a very painful impression upon our superior. It was not a usual thing for his disciples in theology thus to take upon themselves to speak with such freedom as we both did on this occasion. He did not conceal his pain at what he called our unbecoming and un-christian attack upon some of the most holy ordinances of the Church ; and after he had refuted Desaulnier in the best way he could, he turned to me and said: " My dear Chiniquy, I have repeatedly warned you against the habit you have of listening to your own frail reasoning, when you should only obey like a dutiful child. Were we to believe you, we would immediately set ourselves to work to reform the Church and abolish the confession of women to priests ; we would throw all our theological books into the fire and have new ones written, better adapted to your fancy. What does all this prove ? Only one thing, and that is, that the devil pride is tempting you as he has tempted all the so-called Reformers, and destroyed them as he would you. If you do not take care, you will become another Luther !

" The theological books of St. Thomas, Liguori and Dens have been approved by the Church. How, therefore, do you not see the ridicule and danger of your position ? On one side, then, I see all our holy popes, the two thousand Catholic bishops, all our learned theologians and priests, backed up by our two

hundred millions of Roman Catholics drawn up as an innumerable army to fight the battles of the Lord ; and on the other side what do I see ? Nothing but my small, though very dear Chiniquy !

"How, then, is it that you do not fear, when with your weak reasoning you oppose the mighty reasoning and light of so many holy popes, venerable bishops and learned theologians ? Is it not just as absurd for you to try to reform the Church by your small reason, as it is for the grain of sand which is found at the foot of the great mountain to try to turn that mighty mountain out of its place ? Or for the small drop of water to attempt to throw the boundless ocean out of its bed, or try to oppose the running tides of the Polar seas ?

"Believe me, and take my friendly advice, before it is too late. Let the small grain of sand remain at the foot of the majestic mountain ! and let the humble drop of water consent to follow the irresistible currents of the boundless seas, and everything will be in order.

"All the good priests who have heard the confessions of women before us have been sanctified and have had their souls saved, even when their bodies were polluted ; for those carnal pollutions are nothing but human miseries, which cannot defile a soul which desires to remain united to God. Are the rays of the sun defiled by coming down into mud ? No ! The rays remain pure, and return spotless to the shining orb whence they came. So the heart of a good priest—as I hope my dear Chiniquy will be—will remain pure and holy in spite of the accidental and unavoidable defilement of the flesh.

"Apart from those things, in your ordination you will receive a special grace which will change you into another man ; and the Virgin Mary, to whom you will constantly address yourself, will obtain for you a perfect purity from her Son.

"The defilement of the flesh spoken of by the theologians, and which, I confess, is unavoidable when hearing the confessions of women, must not trouble you ; for they are not sinful, as Dens and Liguori assure us. (Dens, vol. i., pp. 299, 300). But enough on that subject. I forbid you to speak to me any more on those idle questions, and, as much as my authority is anything to you both, I forbid you to say a word more to each other on that matter ! !"

Almost every month of the ten years which I had passed in the seminary of Nicolet, priests of the district of Three Rivers and elsewhere were sent by the bishops to spend two or three weeks in doing penances for having bastards by their nieces, their housekeepers, or their fair penitents. Even not long before this conversation with our director, the curate of St. François, the Rev. Mr. Amiot, had in the very same week two children by two of his fair penitents, both of whom were sisters. One of those girls gave birth to her child at the parsonage the very night on which the bishop was on his episcopal visit to that parish. These public and undeniable facts were not much in harmony with those beautiful theories of our

venerable director concerning the rays of the sun, which "remained pure and undefiled even when warming and vivifying the mud of our planet." The facts had frequently occurred to my mind while Mr. Leprohon was speaking, and I was tempted more than once to ask him respectfully if he really thought these "shining rays," the priests, had thus come into the mire, and would then return, like the rays of the sun, without taking back with them something of the mire in which they have been so strangely wallowing. My respect for Mr. Leprohon sealed my lips.

I was then taught what the real foundation of the Church of Rome is, and sincerely believed that to think for myself was a damnable impiety—that to look and see with my own eyes, and understand with my own mind, was an unpardonable sin. To be saved I had to believe, not what I considered to be the truth, but what the Popes told me to be the truth. I had to look and see every object of faith, just as every Roman Catholic of to-day has to look and see the same, through the Pope's eyes or those of his theologians.

However absurd and impious this belief may be, yet it was mine, and it is also the belief of every true member of the Church of Rome to-day. The glorious light and grace of God could not possibly flow directly from Him to me; they had to pass through the Pope and his Church, which were my only ocean of light. It was, then, my firm belief that there was an impassable abyss between myself and God, and that the Pope and his Church were the only bridge by which I could have communication with Him. That stupendously high and most sublime mountain, the Pope, was between myself and God; and all that was allowed my poor soul was to raise itself and travel with great difficulty till it attained the foot of that holy mountain, the Pope, and, prostrating myself there in the dust, ask him to let me know what my yet distant God would have me do.

Darkness, ignorance, uncertainty and eternal loss were my lot, the very moment I ceased worshipping at the feet of the Pope! The God of heaven was not *my* God; He was only the God of the Pope! The Saviour of the world was not my Saviour; He was only the Pope's! Therefore, it was through the Pope only that I could receive Christ as my Saviour.

But God saw the tears with which I bedewed my pillow that night. He heard the cry of my agonising soul, and in His infinite love and mercy determined to come to my rescue, and save me. If He saw fit to leave me many years more in the slavery of Egypt, it was that I might better know the plagues of the land of darkness, and the iron chains which are there prepared for poor lost souls. When the hour of my deliverance came, the Lord took me by the hand and helped me to cross the Red Sea. He brought me to the Land of Promise—a land of peace, life, and joy which passeth understanding.

CHAPTER XV.

The Priests of Rome and the Holy Fathers.

THERE are several imposing ceremonies at the ordination of a priest ; and I will never forget the joy I felt when the Roman Pontiff, presenting to me the Bible, ordered me, with a solemn voice, to study and preach it. That order passed through my soul as a beam of light. But, alas ! those rays of light and life were soon to be followed, as a flash of lightning in a stormy night, by the most sudden and distressing darkness !

When holding the sacred volume, I accepted with unspeakable joy the command of studying and preaching its saving truth ; but I felt as if a thunderbolt had fallen upon me when I pronounced the awful oath which is required from every priest : "*I will never interpret the Holy Scriptures except according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers.*" Many times, with the other students in theology, I had discussed the nature of the strange oath ; still more often, in the silence of my meditations, alone in the presence of God, I had tried to fathom the bottomless abyss which, it seemed to me, was dug under my feet by it, and every time my conscience had shrunk in terror from its consequences. But I was not the only one in the seminary who contemplated, with an anxious mind, its evidently blasphemous nature.

About six months before our ordination, Stephen Baillargeon, one of my fellow theological students, had said in my presence to our superior, the Rev. Mr. Raimbault : " Allow me to tell you that one of the things with which I cannot reconcile my conscience is the solemn oath we will have to take, ' That we will never interpret Scriptures except according to the *unanimous* consent of the Holy Fathers ! ' We have not given a single hour yet to the serious study of the Holy Fathers. I know many priests, and not a single one of them has ever studied the Holy Fathers ; they have not even got them in their libraries ! We will probably walk in their footsteps. It may be that not a single volume of the Holy Fathers will ever fall into our hands ! In the name of common sense, how can we swear that we will follow the sentiments of men of whom we know absolutely nothing, and about whom, it is more than probable, we will never know anything, except by mere vague hearsay ? "

Our superior gave evident signs of weakness in his answer to that unexpected difficulty. But his embarrassment grew much greater when I said : " Baillargeon cannot contemplate that oath without anxiety, and he has given you some of his reasons ; but he has not said the last word on that strange oath. If you will allow me, Mr. Superior, I will present you some more formidable objections. It is not so much on account of our ignorance of the doctrines of the Holy Fathers that tremble when I think that I will have ' to swear never to inter-

pret the Scriptures, except according to their unanimous consent.' Would to God that I could say, with Baillargeon, 'I know nothing of the Holy Fathers, how can I swear that they will guide me in all my ways?' It is true that we know so little of them that it is supremely ridiculous, if it is not an insult to God and man, that we take them for our guides. But my regret is that we know already too much of the Holy Fathers to be exempt from perjuring ourselves, when we swear that we will not interpret the Holy Scriptures except according to their unanimous consent.

"Is it not a fact that the Holy Fathers' writings are so perfectly kept out of sight, that it is absolutely impossible to read and study them? But even if we had access to them, have we sufficient time at our disposal to study them so perfectly that we could conscientiously swear that we will follow them? And if we don't study them, how can we be exempted from wilful perjury the day that we will swear to follow them? How can we follow a thing we do not see, which we cannot hear, and about which we do not know more than the man in the moon? Our shameful ignorance of the Holy Fathers is sufficient reason to make us fear at the approach of the solemn hour that we will swear to follow them. Yes! but we know enough of the Holy Fathers to chill the blood in our veins when swearing to interpret the Holy Scriptures only according to their unanimous consent. Please, Mr. Superior, tell us what are the texts of Scripture on which the Holy Fathers are *unanimous*. You respect yourself too much to try to answer a question which no honest man has, or will ever dare to answer. And if you, one of the most learned men of France, cannot put your finger on the texts of the Holy Bible and say, 'The Holy Fathers are perfectly unanimous on these texts!' how can we, poor young ecclesiastics of the humble College of Nicolet, say, 'The Holy Fathers are *unanimously* of the same mind on those texts?' But if we cannot distinguish to-day, and if we shall never be able to distinguish between the texts on which the Fathers are unanimous and the ones on which they differ, how can we dare to swear before God and men to interpret *every text of the Scriptures* only according to the unanimous consent of those Holy Fathers?

"The consequences of that oath are *legion*, and every one of them seems to me the death of our ministry, the damnation of our souls! You have read the history of the Church, as we have it here, written by Herion, Berrault, Bell, Costell, and Fleury. Well, what is the prominent fact in those reliable histories of our Church? Is it not that the Church has constantly been filled with the noise of the controversies of Holy Fathers with Holy Fathers? Do we not find, on every page, that the Holy Fathers of one century very often differed from the Holy Fathers of another century in very important matters? Is it not a public and undeniable fact, that the history of our holy Church is almost nothing else than the history of

the hard conflicts, stern divisions, unflinching contradictions and oppositions of Holy Fathers to Holy Fathers ?

"Here is a big volume of manuscript written by me, containing only extracts from our best Church historians, filled with the public disputes of Holy Fathers among themselves on almost every subject of Christianity.

"There are Holy Fathers who say, with our best modern theologians—St. Thomas, Bellarmine, and Liguori—that we must kill heretics as we kill wild beasts ; while many others say that we must tolerate them ! You all know the name of the Holy Father who sends to hell all the widows who marry a second time, while other Holy Fathers are of a different mind. Some of them, you know well, had very different notions from ours about purgatory. Is it necessary for me to give you the names of the Holy Fathers, in Africa and Asia, who refused to accept supreme jurisdiction we acknowledge in the Pope over all churches ? Several Holy Fathers have denied the supreme authority of the Church of Rome—you know it ; they have laughed at the excommunications of the Popes ! Some even have gladly died, when excommunicated by the Pope, without doing anything to reconcile themselves to him ! What do we find, in the six volumes of letters we have still from St. Jerome, if not the undeniable fact that he filled the Church with the noise of his harsh denunciations of the Scriptural views of St. Augustine on many important points. You have read those letters ? Well, have you not concluded that St. Jerome and St. Augustine agreed almost only on one thing, which was, to disagree on every subject they treated ?

"Did not St. Jerome knock his head against nearly all the Holy Fathers of his time ? And has he not received hard knocks from almost all the Holy Fathers with whom he was acquainted ? Is it not a public fact that St. Jerome and several other Holy Fathers rejected the sacred books of the Maccabees, Judith, Tobias, just as the heretics of our time reject them ?

"It is a well-known fact, though it is a very deplorable one, for instance, that St. Augustine did not always keep to the same correct views on the text, 'Thou art Peter, and upon that rock I will build My church.' After holding correct views on that fundamental truth he gave it up, at the end of his life, to say, with the Protestants of our day, that 'upon that rock' means only Christ, and not Peter. Now, how can I be bound by an oath to follow the views of men who have themselves been wavering and changing, when the Word of God must stand as an unmovable rock to my heart ? If you require from us an oath, why put into our hands the history of the Church, which has stuffed our memory with the undeniable facts of the endless fierce divisions of the Holy Fathers on almost every question which the Scriptures present to our faith ?

"Would to God that I could say, with Baillargeon, I know nothing of the Holy Fathers ! Then I perhaps could be at peace with my conscience, after perjuring myself by promising a thing that I cannot do.

"Nothing distresses me so much in our holy religion as the want of confidence in God when we go to the feet of Jesus to hear or read His soul-saving words, and the abundance of self-confidence when we go among sinful and fallible men, to know what they say.

"It is not to the Holy Scriptures that we are invited to go to know what the Lord saith, it is to the Holy Fathers!!

"Would it be possible that, in our Holy Church, the Word of God would be darkness, and the word of men light!

"This dogma, or article of our religion, by which we must go to the Holy Fathers in order to know what 'The Lord saith,' and not to the Holy Scriptures, is to my soul what a handful of sand would be to my eyes—it makes me perfectly blind.

"When our venerable bishop places the Holy Scriptures in my hands and commands me to study and preach them, I will understand what he means, and he will know what he says. He will give me a most sublime work to perform, and with the grace of God, I hope I will do it. But when He orders me to swear that I will *never* interpret the Holy Scriptures, except according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers, will he not make a perjured man of me, and will he not say a thing to which he has not given sufficient attention? For to swear that we will never interpret anything of the Scriptures except according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers, is to swear to a thing as impossible and ridiculous as to take the moon with our hands. I say more, it is to swear that we will never study or interpret a single chapter of the Bible. For it is probable that there are very few chapters of that Holy Book which have not been a cause of serious differences between some of the Holy Fathers.

"As the writings of the Holy Fathers fill at least two hundred volumes in folio, it will not take less than ten years of constant study to know on what question they are or are not unanimous! If, after that time of study, I find that they are *unanimous* on the question of orthodoxy which I must believe and preach, all will be right with me. I will walk with a fearless heart to the gates of eternity, with the certainty of following the true way of salvation. But if among fifty Holy Fathers there are forty-nine on one side and one only on the opposite side, in what awful state of distress will I be plunged! Will I not be then as the ship in a stormy night, after she has lost her compass, her masts and her helm. If I were allowed to follow the majority, there would always be a plank of safety to rescue me from the impending wreck. But the Pope has inexorably tied us to unanimity. If my faith is not the faith of *unanimity*, I am for ever damned. I am out of the Church!

"What a frightful alternative is just before us! We must either perjure ourselves, by swearing to follow a unanimity which is a fable, in order to remain Roman Catholics, or we must plunge into the abyss of impiety and atheism by refusing to swear that we will adhere to a unanimity which never existed."

It was visible, at the end of that long and stormy conference,

that the fears and anxieties of Baillargeon and mine were partaken of by every one of the students in theology. The boldness of our expressions brought upon us a real storm. But our superior did not dare to face or answer a single one of our arguments, he was evidently embarrassed, and nothing could surpass his joy when the bell told him that the hour of the conference was over. He promised to answer us the next day ; but the next day he did nothing but throw dust in our eyes, and abuse us to his heart's content. He began by forbidding me to read any more of the controversial books I had bought a few months before, among which was the celebrated Derry discussion between seven priests and seven Protestants. I had to give back the well-known discussion between "Pope and Maguire," and between Gregg and the same Maguire. I had also to give up the numbers of the *Avenir* and other books of Laménais, which I had got the liberty, as a privilege to read. It was decided that my intelligence was not sufficiently strong to read those books. I had nothing to do but to bow my head under the yoke and obey, without a word or murmur. The darkest night was made around our understandings, and we had to believe that that awful darkness was the shining light of God !

During the months which elapsed between that hard fought, though lost battle, and the solemn hour of my priestly ordination, I did all I could to subdue and annihilate my thoughts on that subject. My hope was that I had entirely succeeded. But, to my dismay, that reason suddenly awoke ; as from a long sleep, when I had perjured myself, as every priest has to do. A chill of horror and shame ran through all my frame, in spite of myself. In my inmost soul a cry was heard from my wounded conscience, "You annihilate the Word of God ! You rebel against the Holy Ghost ! You deny the Holy Scriptures to follow the steps of sinful men ! You reject the pure waters of eternal life, to drink the waters of death."

In order to choke again the voice of my conscience, I did what my Church advised me to do—I cried to my wafer god and to the blessed Virgin Mary that they might come to my help, and silence the voices which were troubling my peace by shaking my faith. With the utmost sincerity, the day of my ordination, I renewed the promise that I had already so often made, and said in the presence of God and His angels, "I promise that I will never believe anything except according to the teachings of the Holy and Apostolic Church of Rome." And on the pillow of folly, ignorance, and fanaticism I laid my head to sleep the sleep of spiritual death, with the two hundred million slaves whom the Pope sees at his feet. And I slept that sleep till the God of our salvation, in His great mercy, awoke me, by giving to my soul the light, the truth and the life which are in Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER XVI.

The Roman Catholic Priesthood.

I WAS ordained a priest of Rome in the Cathedral of Quebec, on the 21st September, 1833, by the Right Reverend Signaie, first Archbishop of Canada. No words can express the solemnity of my thoughts, the superhuman nature of my aspirations, when the delegate of the Pope, imposing his hands on my head, gave me the power of converting a real wafer into the real substantial body, blood, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ ! The bright allusion of Eve, as the deceiver told her, "Ye shall be as gods," was child's play compared with what I felt when, assured by the infallible voice of my Church that I was not only on equal terms with my Saviour and God, but I was in reality above Him ! and that hereafter I would not only command, but *create* Him. ! !

I had at last attained the top of that power and holiness which my Church had invited me to consider from my infancy as the most glorious gift which God had ever given to man ! The dignity which I had just received was above all the dignities and the thrones of this world. The holy character of the PRIESTHOOD had been impressed on my soul, with the blood of Christ, as an imperishable and celestial glory. Nothing could ever take it away from me, in time or eternity. I was to be a priest of my God for ever and ever. Not only had Christ let His divine and priestly mantle fall on my shoulders, but He had so perfectly associated me with Himself as the great and eternal Sacrificator, that I was to renew, every day of my life His atoning SACRIFICE ! At my bidding, the only and eternally begotten Son of my God was now to come into my hands in person ! The same Christ who sits at the right hand of the Father was to come down every day into my breast, to unite his flesh with my flesh, His blood to my blood, His divine soul to my poor sinful soul, in order to walk, work, and live in me and with me in the most perfect unity and intimacy !

I passed that whole day and the greater part of the night in contemplating the superhuman honours and dignities which my beloved Church had conferred on me. Many times I fell on my knees to thank God for His mercies toward me, and I could hardly speak to Him except with tears of joy and gratitude. I often repeated the words of the holy Virgin Mary: "My soul doth magnify the Lord, and my spirit doth rejoice in God my Saviour."

The privileges granted to me were of a more substantial kind than those bestowed on Mary. She had been obeyed by Christ only when He was a child. He had to obey me now, although He was in the full possession of His eternal glory !

In the presence of God and His angels, I promised to live a holy life as a token of my gratitude to Him. I said to my lips and my tongue, "Be holy now ; for you will henceforth be most intimately and personally united to Christ Jesus. You

will be fed with the body, blood, soul, and divinity of Him before whom the angels do not find themselves pure enough ! ”

Looking on my table, where my pipe, filled with tobacco, and my snuff-box were lying, I said : “ Impure and noxious weeds, you will no more defile me ! I am the priest of the Almighty. It is beneath my dignity to touch you any more ! ” and opening the window I threw them into the street, never to make use of them again.

On the 21st of September, 1833, I had thus been raised to the priesthood ; but I had not yet made use of the divine powers with which I had been invested. The next day I was to say my first Mass, and work that incomparable miracle which the Church of Rome calls TRANSUBSTANTIATION.

As I have already said, I had passed the greater part of the night between the 21st and 22nd in meditation and thanksgivings. On the morning of the 22nd, long before the dawn of day, I was dressed and on my knees. This was to be the most holy and glorious day of my life ! Raised, the day before, to a dignity which was above the kingdoms and empires of the world, I was now, for the first time, to work a miracle at the altar which no angel or seraph could do.

At my bidding Christ was to receive a new existence ! The miracle wrought by Joshua, when he commanded the sun and moon to stop, on the bloody plain of Gibeon, was nothing compared to the miracle that I was to perform that day. When the eternal Son of God would be in my hands, I was to present myself at the throne of mercy, with that expiatory victim of the sins of the world, pay the debt, not only of my guilty soul, but of all those for whom I should speak ! The ineffable sacrifice of Calvary was to be renewed by me that day with the utmost perfection !

When the bell rang to tell me that the hour was come to clothe myself with the priestly robes and go to the altar, my heart beat with such rapidity that I came very near fainting. The holiness of the action I was to do, the infinite greatness of the sacrifice I was about to make, the divine victim I was to hold in my hands and present to God the Father ! the wonderful miracle I was to perform, filled my soul and my heart with such sentiments of terror, joy and awe, that I was trembling from head to foot ; and if very kind friends, among whom was the venerable secretary of the Archbishop of Quebec, later the Grand Vicar Cazault, had not been there to help and encourage me, I think I would not have dared to ascend the steps of the altar.

It is not an easy thing to go through all the ceremonies of a Mass. There are more than *one hundred different ceremonies and positions* of the body, which must be observed with the utmost perfection. To omit *one* of them willingly, or through a culpable neglect, or ignorance, is eternal damnation. But thanks to a dozen exercises through which I had gone the previous week, and thanks to the kind friends who helped and guided me, I went through the performances of that first Mass

much more easily than I expected. It lasted about an hour. But when it was over, I was really exhausted by the effort made to keep my mind and heart in unison with the infinite greatness of the mysteries accomplished by me.

To make one's self believe that he can convert a piece of bread into God requires such a supreme effort of the will, and complete annihilation of intelligence, that the state of the soul, after the effort is over, is more like death than life.

I had really persuaded myself that I had done the most holy and sublime action of my life, when, in fact, I had been guilty of the most outrageous act of idolatry ! My eyes, my hands and lips, my mouth and tongue, and all my senses, as well as the faculties of my intelligence, were telling me that what I had seen, touched, eaten, was nothing but a wafer ; but the voices of the Pope and his Church were telling me that it was the real body, blood, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ. I had persuaded myself that the voices of my senses and intelligence were the voices of Satan, and that the deceitful voice of the Pope was the voice of the God of Truth ! Every priest of Rome has to come to that strange degree of folly and perversity, every day of his life, to remain a priest of Rome.

The great imposture taught under the modern word TRANSUBSTANTIATION, when divested of the glare which Rome, by her sorceries, throws around it, is soon seen to be what it is—a *most impious and idolatrous doctrine*.

"I must carry the 'good God' to-morrow to a sick man," says the priest to his servant girl. "But there are no more particles in the tabernacle. Make some small cakes that I may consecrate them to-morrow." And the obedient domestic takes some wheat flour, for no other kind of flour is fit to make the god of the Pope. A mixture of any other kind would make the miracle of "transubstantiation" a great failure. The servant girl accordingly takes the dough, and bakes it between two heated irons, on which are graven the following figures:—



I. H. S.

When the whole is well baked, she takes her scissors and cuts those wafers, which are about four or five inches large, into smaller ones of the size of an inch, and respectfully hands them over to the priest. The next morning the priest takes the newly-baked wafers to the altar, and changes them into the body, blood, soul, and divinity of Jesus Christ. It was one of those wafers that I had taken to the altar in that solemn hour of my first mass, and which I had turned into my Saviour by the five magical words—HOC EST ENIM CORPUS MEUM !

I have often been asked : "Was it possible that you sincerely believed that the wafer could be changed into God by you ?" And, "Have you really worshipped that wafer as your Saviour?"

To my shame, and to the shame of poor humanity, I must

say, "Yes." I believed as sincerely as every Roman Catholic priest is bound to believe it, that I was creating my own Saviour-God every morning by the assumed consecration of the wafer; and I was saying to the people, as I presented it to them, "*Ecce Agnus Dei*"—"This is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world; let us adore Him"—and prostrating myself on my knees I was adoring the god made by myself, with the help of my servant; and all the people prostrated themselves to adore the newly-made god!

I must confess, further, that though I was bound to believe in the existence of Christ in heaven, and was invited by my Church to worship Him as my Saviour and my God, I had, as every Roman Catholic has, more confidence, faith, and love towards the Christ which I had created with a few words of my lips than towards the Christ of heaven.

My Church told me, every day of my life, and I had to believe and preach it, that though the Christ of heaven was my Saviour, He was angry against me on account of my sins; that He was constantly disposed to punish me, according to His terrible justice; that He was armed with lightning and thunder to crush me; and that, were it not for His mother, who day and night was interceding for me, I should be cast into that hell which my sins had so richly deserved. All the theologians, with St. Liguori at their head, whose writings I was earnestly studying, and which had received the approbation of infallible popes, persuaded me that it was Mary whom I had to thank and bless, if I had not yet been punished as I deserved. Not only had I to believe this doctrine, but I had to preach it to the people. The result was for me, as it is for every Roman Catholic, that my heart was really chilled, and I was filled with terror every time I looked at the Christ of heaven through the light and teaching of my Church. He could not, as I believed, look to me except with an angry face; He could not stretch out His hand towards me except to crush me, unless His merciful mother, or some other mighty saint, interposed their saving supplications to appease His just indignation. When I was praying to that Christ of the Church of Rome, my mind was constantly perplexed about the choice I should make of some powerful protector, whose influence could get me a favourable hearing from my irritated Saviour.

Besides this, I was told, and I had to believe it, that the Christ of heaven was a mighty monarch, a most glorious king, surrounded by innumerable hosts of servants, officers, and friends, and that, as it would not do for a poor rebel to present himself before his irritated King to get his pardon, but he must address himself to some of His most influential courtiers, or to His beloved mother, to whom nothing can be refused, that they might plead his cause; so I sincerely believed that it was better for me not to speak myself to Jesus Christ, but to look for some one who would speak for me.

But there were no such terrors or fears in my heart when I approached the Saviour whom I had created myself! Such

an humble and defenceless Saviour, surely, had no thunder in His hands to punish His enemies. He could have no angry looks for me. He was my friend, as well as the work of my hands. There was nothing in Him which could inspire me with any fear. Had I not brought Him down from heaven? And had He not come into my hands that He might hear, bless, and forgive me?—that He might be nearer to me, and I nearer to Him.

When I was in His presence, in that solitary church, there was no need of officers, of courtiers, of mothers to speak to Him for me. He was no longer there a mighty Monarch, an angry King, who could be approached only by the great officers of His court; He was now the rebuked of the world, the humble and defenceless Saviour of the manger, the forsaken Jesus of Calvary, the forgotten Christ of Gethsemane.

No words can give any idea of the pleasure I used to feel when alone, prostrated before the Christ whom I had made at the morning mass, I poured out my heart at His feet. It is impossible for those who have not lived under those terrible illusions to understand with what confidence I spoke to the Christ who was then before me, bound by the ties of His love for me! How many times, in the colder days of Winter, in churches where had never been a fire, with an atmosphere 15 degrees below zero, have passed whole hours alone, in adoration of the Saviour whom I had made only a few hours before! How often have I looked with silent admiration to the Divine Person who was there alone, passing the long hours of the day and night, rebuked and forsaken, that I might have opportunity of approaching Him, and of speaking to Him as a friend to his friend, as a repenting sinner to his merciful Saviour. My faith—I should rather say, my awful delusion—was then so complete that I scarcely felt the biting of that cold! I may say with truth, that the happiest hours I ever had, during the long years of darkness into which the Church of Rome had plunged me, were the hours which I passed in adoring the Christ whom I had made with my own lips. And every priest of Rome would make the same declaration, were they questioned on the subject.

In fact, the Roman Catholics have no other Saviour to whom they can betake themselves than the one made by the consecration of the wafer. He is the only Saviour who is not angry with them, and who does not require the mediation of virgins and saints to appease His wrath. This is the reason why Roman Catholic churches are so well filled by the poor blind Roman Catholics. See how they rush to the foot of their altars at almost every hour of the day, sometimes long before dawn! Go to some of their churches, even on a rainy and stormy morning, and you will see crowds of worshippers, of every age and from every grade of society, braving the storm and the rain, walking through the mud to pass an hour at the foot of their tabernacles!

How is it that the Roman Catholics, alone, offer such a spectacle to the civilised world? The reason is very simple and

plain. Every soul yearns for a God to whom it can speak, and who will hear its supplications with a merciful heart, and who will wipe away her penitential tears. Just as the flowers of our gardens turn naturally towards the sun which gives them their colour, their fragrance and their life, so every soul wants a Saviour who is not angry but merciful towards those who come unto Him—a Saviour who will say to the weary and the heavy laden: "Come unto Me, and I will give you rest"—a God who is not armed with thunder and lightning, and does not require to be approached only by saints, virgins, and martyrs; but who, through His Son Jesus, is the real, the true, and the only Friend of sinners.

The children of light, the disciples of the Gospel, who protest against the errors of Rome, know that their Heavenly Father is *everywhere* ready to hear, forgive and help them. They know that it is no more at Jerusalem, nor on this or that mountain, or at church, that God wants to be worshipped (John iv: 21). They know that their Saviour liveth, and is everywhere ready to hear those who invoke His name; that He is no more in that desert, or in that secret chamber (Matt. xxiv). They know that He is everywhere—that He is ever near to those who look to His bleeding wounds and want to wash their robes in His blood. They find Jesus in their most secret closets when they enter them to pray; they meet Him and converse with Him when in the fields, behind the counter, travelling on railroads or steamers—everywhere they meet with Him and speak to Him as Friend to friend.

Let Protestants cease to admire poor deluded Roman Catholics who dare the storm and go to church even before the dawn of day. This devotion, which so dazzles them, should excite compassion and not admiration; for it is the logical result of the most awful spiritual darkness. It is the offspring of the greatest imposture the world has ever seen, it is the natural consequence of the belief that the priest of Rome can create Christ and God by the consecration of a wafer, and keep Him in a secret chamber.

The Egyptians worshipped God under the form of crocodiles and calves; the Greeks made their gods of marble or gold; the Persian made the sun his god; the Hottentots make their gods with whalebone, and go far through storms to adore them. The Church of Rome makes her god out of a piece of bread! Is this not idolatry?

From the year 1833, to the day that God in His mercy opened my eyes, my servant had used more than a bushel of wheat flour, to make the little cakes which I had to convert into the Christ of the mass. Some of those I ate; others I carried about with me for the sick; and the others I placed in the tabernacle for the adoration of the people. I am often asked: "How is it that you could be guilty of such a gross act of idolatry?" My only answer is the answer of the blind man of the Gospel: "I know not; one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see" (John ix: 25).

CHAPTER XVII.

Nine Startling Consequences of the Dogma of Transubstantiation.

ON the day of my ordination to the priesthood, I had to believe, with all the priests of Rome, that it was within the limits of my powers to go into all the bakeries of Quebec and change all the loaves and biscuits in that old city, into the body, blood, soul and divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ, by pronouncing over them the five words: *HOC EST ENIM CORPUS MEUM*. Nothing would have remained of those loaves and biscuits but the smell, the colour, the taste.

2. Every bishop and priest of the cities of New York and Boston, Chicago, Montreal, Paris and London, etc., firmly believes and teaches that he has the power to turn all the loaves of their cities, of their dioceses, nay, of the whole world, into the body, blood, soul and divinity of our Saviour Jesus Christ. And though they have never yet found it advisable to do that wonderful miracle, they consider, and say, that to entertain any doubt about the power to perform that marvel, is as criminal as to entertain any doubt about the existence of God.

3. When in the Seminary of Nicolet, I heard several times our Superior tell us that a French priest, having been condemned to death in Paris, when dragged to the scaffold had, through revenge, consecrated and changed into Jesus Christ all the loaves of the bakeries of that great city which were along the streets through which he had to pass; and though our learned superior condemned that action in the strongest terms, yet he told us that the consecration was valid, and that the loaves were really changed into the body, blood, soul and divinity of the Saviour of the world. And I was bound to believe it under pain of eternal damnation.

4. Before my ordination I had been obliged to learn by heart, in one of the most sacred books of the Church of Rome (*Missale Romanum*, p. 93), the following statement: "If the host after consecration disappear, either by accident, as by the wind, or a miracle, or being taken and carried off by any animal; and it cannot be recovered, then he shall consecrate another."

And at page 57 I had learned: "If after consecration a fly has fallen in, or anything of that sort, and a nausea be occasioned to the priest, he shall draw it out and wash it with wine, and when the mass is finished, burn it, and the ashes and lotion shall be thrown into the sacrarium."

5. In the month of January, 1834, I heard the following fact from the Rev. Mr. Paquette, curate of St. Gervais, at a grand dinner which he had given to the neighbouring priests:

"When young, I was the vicar of a curate who could eat as much as two of us, and drink as much as *four*. He was tall and strong, and he had left the dark marks of his hard fists on the nose of more than one of his beloved sheep; for his anger was really terrible after he had drank his bottle of wine.

"One day, after a sumptuous dinner, he was called to carry the good God (*Le bon Dieu*), to a dying man. It was in mid-winter. The cold was intense. The wind was blowing hard. There was at least five or six feet of snow, and the roads were almost impassable. It was really a serious matter to travel nine miles on such a day, but there was no help. The messenger was one of the first marguilliers (churchwardens), who was very pressing, and the dying man was one of the first citizens of the place. The curate, after a few grumblings, drank a tumbler of good Jamaica with his marguillier as a preventative against the cold, went to church, took the good God (*Le bon Dieu*), and threw himself into the sleigh, wrapped as well as possible in his large buffalo robes.

"Though there were two horses, one before the other, to drag the sleigh, the journey was a long and tedious one, which was made still worse by an unlucky circumstance. They were met half-way by another traveller coming from the opposite direction. The road was too narrow to allow the two sleighs and horses to remain easily on firm ground when passing by each other, and it would have required a good deal of skill and patience in driving the horses to prevent them from falling into the soft snow. It is well known that when once horses are sunk into five or six feet of snow the more they struggle the deeper they sink.

"The marguillier, who was carrying the 'good God,' with the curate, naturally hoped to have the privilege of keeping the middle of the road and escaping the danger of getting his horses wounded and his sleigh broken. He cried to the other traveller in a high tone of authority: 'Traveller! let me have the road. Turn your horses into the snow! Make haste, I am in a hurry. I carry the good God!'

"Unfortunately that traveller was a heretic who cared much more for his horses than for the 'good God.' He answered:

The d—— take your good God before I consent to break the neck of my horse. If your God has not taught you the rules of law and common sense, I will give you a free lecture on that matter.' And jumping out of his sleigh he took the reins of the front horse of the marguillier to help him to walk on the side of the road, and keep half of it for himself.

"But the marguillier, who was naturally a very impatient and fearless man, had drank too much with my curate before he left the parsonage, to keep cool, as he ought to have done. He also jumped out of his sleigh, ran to the stranger, took his cravat in his left hand and raised his right one to strike him in the face. Unfortunately for him, the heretic seemed to have foreseen all this. He had left his overcoat in the sleigh, and was more ready for the conflict than his assailant. He was also a real giant in size and strength. As quick as lightning his right and left fists fell like iron masses on the face of the poor marguillier, and threw him on his back in the soft snow, where he almost disappeared.

"Till then the curate had been a silent spectator; but with

the sight and the cries of his friend, whom the stranger was pommelling without mercy, made him lose his patience. Taking the little silk bag which contained the 'good God' from about his neck, where it was tied, he put it on the seat of the sleigh, and said, 'Dear good God! please remain neutral; I must help my marguillier! Take no part in the conflict, and I will punish that infamous Protestant as he deserves.'

"But the unfortunate marguillier was entirely put *hors de combat* before the curate could go to his help. His face was horribly cut—three teeth were broken—the lower jaw dislocated, and the eyes were so terribly damaged that it took several days before he could see anything. When the heretic saw the priest coming to renew the battle, he threw down his other coat to be freer in his movements. The curate had not been so wise. Relying too much on his herculean strength, he threw himself on the stranger, like a big rock which falls from the mountain and rolls upon the oak below.

"Both of these combatants were real giants, and the first blows must have been terrible on both sides. But the 'infamous heretic' probably had not drunk so much as my curate before leaving home, or perhaps he was more expert in the exchange of these bloody jokes. The battle was long and the blood flowed pretty freely on both sides. The cries of the combatants might have been heard at a long distance, were it not for the roaring noise of the wind, which at that instant was blowing a hurricane.

"The storm, the cries, the blows, the blood, the surplice, and the overcoat of the priest torn to rags, the shirt of the stranger reddened with gore, made such a terrible spectacle, that in the end the horses of the marguillier, though well trained animals, took fright and threw themselves into the snow, turned their backs to the storm, and made for home. They dragged the fragments of the upset sleigh a pretty long distance, and arrived at the door of their stable with only some diminutive parts of the harness.

"The 'good God' had evidently heard the prayer of my curate, and he had remained neutral; at all events, he had not taken the part of the priest, for he lost the day, and the infamous Protestant remained master of the battle-field. The curate had to help his marguillier out of the snow in which he was buried, and where he had lain like a slaughtered ox. Both had to walk, or rather crawl, nearly half a mile in snow to the knees, before they could reach the nearest farmhouse, where they arrived when it was dark.

"The worst is not told. You remember when my curate had put the box containing the 'good God' on the seat of the sleigh, before going to fight, the horses had dragged the sleigh a certain distance, upset and smashed it. The little silk bag, with its silver box and its precious contents was lost in the snow, and though several hundred people had looked for it, several days at different times, it could not be found. It was only late in the month of June, that a little boy seeing some rags in the

mud of the ditch, along the highway, lifted them and a little silver box fell out. Suspecting that it was what the people had looked for so many days during the last Winter, he took it to the parsonage. I was there when it was opened; we had the hope that the 'good God' would be found pretty intact, but we were doomed to be disappointed. *The good God was entirely melted away.*

During the recital of that spicy story, which was told in the most amusing and comical way, the priests had drunk freely and laughed heartily. But when the conclusion came:—"The good God was melted away!"—there was a burst of laughter such as I never heard, the priests striking the floor with their feet, and the table with their hands, filled the house with the cries, "The good God melted away!" Yes, the God of Rome, dragged away by a drunken priest, had really melted away in the muddy ditch. This glorious fact was proclaimed by his own priests in the midst of convulsive laughter, and at tables covered with scores of bottles emptied by them!

6. About the middle of March, 1839, I had one of the most unfortunate days of my Roman Catholic priestly life. At about two o'clock in the afternoon, a poor Irishman had come in haste from beyond the high mountains, between lake Beauport and the river Morency, to ask me to go and anoint a dying woman. It took me ten minutes to run to the church, put the "good God" in the little silver box, shut the whole in my vest pocket, and jump into the Irishman's rough sleigh. The roads were exceedingly bad, and we had to go very slowly. At 7 p.m. we were yet more than three miles from the sick woman's house. It was very dark, and the horse was so exhausted that it was impossible to go any further through the gloomy forest. I determined to pass the night at a poor Irish cabin which was near the road. I knocked at the door, asked hospitality, and was welcomed with that warm-hearted demonstration of respect which the Roman Catholic Irishman knows, better than any other man, how to pay to his priests.

The shanty, twenty-four feet long by sixteen wide, was built with round logs, between which a liberal supply of clay, instead of mortar, had been thrown, to prevent the wind and cold from entering. Six fat, though not absolutely well-washed, healthy boys and girls, half-naked, presented themselves around their good parents as the living witnesses that this cabin, in spite of its ugly appearance, was really a happy home for its dwellers. Besides the eight human beings sheltered beneath that hospitable roof, I saw at one end, a magnificent cow, with her new-born calf, and two fine pigs.

"Please, your reverence," said the good woman, after she had prepared her supper, "excuse our poverty; but be sure that we feel happy and much honoured to have you in our humble dwelling for the night. My only regret is that we have only potatoes, milk, and butter to give you for your supper. In these backwoods, tea, sugar, and wheat flour are unknown luxuries." I thanked that good woman for her hospitality, and

caused her to rejoice not a little by assuring her that good potatoes, fresh butter, and milk were the best delicacies which could be offered to me in any place. I sat at the table, and ate one of the most delicious suppers of my life. The potatoes were exceedingly well cooked—the butter, cream, and milk of the best quality, and my appetite was not a little sharpened by the long journey over the steep mountains.

I had not told these good people, nor even the driver, that I had "*Le Bon Dieu*," the good God, with me in my vest pocket. It would have made them uneasy, and would have added too much to my other difficulties. When the time of sleeping arrived I went to bed with all my clothing, and slept well; for I was very tired by the tedious and broken roads from Beauport to those distant mountains.

Next morning, before breakfast and the dawn of day, I was up, and as soon as we had a glimpse of light to see our way, I left for the house of the sick woman after offering a silent prayer. I had not travelled a quarter of a mile when I put my hand into my vest pocket, and to my indescribable dismay I found that the little silver box, containing the "Good God" was missing. A cold sweat ran through my frame. I told the driver to stop and turn back immediately, that I had lost something which might be found in the bed where I had slept. It did not take five minutes to retrace our way. On opening the door I found the poor woman and her husband almost beside themselves, and distressed beyond measure. They were pale and trembling as criminals who expected to be condemned.

"Did you not find a little silver box after I left?" I said.

"O my God!" answered the desolate woman, "Yes, I have found it, but would to God that I had never seen it. There it is."

"But why do you regret finding it, when I am so happy to find it safe in your hands!" I replied.

"Ah! your reverence, you do not know what a terrible misfortune has just happened to me, not more than half a minute before you knocked at the door."

"What misfortune can have fallen upon you in so short a time?" I answered.

"Well, please your reverence, open the little box and you will understand me."

I opened it, but the "good God" was not in it.!! Looking in the face of the good woman, I asked her, "What does this mean? It is empty!"

"It means," answered she, "that I am the most unfortunate of women! Not more than five minutes after you had left the house I went to your bed and found that little box. Not knowing what it was I showed it to my children and to my husband. I asked him to open it, but he refused to do it. I then turned it on every side, trying to guess what it could contain; till the devil tempted me so much that I determined to open it. I came to this corner, where this pale lamp is used to remain on that little shelf, and I opened it. But, O my God; I do not dare to tell the rest."

At these words she fell on the floor in a fit of nervous excitement—her cries were piercing, her mouth was foaming. She was cruelly tearing her hair with her own hands. The shrieks and lamentations of the children were so distressing that I could hardly prevent myself from crying also. After a few moments of the most agonising anxiety, seeing the poor woman was becoming calm, I addressed myself to her husband, and said: "Please give me an explanation of these strange things."

He could hardly speak at first, but as I was very pressing he told me with a trembling voice: "Please your reverence; look into that vessel which the children use, and you will perhaps understand our desolation! When my wife opened the little silver box she did not observe that the vessel was just there, beneath her hands. In the opening, what was in the silver box fell into that vase, and sank! We were all filled with consternation when you knocked at the door and entered."

I felt struck with such unspeakable horror at the thought that the body, blood, soul and divinity of my Saviour, Jesus Christ, was there, sunk in that vase, that I remained speechless, and for a long time did not know what to do. At first it came to my mind to plunge my hands into the vase and try to get my Saviour out of that sepulchre of ignominy. But I could not muster courage to do so. At last I requested the poor desolated family to dig a hole three feet deep in the ground, and deposit it, with its contents, and I left the house, after I had forbidden them from ever saying a word about that awful calamity.

7. In one of the most sacred books of law and regulations of the Church of Rome, *Missale Romanum*, we read, page 58, "If the priest after communion, vomit, and that in the vomited matter the consecrated bread appears; let him swallow what he has vomited. But if he feels too much repugnance to swallow it, let him separate the body of Christ (the consecrated bread), from the vomited matter, till it be entirely corrupted, and then throw it into the sacrarium."

8. When a priest of Rome, I was bound, with all the Roman Catholics, to believe that Christ had taken His own body, with His own hands, to His mouth! and that He had eaten Himself, not in a spiritual, but in a substantial material way! After eating Himself, He gave it to each of His apostles, who also ate Him.

It seems impossible that men can consent to worship a god whom rats can eat! A god who can be dragged away and lost in a muddy ditch by a drunken priest! A god who can be eaten, vomited, and eaten again by those who are courageous enough to eat again what they have vomited!!

The religion of Rome is not a religion, it is a mockery, the destruction, the ignominious caricature of religion. It is the accomplishment of the awful prophecy: "Because they received not the love of the truth that they might be saved, God shall send them strong delusion, that they might believe a lie." (II. Thess. ii: 10, 11).

CHAPTER XVIII.

Vicarage, and Life at St. Charles, Rivierre Boyer.

ON the 24th September, 1833, the Rev. Mr. Cazault, secretary of the Bishop of Quebec, presented to me the official letters which named me the vicar of the Rev. Mr. Perras, arch-priest, and curate of St. Charles, Rivierre Boyer, and I was soon on my way, with a cheerful heart, to fill the post assigned to me by my superior.

I had often heard of the Rev. Mr. Perras, as one of the most learned, pious, and venerable priests of Canada. I had even been told that several of the governors of Quebec had chosen him for the French teacher of their children. When I arrived he was absent on a sick call, but his sister received me with every mark of refined politeness. Under the burden of her five and fifty years, she had kept all the freshness and amiability of youth. After a few words of welcome she showed me my study and sleeping-room. They were both perfumed with the fragrance of two magnificent bouquets of the choicest flowers, on the top of one of which was written the words: "Welcome to the angel whom the Lord sends to us as His messenger." The two rooms were the perfection of neatness and comfort. I shut the doors and fell on my knees to thank God and the blessed Virgin for having given me such a home. Ten minutes later I came back to the large parlour, where I found Miss Perras waiting for me, to offer me a glass of wine and some excellent *pain de Savoie*, as it was the universal custom, then, to do in every respectable house. She then told me how happy her brother, the curate, and herself were when they had heard that I was to come and live with them. She had known my mother before her marriage, and she told me how she had passed several happy days in her company. Miss Perras had not been speaking long when the curate arrived.

Rev. Mr. Perras was then about sixty-five years old. He was a tall man—almost a giant. No army officer, no king, ever bore his head with more dignity. But his beautiful blue eyes, which were the embodiment of kindness, tempered the dignity of his mien. His hair, which was beginning to whiten, had not yet lost its golden lustre. It seemed as if silver and gold were mixed on his head to adorn and beautify it. There was on his face an expression of peace, calm, piety, and kindness, which entirely won my heart and my respect. When, with a smile on his lips, he extended his hands towards me, I felt beside myself, I fell on my knees and said: "Mr. Perras, God sends me to you that you may be my teacher and my father. You will have to guide my first and inexperienced steps in the holy ministry. Do bless me, and pray that I may be a good priest, as you are yourself."

That unpremeditated and earnest act of mine, so touched the good old priest, that he could hardly speak. Leaning towards me he raised me up and pressed me to his bosom, and with

a voice trembling with emotion he said: "May God bless you, my dear sir; and may He also be blessed for having chosen you to help me to carry the burden of the holy ministry in my old age." After half-an-hour of the most interesting conversation, he showed me his library, which was composed of the best books which a priest is allowed to read; and he very kindly put it at my service.

Next morning, after breakfast, he handed me a large and neat sheet of paper, headed by these Latin words:

"ORDO DUCIT AD DEUM."

It was the rule of life which he had imposed upon himself, to guide all the hours of the day in such a way that not a moment could be given to idleness or vain pastime.

"Would you be kind enough," he said, "to read this and tell me if it suits your views? I have found great spiritual and temporal benefits in following these rules of life, and would be very happy if my dear young coadjutor would unite with me in walking in the ways of an orderly, Christian, and priestly life."

The conversation of Mr. Perras, was generally exceedingly interesting. I never heard from him any idle, frivolous talking, as is so much the habit among priests. He was well versed in the literature, philosophy, history, and theology of Rome. He had personally known almost all the bishops and priests of the last fifty years, and his memory was well stored with anecdotes and facts concerning the clergy. I will give two or three.

A couple of months before my arrival at St. Charles, the vicar who preceded me, called Lajus, had publicly eloped with one of his beautiful penitents, who after three months of public scandal had repented and come back to her heart-broken parents. About the same time a neighbouring curate, in whom I had great confidence, compromised himself also, with one of his fair parishioners, in a most shameful though less public way. These two scandals, which came to my knowledge almost at the same time, distressed me exceedingly, and for nearly a week I felt so overwhelmed with shame, that I almost regretted that I ever became a priest. My nights were sleepless; the best viands of the table had lost their relish. I could hardly eat anything. My conversations with Mr. Perras had lost their charm. I even could hardly talk with him or anybody else.

"Are you sick, my young friend?" said he to me one day.

"No, sir, I am not sick, but I am sad."

He replied: "Can I know the cause of your sadness? You used to be so cheerful and happy since you came here. I must bring you back to your former happy frame of mind. Please tell me what is the matter with you? I am an old man and I know many remedies for the soul as well as for the body. Open your heart to me and I hope soon to see that dark cloud pass away."

"The last two awful scandals given by the priests," I answered, "are the cause of my sadness. The news of the fall

of these two confrères, one of whom seemed to me so respectable, has fallen upon me like a thunderbolt. Though I had heard something of that nature when I was a simple ecclesiastic in the college, I had not the least idea that such was the life of so many priests. The fact of the human frailty of so many, is really distressing. How can one hope to stand up on one's feet when one sees such strong men fall by one's side? What will become of our holy Church in Canada, and all over the world, if her most devoted priests are so weak and have so little self-respect, and so little fear of God?"

"My dear young friend," answered Mr. Perras, "our holy Church is infallible. The gates of hell cannot prevail against her; but the assurance of her perpetuity and infallibility does not rest on the personal holiness of her priests; but it rests on the promises of Jesus Christ. Her perpetuity and infallibility are a perpetual miracle. It requires the constant working of Jesus Christ to keep her pure and holy, in spite of the sins and scandals of her priests. Even the clearest proof that our holy Church has a promise of perpetuity and infallibility is drawn from the very sins and scandals of her priests; for those sins and scandals would have destroyed her long ago, if Christ was not in the midst to save and sustain her. Just as the ark of Noah was miraculously saved by the mighty hand of God, when the waters of the deluge would otherwise have wrecked it, so our holy church is miraculously prevented from perishing in the flood of iniquities by which too many priests have deluged the world. By the great mercy and power of God, the more the waters of the deluge were flowing on the earth, the more the ark was raised towards heaven by these very waters. So it is with our holy Church. The very sins of the priests make that spotless spouse of Jesus Christ fly away higher and higher towards the regions of holiness as it is in God. Let, therefore, your faith and confidence in our holy Church, and your respect for her, remain firm and unshaken in the midst of all these scandals. Let your zeal be rekindled for her glory and extension, at the sight of the unfortunate confrères who yield to the attacks of the enemy. Just as the valiant soldier makes super-human efforts to save the flag, when he sees those who carried it fall on the battlefield. Oh! you will see more of our flag-bearers slaughtered before you reach my age. But be not disheartened or shaken by that sad spectacle; for, once more, our holy Church will stand for ever, in spite of all those human miseries.

"I am near the end of my course, and thanks be to God, my faith in our holy Church is stronger than ever, though I have seen and heard many things, compared with which, the facts which just now distress you are mere trifles. In order the better to inure you to the conflict, and to prepare you to hear and see more deplorable things than what is now troubling you, I think it my duty to tell you a fact which I got from the late lord bishop Plessis. I have never revealed it to anybody, but my interest in you is so great that I will tell it to

you, and my confidence in your wisdom is so absolute, that I am sure you will never abuse it. What I will reveal to you is of such a nature that we must keep it among ourselves, and never let it be known to the people, for it would diminish, if not destroy their respect and confidence in us.

"I have already told you that the late venerable bishop Plessis was my personal friend. Our intimacy had sprung up when we were studying under the same roof in the seminary of St. Sulpice, Montreal, and it had increased year after year till the last hour of his life. Every Summer, when he had reached the end of the three months of episcopal visitation of his diocese, he used to come and spend eight or ten days of absolute rest and enjoyment of private and solitary life with me in this parsonage. The two rooms you occupy were his, and he told me many times that the happiest days of his episcopal life were those passed in this solitude.

"One day he had come from his three months' visit, more worn out than ever, and when I sat down with him in this parlour, I was almost frightened by the air of distress which covered his face. Instead of finding him the loquacious amiable and cheerful guest I used to have in him, he was taciturn, cast down, distressed. I felt really uneasy, for the first time, in his presence.

"I was, myself, completely worn out. I had travelled nearly thirty miles that day, to go to receive him at St. Thomas. The heat was oppressive, the roads very bad, and the dust awful. I was in need of rest, and I was hardly in my bed when I fell into a profound sleep, and slept till three o'clock in the morning. I was then suddenly awakened by sobs and half-suppressed lamentations and prayers, which were evidently coming from the bishop's room. Without losing a moment I went and knocked at the door, inquiring about the cause of these sobs.

"'Sobs ! sobs !' he answered, 'What do you mean by that. Please go back to your room and sleep. Do not trouble yourself about me, I am well,' and he absolutely refused to open the door of his room. The remaining hours of the night, of course, were sleepless ones for me. The sobs of the bishop were more suppressed, but he could not sufficiently suppress them to prevent me from hearing them. The next morning his eyes were reddened with weeping, and his face was that of one who had suffered intensely all the night. After breakfast I said to him : 'My lord, last night has been one of desolation to your lordship ; for God's sake and in the name of the sacred ties of friendship, which have united us during so many years, please tell me what is the cause of your sorrow. It will become less the very moment you share it with your friend.'

"The bishop answered me : 'You are right when you think that I am under the burden of great desolation, but its cause is of such a nature, that I cannot reveal it even to you, my dear friend. It is only at the feet of Jesus Christ and His holy mother that I must go to unburden my heart. If God does not come to my help, it is sure that I must die from it. But

I will carry with me into my grave the awful mystery that kills me."

"In vain, during the rest of the day, I did all I could to persuade Monseigneur Plessis to reveal the cause of his grief. I failed. At last, through respect of him, I withdrew to my own room, and left him alone, knowing that solitude is sometimes the best friend of a desolated mind. His lordship, that evening, withdrew to his sleeping-room sooner than usual, and I retired to my own room much later. But sleep was out of the question for me that night, for his desolation seemed to be so great, and his tears so abundant, that when he bade me 'good night' I was in fear of finding my venerable and more than ever dear friend dead in his bed the next morning. I watched him without closing my eyes, from the adjoining room, from ten o'clock till the next morning. Though it was evident that he was making great efforts to suppress his sobs, I could see that his sorrow was still more intense that night than the last one, and my mental agony was not much less than his.

"But I formed an extreme resolution, which I put into effect the very moment he came out of his room the next morning.

"'My Lord,' said I, 'I thought till the night before last that you honoured me with your friendship, but I see to-day that I was mistaken. You do not consider me as your friend, for if you would look upon me as a friend worthy of your confidence, you would unburden your heart into mine. A true friend has no secret from a true friend. What is the use of friendship if it be not to help each other to carry the burdens of life! I found myself honoured by your presence in my house, so long as I considered myself as your friend. But now that I see that I have lost your confidence, please allow me frankly to say to your lordship, that I do not feel the same at your presence here. Besides, it seems to me very probable that the terrible burden which you want to carry alone will kill you, and that very soon, and that I do not at all like the idea of finding you suddenly dead in my parsonage, and having the Coroner holding his inquest upon your body, and making painful enquiries which are always made upon one suddenly taken by death, particularly when he belongs to the highest ranks of society. Then, my lord, be not offended if I respectfully request your lordship to find another lodging as soon as possible.'

"My words fell upon the bishop like a thunderbolt. He seemed to awaken from a profound sleep. With a deep sigh he looked in my face with his eyes rolling in tears, and said:

"'You are right, Perras, I ought never to have concealed my sorrow from such a friend as you have always been for more than half a century to me. But you are the only one to whom I can reveal it. No doubt your priestly and Christian heart will not be less broken than mine; but you will help me with your prayers and wise counsels to carry it. However, before I initiate you into such an awful mystery, we must pray.'

"We then knelt down, and we said together a chaplet to

invoke the power of the Virgin Mary, after which we recited Psalm li: *'Miserere mei. 'Have mercy upon me, O Lord!'*

"Then, sitting by me on this sofa, the bishop said: 'My dear Mr. Perras, you are the only one to whom I could reveal what you are about to hear, for I think you are the only one who can hear such a terrible secret without revealing it, and because, also, you are the only friend whose advice can guide me in this terrible affliction. You know that I have just finished the visit of my immense diocese of Quebec. It has taken me several years of hard work and fatigue, to see by my own eyes, and know by myself, the gains and losses—in a word, the strength and life of our holy Church. I will not speak to you of the people. They are, as a general thing, truly religious and faithful to the Church. But the priests. O great God! will I tell you what they are? My dear Perras, I would almost die with joy if God would tell me that I am mistaken. But alas! I am not mistaken. The sad, the terrible truth is this (putting his right hand on his forehead), the priests! ah! with the exception of you and three others, are infidels and atheists! O my God! my God! what will become of the Church in the hands of such wicked men!' and, covering his face with his hands, the bishop burst into tears, and for one hour could not say a word."

Taking the bishop by the hand, I led him to the library, and opened the pages of the history of the Church, by Cardinals Baronius and Fewry, and I showed him the names of more than fifty Popes who had evidently been atheists and infidels. I read to him the lives of Borgia, Alexander VI., and a dozen others, who would surely and justly be hanged to-day by the executioner of Quebec, were they, in that city, committing one half of the public crimes of adultery, murder, debauchery of every kind, which they committed in Rome, Avignon, Naples, etc., etc. I read to him some of the public and undeniable crimes of the successors of the apostles, and of the inferior clergy, and I easily and clearly proved to him that his priests, though infidels and atheists, were angels of piety, modesty, purity, and religion, when compared with a Borgia, who publicly lived as a married man with his own daughter and had a child by her. He agreed with me that several of the Alexanders, the Johns, the Piuses and the Leos, were sunk much deeper in the abyss of every kind of iniquity than his priests.

Five hours passed in so perusing the sad but irrefutable pages of the history of our Church, wrought a marvellous and beneficial change in the mind of Monseigneur Plessis.

My conclusion was, that if our holy Church had been able to resist the deadly influence of such scandals during so many centuries in Europe, she would not be destroyed in Canada, even by the legion of atheists by whom she is served to-day.

The bishop acknowledged that my conclusion was correct. He thanked me for the good I had done him, by preventing him from despairing of the future of our holy Church in Canada, and the rest of the days which he spent with me, he

was almost as cheerful and amiable as before.

"Now, my dear young friend," added Mr. Perras, "I hope you will be as reasonable and logical in your religion as bishop Plessis, who was probably the greatest man that Canada has ever had. When Satan tries to shake your faith by the scandals you see, remember that Stephen, after having fought with his adversary, the Pope Constantine II., put out his eyes and condemned him to die. Remember that other Pope, who through revenge against his predecessor, had him exhumed, brought his dead body before judges, then charged him with the most horrible crimes, which he proved by the testimony of scores of eye-witnesses, got him (the dead Pope), to be condemned to be beheaded and dragged with ropes through the muddy streets of Rome, and thrown into the river Tiber. Yes, when your mind is oppressed by the secret crimes of the priests, which you will know, either through the confessional or by public rumour, remember that more than twelve Popes have been raised to that high and holy dignity by the rich and influential prostitutes of Rome, with whom they were publicly living in the most scandalous way. Remember that young bastard, John XI., the son of Pope Sergius, who was consecrated Pope when only twelve years old, by the influence of his prostitute mother, Marosia, who was so horribly profligate that he was deposed by the people and the clergy of Rome.

Well, if our holy Church has been able to pass through such storms without perishing, is it not a living proof that Christ is her pilot, that she is imperishable and infallible because St. Peter is her foundation, *'Tu es Petrus et super hanc petram ædificabo Ecclesiam meam, et portae inferi non prevalebunt adversus eam.'*"

Oh, my God! Shall I confess, to my confusion, what my thoughts were during that conversation, or rather that lecture of my curate, which lasted more than an hour! Yes, to Thy eternal glory, and to my eternal shame, I must say the truth. When the priest was exhibiting to me the horrible unmentionable crimes of so many of our Popes, to calm my fears and strengthen my shaken faith, a mysterious voice was repeating to the ears of my soul, the dear Saviour's words: "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them;" and in spite of myself the voice of my conscience cried in thundering tones that a church, whose head and members were so horribly corrupt, could not, by any means, be the Church of Christ.

CHAPTER XIX.

The Burning of "Le Canadien" by the Curate of St. Charles.

THE name of Louis Joseph Papineau will be for ever dear to the French Canadians ; for whatever may be the political party to which one belongs in Canada, he cannot deny that it is to the ardent patriotism, the indomitable energy, and the remarkable eloquence of that great patriot, that Canada is indebted for a great part of her political reforms.

Papineau, Lafontaine, Bedard, Cartier, and others, though born in the Church of Rome, were only nominal Romanists. I have been personally acquainted with every one of them, and I know they were not in the habit of confessing. Several times I invited them to fulfil that duty, and I could see they did not believe in the efficacy of auricular confession. They well understood that the first thing to be done, in order to put the French Canadians on a level with their British compatriots, was to give schools to the people ; and they bravely set themselves to show the necessity of having a good system of education, for the country as well as for the city. But at the very first attempt they found an insurmountable barrier to their patriotic views in the clergy. The priests felt that their power would decrease in the same proportion that light and education spread among the masses. Hence the almost insurmountable obstacles put by the clergy before the patriots, to prevent them from reforming the system of education. The only source of Education then in Canada, with the exception of the colleges of Quebec, Montreal, and Nicolet, consisted in one or two schools in the principal parishes, entirely under the control of the priests, and kept by their most devoted servants, while the new parishes had none at all. The greater part of these teachers knew very little more, and required nothing more from their pupils, than the reading of the A-B-C, and their little catechism. When once admitted to the first communion the A-B-C- and their little catechism were soon forgotten, and 95 in 100 of the French Canadian people were not even able to sign their names ! In many parishes, the curate, with his school teachers, the notary, and a half-dozen others, were the only persons who could read or write a letter. Papineau and his patriotic friends understood that the French Canadian people were doomed to remain an inferior race in their own country if they were left in that shameful state of ignorance. They did not conceal their indignation at the obstacles placed by the clergy to prevent them from amending the system of education. Several eloquent speeches were made by Papineau, who was their "Parliament Speaker," in answer to the clergy. The curates, in their pulpits, as well as by the press, tried to show that Canada had the best possible system of education—that the people were happy—that too much education would bring into Canada the bitter fruits which had grown in France—infidelity, revolution, riots, bloodshed ; that the people were

too poor to pay the heavy taxes which would be imposed for the new system of education. In one of his addresses, Papineau answered this argument, showing the immense sums of money, foolishly given by those so-called poor people, to gild the ceilings of the Church (as was the usage then). He made a calculation of the tithes paid to the priests ; of the costly images and statues of saints, which were to be seen then, around all the interior of the churches, and he boldly said that the priests would do better to induce the people to establish good schools, and pay respectable teachers.

That address, which was reproduced by the only French newspaper of Quebec, *Le Canadien* ; fell upon the clergy like a hurricane upon a rotten house, shaking it to its foundation. Everywhere Papineau and his party were denounced as infidels, more dangerous than Protestants, and plans were immediately laid down to prevent the people from reading *Le Canadien*, the only French newspaper they could receive. Not more than half-a-dozen were receiving it in St. Charles ; but they used to read it to their neighbours, who gathered on Sunday afternoons to hear its contents. We at first tried, through the confessional, to persuade the subscribers to reject it, under the pretext that it was a bad paper ; that it spoke against the priests and would finally destroy our holy religion. But, to our great dismay, our efforts failed. The curates then had recourse to a more efficacious way of preserving the faith of their people.

The postmaster of St. Charles was, then, a man whom Mr. Perras had got educated at his own expense in the seminary of Quebec. His name was Chabot. That man was a perfect machine in the hands of his benefactor. Mr. Perras forbade him to deliver any more of the numbers of that journal to the subscribers, when there would be anything unfavourable to the clergy in its columns. "Give them to me," said he, "that I may burn them, and when the people come to get them, give them evasive answers, that they may believe that it is the editor's fault, or of some other post-offices, if they have not received it." From that day, every time there was any censure of the clergy, the poor paper was consigned to the flames. One evening, when Mr. Perras had, in my presence, thrown a bundle of these papers into the stove, I told him : "Please allow me to express to you my surprise at this act. Have we really the right to deprive the subscribers of that paper of their property ? That paper is their's, they have paid for it. How can we take upon ourselves to destroy it without their permission ? Besides, you know the old proverb : *Les pierres parlent*. (Stones speak). If it were known by our people that we destroy their papers, would not the consequences be very serious ? Now, Mr. Perras, you know my sincere respect for you, and I hope I do not go against that respect by asking you to tell me by what right or authority you do this ? I would not put this question to you, if you were the only one who does it. But I know several others who do just

the same thing. I will, probably, be obliged, when a curate, to act in the same manner, and I wish to know on what grounds I shall be justified in acting as you do."

"Are we not the spiritual fathers of our people?" answered Mr. Perras.

I replied, "Yes, sir, we are surely the spiritual fathers of our people."

"Then," rejoined Mr. Perras, "we have in spiritual matters all the rights and duties which temporal fathers have, in temporal things, towards their children. If a father sees a sharp knife in the hands of his beloved but inexperienced child, and if he has good reason to fear that the dear child may wound himself, nay, destroy his own life with that knife, is it not his duty, before God and man, to take it from his hands, and prevent him from touching it any more?"

"Yes," I answered, "but allow me to draw your attention to a little difference which I see between the corporal and the spiritual children of your comparison. In the case you bring forward, of a father who takes away the knife from the hands of a young and inexperienced child, that knife has, very probably, been bought by the father. It has been paid for with that father's money. It is, then, the father's knife. But the papers of your spiritual children, which you have thrown into your stove, have been paid for by them, and not by you. They are theirs, then, before the laws of God and man, and they are not yours."

I saw that my answer had cut the good old priest to the quick, and he became more nervous than I had ever seen him. "I see that you are young," answered he; "you have not yet had time to meditate on the great and broad principles of our holy Church. I confess there is a difference in the rights of the two children to which I had not paid attention, and which, at first sight, may seem to diminish the strength of my argument. But I have here an argument which will satisfy you, I hope. Some weeks ago I wrote to our venerable bishop Panet about my intention of burning that miserable and impious paper, *Le Canadien*, to prevent it from poisoning the minds of our people against us, and he has approved me, adding the advice, to be very prudent, and to act so secretly that there would be no danger of being detected. Here is the letter of the holy bishop, you may read it if you like."

"I thank you," I replied, "I believe that what you say in reference to that letter is correct. But suppose that our good bishop has made a mistake in advising you to burn those papers, would you not have some reasons to regret that burning, should you, sooner or later, detect that mistake?"

"A reason of regretting to follow the advice of my superiors! Never! never! I fear, my young friend, that you do not sufficiently understand the duties of an inferior, and the sacred rights of superiors in our holy Church. Have you not been told by your superiors in the college of Nicolet, that there can be no sin in an inferior who obeys the orders or counsels of

his legitimate superiors ? ”

“ Yes, sir,” I answered, “ the Rev. Mr. Leprohon told us that.”

“ But,” rejoined Mr. Perras, “ your last question makes me fear that you have forgotten what you have learned there. My dear young friend, do not forget that it was the want of respect to their ecclesiastical superiors, which caused the apostasy of Luther and Calvin, and damned many millions of heretics who have followed them. But in order to bring your rebellious mind under the holy yoke of a perfect submission to your superiors, I will show you, by our greatest and most approved theologian, that I can burn these papers without doing anything wrong before God.”

He then went to the library, and brought me a volume of Liguori, from which he read to me the following Latin words : “ *Docet Sanchez, etc. Parato aliquem occidere, licite posse suaderi, ut ab eo juretur, vel ut fornicetur.* ” “ It is allowed to commit a sin of a lesser degree, in order to prevent one of a graver nature.” (Mor. Theol., lib. iii, t. ii, p. 175, n. 157). With an air of triumph he said, “ Do you see now that I am absolutely justifiable in destroying these pestilential papers ? According to those principles of our holy Church, you know well that even a woman is allowed to commit the sin of adultery with a man who threatens to kill her, or himself, if she rebukes him ; because murder and suicide are greater crimes, and more irremediable than adultery. So the burning of those papers, though a sin, if done through malice, or without legitimate reasons, ceases to be a sin ; it is a holy action the moment I do it, to prevent the destruction of our holy religion, and to save immortal souls.”

“ I do not want to revolt against my superiors,” I answered, “ and I hope God will prevent me from falling into the abyss where Luther and Calvin lost themselves. I only respectfully request you to tell me if you would not regret the burning of these papers in case you would know that Bishop Panet made a mistake in granting you the power of destroying a property which is neither yours nor his—a property over which neither of you has any control ? ”

It was the first time that I was not entirely of the same mind with Mr. Perras. Till then, I had not been brave, honest, or independent enough to oppose his views and his *ipsi dixit*, though often tempted to do so. The desire of living in peace with him ; the sincere respect which his many virtues and venerable age commanded in me ; the natural timidity, not to say cowardice, of a young, inexperienced man, in the presence of a learned and experienced priest had kept me till then in perfect submission to the views of my aged curate. But it seemed impossible to yield any longer, and to bow my conscience before principles, which seemed to me then, as I am sure they are now, subversive of everything which is good and holy among men. I took the big Bible, which was on the table, and opened it at the history of Susanna, and I answered, “ My dear Mr. Perras, God has chosen you to be my teacher,

and I have learned many things since it has been my privilege to be with you. But I have much more to learn before I know all that your books and your long experience have taught you. I hope you will not find fault with me, if I honestly tell you that in spite of myself there is a doubt in my mind about this doctrine of our theologians ;” and, I said : “ Is there anything more sublime in the whole Bible than that feeble woman, Susanna, in the hands of those two infamous men ? With a diabolical impudence and malice, they threaten to destroy her, and to take her before a tribunal which will surely condemn her to the most ignoble death, if she does not consent to satisfy their criminal desires. She is just in the position alluded to by Liguori. What will she do ? Will she be guided by the principles of our theologians ? Will she consent to become an adulteress in order to prevent those two men from perjuring themselves, and becoming murderers, by causing her to be stoned to death, as was required by the law of the Jews ? No ! She raises her eyes and her soul towards the God whom she loves and fears more than anything in the world, and says : ‘ I am straitened on every side, for if I do this thing it is death unto me ; and if I do it not, I cannot escape your hands. It is better for me to fall into your hands, and not to do it, than to sin in the sight of the Lord.’ Has not God Almighty Himself shown that He approved of that heroic resolution of Susanna, to die rather than commit adultery ? Does He not show that He planted Himself in that noble soul the principle that it is better to die than break the laws of God when He brought His prophet Daniel, and gave him a super-natural wisdom to save the life of Susanna ? If that woman had been guided by the principles of Liguori, which, I confess to you with regret, are the principles accepted everywhere in our Church (principles which have guided you in the burning of *Le Canadien*) she would have consented to the desires of those infamous men. Nay, if she had been interrogated by her husband, or by the judges on that action, she would have been allowed to swear before God and men, that she was not guilty of it. Now, my dear Mr. Perras, do you find that there is some clash between the Word of God, and the teachings of our Church, through the theologians. ? ”

Never have I seen such a sudden change in the face and manners of a man, as I saw in that hour. That Mr. Perras, who had till then spoken with so much kindness and dignity, completely lost his head. Instead of answering me, he abruptly rose to his feet, and began to pace the room with a quick step. After some time, he told me : “ Mr. Chiniquy, you forget that when you were ordained a priest, you swore that you would never interpret the Holy Scriptures according to your own fallible private judgment ; you solemnly promised that you would take them only according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers speaking to you through your superiors. Has not Liguori been approved by the Popes, by all the bishops of the Church ? ”

CHAPTER XX.

Grand Dinner of the Priests.—The Maniac Sister.

IT was the custom in those days, in the Church of Rome, to give the title of arch-priest to one of the most respectable and able priests, among twelve or fifteen others, by whom he was surrounded. That title was the token of some superior power, which was granted to him over his confrères, who, in consequence, should consult him on certain difficult matters. As a general thing, those priests lived in the most cordial and fraternal unity, and, to make the bond of that union stronger and more pleasant, they were, in turn, in the habit of giving a grand dinner every Thursday.

In 1834, those dinners were really *state affairs*. Several days in advance, preparations were made on a grand scale, to collect everything that could please the taste of the guests. The best wines were purchased. The fattest turkeys, chickens, lambs, or sucking pigs were hunted up. The most delicate pastries were brought from the city, or made at home, at any cost. The rarest and most costly fruits and desserts were ordered. There was a strange emulation among those curates, who would surpass his neighbours. Several extra hands were engaged, some days before, to help the ordinary servants to prepare the "GRAND DINNER."

The second Thursday of May, 1836, was Mr. Perras' turn, and at twelve o'clock noon we were fifteen priests seated around the table. I must here render homage to the sobriety and perfect moral habits of the Rev. Mr. Perras. Though he took his social glass of wine, as it was the universal usage at that time, I never saw him drink more than a couple of glasses at the same meal. I wish I could say the same thing of all those who were at his table that day. Never did I see, before nor after, a table covered with so many tempting and delicate viands. The good curate had surpassed himself, and I would hardly be believed were I to give the number of dishes and covers which loaded the table. I will only mention a splendid salmon, which was the first brought to Quebec that year, for which Mr. Amiot, the purveyor for the priests around the capital, had paid twelve dollars. There was only one lady at that dinner, Miss Perras, sister of the curate.

One of the most remarkable features of these dinners was the levity, the absolute want of seriousness and gravity. Not a word was said in my presence there which could indicate that these men had anything else to do in this world but to eat and drink, tell and hear merry stories, laugh and lead a jolly life.

I was the youngest of those priests. Only a few months before, I was in the Seminary of Nicolet, learning from my grave old superior the lessons of priestly life, very different from what I had there under my eyes. I had not forgotten the austere preaching of self-denial, mortification, austerity

and crucifixion of the flesh, which were to fill up the days of a priest. Though, at first, I was pleased with all I saw, heard and tasted, though I heartily laughed with the rest of the guests, at their *bon mots*, their spicy stories about their fair penitents, or at the funny caricatures they drew of each other, as well as of the absent ones, I felt, by turns, uneasy. Now and then the lessons of priestly life, received from the lips of my venerable and dear Mr. Leprohon, were knocking hard at the door of my conscience. Some words of the Holy Scriptures which, more than others, had adhered to my memory, were also making a strange noise in my soul. My own common sense was telling me that this was not quite the way Christ taught His disciples to live.

I made a great effort to stifle those troublesome voices. Sometimes I succeeded, and then I became cheerful: but a moment after I was overpowered by them, and I felt chilled, as if I had perceived on the walls of the festive room, the finger of my angry God, writing, "MENE, MENE, TEKEL UPHARSIN." Then all my cheerfulness vanished, and I felt so miserable that, in spite of all my efforts to look happy, the Rev. Mr. Paquette, curate of St. Gervais, observed it on my face. That priest was probably the one who most enjoyed everything of that feast. Under the snowy mantle of sixty-five years, he had kept the warm heart and joviality of youth. He was considered one of our most wealthy curates, and he richly deserved the reputation of being the most epicurean of them all. He was a perfect cook, and with his chaplet or his breviary in his hand, he used to pass a great part of the day in his kitchen, giving orders about broiling this beefsteak, or preparing this fricassee, and that gravy *à la Française*. He was loved by his confrères.

Looking at me in the very moment when my whole intellectual being was, in spite of myself, under the darkest cloud, he said: "My dear little Father Chiniquy, are you falling into the hands of some blue devils, when we are all so happy? You were so cheerful half-an-hour ago! What is the matter with you now? Are you sick? You look as grave and anxious as Jonah, when in the big whale's stomach! What is the matter with you? Has any of your fair penitents left you, to go to confess to another, lately?"

At these funny questions, the dining-room was shaken with the convulsive laughter of the priests. I wished I could join in with the rest of my confrères; for it seemed to me very clear that I was making a fool of myself by this singularity of demeanour. But there was no help for it; for a moment before I had seen that the servant girls had blushed; they had been scandalised by a very improper word from the lips of a young priest about one of his young female penitents; a word which he would, surely, never have uttered, had he not drank too much wine. I answered: "I am much obliged to you for your kind interest. I find myself much honoured to be here in your midst; but as the brightest days are not without clouds, so it is with us all sometimes."

"Tah ! Tah ! Tah !" said old Mr. Paquette, "this is not the hour of dark clouds and blue devils. Be cheerful, as it behoves your age. There will be hours enough in the rest of your life for sadness and sombre thoughts. This is the hour for laughing and being merry. Sad thoughts are for to-morrow." And appealing to all, he asked, "Is not this correct, gentlemen ?"

"Yes, yes," unanimously rejoined all the guests.

"Now," said the old priest, "you see that the verdict of the jury is unanimously in my favour and against you. Give up those airs of sadness, which do not answer in the presence of these bottles of champagne. Your gravity is an anachronism when we have such good wines before us. Tell me the reason of your grief, and I pledge myself to console you, and make you happy as you were at the beginning of the dinner."

"I would have liked better that you should have continued to enjoy this pleasant hour without noticing me," I answered. "Please excuse me if I do not trouble you with the causes of my personal folly."

"Well, well," said Mr. Paquette, "I see it ; the cause of your trouble is that we have not yet drank together a single glass of sherry. Fill your glass with that wine, and it will surely drown the blue devil which I see at its bottom."

"With pleasure," I said, "I feel much honoured to drink with you ;" and I put some drops of wine into my glass.

"Oh ! oh ! what do I see you doing there ? Only a few drops in your glass ! This will not even wet the cloven feet of the blue devil which is tormenting you. It requires a full glass—an overflowing glass—to drown and finish him. Fill, then, your glass with that precious wine—the best I ever tasted in my whole life."

"But I cannot drink more than those few drops," I said.

"Why not ?" he replied.

"Because, eight days before her death, my mother wrote me a letter, requesting me to promise her that I would never drink more than two glasses of wine at the same meal. I gave her that promise in my answer, and the very day she got my pledge, she left this world to convey it, written on her heart, into heaven, to the feet of her God !"

"Keep that sacred pledge," answered the old curate ; "but tell me why you are so sad when we are so happy."

"You already know part of my reasons—if I had drank as much wine as my neighbour, the vicar of St. Gervais, I would probably have filled the room with my shouts of joy as he does ; but you see now that the hands of my deceased, though always dear mother, are on my glass to prevent me from filling it any more, for I have already drank two glasses of wine."

"But your sadness in such circumstances is so strange, that we would like to know its cause."

"Yes, yes," said all the priests. "You know that we all like you, and we deeply feel for you. Please tell us the reason of this sadness."

I then answered: "It would be better for me to keep my own secret; for I know I will make a fool of myself here; but as you are unanimous in requesting me to give you the reasons of the mental agony through which I am just passing, you will have them. You well know that, through very singular circumstances, I have been prevented, till this day, from attending any of your grand dinners. Twice I had to go to Quebec on these occasions, sometimes I was not well enough to be present—several times I was called to visit some dying person, and at other times the weather or the roads were too bad to travel; this, then, is the first grand dinner, attended by you all, that I have had the honour of attending.

"But before going any further, I must tell you that, during the eight months it has been my privilege to sit at Rev. Mr. Perras' table I have never seen anything which could make me suspect that my eyes would see, and my ears would hear such things in this parsonage as have just taken place. Sobriety, moderation, truly evangelical temperance in drink and food were the invariable rule. Never a word was said which would make our poor servant girls, or the angels of God blush. Would to God that I had not been here to-day! For I tell you, honestly, that I am scandalised by the epicurean table which is before us; by the enormous quantity of delicate viands and the incredible number of bottles of most costly wines, emptied at this dinner.

"However, I hope I am mistaken in my appreciation of what I have seen and heard—I hope you are all right and that I am wrong. I am the youngest of you all. It is not my business to teach you, but it is my duty to be taught by you. Now I have given you my mind, because you so pressingly requested me to do it, as honestly as human language will allow me to do. I have the right, I hope, to request you to tell me, as honestly, if I am, and in what, I am wrong or right!"

"Oh! oh! my dear Chiniquy," replied the old curate, "you hold the stick by the wrong end. Are we not the children of God?"

"Yes, sir," I answered, "we are the children of God?"

"Now, does not a loving father give what he considers the best part of his goods to his beloved children?"

"Yes, sir," I replied.

"Is not that loving father pleased when he sees his beloved children eat and drink the good things he has prepared for them?"

"Yes, sir," was my answer.

"Then," rejoined the logical priest, "the more we, the beloved children of God, eat of these delicate viands, and drink of those precious wines, which our heavenly Father puts into our hand, the more He is pleased with us. The more we, the most beloved ones of our God, are merry and cheerful, the more He is Himself pleased and rejoiced in His heavenly kingdom. But if God our Father is so pleased with what we have eaten and drunk to-day, why are you so sad?"

This masterpiece of argumentation was received by all (except Mr. Perras) with convulsive cries of approbation.

I was too mean and cowardly to say what I felt. I tried to conceal my increased sadness under the forced smiles of my lips, and I followed the whole party, who left the table, and went to the parlour to drink a cup of coffee. It was then half-past one p.m. At two o'clock, the whole party went to the Church, where, after kneeling for a quarter of an hour before their wafer God, they fell on their knees to the feet of each other, to confess their sins, and get their pardon, in the absolution of their confessors !

At three p.m. they were all gone, and I remained alone with my venerable old curate Perras. After a few moments of silence, I said to him : " My dear Mr. Perras, I have no words to express to you my regret for what I have said at your table. I beg your pardon for every word of that unfortunate and unbecoming conversation, into which I was dragged in spite of myself, as you know. It does not do for a young priest, as I am, to criticise those whom God has put so much above him by their science, their age, and their virtues. But I was forced to give my mind, and I have given it. When I requested Mr. Paquette to tell me in what I might be wrong, I had not the least idea that we would hear, from the lips of one of our veterans in the priesthood, the blasphemous jokes he has uttered. Epicurus himself would have blushed, had he been among us, in hearing the name of God connected with such deplorable and awful impieties."

Mr. Perras answered me : " Far from being displeased with what I have heard from you at this dinner, I must tell you that you have gained much in my esteem by it. I am, myself, ashamed of that dinner. We priests are the victims, like the rest of the world, of the fashions, vanities, pride and lust of that world against which we are sent to preach. The expenditure we make at those dinners is surely a crime, in the face of the misery of the people by whom we are surrounded. This is the last dinner I give with such foolish extravagance. The next time my neighbours will meet here, I will not expose them to stagger on their legs, as the greater part of them did when they rose from the table. The brave words you have uttered have done me good. They will do them good also ; for though they had all eaten and drunk too much, they were not so intoxicated as not to remember what you have said."

Then, pressing my hand in his, he said, " I thank you, my good little Father Chiniquy, for that short and excellent sermon you have given us. It will not be lost. You have drawn my tears when you have shown us your saintly mother going to the feet of God in heaven, with your sacred promise written in her heart. Oh ! you must have had a good mother ! I knew her when she was very young. She was then, already a very remarkable girl, for her wisdom and the dignity of her manners." Then he left me alone in the parlour, and he went to visit a sick man in one of the neighbouring houses.

I had not been ten minutes alone, sitting in my study, when I heard strange cries, and such a noise, as if a murderer were at work to strike his victim. A door had evidently been broken open, upstairs, and someone was running downstairs as if one was wanting to break down everything. The cries of "Murder, murder!" reached my ears, and the cries of "Oh! my God! my God! where is Mr. Perras?" filled the air.

I ran quickly to the parlour to see what was the matter, and there I found myself face to face with a woman absolutely naked! Her long black hair was flowing on her shoulders; her face was as death—her dark eyes fixed in their sockets. She stretched her hands towards me with a horrible shriek, and before I could move a step, terrified, and almost paralysed as I was, she seized my two arms with her hands, with such a terrible force, as if my arms had been grasped with a vice. My bones were cracking under her grasp, and my flesh was torn by her nails! I tried to escape, but it was impossible. I soon found myself as if nailed to the wall, unable to move any further. I cried then to the utmost compass of my voice for help. But the living spectre cried still louder: "You have nothing to fear. Be quiet. I am sent by God Almighty and the blessed Virgin Mary, to give you a message. The priests whom I have known are, without a single exception, a band of vipers: they destroy their female penitents through auricular confession. They have destroyed me, and killed my female child! Do not follow their example!" Then she began to sing, with a beautiful voice, to a most touching tune, a kind of poem she had composed herself, which I secretly got afterwards from one of her servant maids, the translation of which is as follows:

"Satan's priests have defiled my heart!

Damned my soul! murdered my child!

O my child! my darling child!

From thy place in heaven dost thou see

Thy guilty mother's tears?

Canst thou come and press me in thy arms?

My child! my darling child!

Will never thy smiling face console me?"

When she was singing these words, big tears were rolling down her pale cheeks, and the tone of her voice was so sad that she could have melted a heart of stone. She had not finished her song when I cried to the girl: "I am fainting, for God's sake bring me some water!" The water was only passed to my lips, I could not drink. I was choked, and petrified in the presence of that living phantom! I could not dare to touch her in any way with my hands. I felt horrified and paralysed at the sight of that livid, pale, cadaverous, naked spectre. The poor servant girl tried in vain, at my request, to drag her away from me. She had struck her with terror, by crying, "If you touch me, I will instantly strangle you!"

"Where is Mr. Perras? Where is Mr. Perras and the other servants? For God's sake call them," I cried out to the ser-

vant girl, who was trembling and beside herself.

"Miss Perras is running to the church after the curate," she answered, "and I do not know where the other girl is gone."

In that instant Mr. Perras entered, rushed towards his sister, and said, "Are you not ashamed to present yourself naked before such a gentleman?" and with his strong arms he tried to force her to give me up.

Turning her face towards him, with tigress eyes, she cried out, "Wretched brother! what have you done with my child? I see her blood on your hands!"

When she was struggling with her brother, I made a sudden and extreme effort to get out of her grasp; and this time I succeeded: but seeing that she wanted to throw herself again upon me, I jumped through a window which was opened.

Quick as lightning she passed out of the hands of her brother, and jumped also through the window to run after me. She would, surely, have overtaken me; for I had run two rods when I fell headlong, with my feet entangled in my long, black, priestly robe. Providentially, two strong men, attracted by my cries, came to my rescue. They wrapped her in a blanket, taken there by her sister, and brought her back into her upper chamber where she remained, safely locked, under the guard of her two strong servant maids.

The history of that woman is sad indeed. When in her priest-brother's house, when young and of great beauty, she was seduced by her father confessor, and became the mother of a female child, which she loved with a real mother's heart. She determined to keep it, and bring it up. But this did not meet the views of the curate. One night, when the mother was sleeping, the child had been taken away from her. She understood that she could never see her child any more, the awakening of the unfortunate mother was terrible. When she filled the parsonage with her cries and lamentations, and, at first, refused to take any food, in order that she might die. But she soon became a maniac.

Mr. Perras, too much attached to his sister to send her to a lunatic asylum, resolved to keep her in his own parsonage, which was very large. A room in its upper part had been fixed in such a way that her cries could not be heard, and where she would have all the comfort possible in her sad circumstances. Two servant maids were engaged to take care of her. All this was so well arranged, that I had been eight months in that parsonage, without even suspecting that there was such an unfortunate being under the same roof with me. It appears that occasionally, for many days, her mind was perfectly lucid, when she passed her time in praying, and singing a kind of poem which she had composed herself, and which she sang while holding me in her grasp. In her best moments she had fostered an invincible hatred of the priests whom she had known. Hearing her attendants often speak of me, she had, several times, expressed the desire to see me, which, of course, had been denied her.

CHAPTER XXI.

I am appointed Vicar of the Curate of Charlesbourg.

THE grand dinner previously described had its natural results. Several of the guests were hardly at home, when they complained of various kinds of sickness, and none was so severely punished as my friend Paquette, the curate of St. Gervais. He came very near dying, and for several weeks was unable to work. He requested the Bishop of Quebec to allow me to go to his help, which I did to the end of May, when I received the following letter:

CHARLESBOURGH, May 25th, 1834.

REV. MR. C. CHINIQUY.

MY DEAR SIR,—My Lord Panet has again chosen me, this year, to accompany him in his episcopal visit. I have consented, with the condition that you should take my place, at the head of my dear parish, during my absence. For I will have no anxiety when I know that my people are in the hands of a priest who, though so young, has raised himself so high in the esteem of all those who know him. Please come as soon as possible to meet me here, that I may tell you many things which will make your ministry more easy and blessed in Charlesbourg. His Lordship has promised me that when you pass through Quebec, he will give you all the powers you want to administer my parish as if you were its curate, during my absence.

Your devoted brother-priest and friend in the love
and heart of Jesus and Mary,

ANTOINE BEDARD.

I felt absolutely confounded by that letter. I was so young and so deficient in the qualities required for the high position to which I was so unexpectedly called. I know it was against the usages to put a young and untried priest in such a responsible post.

In my answer to the Rev. Mr. Bedard, I respectfully remonstrated against such a choice. But a letter received from the bishop himself, ordering me to go to Charlesbourg, without delay, to administer that parish during the absence of its pastor, soon forced me to consider that sudden and unmerited elevation as a most dangerous, though providential trial, of my young ministry. Nothing remained to be done by me but to accept the task in trembling.

The Rev. Mr. Bedard welcomed me on my arrival with words of such kindness that my heart was melted and my mind confounded. He was a man about 65 years of age, short in stature, with a well-formed breast, large shoulders, bright eyes, and a face where traits of indomitable energy were coupled with an expression of unsurpassed kindness. One could not look on that honest face without saying to himself: "I am with a really good upright man!" Mr. Bedard is one of the few priests in whom I have found a true honest faith in the Church

of Rome. With an irreproachable character, he believed with a child's faith all the absurdities which the Church of Rome teaches, and he lived according to his honest and sincere faith.

Though the actions of our daily lives were not subjected to a regular and inexorable rule in Charlesbrough's as in St. Charles' parsonage, there was yet far more life and earnestness in the performance of our ministerial duties.

There was less reading of learned, theological, philosophical and historical books, but much more real labour in Mr. Bedard's than in Mr. Perras' parish: there was more of the old French aristocracy in the latter priest, and more of the good religious Canadian habitant in the former. Though both could be considered as men of the most exalted faith and piety in the Church of Rome, their piety was of a different character. In Mr. Perras' religion there was real calmness and serenity, while the religion of Mr. Bedard had more of the flash of lightning and the noise of thunder. The private religious conversations with the curate of St. Charles were admirable, but he could not speak common sense for ten minutes together when preaching from his pulpit. Only once did he preach while I was the vicar, and then he was not half through his sermon before the greater part of his auditors were soundly sleeping. But who could hear the sermons of Rev. Mr. Bedard without feeling his heart moved and his soul filled with terror? I never heard anything more thrilling than his words when speaking of the judgments of God and the punishment of the wicked. Mr. Perras never fasted, except on the days appointed by the Church: Mr. Bedard condemned himself to fast besides twice every week. The former never drank, to my knowledge, a single glass of rum or any other strong drink, except his two glasses of wine at dinner; but the latter never failed to drink full glasses of rum three times a day, besides two or three glasses of wine at dinner. Mr. Perras slept the whole night as a guiltless child: Mr. Bedard, almost every night when I was with him, rose up and lashed himself in the most merciless manner with leather thongs, at the end of which were small pieces of lead. When inflicting upon himself those terrible punishments, he used to recite by heart, the fifty-first Psalm, in Latin, "*Miserer mei Deus secundam magnam misericordiam tuam*" ("Have mercy upon me, O Lord, according to Thy loving kindness"); and though he seemed to be unconscious of it, he prayed with such a loud voice, that I heard every word he uttered; he also struck his flesh with such violence, that I could count all the blows he administered.

One day I respectfully remonstrated against such cruel self-infliction as ruining his health and breaking his constitution: "*Cher petit frère*" (dear little brother), he answered, "our health and constitution cannot be impaired by such penances, but they are easily and commonly ruined by our sins. I am one of the healthiest men of my parish, though I have inflicted upon myself those salutary and too well-merited chastisements for many years. Though I am old, I am still a great sinner.

I have an implacable and indomitable enemy in my depraved heart, which I cannot subdue except by punishing my flesh. If I do not do those penances for my numberless transgressions, who will do penance for me? If I do not pay the debts I owe to the justice of God, who will pay them for me?"

"But," I answered, "Has not our Saviour Jesus Christ paid our debts on Calvary? Has He not saved and redeemed us all by His death on the cross? Why, then, should you or I pay again to the justice of God that which has been so perfectly and absolutely paid by our Saviour?"

"Ah! my dear young friend," quickly replied Mr. Bedard, "that doctrine you hold is Protestant, which has been condemned by the Holy Council of Trent. Christ has paid our debts certainly; but not in such an absolute way that there is nothing more to be paid by us. Have you never paid attention to what St. Paul says in his Epistle to the Colossians? 'I fill up that which is behind of the sufferings of Christ in my flesh, for His body's sake, which is the Church.' Though Christ could have entirely and absolutely paid our debts, if it had been His will, it is evident that such was not His holy will—He left something behind which Paul, you, I, and every one of His disciples, should take and suffer in our flesh what Christ has left behind, then the surplus of our merits goes to the treasury of the Church. For instance, when a saint has accomplished in his flesh what Christ has left behind for His perfect sanctification, if he accomplishes more than the justice of God requires, that surplus of merits not being of any use to Him, is put by God into the grand and common treasure, where it makes a fund of merits of infinite value, from which the Pope and the bishops draw the indulgences which they scatter all over the world as a dew from heaven. By the mercy of God, the penances which I impose upon myself, and the pains I suffer from these flagellations, purify my guilty soul, and raising me up from this polluting world, they bring me nearer and nearer to God every day. I am not yet a saint, unfortunately, but if by the mercy of God, and my penances united to the sufferings of Christ, I arrive at the happy day when all my debts are paid, and my sins cleansed away, then if I continue those penances and acquire new merits, more than I need, and if I pay more debts than I owe to the justice of God, this surplus of merits which I shall have acquired will go to the rich treasure of the Church, from which she will draw merits to enrich the multitude of good souls who cannot do enough for themselves to pay their own debts, and to reach that point of holiness which will deserve a crown in heaven. Then the more we do penance and inflict pains on our bodies, by our fastings and floggings, the more we feel happy in the assurance of thus raising ourselves more and more above the dust of this sinful world, of approaching more and more to that state of holiness of which our Saviour spoke when He said: 'Be holy, as I am holy Myself.' We feel an unspeakable joy when we know that by those self-inflicted punishments we

acquire incalculable merits, which enrich not only ourselves, but our holy Church, by filling her treasures for the benefit and salvation of the souls for whom Christ died on Calvary."

When Mr. Bedard was feeding my soul with these husks, he was speaking with great animation and sincerity. Like myself, he was far away from the good Father's house. He had never tasted of the bread of the children. Neither of us knew anything of the sweetness of that bread. We had to accept those husks as our only food, though it did not remove our hunger.

I answered him: "What you tell me here is what I find in all our ascetic books and theological treatises, and in the lives of all our saints. I can hardly reconcile that doctrine with what I read this morning in the second chapter of Ephesians. Here is the verse in my New Testament. 'But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, even when we were dead in sins, He has quickened us together with Christ. By grace ye are saved; for by grace are ye saved, through faith, and not of ourselves, it is the gift of God; not of works, lest any man should boast.'

"Now, my dear and venerable Mr. Bedard, allow me respectfully to ask, how is it possible that your salvation is only by grace, if you have to purchase it every day by tearing your flesh and lashing your body in such a fearful manner? Is it not a strange favour—a very singular grace—which reddens your skin with your blood, and bruises your flesh every night?"

"Dear little brother," answered Mr. Bedard, "when Mr. Perras spoke to me, in the presence of the bishop, with such deserved eulogium of your piety, he did not conceal that you had a very dangerous defect, which was to spend too much time in reading the Bible, in preference to every other of our holy books. He told us more than this. He said that you had a fatal tendency to interpret the Holy Scriptures too much according to your own mind, and in a sense which is rather more Protestant than Catholic. I am sorry to see that the curate of St. Charles was but too correct.

At that moment the niece of the curate came to tell us that the dinner was ready. We went to the modest, though exceedingly well-spread table, and to my great pleasure that painful conversation was dropped. We had not sat at the table five minutes, when a poor man knocked at the door and asked a piece of bread for the sake of Jesus and Mary. Mr. Bedard rose from the table, went to the poor stranger, and said: "Come, my friend, sit between me and our dear little Father Chiniquy. Our Saviour was the Friend of the poor, He was the Father of the widow and orphan, and we, His priests, must walk after Him. Be not troubled; make yourself at home. Though I am the curate of Charlesbourg, I am your brother. It may be that in heaven you will sit on a higher throne than mine, if you love our Saviour Jesus Christ and His holy mother Mary, more than I do." With these words, the best things that were on the table were put by the good old priest in the plate of the poor stranger.

Mr. Bedard was as exact as Mr. Perras in confessing once, and sometimes twice, every week ; and, rather than fall in that humiliating act, they both, in the absence of their common confessors, and much against my feelings, several times humbly knelt at my youthful feet to confess to me.

These two remarkable men had the same views about the immorality and the want of religion of the greater part of the priests. Both have told me, in their confidential conversations, things about the secret lives of the clergy which would not be believed were I to publish them ; and both repeatedly said that auricular confession was the daily source of unspeakable depravities between the confessors and their female as well as male penitents ; but neither of them had sufficient light to conclude from those deeds of depravity that auricular confession was a diabolical institution. They both sincerely believed, as I did then, that the institution was good, necessary, and divine, and that it was a source of perdition to so many priests only on account of their want of faith and piety, and principally from their neglect of prayers to the Virgin Mary.

Mr. Bedard had accompanied the Bishop of Quebec in his episcopal visits during many years, and had seen with his eyes the unmentionable plague, which was then, as it is now, devouring the very vitals of the Church of Rome. He very seldom spoke to me of those things without shedding tears of compassion over the guilty priests. My heart and my soul were also filled with an unspeakable sadness when hearing the details of such iniquities.

One day I told him what Mr. Perras had revealed to me about the distress of Bishop Plessis, when he had found that only three priests besides Mr. Perras believed in God, in his immense diocese. I asked him if there was not some exaggeration in this report. He answered, after a profound sigh : " My dear young friend : the angels could not find ten just men in Sodom—my fear is that they would not find more among the priests ! The more you advance in age the more you will see that awful truth—Ah ! let those who stand, fear, lest they fall ! "

Though these two priests professed to have a most profound love and respect for the Holy Scriptures, they gave very little time to their study, and both several times rebuked me for passing too many hours in their perusal ; and repeatedly warned me against the habit of constantly appealing to them against certain practices and teachings of our theologians. As good Roman Catholic priests they had no right to go to the Holy Scriptures alone to know what " the Lord saith ! " The traditions of the Church were their fountain of science and light ! Both of them often distressed me with the facility with which they buried out of view, under the dark clouds of their traditions, the clearest texts of Holy Scriptures which I used to quote.

They both, with an equal zeal, and unfortunately with too much success, persuaded me that it was right for the Church

to ask me to swear that I would never interpret the Holy Scriptures, except according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers. But when I showed them that the Holy Fathers had never been unanimous in anything except differing from one another on almost every subject they had treated; when I demonstrated by our Church historians that some Holy Fathers had very different views from others on many subjects, they never answered my questions except by silencing me by the text: "If he does not hear the Church let him be as a heathen or a publican," and by giving me long lectures on the danger of pride and self-confidence.

Mr. Bedard had many opportunities of giving me his views about the submission which an inferior owes to his superiors. He was of one mind with Mr. Perras and all the theologians who had treated that subject. They both taught that the inferior must obey his superior, just as the stick must obey the hand which holds it. Mr. Bedard and Mr. Perras had a great love for their Saviour, Jesus; but the Jesus Christ whom they loved and adored was not the Christ of the Gospel, but the Christ of the Church of Rome.

Mr. Perras and Mr. Bedard had a great fear, as well as a sincere love for their God, while yet they professed to make him every morning by the act of consecration. They also most sincerely believed and preached that idolatry was one of the greatest crimes a man could commit, but they themselves were every day worshipping an idol of their own creating. They were forced by their Church to renew the awful iniquity of Aaron, with this difference only, that while Aaron made his gods of melted gold, and moulded them into a figure of a calf, they made theirs with flour, baked between two heated and well polished irons, and in the form of a crucified man.

These two sincere and honest priests placed the utmost confidence also in relics and scapulars. I have heard both say that no fatal accident could happen to one who had a scapular on his breasts—no sudden death would overtake a man who was faithful in keeping those blessed scapulars about his person. Both of them, nevertheless, died suddenly, and that too of the saddest of deaths. Mr. Bedard dropped dead on the 19th of May, 1837, at a great dinner given to his friends. He was in the act of swallowing a glass of that drink of which God says: "Look not upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth its colour in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At the last it biteth like a serpent and stingeth like an adder."

The Rev. Mr. Perras, sad to say, became a lunatic in 1845, and died the 29th of July, 1847, in a fit of delirium.

CHAPTER XXII.

The Cholera Morbus of 1834.

I HAD not been more than three weeks the administrator of the parish of Charlesbourg, when the terrible words, "The cholera morbus is in Quebec!" sent a thrill of terror from one end to the other of Canada.

The cities of Quebec and Montreal, with many surrounding country places, had been decimated in 1832 by the same terrible scourge. Thousands upon thousands had fallen its victims; families in every rank of society had disappeared; for the most skilful physicians of both Europe and America had been unable to stop its march and ravages. But the year 1833 had passed without hearing almost of a single case of that fatal disease; we had all the hope that the justice of God was satisfied, and that He would no more visit us with that horrible plague. In this, however, we were to be sadly disappointed.

I will never forget the hour after I had heard: "The cholera is in Quebec!" It was, indeed a most solemn hour to me. At a glance I measured the bottomless abyss which was dug under my feet. We had no physicians, and there was no possibility of having anyone—for they were to have more work than they could do in Quebec. I saw that I would have to be both the body and the soul-physician of the numberless victims of this terrible disease.

The tortures of the dying, the cries of the widows and of the orphans, the almost unbearable stench of the houses attacked by the scourge, the desolation and the paralyzing fears of the whole people, the fatherless and motherless orphans by whom I was to be surrounded, the starving poor for whom I would have to provide food and clothing when every kind of work and industry stopped; but, above all, the crowds of penitents whom the terrors of an impending death would drag to my feet to make their confessions, that I might forgive their sins, passed through my mind as so many spectres. I fell on my knees, with a heart beating with emotions that no pen can describe, and prostrating myself before my too justly angry God, I cried for mercy: with torrents of tears I asked Him to take away my life as a sacrifice for my people, but to spare them; raising my eyes towards a beautiful statue of Mary, whom I believed to be the Mother of God, I supplicated her to appease the wrath of her Son.

I was still on my knees, when several knocks at the door told me that someone wanted to speak to me. A young woman was there, bathed in tears and pale as death, who said to me: "My father has just returned from Quebec, and is dying from the cholera—please come quick to hear his confession before he expires!"

No tongue will ever be able to tell half of the horrors which strike the eyes and the mind the first time one enters the house of a man struggling in the agonies of death from cholera.

The other diseases seem to attack only one part of the body at once, but the cholera is like a furious tiger whose sharp teeth and nails tear his victim from head to foot without sparing any part. The hands and feet, the legs and arms, the stomach, the breast and bowels are at once tortured. I had never seen anything so terrific as the fixed eyes of the first victim whom I had to prepare for death. He was already almost as cold as a piece of ice. He was vomiting and ejecting an incredible quantity of a watery and blackish matter which filled the house with an unbearable smell. With a feeble voice he requested me to hear the confession of his sins. I ordered the family to withdraw and leave me alone, that they might not hear the sad story of his transgressions. But he had not said five words before he cried out: "Oh, my God! what horrible cramps in my leg! For God's sake, rub it." And when I had given up hearing his confession to rub his leg, he cried again: "Oh! what horrible cramps in my arms!—in my feet!—in my shoulders! in my stomach!" And to the utmost of my capacity and my strength, I rubbed his arms, his feet, his shoulders, his breasts, till I felt so exhausted and covered with perspiration that I feared I should faint. During that time the foetid matter ejected from his stomach, besmeared me almost from head to foot. I called for help, and two strong men continued with me to rub the poor dying man. It seemed evident that he could not live very long: his sufferings looked so terrible and unbearable! I administered him the sacrament of extreme-unction.

Standing by the bedside of the dying man, whilst I rubbed his limbs to alleviate his tortures, I exhorted him to repent. But I closely watched that hand-to-hand battle—that merciless and unequal struggle between the giant and his poor victim. His agony was long and terrible, for he was a man of great bodily strength. But after several hours of the most frightful pains, he quietly breathed his last. The house was crowded with the neighbours and relations, who, forgetful of the danger of catching the disease, had come to see him. We all knelt and prayed for the departed soul, after which I gave them a few words about the necessity of giving up their sins and keeping themselves ready to die and go at the Master's call.

I then left that desolated house with feelings of distress which no pen can portray! When I got back to the parsonage, after praying and weeping alone in my closet, I took a bath, and washed myself with vinegar and a mixture of camphor, as a preventive against the epidemic. The rest of the day, till ten at night, was spent in hearing the confessions of a great number of people whom the fear of death had dragged around my confessional box that I might forgive their sins. This hearing of confession was interrupted only at ten o'clock at night, when I was called to the cemetery to bury the first victim of the cholera in Charlesborough. A great number of people had accompanied the corpse to his last resting-place: the night was beautiful, the atmosphere balmy, and the moon and stars had never appeared to me so bright. The stillness

of the night was broken only by the sobs of the relations and friends of the deceased. It was one of the best opportunities God had ever given me of exhorting the people to repentance. I took for my text: "Therefore, be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of Man cometh." The spectacle of that grave, filled by a man who, twenty-four hours before, was full of health and life in the midst of his happy family, was speaking more eloquently than the words of my lips, to show that we must be always ready. And never any people entered the threshold of their homes with more solemn thoughts than those to whom I spoke that night in the midst of the graveyard.

The history of that day is the history of the forty days which followed—for not a single one of them passed without my being called to visit a victim of the cholera—more than one hundred people were attacked by the terrible disease, nearly forty of whom died!

I cannot sufficiently thank my merciful God for having protected me in such a marvellous way that I had not a single hour of disease during those two months of hard labours and sore trials. I had to visit the sick not only as a priest, but as a physician also; for seeing at first the absolute impossibility of persuading any physician from Quebec to give up their rich city patients for our more humble farmers, I felt that it was my duty to make myself as expert as I could in the art of helping the victims of that cruel and loathsome disease; I studied the best authors on that subject, consulted the most skilful physicians, got a little pharmacy which would have done honour to an old physician, and I gave my care and my medicine gratis. Very soon the good people of Charlesborough put as much, if not more confidence, in my medical care, as in any other of the best physicians of the country. More than once, I had to rub the limbs of so many patients in the same day, that the skin of my hands was taken away, and several times the blood came out from the wounds. Dr. Painchard, one of the ablest physicians of Quebec, who was my personal friend, told me after, that it was a most extraordinary thing that I had not fallen a victim to that disease.

I would never have mentioned what I did in those never-to-be-forgotten days of the cholera of 1834, when one of the most horrible epidemics which the world has ever seen spread desolation and death almost all over Canada, if I had been alone to work as I did; but I am happy and proud to say that, without a single exception, the French Canadian priests, whose parishes were attacked by that pestilence, did the same. I could name hundreds of them who, during several months, also, day after day and night after night, bravely met and fought the enemy, and fearlessly presented their breast to its blows. I could even name scores of them who heroically fell and died when facing the foe on that battle-field!

We must be honest and true towards the Roman Catholic priests of Canada. Few men, if even any, have shown more

The other diseases seem to attack only one part of the body at once, but the cholera is like a furious tiger whose sharp teeth and nails tear his victim from head to foot without sparing any part. The hands and feet, the legs and arms, the stomach, the breast and bowels are at once tortured. I had never seen anything so terrific as the fixed eyes of the first victim whom I had to prepare for death. He was already almost as cold as a piece of ice. He was vomiting and ejecting an incredible quantity of a watery and blackish matter which filled the house with an unbearable smell. With a feeble voice he requested me to hear the confession of his sins. I ordered the family to withdraw and leave me alone, that they might not hear the sad story of his transgressions. But he had not said five words before he cried out: "Oh, my God! what horrible cramps in my leg! For God's sake, rub it." And when I had given up hearing his confession to rub his leg, he cried again: "Oh! what horrible cramps in my arms!—in my feet!—in my shoulders! in my stomach!" And to the utmost of my capacity and my strength, I rubbed his arms, his feet, his shoulders, his breasts, till I felt so exhausted and covered with perspiration that I feared I should faint. During that time the foetid matter ejected from his stomach, besmeared me almost from head to foot. I called for help, and two strong men continued with me to rub the poor dying man. It seemed evident that he could not live very long: his sufferings looked so terrible and unbearable! I administered him the sacrament of extreme-unction.

Standing by the bedside of the dying man, whilst I rubbed his limbs to alleviate his tortures, I exhorted him to repent. But I closely watched that hand-to-hand battle—that merciless and unequal struggle between the giant and his poor victim. His agony was long and terrible, for he was a man of great bodily strength. But after several hours of the most frightful pains, he quietly breathed his last. The house was crowded with the neighbours and relations, who, forgetful of the danger of catching the disease, had come to see him. We all knelt and prayed for the departed soul, after which I gave them a few words about the necessity of giving up their sins and keeping themselves ready to die and go at the Master's call.

I then left that desolated house with feelings of distress which no pen can portray! When I got back to the parsonage, after praying and weeping alone in my closet, I took a bath, and washed myself with vinegar and a mixture of camphor, as a preventive against the epidemic. The rest of the day, till ten at night, was spent in hearing the confessions of a great number of people whom the fear of death had dragged around my confessional box that I might forgive their sins. This hearing of confession was interrupted only at ten o'clock at night, when I was called to the cemetery to bury the first victim of the cholera in Charlesborough. A great number of people had accompanied the corpse to his last resting-place: the night was beautiful, the atmosphere balmy, and the moon and stars had never appeared to me so bright. The stillness

of the night was broken only by the sobs of the relations and friends of the deceased. It was one of the best opportunities God had ever given me of exhorting the people to repentance. I took for my text: "Therefore, be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of Man cometh." The spectacle of that grave, filled by a man who, twenty-four hours before, was full of health and life in the midst of his happy family, was speaking more eloquently than the words of my lips, to show that we must be always ready. And never any people entered the threshold of their homes with more solemn thoughts than those to whom I spoke that night in the midst of the graveyard.

The history of that day is the history of the forty days which followed—for not a single one of them passed without my being called to visit a victim of the cholera—more than one hundred people were attacked by the terrible disease, nearly forty of whom died!

I cannot sufficiently thank my merciful God for having protected me in such a marvellous way that I had not a single hour of disease during those two months of hard labours and sore trials. I had to visit the sick not only as a priest, but as a physician also; for seeing at first the absolute impossibility of persuading any physician from Quebec to give up their rich city patients for our more humble farmers, I felt that it was my duty to make myself as expert as I could in the art of helping the victims of that cruel and loathsome disease; I studied the best authors on that subject, consulted the most skilful physicians, got a little pharmacy which would have done honour to an old physician, and I gave my care and my medicine gratis. Very soon the good people of Charlebourg put as much, if not more confidence, in my medical care, as in any other of the best physicians of the country. More than once, I had to rub the limbs of so many patients in the same day, that the skin of my hands was taken away, and several times the blood came out from the wounds. Dr. Painchard, one of the ablest physicians of Quebec, who was my personal friend, told me after, that it was a most extraordinary thing that I had not fallen a victim to that disease.

I would never have mentioned what I did in those never-to-be-forgotten days of the cholera of 1834, when one of the most horrible epidemics which the world has ever seen spread desolation and death almost all over Canada, if I had been alone to work as I did; but I am happy and proud to say that, without a single exception, the French Canadian priests, whose parishes were attacked by that pestilence, did the same. I could name hundreds of them who, during several months, also, day after day and night after night, bravely met and fought the enemy, and fearlessly presented their breast to its blows. I could even name scores of them who heroically fell and died when facing the foe on that battle-field!

We must be honest and true towards the Roman Catholic priests of Canada. Few men, if even any, have shown more

CHAPTER XXIII.

I am named a Vicar of St. Roch, Quebec City.

IN the beginning of September, 1834, the Bishop Synaie gave me the enviable position of one of the vicars of St. Roch, Quebec, where the Rev. Mr. Tetu had been curate for about a year. He was one of the seventeen children of Mr. Francis Tetu, one of the most respectable and wealthy farmers of St. Thomas. Such was the amiability of character of my new curate, that I never saw him in a bad humour a single time during the four years that it was my fortune to work under him in that parish. And although in my daily intercourse with him I sometimes unintentionally sorely tried his patience, I never heard an unkind word proceed from his lips.

He was the finest penman I ever saw ; and by far the most skilful skater of the country. Nothing could surpass the agility and perfection with which he used to write his name on the ice with his skates. He was also fond of fast horses, and knew, to perfection, how to handle the most unmanageable steeds of Quebec. He really looked like Phaeton when, in a light and beautiful buggy, he held the reins of the fiery coursers which the rich bourgeois of the city liked to trust to him once or twice a week, that he might take a ride with one of his vicars to the surrounding country. Mr. Tetu was also fond of fine cigars and choice chewing tobacco. Like Pope Pius IX., he also constantly used the snuff-box. He would have been a pretty good preacher, had he not been born with a natural horror of books. I very seldom saw in his hands any other books than his breviary, and some treatises on the catechism.

He requested me to give him some English lessons. For, though my knowledge of English was then very limited, I was the only one of five priests who understood and could speak a few words of that language ! I answered him that it would be as pleasant as it was easy for me to teach the little I knew of it, and I advised him to subscribe for the *Quebec Gazette*, that I might profit by the interesting matter which that paper used to give to its readers ; and at the same time I should teach him to read and understand its contents.

The third time that I went to his room to give him his lesson, he gravely asked me : " Have you ever seen ' General Cargo ? ' "

I was at first puzzled by that question, and answered him : " I never heard that there was any military officer by the name of ' General Cargo. ' How do you know that there is such a general in the world ? " He quickly answered : " There is surely a ' General Cargo ' somewhere in England or America, and he must be very rich ; for see the large number of ships which bear his name, and have entered the port of Quebec, these last few days ! "

Seeing the strange mistake, and finding his ignorance so wonderful, I burst into a fit of uncontrollable laughter. I could not answer a word, but cried at the top of my voice :

"General Cargo ! General Cargo !" The poor curate, stunned by my laughing, looked at me in amazement. But, unable to understand its cause, he asked me: "Why do you laugh ?" But the more stupefied he was, the more I laughed, unable to say anything but "General Cargo ! General Cargo !"

The other three vicars, hearing the noise, hastily came from their rooms to learn its cause, and get a good laugh also. But I was so completely beside myself with laughing, that I could not answer their question in any other way than by crying, "General Cargo ! General Cargo !"

The puzzled curate tried then to give them some explanations of that mystery, saying with the greatest *naïveté*: "I cannot see why our little Father Chiniquy is laughing so convulsively. I put to him a very simple question, when he entered my room to give me my English lesson. I had simply asked him if he had ever seen 'General Cargo,' who has sent so many ships to our port these last few days, and added that that general must be very rich, since he has so many ships on the sea !" The three vicars saw the point, and without being able to answer him a word, they burst also into such fits of laughter, that the poor curate felt more than ever puzzled.

"Are you crazy ?" he said. "What makes you laugh so when I put to you such a simple question ? Do you not know anything about that 'General Cargo,' who surely must live somewhere, and be very rich, since he sends so many vessels to our port that they fill nearly two columns of the *Quebec Gazette*."

These remarks of the poor curate brought such a storm of irrepressible laughter from us all as we never experienced in our whole lives. It took us some time to sufficiently master our feelings to tell him that "General Cargo" was not the name of any individual, but only the technical words to say that the ships were laden with general goods.

The next morning the young and jovial vicars gave the story to their friends, and the people of Quebec had a hearty laugh at the expense of our friend. From that time we called our good curate by the name of "General Cargo," and he was so good natured that he joined with us in joking at his own expense. It would require too much space were I to publish all the comic blunders of that good man, and so I shall give only one more.

On one of the coldest days of January, 1835, a merchant of sealskins came to the parsonage with some of the best specimens of his merchandise, that we might buy them to make overcoats. For in those days the overcoats of buffalo or racoon skins were not yet thought of. Our richest men used to have beaver overcoats, but the rest of the people had to be contented with Canada sealskins ; a beaver overcoat could not be had for less than 200 dols.

Mr. Tetu was anxious to buy the skins ; his only difficulty was the high price asked by the merchant. For nearly an hour he had turned over and over again the beautiful skins,

and had spent all his eloquence on trying to bring down their price, when the sexton arrived, and told him, respectfully: "M. le Cure, there are a couple of people waiting for you with a child to be baptized." "Very well," said the curate, "I will go immediately;" and addressing the merchant, he said: "Please wait a moment; I will not be long absent."

In two minutes after, the curate had donned the surplice, and was going at full speed through the prayers and ceremonies of baptism. For, to be fair and true towards Mr. Tetu (and I might say the same thing of the greatest part of the priests I have known), it must be acknowledged that he was very exact in all his ministerial duties; yet he was in this case going through them by steam, if not by electricity. He was soon at the end. But, after the Sacrament was administered, we were enjoined, then, to repeat an exhortation to the godfathers and godmothers, from the ritual which we all knew by heart, and which began with these words: "Godfathers and godmothers, you have brought a sinner to the church, but you will take back a saint!"

As the vestry was full of people who had come to confess, Mr. Tetu thought that it was his duty to speak with more emphasis than usual, in order to have his instructions heard and felt by every one. But, instead of saying, "Godfather and godmother, you have brought a sinner to the church, you will take back a saint!" he, with great force and unction, said: "Godfather and godmother, you have brought a sinner to the church, you will take back a *sealskin*!"

No words can describe the uncontrollable burst and roar of laughter among the crowd, when they heard that the baptised child was just changed into a "sealskin." Unable to contain themselves, or do any serious thing, they left the vestry to go home and laugh to their heart's content.

But the most comic part of this blunder was the *sang froid* and the calmness with which Mr. Tetu, turning towards me, asked: "Will you be kind enough to tell me the cause of that indecent and universal laughing in the midst of such a solemn action as the baptism of this child?"

I tried to tell him his blunder: but for some time it was impossible to express myself. My laughing propensities were so much excited, and the convulsive laughter of the whole multitude made such a noise, that he would not have heard me had I been able to answer him. It was only when the greatest part of the crowd had left that I could reveal to Mr. Tetu that he had changed the baptized child into a "sealskin!" He heartily laughed at his own blunder, and calmly went back to buy his sealskins. The next day the story went from house to house in Quebec, and caused everywhere such a laugh as they had not had since the birth of "General Cargo."

That priest was a good type of the greatest part of the priests.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Enormous Sums of Money made by the Sale of Masses.

IN one of the pleasant hours which we used invariably to pass after dinner, in the comfortable parlour of our parsonage, one of the vicars, Mr. Louis Parent, said to the Rev. Mr. Tetu: "I have handed this morning more than one hundred dollars to the bishop, as the price of masses which my pious penitents have requested me to celebrate, the greatest part of them for the souls in purgatory. Every week, I have to do the same thing, just as each of you, and every one of the hundreds of priests in Canada do. Now I would like to know how the bishops can dispose of all these masses, and what they do with the large sums of money which go into their hands from every part of the country to have masses said. This question vexes me, and I would like to know your mind about it."

The good curate answered in a joking manner, as usual: "If the masses paid into our hands, which go to the bishop, are all celebrated, purgatory must be emptied twice a day. For I have calculated that the sums given for those masses in Canada cannot be less than \$4,000 every day, and as there are three times as many Catholics in the United States as here, and those Irish Catholics are more devoted to the souls in purgatory than the Canadians, there is no exaggeration in saying that they give as much as our people; \$16,000 at least will thus be given every day in these two countries to throw cold water on the burning flames of that fiery prison. Now, these \$16,000 given every day, multiplied by the 365 days of the year, make the handsome total of \$5,840,000 paid for that object in low masses, every year. But, as we all know, that more than twice as much is paid for high masses than for low, it is evident that more than \$10,000,000 are expended to help the souls of purgatory end their tortures every twelve months, in North America alone. If those millions of dollars do not benefit the good souls in purgatory, they at all events are of some benefit to our pious bishops and holy popes, in whose hands the greatest part must remain till the day of judgment. For there is not a sufficient number of priests in the world to say all the masses which are paid for by the people. I do not know any more than you do about what the bishops do with those millions of dollars; they keep that among their secret good works. But it is evident there is a serious mystery here. I do not mean to say that the Yankee and the Canadian bishops swallow those huge piles of dollars as sweet oranges; or that they are a band of big swindlers, who employ smaller ones, called Revs. Tetu, Baillargeon, Chiniquy, Parent, etc., to fill their treasures. But, if you want to know my mind on that delicate subject, I will tell you that the less we think or speak of it, the better it is for us. Every time my thoughts turn to those streams of money which day and night flow from the small purses of our pious and unsuspecting people into our hands, and from

ours into those of the bishops, I feel as if I were choking. If I am at the table I can neither eat nor drink, and if in my bed at night, I cannot sleep. But as I like to eat, drink and sleep, I reject those thoughts as much as possible, and I advise you to do the same thing.

The other vicars seemed inclined, with Mr. Parent, to accept that conclusion; but, as I had not said a single word, they requested me to give them my views on that vexatious subject, which I did in the following brief words :

"There are many things in our Holy Church which look like dark spots; but I hope that this is due only to our ignorance. No doubt these very things would look as white as snow, were we to see and know them just as they are. Our holy bishops with the majority of the Catholic priests of the United States and Canada, cannot be that band of thieves and swindlers whose phantoms chill the blood of our worthy curate. So long as we do not know what the bishops do with those numberless masses paid into their hands, I prefer to believe that they act as honest men."

I had hardly said these few words, when I was called to visit a sick parishioner, and the conversation was ended.

Eight days later, I was alone in my room, reading the *L'ami de la Religion et du Roi*, a paper which I received from Paris, edited by Picot. My curiosity was not a little excited when I read, at the head of the page in large letters: "Admirable Piety of the French Canadian People." The reading of that page made me shed tears of shame, and shook my faith to its foundation. Unable to contain myself, I ran to the rooms of the curate and the vicars, and said to them: "A few days ago we tried, but in vain, to find what becomes of the large sums of money which pass from the people, through our hands, into those of the bishop, to say masses; but here is the answer, I have the key to the mystery, which is worthy of the darkest ages of the Church. I wish I were dead, rather than see with my own eyes such abominations." We then read that long chapter, the substance of which was that the venerable bishops of Quebec had sent not less than one hundred thousand francs, at different times, to the priests of Paris, that they might say four hundred thousand masses at five cents each! Here we had the sad evidence that our bishops had taken four hundred thousand francs from our poor people, under the pretext of saving the souls from purgatory! That article fell upon us as a thunderbolt. For a long time we looked at each other without being able to utter a single word; our tongues were paralysed by our shame: we felt as vile criminals when detected on the spot.

At last, Baillargeon, addressing the curate, said: "Is it possible that our bishops are swindlers, and we their tools to defraud our people? What would the people say, if they knew that not only we do not say the masses for which they constantly fill our hands with their hard-earned money, but that we send those masses to be said in Paris for five cents! What

will our good people think of us all when they know that our bishop pockets twenty cents out of each mass they ask us to celebrate according to their wishes ? ”

The curate answered : “ It is very lucky that the people do not know that sharp operation of our bishops, for they would surely throw us all into the river. Let us keep that shameful trade as secret as possible. For what is the crime of simony if this be not an instance of it ? ”

I replied : “ How can you hope to keep that traffic of the body and blood of Christ a secret, when not less than 40,000 copies of this paper are circulated in France, and more than 100 copies come to the United States and Canada ! The danger is greater than you suspect ; it is even at our doors. Is it not on account of such public and undeniable crimes and vile tricks of the clergy of France, that the French people in general, not only have lost almost every vestige of religion, but, not half-a-century ago condemned all the priests and bishops of France to death as public malefactors ? ”

“ But that sharp mercantile operation of our bishops takes a still darker colour, when we consider that those ‘ five-cent masses ’ which are said in Paris are not worth a cent. For who among us is ignorant of the fact that the greatest part of the priests of Paris are infidels, and that many of them live publicly with concubines ? Would our people put their money in our hands if we were honest enough to tell them that their masses would be said for five cents in Paris by such priests ? Do we not deceive them when we accept their money, under the well understood condition that we shall offer the holy sacrifice according to their wishes ? But, instead of that, we get it sent to France, to be disposed of in such a criminal way. But, if you will allow me to speak a little more, I have another strange fact to consider with you, which is closely connected with this simoniacal operation.”

“ Do you remember how you were enticed into the ‘ Three Masses Society ’ ? Who among us, had the idea that the new obligations we were then assuming were such that the greatest part of the year would be spent in saying masses for the priests, and that it would thus become impossible to satisfy the pious demands of the people who support us ? We already belonged to the societies of the Blessed Virgin Mary and of St. Michael, which raised to five the number of masses we had to celebrate for the dead priests. Dazzled by the idea that we would have two-thousand masses said for us at our death, we bit at the bait presented to us by the bishop as hungry fishes, without suspecting the hook. The result is that we have to say 165 masses for the 33 priests who died during the past year, which means that each of us has to pay 41,000 dollars to the bishop for masses which he has had said in Paris for 8,000 dollars. Each mass which we celebrate for a dead priest here, is a mass which the bishop sends to Paris, on which he gains twenty cents. Then the more priests he enrolls in his society of ‘ Three Masses ’ the more twenty cents he pockets from us

and from our pious people. Hence his admirable zeal to enroll every one of us. It is not the value of the money which our bishop so skilfully got from our hands which I consider, but I feel desolate when I see that by these societies we become accomplices of his simoniacal trade. For, being forced the greatest part of the year to celebrate the holy sacrifice for the benefit of dead priests, we cannot celebrate the masses for which we are daily paid by the people, and are therefore forced to transfer them into the hands of the bishop, who sends them to Paris, after spiriting away twenty cents from each of them. However, why should we lament over the past? It is no more within our reach. There is no remedy for it. Let us then learn from the past errors how to be wise in the future."

Mr. Tetu answered: "You have shown us our error. Now, can you indicate any remedy?"

"I cannot say that the remedy we have in hand is one of those patented medicines which will cure all the diseases of our sickly Church in Canada, but I hope it will help to bring a speedy convalescence. That remedy is to abolish the Society of 'Three Masses,' and to establish another of 'One Mass,' which will be said at the death of every priest. In that way it is true that instead of 2,000 masses, we shall have only 1,200 only at our death. But if 1,200 masses do not open to us the gates of heaven, it is because we shall be in hell. By that reduction we shall be enabled to say more masses at the request of our people, and shall diminish the number of five cent masses said by the priests of Paris at the request of our bishop. If you take my advice, we will immediately name the Rev. Mr. Tetu president of the new society, Mr. Parent will be its treasurer, and I consent to act as your secretary, if you like it. When our society is organized, we will send our resignations to the president of the other society, and we shall immediately address a circular to all the priests, to give them the reason for the change, and respectfully ask them to unite with us in this new society, in order to diminish the number of masses which are celebrated by the five cent priests of Paris.

Within two hours the new society was fully organized, the reasons of its formation written in a book, and our names were sent to the bishop, with a respectful letter informing him that we were no more members of the "Three Masses Society." That letter was signed, C. Chiniquy, Secretary. Three hours later I received the following note from the bishop's palace: "My Lord Bishop of Quebec wants to see you immediately upon important affairs. Do not fail to come without delay. Truly yours,—CHARLES F. CAZEAULT, Secretary."

I showed the missive to the curate and the vicars, and told them: "A big storm is raging on the mountain; this is the first peal of thunder—the atmosphere looks dark and heavy. Pray for me that I may speak and act as an honest and fearless priest when in the presence of the bishop."

In the first parlour of the bishop I met my personal friend, Secretary Cazeault. He said to me: "My dear Chiniquy, you

are sailing on a rough sea—you must be a lucky mariner if you escape the wreck. The bishop is very angry with you ; but be not discouraged, for the right is on your side." He then kindly opened the door of the bishop's parlour, and said : "My lord, Mr. Chiniquy is here waiting for your orders."

"Let him come, sir," answered the bishop.

I entered and threw myself at his feet, as is the usage of the priests. But, stepping backward, he told me in a most excited manner : "I have no benediction for you till you give me a satisfactory explanation of your strange conduct."

I rose to my feet and said : "My lord, what do you want from me ?"

"I want you, sir, to explain to me the meaning of this letter signed by you as secretary of a new-born society called, 'One Mass Society' ?" At the same time he showed me my letter.

I answered him : "My lord—the letter is in good French—your lordship must have understood it well. I cannot see how any explanation on my part could make it clearer."

"What I want to know from you, is what you mean, and what is your object in leaving the old and respectable 'Three Mass Society' ? Is it not composed of your bishops and of all the priests of Canada ? Did you not find yourself in sufficiently good company ? Do you object to the prayers said for the souls in purgatory ?"

I replied : "My lord, I will answer by revealing to your lordship a fact which has not sufficiently attracted your attention. The great number of masses which we have to say for the souls of the dead priests makes it impossible for us to say the masses for which the people pay into our hands ; we are, then, forced to transfer this money into your hands ; and then, instead of having these holy sacrifices offered by the good priests of Canada, your lordship has recourse to the priests of France, where you get them said for five cents. We see two great evils in this : First, our masses are said by priests in whom we have not the least confidence ; and though the masses they say are very cheap, they are too dearly purchased ; for between you and me, we can say that, with very few exceptions, the masses said by the priests of France, particularly those of Paris, are not worth one cent. The second evil is still greater, for in our eyes, it is one of the greatest crimes which our holy Church has always condemned, the crime of simony."

"Do you mean to say," indignantly replied the bishop, "that I am guilty of the crime of simony ?"

"Yes ! my lord ; it is just what I mean to say, and I do not see how your lordship does not understand that the trade in masses by which you gain 400,000 francs on a spiritual merchandise, which you get for 100,000 is not simony."

"You insult me ! You are the most impudent man I ever saw. If you do not retract what you said, I will suspend and excommunicate you !"

"My suspension and my excommunication will not make the position of your lordship much better. For the people will

know that you have excommunicated me because I protested against your trade in masses. They will know that you pocket twenty cents on every mass, and that you get them said for five cents in Paris by priests, the greatest part of whom live with concubines, and you will see that there will be only one voice in Canada to bless me for my protest and to condemn you for your simoniacal trade on such a sacred thing as the holy and tremendous sacrifice of the body, blood, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ."

I uttered these words with such perfect calmness that the bishop saw that I had not the least fear of his thunders. He began to pace the room, and he heaped on my devoted head all the epithets by which I could learn that I was an insolent, rebellious, and dangerous priest.

"It is evident to me," said he, "that you aim to be a reformer, a Luther, in Canada. But you will never be anything else than a monkey!"

I saw that my bishop was beside himself, and that my perfect calmness added to his irritation. I answered him: "If Luther had never done anything worse than I do to-day, he ought to be blessed by God and man. I respectfully request your lordship to be calm. The subject on which I speak to you is more serious than you think. Your lordship, by asking twenty-five cents for a mass which can be had for five cents, does a thing which you would condemn if it were done by another man. You are digging under your own feet, and under the feet of your priests the same abyss in which the Church of France nearly perished, not half a century ago. Woe to your lordship! Woe to me, woe to our holy Church, the day that our people know that in our holy religion the blood of Christ is turned into merchandise to fill the treasury of the bishops and popes!"

It was evident that these last words, said with most perfect self-possession, had not all been lost. The bishop had become calmer. He answered me: "You are young and without experience; your imagination is easily fed with phantoms, when you know a little more, you will change your mind and will have more respect for your superiors. I hope your present error is only a momentary one. I could punish you for this freedom with which you have dared to speak to your bishop, but I prefer to warn you to be more respectful and obedient in future. Though I deplore, for your sake, that you have requested me to take away your name from the 'Three Mass Society'—you and the four simpletons who have committed the same act of folly, are the only losers in the matter. Instead of two thousand masses said for the deliverance of your souls from the flames of Purgatory, you will have only twelve hundred. But, be sure of it, there is too much wisdom and true piety in my clergy to follow your example. You will be left alone, and I fear, covered with ridicule. For they will call you the 'little reformer.'"

The hour of my absence had been one of anxiety for the curate and the vicars. But my return filled them with joy. "What news?" they all exclaimed.

"Good news!" I answered; "the battle has been fierce but short. We have gained the day; and if we are only true to ourselves, another great victory is in store for us. The bishop is so sure that we are the only ones who think of that reform, that he will not move a finger to prevent the other priests from following us. This security will make our success certain. But we must not lose a moment. Let us address our circular to every priest in Canada."

One hour later there were more than twenty writers at work, and before twenty-four hours, more than three hundred letters were carried to all the priests, giving them the reasons why we should try, by all fair means, to put an end to the shameful simoniacal trade in masses which was going on between Canada and France.

The week was scarcely ended, when letters came from almost all curates and vicars to the bishop, respectfully requesting him to withdraw their names from "The Society of the Three Masses." Only fifty refused to comply with our request.

Our victory was more complete than we had expected. But the bishop of Quebec, hoping to regain his lost ground, immediately wrote to the bishop of Montreal, my Lord Telemesse, to come to his help and show us the enormity of the crime we had committed, in rebelling against the will of our ecclesiastical superiors.

A few days later, to my great dismay, I received a short and very cold note from the bishop's secretary, telling me that their lordships, the bishops of Montreal and Quebec, wanted to see me at the palace, without delay. I had never seen the bishop of Montreal, and my surprise and disappointment were great in finding myself in the presence of a man, my idea of whom was of gigantic proportions, when in reality he was very small. But I felt exceedingly well pleased by the admirable mixture of firmness, intelligence, and honesty of his whole demeanour. His eyes were piercing as the eagle's; but when fixed on me, I saw in them the marks of a noble and honest heart.

The motions of his head were rapid, his sentences short, and he seemed to know only one line, the straight one, when approaching a subject or dealing with a man. He had the merited reputation of being one of the most learned and eloquent men in Canada. The bishop of Quebec had remained on his sofa and left the bishop of Montreal to receive me. I fell at his feet and asked his blessing, which he gave me in the most cordial way. Then, putting his hand upon my shoulder, he said in a Quaker style: "Is it possible that *thou* art Chiniquy—that young priest who makes so much noise? How can such a small man make so much noise?"

There being a smile on his countenance as he uttered these words, I saw at once that there was no anger or bad feeling in his heart; I replied, "My lord, do you not know that the most

precious pearls and perfumes are put up in the smallest vases ? ”

The bishop saw that this was a compliment to his address ; he smilingly replied, “ Well, well, if thou art a noisy priest, thou art not a fool. But, tell me, why dost thou want to destroy our ‘ Three Mass Society,’ and establish the new one on its ruins, in spite of thy superiors ? ”

“ My lord, my answer will be as respectful, short, and plain as possible. I have left the ‘ Three Mass Society ’ because it was my right to do it, without anybody’s permission. I hope our venerable Canadian bishops do not wish to be served by slaves ? ”

“ I do not say,” replied the bishop, “ that thou wert bound in conscience to remain in the ‘ Three Mass Society ’ ; but can I know why thou hast left such a respectable association, at the head of which thou seest thy bishops and the most venerable priests in Canada ? ”

“ I will again be plain in my answer, my lord. If your lordship wants to go to hell with your venerable priests by spiriting away twenty cents from every one of our honest and pious penitents, for masses which you get said for five, by bad priests in Paris, I will not follow you. Moreover, if your lordship wants to be thrown into the river by the furious people, when they know how long and how cunningly we have cheated them, with our simoniacal trade in masses, I do not want to follow you into the cold stream.”

“ Well, well ! ” answered the bishop, “ let us drop that matter for ever.”

He uttered this short sentence with such an evidence of sincerity and honesty, that I saw he really meant it. He had, at a glance, seen that his ground was untenable, in the presence of priests who knew their rights and had a mind to stand by them.

My joy was great indeed at such a prompt and complete victory. I fell again at the bishop’s feet, and asked his benediction before taking leave of him. I then left to go and tell the curates and vicars the happy issue of our interview with the bishop of Montreal.

From that time till now, at the death of every priest, the Clerical Press never failed mentioning whether the deceased priest belonged to the “ Three ” or “ One Mass Society.”

We had, to some extent, diminished the simoniacal and infamous trade in masses ; but unfortunately we had not destroyed it ; and I know that to-day it has revived. Since I left the Church of Rome, the bishops of Quebec have raised the “ Three Mass Society ” from its grave.

CHAPTER XXV.

Quebec Marine Hospital—The first time

I carried the "Bon Dieu" (The Wafer God) in my Vest pocket.

ONE of the first things done by the curate Tetu, after his new vicars had been chosen, was to divide, by casting lots, his large parish into four parts, that there might be more regularity in our ministerial labours, and my lot gave me the North-East of the parish, which contained the Quebec Marine Hospital.

The number of sick sailors I had to visit almost every day in that noble institution was between twenty-five and a hundred. The Roman Catholic chapel, with its beautiful altar, was not yet completed. It was only in 1837 that I could persuade the hospital authorities to fix it as it is to-day. Having no place there to celebrate mass and keep the Holy Sacrament, I soon found myself in presence of a difficulty which, at first, seemed to me of a grave character. I had to administer the viaticum (holy communion) to a dying sailor. As everyone knows, all Roman Catholics are bound to believe that by the consecration, the wafer is transformed into the body, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ. Hence they call that ceremony: "Porter le bon Dieu au malade" (carry the good God to the sick). Till then, when in Charlesbourg or St. Charles, I, with the rest of the Roman Catholic priests, always made use of pomp and exterior marks of extreme respect for the Almighty God I was carrying in my hands to the dying.

I had never carried the good God without being accompanied by several people, walking or riding on horseback. I then wore a white surplice over my long black robe to strike the people with awe. There was also a man ringing a bell before me, all along the way, to announce to the people that the great God, who had not only created them, but had made Himself man to save them, by dying on Calvary, was passing by; that they had to fall on their knees in their houses, or along the public roads, or in the fields, and prostrate themselves and adore Him. But could I do that in Quebec, where so many miserable heretics were more disposed to laugh at my God than to adore Him?

In my zeal and sincere faith, I was, however, determined to dare the heretics of the whole world, and to expose myself to their insults, rather than give up the exterior marks of supreme respect and adoration which were due to my God everywhere; and twice I carried Him to the hospital with the usual solemnity.

In vain, my curate tried to persuade me to change my mind. I closed my ears to his arguments. He then kindly invited me to go with him to the bishop's palace, in order to confer with him on that grave subject. How can I express my dismay when the bishop told me, with a levity which I had not yet observed in him, "that on account of the Protestants whom we had to

meet everywhere, it was better to make our 'God' travel *incognito* in the streets of Quebec." He added in a high and jocose tone: "Put Him in your vest pocket, as do the rest of the city priests. Carry Him to your dying patients without any scruples. Never aim at being a reformer and doing better than your venerable brethren in the priesthood. We must not forget that we are a conquered people. If we were masters we could carry Him to the dying with the public honours we used to give Him before the conquest; but the Protestants are the stronger. Our governor is a Protestant, as well as our Queen. The garrison, which is inside the walls of their impregnable citadel, is composed chiefly of Protestants. According to the laws of our holy Church, we have the right to punish, even by death, the miserable people who turn into ridicule the mysteries of our holy religion. But though we have that right, we are not strong enough to enforce it. We must then bear the yoke of silence. After all, it is our God Himself, who in His inscrutable judgment, has deprived us of the power of honouring Him as He deserves; and to tell you my whole mind as plainly as possible, it is not our fault, but His own doing, so to speak, if we are forced to make Him travel *incognito* through our streets. It is one of the sad results of the victory which the God of battles gave to the heretics over us on the plains of Abraham. If, in His good providence, we could break our fetters, and become free to pass again the laws which regulated Canada before the conquest, to prevent the heretics from settling among us, then we would carry Him as we used to do in those happy days."

"But," said I, "when I walk in the streets with my good God in my vest pocket, what will I do if I meet any friend who wants to shake hands and have a joke with me?"

The bishop laughed and answered: "Tell your friend you are in a hurry, and go your way as quickly as possible; but if there is no help, have your talk and your joke with him, without any scruple of conscience. The important point in this delicate matter is that the people should not know we are carrying our God through the streets *incognito*; for this knowledge would surely shake and weaken their faith. The common people are, more than we think, kept in our holy Church by the impressing ceremonies of our processions and public marks of respect we give to Jesus Christ, when we carry Him to the sick; for the people are more easily persuaded by what they see with their eyes and touch with their hands, than by what they hear with their ears."

I submitted to the order of my ecclesiastical superior; but I would not be honest, were I not to confess that I lost much of my spiritual joy for some time in the administration of the viaticum. I continued to believe as sincerely as I could, but the laughing words and light tone of my bishop, had fallen upon my soul as an icy cloud. The jocose way in which he had spoken of what I had been taught to consider as the most awful and adorable mystery of the Church, left the impression

on my mind that he did not believe one iota of the dogma of transubstantiation.

It took several years before I could accustom myself to carry my God in my vest pocket as the other priests did, without any more ceremony than with a piece of tobacco. So long as I was walking alone I felt happy. I could then silently converse with my Saviour, and give Him all the expression of my love and adoration. It was my custom then to repeat the 103rd or 50th Psalm of David, or the *Te Deum*, or some other beautiful hymn, which I knew by heart. But no words can express my sadness when, as was very often the case, I met some friends forcing me to shake hands with them, and began one of those idle and commonplace talks, so common everywhere.

How, then, I earnestly cursed the day when my country had fallen under the yoke of Protestants, whose presence in Quebec prevented me from following the dictates of my conscience! How many times did I pray my wafer god, whom I was personally pressing on my heart, to grant us an opportunity to break those fetters, and destroy forever the power of Protestant England over us! Then we should be free again to give our Saviour all the public honours which were due to His Majesty. Then we should put in force the laws by which no heretic had any right to settle and live in Canada.

Not long after that conversation with the bishop, I found myself in a circumstance which added much to my trouble and confusion of conscience on that matter.

There was then, in Quebec, a merchant who had honourably raised himself from a state of poverty to the first rank among the wealthy merchants of Canada. Though a few years after he was ruined by a series of most terrible disasters, his name is still honoured in Canada, as one of the most industrious and honest merchants of our young country. His name was James Buteau. He had built a magnificent house and furnished it in a princely style.

In order to celebrate his "house warming" in a becoming style, he invited a hundred guests from the *élite* of the city, among whom were all the priests of the parishes. But in order not to frighten their prudery, though that party was to be more of the nature of a ball than anything else, Mr. Buteau had given it the modest name of an Oyster Soirée.

Just as the curate Tetu, with his cheerful vicars, was starting, a messenger met us at the door, to say that Mr. Parent, the youngest vicar, had been called to carry the "Good God" to a dying woman.

Mr. Parent was born, and had passed his whole life in Quebec, in whose seminary he had gone through a complete and brilliant course of study. I think there was scarcely a funny song in the French language which he could not sing. His hair was constantly perfumed with the richest pomade, and the most precious eau de Cologne surrounded him with an atmosphere of the sweetest odours. No wonder that he was the confessor "*à la mode*" of the young ladies of Quebec.

The unexpected announcement of a call to the death-bed of one of his poorest penitents was not quite the most desirable thing for our friend at such an hour. But he knew too well his duty to grumble.

By chance, the sick house was on the way and not far from Mr. Buteau's splendid mansion. He left us to run to the altar and take the "Good God" with him. We started for the soirée, but sympathising with our dear Mr. Parent, who would lose the most interesting part, for the administration of the viaticum. The extreme unction, with the giving of indulgences, *in articulo mortis*, and the exhortations to the dying, and the people gathered from the neighbourhood to witness those solemn rites, could not take much less than an hour of his time. But, to my great surprise, we had not yet been ten minutes in the magnificent parlour of our host, when I saw Mr. Parent, who, like a new-born butterfly flying from flower to flower, was running from lady to lady, joking, laughing, surpassing himself with his inimitable, lovely and refined manners. I said to myself, how is it possible that he has so quickly got rid of his unpalatable task with his dying penitent? and I wanted an opportunity of being alone with him, to satisfy my curiosity on that point. But it was pretty late in the evening when I found a chance to say to him: "We all feared lest your dying patient might deprive us of the pleasure of your company the greater part of the soirée!"

"Oh! Oh!" answered he, with a hearty laugh, "that intelligent woman had the good common sense to die just two minutes before I entered her house. I suppose that her guardian angel, knowing all about this incomparable party, had dispatched the good soul to heaven a little sooner than she expected, in my behalf." I could not but smile at his answer, which was given in a manner to make a stone laugh. "But," said I, "what have you done with the 'good God' you had carried with you?"

"Ah! ah! the 'good God,'" he replied, in a jocose and subdued tone. "Well! well! the 'good God'! He stands very still in my vest pocket. And if He enjoys this princely festivity as well as we all do, He will surely thank me for having brought Him here, even *en survenant*. But do not say a word of His presence here; it would spoil everything."

But I must confess that, though I had laughed very heartily at first, his last utterance pained me so much that, from that moment to the end of the soirée, I felt very uneasy and confounded. A mysterious voice was whispering in my ear: "Are you not a fool to believe that you can make a god with a wafer; and that Jesus Christ, your Saviour and your God, can be kept a prisoner, in spite of Himself, in the vest pocket of a man? Do you not see that your friend Parent, who has much more brains and intelligence than you, does not believe a word of that dogma of transubstantiation?"

With a superhuman effort I tried, and succeeded partly, to stifle that voice.

CHAPTER XXVI.

My First Lesson on Temperance.

GOD controls the greatest as well as the smallest of the events of this world. Our business during the few days of our pilgrimage, then, is to know His will and do it. Our happiness here, as in heaven, rests on this foundation, just as the success and failures of our lives come entirely from the practical knowledge or ignorance of this simplest and sublimest truth. I dare say there is not a single fact of my long and eventful life which has not taught me that there is a special Providence in our lives. Particularly was this apparent in the casting of the lots by which I became the first chaplain of the Quebec Marine Hospital. I was sure that God had directed this for my good and His own glory ; and I was right. In the beginning of November, 1834, a slight indisposition having kept me a few days at home, Mr. Glackmayer, the superintendent of the hospital, came to tell me that there was an unusually large number of sick, left by the Fall fleets, in danger of death, who were night and day calling for me. He added, in a secret way, that there were several cases of small-pox of the worst type ; that several had already died and many were dying from the terrible cholera morbus, which was still raging among the sailors.

This sad news came to me as an order from heaven to run to the rescue of my dear sick seamen. I left my room, despite my physician, and went to the hospital. The first man I met was Dr. Douglas, who was waiting for me at Mr. C. Glackmayer's room. He confirmed what I had known before of the number of the sick, and added that the prevailing diseases were of the most dangerous kind.

Dr. Douglas, who was one of the founders and governors of the hospital, had the well-merited reputation of being one of the ablest surgeons of Quebec. Though a staunch Protestant by birth and profession, he honoured me with his confidence and friendship from the first day we met. I may say I have never known a nobler heart, a larger mind, and a truer philanthropist.

After thanking him for the useful thoughts and intelligence he had given me, I requested Mr. Glackmayer to give me a glass of brandy, which I immediately swallowed.

"What are you doing there ?" said Dr. Douglas.

"You see," I answered ; "I have drank a glass of excellent brandy."

"But please tell me why you drank that brandy."

"Because it is a good preservative against the pestilential atmosphere I will breathe all day," I replied. "I will have to hear the confessions of all those people dying from small-pox or cholera, and breathe the putrid air which surrounds their pillows. Does not common sense warn me to take some precaution against the contagion ?"

"Is it possible," rejoined he, "that a man for whom I have

such a sincere esteem is so ignorant of the deadly workings of alcohol in the human frame? What you have just drank is nothing but poison; and, far from protecting yourself against the danger, you are now much more exposed to it than before you drank that beverage."

"You poor Protestants," I answered in a jocose way, "are a band of fanatics, with your extreme doctrine on temperance; you will never convert me to your views on that subject. Is it for the use of the dogs that God has created wine and brandy? No; it is for the use of men who drink them with moderation and intelligence."

"My dear Mr. Chiniquy, you are joking; but I am in earnest when I tell you that you have poisoned yourself with the glass of brandy," replied Dr. Douglas.

"If good wine and brandy were poisons," I answered, "you would be long ago the only physician in Quebec, for you are the only one of the medical body whom I know to be an abstainer. But, though I am much pleased with your conversation, excuse me if I leave you to visit my dear sick sailors, whose cries for spiritual help ring in my ears."

"One word more," said Dr. Douglas, "and I have done. To-morrow morning we will make the autopsy of a sailor who has just died suddenly here. Have you any objection to come and see with your eyes, in the body of that man, what your glass of brandy has done to your own body?"

"No, sir; I have no objection to see that," I replied. I have been anxious for a long time to make a special study of anatomy. It will be my first lesson; I cannot get it from a better master." I then shook hands with him and went to my patients, with whom I passed the remainder of the day and the greater part of the night. Fifty of them wanted to make general confessions of all the sins of their whole lives; and I had to give the last sacraments to twenty-five who were dying from small-pox or cholera morbus. The next morning I was, at the appointed hour, by the corpse of the dead man, when Dr. Douglas kindly gave me a very powerful microscope that I might more thoroughly follow the ravages of alcohol in every part of the human body.

"I have not the least doubt," said he, "that this man has been killed by a glass of rum, which he drank one hour before he fell dead. That rum has caused the rupture of the aorta" (the big vessel which carries the blood from the heart).

While talking thus, the knife was doing its work so quickly that the horrible spectacle of the broken artery was before our eyes, almost as the last word fell from his lips.

"Look here," said the doctor, "all along the artery, and you will see thousands, perhaps millions of reddish spots, which are as many holes perforated through it by alcohol. Just as the musk rat of the Mississippi river, almost every spring, dig little holes through the dams which keep that powerful river within its natural limits, and cause the waters to break through the little holes, and thus carry desolation and death along its

shores, so alcohol every day causes the sudden death of thousands of victims by perforating the veins and opening small issues through which the blood rushes out of its natural limits. It is not only this big vein which alcohol perforates ; it does the same deadly work in the veins and lungs and the whole body. Look at the lungs with attention, and count, if you can, the thousands and thousands of reddish, dark, and yellow spots, and little ulcers with which they are covered. Every one of them is the work of alcohol, which has torn and cut the veins and caused the blood to go out of its canals, to carry corruption and death all over these marvellous organs. Alcohol is one of the most dangerous poisons—I daresay it is the most dangerous. It has killed more men than all the other poisons together. Alcohol cannot be changed nor assimilated to any part or tissue of our body, it cannot go to any part of the human frame without bringing disorder and death to it. For it cannot in any possible way unite with any part of our body. The water we drink, the wholesome food and bread we eat, by the laws and will of God are transformed into the different parts of the body, to which they are sent through the millions of small canals which take them from the stomach to every part of our frame. When the water has been drunk, or the bread we have eaten is, for instance, sent to the lungs, to the brain, the nerves, the muscles, the bones—wherever it goes it receives, if I can so speak, letters of citizenship ; it is allowed to remain there in peace and work for the public good. But it is not so with alcohol. The very moment it enters the stomach it more or less brings disorder, ruin and death, according to the quantity taken. The stomach refuses to take it, and makes a supreme effort to violently throw it out, either through the mouth, or by indignantly pushing it to the brain or into the numberless tubes by which it discharges its contents to the surface through all the tissues. But will alcohol be welcome in any of these tubes and marvellous canals, or in any part or tissue of the body it will visit on its passage to the surface ? No ! Look here with your microscope, and you will see with your own eyes that everywhere alcohol has gone in the body there has been a hand-to-hand struggle and a bloody battle fought to get rid of it. Yes ! Every place where King Alcohol has put his foot has been turned into a battle-field spread, with ruin and death, in order to ignominiously turn it out. By a most extraordinary working of nature—or rather by the order of God—every vein and artery through which alcohol has to pass suddenly contracts, as if to prevent its passage or choke it as a deadly foe. Every vein and artery has evidently heard the voice of God : ' Wine is a mocker ; it bites like a serpent and stings as an adder ! ' Every nerve and muscle which alcohol touched trembled and shook as if in the presence of an implacable and unconquerable enemy. Yes, at the presence of alcohol every nerve and muscle loses its strength, just as the bravest man in the presence of a horrible monster or demon, suddenly loses his natural strength, and

shakes from head to foot."

I cannot repeat all I heard that day from the lips of Dr. Douglas, and what I saw with my own eyes of the horrible workings of alcohol through every part of that body. It would be too long. Suffice to say that I was struck with horror at my own folly, and at the folly of so many people who make use of intoxicating drinks.

What I learned that day was like the opening of a mysterious door, which allowed me to see the untold marvels of a new and most magnificent world. But though I was terror-stricken with the ravages of strong drink in that dead man, I was not yet convinced of the necessity of being a total abstainer from wine and beer, and a little brandy now and then, as a social habit. I did not like to expose myself to ridicule by the sacrifice of habits which seemed then, more than now, to be among the sweetest and most common links of society. But I determined to lose no opportunity of continuing the study of the working of alcohol in the human body. At the same time I resolved to avail myself of every opportunity of making a complete study of anatomy under Dr. Douglas.

The heart of a man, which is only six inches long by four inches wide, beats seventy times a minute, 4,200 in one hour, 100,300 in a day, 36,792,000 in a year. It ejects two ounces and a half of blood out of itself every time it beats, which makes 1175 ounces every minute, 656 pounds every hour, seven tons and three quarters of blood which goes out of the heart every day! The whole blood of a man runs through his heart in three minutes.

The skin is composed of three parts placed over each other, whose thickness varies from a quarter to an eighth of a line. Each square inch contains 3,500 pores through which the sweat goes out. Every one of them is a pipe a quarter of an inch long. All those small pipes united together would form a canal 201,166 feet long—equal to forty miles, or nearly thirteen leagues!

The weight of the blood in a common man is between thirty and forty pounds. That blood runs through the body in 101 seconds. Eleven thousand pints of blood pass through the lungs in twenty-four hours.

There are 246 bones in the human body; 63 of them are in the head, 24 in the sides, 16 in the wrist, 14 in the joints, and 108 in the hands and feet.

The heart of a man who drinks nothing but pure water beats about 100,300 a day, but will beat from 25,000 to 30,000 times more if he drinks alcoholic drinks. Those who have not learned anatomy know little of the infinite power, wisdom, love and mercy of God. No book except the Bible, and no science except the science of astronomy, is like the body of man *to tell us what our God is, and what we are*. The body of man is a book written by the hand of God, to speak to us of Him as no man can speak. After studying the marvellous working of the

heart, the lungs, the eyes, and the brain of man, I could not speak ; I remained mute, unable to say a single word to tell my admiration and awe. I should have liked to speak of those things to the priests with whom I lived, but I saw at first they could not understand me ; they thought I was exaggerating. How many times, when alone with God in my little closet, when thinking of those marvels, I fell on my knees and said : "Thou art great, O my God ! The works of Thy hands are above the works of man ! But the works of Thy love and mercy are above all Thy other works ! "

During the four years I was chaplain of the Marine Hospital, more than one hundred corpses were opened before me, and almost as many outside the hospital. For when, by the order of the jury and the coroner, an autopsy was to be made, I seldom failed to attend. In that way I have had a providential opportunity of acquiring the knowledge of one of the most useful and admirable sciences as no priest or minister probably ever had. These bodies, opened before me, were books written by the hand of God Himself, and they spoke to me as no man could speak. By the mercy of God, to that study is due the irresistible power of my humble efforts in persuading my countrymen to give up the use of intoxicating drinks. But here is the time to tell how my merciful God forced me, His unprofitable and rebellious servant, almost in spite of myself, to give up the use of intoxicating drinks.

Among my penitents there was a young lady belonging to one of the most respectable families of Quebec. She had a child, a girl, almost a year old, who was a real beauty. Nothing this side of heaven could surpass the charms of that earthly angel. Of course her young mother idolized her ; she could hardly consent to be without her sweet angel, even to go to church. She carried her everywhere, to kiss her at every moment and press her to her heart. Unfortunately that lady, as it was then and is still now too often the case, even among the most refined, had learned in her father's house, and by the example of her own mother, to drink wine at table, and when receiving the visits of her friends or when visiting them herself. Little by little she began to drink, when alone, a few drops of wine ; at first by the advice of her physician, but soon only to satisfy the craving appetite, which grew stronger day by day. I was the only one, excepting her husband, who knew this fact. He was my intimate friend, and several times with tears trickling down his cheeks, he had requested me in the name of God, to persuade her to abstain from drinking. That young man was so happy with his accomplished wife and his incomparably beautiful child ! He was rich, had a high position in the world, numberless friends, and a palace for his home ! Every time I had spoken to that young lady, either when alone or in the presence of her husband, she had shed tears of regret ; she had promised to reform, and take only the few glasses prescribed by her doctor. But, alas ! that fatal prescription of the doctor was like oil poured on

burning coals; it was kindling a fire which nothing could quench. One day, which I will never forget, a messenger came in haste and said: "Mr. A. wants you to come to his home immediately. A terrible misfortune has just happened—his beautiful child has just been killed. His wife is half crazy; he fears lest she will kill herself."

I leaped into the elegant carriage drawn by two fine horses, and in a few minutes I was in the presence of the most distressing spectacle I ever saw. The young lady, tearing her robes into fragments, tearing her hair with her hands, and cutting her face with the nails of her fingers, was crying, "Oh! for God's sake give me a knife that I may cut my throat! I have killed my child! My darling is dead! I am the murderess of my own dear Lucy! My hands are reddened with her blood. Oh! may I die with her!"

I was thunderstruck, and at first remained mute and motionless. The young husband, with two other gentlemen, Dr. Blanchet and Coroner Panet, were trying to hold the hands of the unfortunate wife. He did not dare to speak. At last the young wife, casting her eyes on me, said: "Oh, dear Father Chiniquy, for God's sake give me a knife that I may cut my throat! When drunk, I took my precious darling in my arms to kiss her; but I fell—her head struck the sharp corner of the stove. Her brain and blood are there spread on the floor! My child! my own child is dead! I have killed her! Cursed liquor! Cursed wine! My child is dead! I am damned! Cursed drink!"

I could not speak, but I could weep and cry. I wept, and mingled my tears with those of that unfortunate mother. Then, with an expression of desolation which pierced my soul as with a sword, she said: "Go and see." I went to the next room, and there I saw that once beautiful child, dead, her face covered with her blood and brains! There was a large gap made in the right temple. The drunken mother, by falling with her child in her arms, had caused the head to strike with such terrible force on the stove that it upset on the floor. The burning coals were spread on every side, and the house had been nearly set on fire. But that very blow, with the awful death of her child, had suddenly brought her to her senses, and put an end to her intoxication. At a glance she saw the whole extent of her misfortune. Her first thought had been to run to the sideboard, seize a large sharp knife, and cut her own throat. Providentially, her husband was on the spot. With great difficulty, and after a terrible struggle, he took the knife out of her hands and threw it into the street through the window. It was then about five o'clock in the afternoon. After an hour passed in indescribable agony of mind and heart, I attempted to leave and go back to the parsonage. But my unfortunate young friend requested me, in the name of God, to spend the night with him. "You are the only one," he said, "who can help us this awful night. My misfortune is great enough, without destroying our good name by spreading it

in public. I want to keep it as secret as possible. With our physician and coroner, you are the only man on earth whom I trust to help me. Please pass the night with us."

I remained, but tried in vain to calm the unfortunate mother. She was constantly breaking our hearts with her lamentations—her convulsive efforts to take her own life. Every minute she was crying, "My child! my darling Lucy! Just when the little arms were so gently caressing me, and thy angelic kisses were so sweet on my lips, I have slaughtered thee! When thou wert pressing me on thy loving heart and kissing me, I, thy drunken mother, gave thee thy death-blow! My hands are reddened with thy blood! My breast is covered with thy brains! Oh! for God's sake, my dear Father Chiniquy, give me a knife that I may mingle my blood with the blood of my child. Oh, that I could be buried in the same grave with her!"

In vain I tried to speak to her of the mercy of God towards sinners; she would not listen to anything I could say; she was absolutely deaf to my voice. At about ten o'clock she had a most terrible fit of anguish and terror. Though we were four men to keep her quiet, she was stronger than we all. She was as strong as a giant. She slipped from our hands and ran to the room where the dead child was lying in her cradle. Grasping the cold body in her hands, she tore the bands of white linen which had been put round the head to cover the horrible wound, and with cries of desolation she pressed her lips, her cheeks, her very eyes on the horrible gap from which the brain and blood were oozing, as if wanting to heal it and recall the poor dear one to life. At about eleven o'clock, when on her knees, clasping her child to her bosom, she lifted her eyes towards me, and said:

"Dear Father Chiniquy, why is it that I have not followed your charitable advice when, still more with your tears than with words, you tried so often to persuade me to give up the use of those cursed intoxicating wines? How many times you have given me the very words which come from heaven: 'Wine is a mocker; it bites as a serpent, and stings as an adder'! How many times, in the name of my dear child, in the name of my dear husband, in the name of God, you have asked me to give up the use of those cursed drinks! But listen now to my prayer. Go all over Canada; tell all the fathers never to put intoxicating drink before the eyes of their children. It was at my father's table that I first learned to drink that wine which I will curse during all eternity! Tell all the mothers never to taste these abominable drinks. It was my mother who first taught me to drink that wine which I will curse as long as God is.

"Take the blood of my child, and go, redden with it the top of the doors of every house in Canada, and say to all those who dwell in those houses that that blood was shed by the hand of a murderess mother when drunk. With that blood write on the walls of every house in Canada that 'wine is a mocker.' I

have cursed that wine which has made me so wretchedly miserable and guilty."

She then stopped, as if to breathe a little for a few minutes. She added: "In the name of God, tell me, can my child forgive me her death? Can she ask God to look upon me with mercy? Can she cause the blessed Virgin Mary to pray for me and obtain my pardon?"

But before I could answer, she horrified us by the cries, "I am lost! When drunk I killed my child! Cursed wine!"

And she fell a corpse on the floor. Torrents of blood were flowing from her mouth on her dead child, which she was pressing to her bosom even after her death!

That terrible drama was never revealed to the people of Quebec. The coroner's verdict was, that the child's death was accidental, and that the distressed mother died from a broken heart six hours after.

Two days later the unfortunate mother was buried with the body of her child clasped in her arms. Many tears were shed on that tomb, and this dear little child's guardian angel must have written with its blood on that tomb: "Wine is a mocker; look not at it. It biteth like a serpent, and stings like an adder." However, what I had just seen and heard could not be buried and forgotten in the grave. After such a terrible storm I was in need of solitude and rest, but above everything I was in need of praying.

In the middle of that memorable night, when the darkness was most profound, and the stillness fearful, was I awake, was I sleeping? I do not know. But I saw the calm, beautiful, and cherished form of my dear mother standing by me, holding by the hand the late murderess, still covered with the blood of her child. Yes! my beloved mother was there standing before me; and she said, with power and authority which engraved every one of her words on my soul, as if written with letters of tears, blood and fire: "Go all over Canada; tell every father of a family never to put any intoxicating drink before his children. Tell all the mothers never to take a drop of those cursed wines and drinks. Tell the whole people of Canada never to touch or look at the poisoned cup, filled with those cursed intoxicating drinks."

When the sound of that voice, so sweet and powerful, was hushed, and my soul had ceased seeing that strange vision of the night, I remained some time exceedingly agitated and troubled. I said to myself, "Is it possible that the terrible things I have seen and heard these last few days will destroy my mind, and send me to the lunatic asylum?"

I had hardly been able to take any sleep or food for the last three days and nights, and I seriously feared lest the weakness of my body would cause me to lose my reason. I then threw myself on my knees to weep and pray. This did me good. I soon felt myself stronger and calmer.

Raising again my mind to God, I said: "O my God, let me know Thy holy will, and grant me the grace to do it. Do the

voices I have just heard come from Thee ? Hast Thou really sent one of the angels of Thy mercy, under the form of my beloved mother ? or is all this nothing but the vain dreams of my distressed mind ?

"Is it Thy will O my God, that I should go and tell my country what Thou hast so providentially taught me of the horrible and unsuspected injuries which wine and strong drink cause to the bodies as well as the souls of men ? Or is it Thy will that I should conceal from the eyes of the world the wonderful things Thou hast made known to me, and that I might bury them with me in my grave ?"

As quick as lightning the answer was suggested to me: "What I have taught thee in secret, go and tell it on the house-tops!" Overwhelmed with an unspeakable emotion, and my heart filled with a power which was not mine, I raised my hands towards heaven and said to my God: "For my dear Saviour's sake, and for the good of my country, O my God, I promise that I will never make use of intoxicating drinks; I will, moreover, do all in my power to persuade the other priests and the people to make the same sacrifice!"

Fifty years have passed since I took that pledge, and, thanks be to God, I have kept it.

For the next two years I was the only priest in Canada who abstained from the use of wine and other intoxicating drinks; and God only knows what I had to suffer all that time—what sneers, and rebukes and insults of every kind I had silently to bear! How many times the epithets of *fanatic*, *hypocrite*, *reformer*, *half-heretic*, have been whispered into my ear, not only by the priests, but also by the bishops.

But I was sure that my God knew the motives of my actions, and by His grace I remained calm and patient. In His infinite mercy He has looked down upon His unprofitable servant and has taken his part. He had Himself chosen the day when my humiliations were to be turned into great joy. The day came when I saw those same priests and bishops, at the head of their people, receiving the pledge and blessing of temperance from my hands. Those very bishops who had unanimously, at first, condemned me, soon invited the first citizens of their cities to present me with a golden medal, as a token of their esteem, after giving me officially the title of "Apostle of Temperance of Canada." The Governor and the two Chambers of Parliament voted me public thanks in 1851, and presented me with £500 as a public testimony of their kind feeling for what had been done in the cause of temperance. It was the will of my God, that I should see, with my own eyes, my dear Canada taking the pledge of temperance and giving up the use of intoxicating drinks. How many tears were dried in those days! Thousands and thousands of broken hearts were consoled and filled with joy. Happiness and abundance reigned in may once desolate homes, and the name of our merciful God was blessed everywhere in my beloved country. Surely this was not the work of poor Chiniquy!

CHAPTER XXVII.

Conversion of Protestants to the Church of Rome.

“OUT of the Church of Rome there is no salvation,” is one of the doctrines which the priests of Rome have to believe and teach to the people. That dogma, once accepted, caused me to devote all my energies to the conversion of Protestants. To prevent one of these immortal and precious souls from going to hell seemed to me more important and glorious than the conquest of a kingdom. In view of showing them their errors, I filled my library with the best controversial books which could be got in Quebec, and I studied the Holy Scriptures with the utmost attention. In the Marine Hospital, as well as in my intercourse with the people of the city, I had several occasions of meeting Protestants and talking to them ; but I found that, with few exceptions, they avoided speaking with me on religion. This distressed me. Having been told one day that the Rev. Anthony Parent, Superior of the Seminary of Quebec, had converted several hundred Protestants during his long ministry, I went to ask him if this were true. For answer he showed me the list of his converts, which numbered more than two hundred, among whom were some of the most respectable English and Scotch families of the city. I looked upon that list with amazement ; and from that day I considered him the most blessed priest in Canada. He was a perfect gentleman in his manners, and was considered our best champion on all points of controversy with Protestants. He could have been classed also amongst the handsomest men in his time, had he not been so fat. But, while the high classes called him by the respectable name of “ Mr. Superior of the Seminary,” the common people used to name him Père Cocassier (“ Cock-fighting Father”), on account of his long cherished habit of having the bravest and strongest fighting cocks of the country. In vain had the Rev. Mr. Renvoyse, curate of the “ Good St. Anne,” the greatest miracle-working saint of Canada, expended fabulous sums of money in ransacking the whole country to get a cock who would take away the palm of victory from the hands of the Superior of the Seminary of Quebec. He had almost invariably failed ; with very few exceptions his cocks had fallen bruised, bleeding and dead on the many battlefields chosen by those two priests. However, I felt happy in acknowledging that, since the terrible epidemic of cholera, that cruel and ignominious “ *passe temps*” has been entirely given up by the Roman Catholic clergy of this country. Playing cards and checkers is now the most usual way the majority of curates and vicars have recourse to spend their many idle hours, both of the week and Sundays.

After reading over and over again that long list of converts I said to Mr. Parent : “ Please tell me how you have been able to persuade these Protestant converts to consent to speak with

you on the errors of their religion. Many times I have tried to show the Protestants whom I met that they would be lost if they do not submit to our holy Church, but, with few exceptions, they laughed at me as politely as possible, and turned the conversation to other matters. You must have some secret way of attracting their attention and winning their confidence. Would you not be kind enough to give me that secret, that I may be able also to prevent some of those precious souls from perishing?"

"You are right when you think that I have a secret to open the doors of the Protestants, and conquer and tame their haughty minds," answered Mr. Parent. "But that secret is of such a delicate nature, that I have never revealed it to anybody except my confessor. Nevertheless, I see that you are so in earnest for the conversion of Protestants, and I have such a confidence in your discretion and honour, that for the sake of our holy Church I consent to give you my secret; only you must promise that you will never reveal it during my lifetime to anybody—and even after my death you will not mention it, except when you are sure it is for the greatest glory of God. You know that I was the most intimate friend your father ever had; I had no secret from him, and he had none from me. But God knows that the friendly feelings and the confidence I had in him are now bestowed upon you, his worthy son. If you had not in my heart and esteem the same position your father occupied, I would not trust you with my secret."

He then continued: "The majority of Protestants in Quebec have Irish Roman Catholic servant girls; these, particularly before the last few years, used to come to confess to me, as I was almost the only priest who spoke English. The first thing I used to ask them, when they were confessing, was if their masters and mistresses were truly devoted and pious Protestants, or if they were indifferent and cold in performing their duties. The second thing I wanted to know was if they were on good terms with their ministers; whether or not they were visited by them. From the answer of the girls I knew both the moral and the immoral, the religious or irreligious habits of their masters as perfectly as if I had been an inmate of their households. It is thus I learned that many Protestants have no more religion and faith than our dogs. They awake in the morning and go to bed at night without praying to God any more than the horse in their stables. Many of them go to church on the Sabbath day more to laugh at their ministers and criticise their sermons than for anything else. A part of the week is passed in turning them into ridicule; nay, through the confessions of these honest girls I learned that many Protestants liked the fine ceremonies of our Church; that they often favourably contrasted them with the cold performances of their own, and expressed their views in glowing terms about the superiority of our educational institutions, nunneries, etc., over their own high schools or colleges. Besides, you know that a great number of our most respectable and wealthy Pro-

testants trust their daughters to our good nuns for their education. I took notes of all these things, and formed my plans of battle against Protestantism, as a general who knows his ground and the weak points of his adversaries, and I fought as a man who is sure of easy victory. The glorious result you have under your eyes is the proof that I was correct in my plans. My first step with the Protestants whom I knew to be without any religion, or even already well disposed towards us, was to go to them with sometimes £5, or even £25, which I presented to them as being theirs. They, at first, looked at me with amazement, as a being coming from a superior world. The following conversation then almost invariably took place between them and me:—

“Are you positive, sir, that this money is mine?”

“Yes, sir,” I answered, “I am certain this money is yours.”

“But,” they replied, “please tell me how you know that it belongs to me? It is the first time I have the honour of talking with you, and we are perfect strangers to each other.”

“I answered: ‘I cannot say, sir, how I know that this money is yours except by telling you that the person who deposited it in my hands for you has given me your name and your address so correctly that there is no possibility of any mistake.’

“But can I not know the name of the one who has put that money into your hands for me?” replied the Protestant.

“No, sir; the secret of confession is inviolable,” I replied. “We have no example that it has ever been broken; and I, with every priest of our Church, would prefer to die rather than betray our penitents and reveal their confession. We cannot even act from what we have learned through their confession, except at their own request.”

“But this auricular confession must then be a most admirable thing,” added the Protestant; “I had no idea of it before this day.”

“Yes, sir, auricular confession is a most admirable thing,” I used to reply, “because it is a divine institution. But, sir, please excuse me; my ministry calls me to another place. I must take leave of you, to go where my duty calls me.”

“I am very sorry that you have to go so quickly,” generally answered the Protestant. “Can I have another visit from you? Please do me the honour of coming again. I would be so happy to present you to my wife; and I know she would be happy also, and much honoured to make your acquaintance.”

“Yes, sir, I accept with gratitude your invitation. I will feel much pleased and honoured to make the acquaintance of the family of a gentleman whose praises are in the mouth of every one, and whose industry and honesty are an honour to our city. If you allow me, next week, at the same hour, I will have the honour of presenting my respectful homage to your lady.”

“The very next day all the papers reported that Mr. So-and-So had received £5 or £10, or even £25, as a restitution, through auricular confession, and even the staunch Protestant editors of those papers could not find words sufficiently eloquent

to praise me and our sacrament of penance.'

"Three or four days later I was sure that the faithful servant girls were in the confessional box, glowing with joy to tell me that now their masters and mistresses could not speak of anything else than the amiability and honesty of the priests of Rome. They raised them a thousand miles over the heads of their own ministers. From those pious girls I invariably learned that they had not been visited by a single friend without making the eulogium of auricular confession, and even sometimes expressing the regret that the reformers had swept away such a useful institution.

"Now, my dear young friend, you see how, by the blessing of God, the little sacrifice of a few pounds brought down and destroyed all the prejudices of those poor heretics against auricular confession and our holy Church in general. You understand how the doors were opened to me, and how their hearts and intelligences were like fields prepared to receive the good seed. At the appointed hour I never failed paying the requested visit, and I was invariably received like a Messiah. Not only the gentlemen, but the ladies overwhelmed me with marks of the most sincere gratitude and respect; even the dear little children petted me, and threw their arms around my neck to give me their sweetly angelic kisses. The only topic on which we would speak, of course, was the great good done by auricular confession. I easily showed them how it works as a check to all the evil passions of the heart! how it is admirably adapted to all the wants of the poor sinners, who find a friend, a counsellor, a guide, a father, a real saviour in their confessor.

"We had not talked half an hour in that way, when it was generally evident to me that they were more than half way out of their Protestant errors. I very seldom left those houses without being sure of a new, glorious victory for our holy religion over its enemies. It is very seldom that I do not succeed in bringing that family to our holy Church before one or two years; and if I fail in gaining the father or mother, I am nearly sure to persuade them to send their daughters to our good nuns and their boys to our colleges, where they sooner or later become our most devoted Catholics. So you see that the few dollars I spend every year for that holy cause are the best investment ever made."

I thanked him for these interesting details. But I told him: "Though I cannot but admire your perfect skill and shrewdness in breaking the barriers which prevent Protestants from understanding the divine institution of auricular confession, will you allow me to ask you if you do not fear to be guilty of an imposture and a gross imposition in the way you make them believe that the money you hand them has come to you through auricular confession?"

"I have not the least fear of that," promptly answered the old priest, "for the good reason that, if you had paid attention to what I have told you, you must acknowledge that I have not

said positively that the money was coming from auricular confession. If those Protestants have been deceived, it is only due to their own want of a more perfect attention to what I said. I know that there were things that I kept in my mind which would have made them understand the matter in a very different way if I had said them. But Liguori and all our theologians, among the most approved of our holy Church, tell us that these reservations of the mind ('*mentis reservationes*') are allowed, when they are for the good of souls and the glory of God."

"Yes," answered I, "I know that such is the doctrine of Ligouri, and it is approved by the popes. I must confess that this seems to me entirely opposed to what we read in the sublime Gospel. The simple and sublime 'Yea, yea,' and 'Nay, nay,' of our Saviour seems to me in contradiction with the art of deceiving, even when not saying absolute and direct falsehoods; and if I submit myself to those doctrines, it is always with a secret protest in my inmost soul."

In an angry manner, Mr. Parent replied: "Now, my dear young friend, I understand the truth of what the Rev. Messrs. Perras and Bedard told me lately about you. Though these remarkable priests are full of esteem for you, they see a dark cloud on your horizon; they say that you spend too much time in reading the Bible, and not enough in studying the doctrines and holy traditions of the Church. You are too much inclined also to interpret the Word of God according to your own fallible intelligence, instead of going to the Church *alone* for that interpretation. That is the dangerous rock on which Luther and Calvin were wrecked. Take my advice. Do not try to be wiser than the Church. Obey her voice when she speaks to you through her holy theologians. This is your only safeguard. The bishop would suspend you at once were he aware of your want of faith in the Church."

These last words were said with such emphasis, that they seemed more like a sentence of condemnation from the lips of an irritated judge than anything else. I felt that I had again seriously compromised myself in his mind; and the only way of preventing him from denouncing me to the bishop as a heretic and a Protestant was to make an apology, and withdraw from the dangerous ground on which I had again so imprudently put myself. He accepted my explanation, but I saw that he bitterly regretted having trusted me with his secret. I withdrew from his presence, much humiliated by my want of prudence and wisdom. However, though I could not approve of all the *modus operandi* of the Superior of Quebec, I could not but admire then the glorious results of his efforts in converting Protestants; and I took the resolution of devoting myself more than ever to show them their errors and make them good Catholics. In this I was too successful; for, during my twenty-five years of priesthood, I have persuaded ninety-three Protestants to give up their Gospel light and truth in order to follow the dark and lying traditions of Rome. I cannot enter

into the details of their conversions, or rather perversions ; suffice to say that I soon found that my only chance of success in that proselytising work was among the Ritualists. I saw at first that Calvin and Knox had dug a really impassable abyss between the Presbyterians, Methodists, Baptists, and the Church of Rome. If these Ritualists remain Protestants, and do not take the very short step which separates them from Rome, it is a most astonishing fact, when they are logical men. Some people are surprised that so many eminent and learned men, in Great Britain and America, give up their Protestantism to submit to the Church of Rome ; but my wonder is that there are so few among them who fall into that bottomless abyss of idolatry and folly, when they are their whole life on the very brink of the chasm. Put millions of men on the very brink of the Falls of Niagara, force them to cross to and fro in small canoes between both shores, and you will see that, every day, some of them will be dragged, in spite of themselves, into the yawning abyss. Nay, you will see that, sooner or later, those millions of people will be in danger of being dragged in a whole body, by the irresistible force of the dashing waters, into the fathomless gulf. Through a sublime effort the English people, helped by the mighty and merciful hand of God, has come out from the abyss of folly, impurity, ignorance, slavery and idolatry called the Church of Rome. But many, alas ! in the present day, instead of marching up to the high regions of unsullied Gospel truth and light—instead of going up to the high mountains where true Christian simplicity and liberty have for ever planted their glorious banners—have been induced to walk only a few steps out of the pestiferious atmosphere of the stagnant waters of death which flow from Rome, that the atmosphere they breathe is still filled with the deadly emanations of that modern Sodom. Who, without shedding tears of sorrow, can look at those misguided ministers of the Gospel who believe and teach in the Episcopal Church that they have the power to make their God with a wafer, and who bow down before that wafer god and adore him ! Who can refrain from indignation at the sight of so many Episcopal ministers who consent to have their ears, minds and souls polluted at the confessional by the stories of their penitents, whom in turn they destroy by their infamous and unmentionable questions ?

CHAPTER XXVIII.

The Night Excursion with Two Thieves.

THE three years which followed the cholera will be long remembered in Quebec for the number of audacious thefts and murders which kept the whole population in constant terror. Almost every week the public press had to give us the account of the robbery of the houses of some of our rich merchants or of old wealthy widows.

Many times the blood was chilled in our veins by the cruel and savage assassinations which had been committed by the thieves when resistance had been offered. The number of these crimes, the audacity with which they were perpetrated, the ability with which the guilty parties escaped from all the researches of the police, indicated that they were well-organised and had a leader of uncommon shrewdness.

But in the eyes of the religious population of Quebec, the theft of the 10th February, 1835, surpassed all others by its sacrilegious character. That night the chapel dedicated to the blessed Virgin Mary was entered, a silver statue of the Virgin, the gift of the King of France, a massive lamp, a silver candlestick, and the silver vases which contained the bread which the Roman Catholics believed to be the body, blood and divinity of Jesus Christ were stolen, and the holy sacrament impiously thrown and scattered on the floor. Nothing can express the horror and indignation of the whole Catholic population at this last outrage. Large sums of money were offered in order that the brigands might be detected. At last five of them—Chambers, Mathieu, Gagnon, Waterworth, and Lemoine—were caught in 1836, tried, found guilty and condemned to death in the month of March, 1837.

During the trial, and when public attention was most intensely fixed on its different aspects, in a damp, chilly, dark night, I was called to visit a sick man. I was soon ready, and asked the name of the sick man from the messenger. He answered that it was Francis Oregon. As a matter of course, I said that the sick man was a perfect stranger to me, and that I had never heard that there was such a man in the world. But when I was near the carriage which was to take me, I was not a little surprised to see that the first messenger left abruptly and disappeared. Looking with attention, then, at the faces of the two men who had come for me in the carriage, it seemed that they both wore masks.

"What does this mean?" I said; "each of you wear a mask. Do you mean to murder me?"

"Dear Father Chiniquy," answered one of them, in a low, trembling voice, and in a supplicating tone, "fear not. We swear before God that no evil will be done to you. On the contrary, God and man will, to the end of the world, praise and bless you if you come to our help and save our souls, as well as our mortal bodies. We have in our hands a great part

of the silver articles stolen these last three years. The police are on our track, and we are in great danger of being caught. For God's sake come with us. We will put all those stolen things into your hands, that you may give them back to those who have lost them. We will then immediately leave the country, and lead a better life. We are Protestants, and the Bible tells us that we cannot be saved if we keep in our hands what is not ours. You do not know us, but we know you well. You are the only man in Quebec to whom we can trust our lives and this terrible secret. We have worn these masks that you may not know us, and that you may not be compromised if you are ever called before a court of justice."

My first thought was to leave them and run back to the door of the parsonage ; but such an act of cowardice seemed to me, after a moment's reflection, unworthy of a man. I said to myself, these two men cannot come to steal from me ; it is well-known in Quebec that I keep myself as poor as a church mouse, by giving all I have to the poor. I have never offended any man in my life, that I know. They cannot come to punish or murder me. They are Protestants, and they trust me. Well, well, they will not regret to have put their trust in a Catholic priest.

I then answered them : " What you ask from me is of a very delicate nature. Before I do it, I want to take the advice of one whom I consider the wisest man in Quebec, the old Rev. Mr. Demars, ex-president of the seminary of Quebec. Please drive me as quickly as possible to the seminary. If that venerable man advises me to go with you, I will go ; but I cannot promise to grant your request if he tells me not to go.

" All right," they both said; and in a very short time I was knocking at the door of the seminary. A few moments after, I was alone in the room of Mr. Demars. It was just half-past twelve at night.

" Our little Father Chiniquy, here on this dark night, at half-past twelve ! What does this mean ? What do you want from me ? " said the venerable old priest.

" I have come to ask your advice," I answered, " on a very strange thing. Two Protestant thieves have in their hands a great quantity of the silver ware stolen these last three years. They want to deposit them in my hands, that I may give them back to those from whom they have been stolen, before they leave the country and lead a better life. I cannot know them, for they both wear masks. I cannot even know where they take me, for the carriage is so completely wrapped up by curtains that it is impossible to see outside. Now, my dear Mr. Demars, I come to ask your advice. Shall I go with them or not ? But remember that I trust you with these things under the seal of confession, that neither you nor I may be compromised."

Before answering me the venerable priest said : " I am very old, but I have never heard of such a strange thing in my life.

Are you not afraid to go alone with those two thieves in that covered carriage ?

"No, sir," I answered ; "I do not see any reason to fear anything from these two men."

"Well ! well," rejoined Mr. Demars, "if you are not afraid under such circumstances, your mother has given you a brain of diamond and nerves of steel."

"Now, my dear sir," I answered, "time flies, and I may have a long way to travel with these two men. Please, in the shortest possible way, tell me your mind. Do you advise me to go with them ?"

He replied, "You consult me on a very difficult matter ; there are so many considerations to make, that it is impossible to weigh them all. The only thing we have to do is to pray God and His Holy Mother for wisdom. Let us pray."

We knelt and said the "*Veni, Sancte Spiritus*"; "Come Holy Spirit," etc., which prayer ends by an invocation to Mary as Mother of God. After the prayer Mr. Demars again asked me : "Are you not afraid ?"

"No, sir, I do not see any reason to be afraid. But, please, for God's sake, hurry on ; tell me if you advise me to go and accept this message of mercy and peace."

"Yes ! go ! go ! If you are not afraid," answered the old priest, with a voice full of emotion, and tears in his eyes.

I fell on my knees and said : "Before I start, please give me your blessing and pray for me, when I shall be on the way to that strange, but I hope, good work."

I left the seminary and took my seat at the right hand of one of my unknown companions, while the other was on the front seat driving the horse. Not a word was said by any of us on the way. But I perceived that the stranger, who was on my left, was praying to God ; though in such a low voice that I understood only these words twice repeated : "O Lord ! have mercy on me—such a sinner !"

These words touched me to the heart, and brought to my mind the dear Saviour's words : "The publicans and harlots shall go into the kingdom of God before you ;" and I also prayed for that poor repenting sinner and for myself, by repeating the sublime fifty-first Psalm : "Have mercy upon me, O Lord !" It took about half an hour to reach the house. But, there, again it was impossible for me to understand where I was.

The only person I saw, when at the house, was a tall woman covered with a long black veil, whom I took to be a disguised man on account of her size and her strength : for she was carrying very heavy bags with as much ease as if they had been a handful of straw. There was only a small candle behind a screen, which gave so little light that everything looked like phantoms around us. Pictures and mirrors were all turned to the wall, and presented the wrong side to view. The sofa and the chairs were also upset in such a way that it was impossible to identify anything of what I had seen. In fact, I could see

nothing in that house. Not a word was said, except by one of my companions, who whispered in a very low voice, "Please look at the tickets which are on every bundle ; they will indicate to whom these things belong."

There were eight bundles. The heaviest of which was composed of the melted silver of the statue of the Virgin, the candlesticks, the lamp of the chapel, the ciborium, a couple of chalices, and some dozen spoons and forks. The other bundles were made up of silver plates, fruit baskets, tea, coffee, cream and sugar pots, silver spoons and forks, etc.

As soon as these bundles were put in the carriage we left for the parsonage, where we arrived a little before the dawn of day. Not a word was exchanged between us on the way, and my impression was, that my penitent companions were sending their silent prayers, like myself, to the feet of that merciful God who has said to all sinners: "Come unto Me, all ye that are heavy laden, and I will give you rest."

They carried the bundles into my trunk, which I locked with peculiar attention. When all was over I accompanied them to the door to take leave of them. Then, each seizing one of my hands, by a spontaneous movement of gratitude and joy, they pressed them on their lips, shedding tears, and saying in a low voice: "God bless you a thousand times for the good work you have just performed. After Christ, you are our saviour."

As these two men were speaking, it pleased God to send forth into my soul one of those rays of happiness which He gives us only at great intervals. I believe our fragile existence would soon be broken up were we by such joy incessantly inundated. These two men had ceased to be robbers in my eyes. They were dear brethren, precious friends, such as are seldom to be seen. The narrow and shameful prejudices of my religion were silent before the fervent prayers that I had heard from their lips ; they disappeared in those tears of repentance, gratitude, and love, which fell from their eyes on my hands. Night surrounded us with the deepest shades ; but our souls were illuminated by a light purer than the rays of the sun. The air that we breathed was cold and damp ; but one of these sparks brought down from heaven by Jesus to warm the earth, had fallen into our hearts, and we were all penetrated by its glow. I pressed their hands in mine, saying to them: "I thank and bless you for choosing me as the confidant of your misfortunes and repentance. To you I owe three of the most precious hours of my life. Adieu ! We shall see one another no more on this earth ; but we shall meet in heaven. Adieu !"

It is unnecessary to add that it was impossible to sleep the remainder of that memorable night. Besides, I had in my possession more stolen articles than would have caused fifty men to be hanged. I said to myself: "What would become of me if the police were to break in on me, and find all that I have in my hands ? What could I answer if I were asked, how all these things had reached me ?"

Did I not go beyond the bounds of prudence in what I have

just done ? Have not I, indeed, slipped a rope around my neck ? Though my conscience did not reproach me with anything, especially when I had acted on the advice of a man as wise as Mr. Demars, yet was I not without some anxiety, and I longed to get rid of all the things I had by giving them to their legitimate owners. At ten o'clock in the morning I was at Mr. Amiot's, the wealthiest goldsmith of Quebec, with my heavy satchel of melted silver. After obtaining from him the promise of secrecy, I handed it over to him, giving him at the same time its history. I asked him to weigh it, keep its contents, and let me have its value, which I was to distribute according to its label. He told me that there was in it a thousand dollars worth of melted silver, which amount he immediately gave me. I went down directly to give about half of it to Rev. Mr. Cazeault, chaplain of the congregation which had been robbed, and who was then the secretary to the Archbishop of Quebec ; and I distributed the remainder to the parties indicated on the labels attached to this enormous ingot.

The good Lady Montgomery could scarcely believe her eyes after obtaining also from her the promise of the most inviolable secrecy on what I was going to show her, I displayed on her table the magnificent dishes of massive silver, fruit baskets, tea and coffee pots, sugar bowls, cream jugs, and a great quantity of spoons and forks of the finest silver, which had been taken from her.

She then related in a most touching manner what a terrible moment she had passed, when the thieves, having seized her, with her maid and young man, rolled them in carpets to stifle their cries, whilst they were breaking locks, opening chests and cupboards, to carry off their rich contents. She told me how nearly she had been stifled, with her faithful servants, under the enormous weight of carpets heaped upon them by the robbers. This excellent lady was a Protestant, and it was the first time in my life that I met a Protestant whose piety seemed so enlightened.

When she had most sincerely thanked and blessed me for the service I had done her, she asked me if I would have any objection to pray with her, and to aid her in thanking God for the favour He had just shown her. I told her I should be happy in uniting with her to bless the Lord for His mercies. Upon this she gave me a Bible, magnificently bound, and we read in turn a verse, slowly, and on our knees, the sublime Psalm ciii. : "Bless the Lord, O my soul." etc.

As I was about to take leave of her, she offered me a purse containing one hundred dollars in gold, which I refused, telling her that I would rather lose my two hands than receive a cent for what I had done.

"You are," said she, "surrounded with poor people. Give them this that I offer to the Lord as a feeble testimony of my gratitude, and be assured that as long as I live I will pray God to pour His most abounding favours upon you."

In leaving that house I could not hide from myself that my

soul had been embalmed with the true perfume of a piety that I had never seen in my own Church. Before the day closed I had given back to their rightful owners all the effects left in my hands. I am glad to say here, that the persons, most of whom were Protestants, to whom I made these restitutions, were perfectly honourable, and that not a single one of them ever said anything to compromise me in this matter, nor was I ever troubled on this subject.

I thought it my duty to give my venerable friend, the Grand Vicar Demars, a detailed account of what had just happened. He heard me with the deepest interest, and could not restrain his tears when I related the touching scene of my separation from my two new friends that night, one of the darkest—which, nevertheless, has remained one of the brightest of my life.

My story ended, he said: "I am indeed very old, but I must confess that never did I hear anything so strange and so beautiful as this story. I repeat, however, that your mother must have given you a brain harder than diamond and nerves more solid than brass, not to have been afraid during this very singular adventure in the night."

After the fatigues and incidents of the last twenty-four hours, I was in great need of rest, but it was impossible for me to sleep a single instant during the night which followed. For the first time I stood face to face with that Protestantism which my Church had taught me to hate and fight with all the energy that heaven had bestowed on me, and when that faith had been, by the hand of Almighty God, placed in the scale against my own religion, it appeared to me as a heap of pure gold opposite a heap of rotten rags. In spite of myself, I could hear incessantly the cries of grief of that penitent thief: "Lord, have mercy upon me, so great a sinner!" Then, the sublime piety of Lady Montgomery, the blessings she had asked God to pour on me, His unprofitable servant, seemed as so many coals of fire heaped on my head by God, to punish me for having said so much evil of Protestants, and so often decried their religion.

A secret voice arose within me: "Seest thou not how these Protestants, whom thou wishest to crush with thy disdain, know how to pray, repent, and make amends for their faults; how much more nobly than the unfortunate wretches whom thou holdest as so many slaves at thy feet by means of the confessional?"

"Understandest thou not that the Spirit of God, the grace and love of Jesus Christ, produces effectually in the hearts and minds of these Protestants a work much more durable than thy auricular confession? Compare the miserable wiles of Mr. Parent, who makes false restitutions to cast dust into the eyes of the unsuspecting multitude, with the straightforwardness, noble sincerity, and admirable wisdom of these Protestants in making amends for their wrongs before God and men, and judge for thyself which of those two religions raise, in order to save, and which degrades, in order to destroy the guilty.

CHAPTER XXIX.

**Chambers and his Accomplices Condemned to Death—
Asked me to Prepare them for their Terrible Fate.**

A FEW days after the strange and providential night spent with the repentant thieves, I received the following letter signed by Chambers and his unfortunate criminal friends:

"DEAR FATHER CHINIQUY,—We are condemned to death. Please come and help us to meet our sentence as Christians."

I will not attempt to say what I felt when I entered the damp and dark cells where the culprits were enchained. No human words can express those things. Their tears and their sobs were going through my heart as a two-edged sword. Only one or them had, at first, his eyes dried, and kept silent: Chambers, the most guilty of all.

After the others had requested me to hear the confession of their sins, and prepare them for death, Chambers said: "You know that I am a Protestant. But I am married to a Roman Catholic, who is your penitent. You have persuaded my two dear sisters to give up their Protestantism and become Catholics. I have many times desired to follow them. My criminal life alone has prevented me from doing so. But, now I am determined to do what I consider to be the will of God in this important matter. Please, tell me what must I do to become a Catholic. I was a sincere Roman Catholic priest, believing that out of the Church of Rome there was no salvation.

I spent the next eight days in hearing their confessions, reading the lives of some saints, with several chapters of the Bible, as the seven Penitential Psalms, the sufferings and death of Christ, the history of the Prodigal Son, etc. And I instructed Chambers in the faith of the Church of Rome.

After I had spent much time in exhorting them, reading and praying, several times, I asked them to tell me some of the details of the murders and thefts they had committed. The facts I then heard soon convinced me of the need we have of a religion, and what would become of the world if the atheists could succeed in sweeping away the notions of a future punishment after death, or the fear and love of God among men.

But the more we were approaching the fatal day, when I had to go on the scaffold with those unfortunate men, and to see them launched into eternity, the more I felt horrified. The tears, the sobs, and the cries of those unfortunate men had so melted my heart, my soul, and my strong nerves, they had so subdued my unconquerable will, and that stern determination to do my duty at any cost, which had been my character till then, that I was shaking from head to feet, when thinking of that awful hour.

Besides that, my constant intercourse with those criminals these last few days, their unbounded confidence in me, their gratitude for my devotedness to them, their desolation, and

their cries when speaking of their fathers or mothers, wives or children, had filled my heart with a measure of sympathy which I would vainly try to express. They were no more murderers and thieves to me, whose bloody deeds had at first chilled the blood in my veins; they were the friends of my bosom—the beloved children whom cruel beasts had wounded. They were dearer to me than my own life—not only I felt happy to mix my tears with theirs, and unite my ardent prayers to God for mercy with them, but I would have felt happy to shed my blood in order to save their lives. As several of them belonged to the most reputable families of Quebec and vicinity, I thought I could easily interest the clergy and the most respectable citizens to sign a petition to the governor, Lord Gosford, asking him to change their sentence of death into one of perpetual exile to the distant penal colony of Botany Bay, in Australia. The governor was my friend. Colonel Vassal, who was my uncle, and the adjutant-general of the militia of the whole country, had introduced me to his Excellency, who many times had overloaded me with the marks of his interest and kindness, and my hope was that he would not refuse me the favour I was to ask him, when the petition would be signed by the Bishop, the Catholic priests, the ministers of the different Protestant denominations of the city, and hundreds of the principal citizens of Quebec. I presented the petition myself, accompanied by the secretary of the Archbishop. But to my great distress the governor answered me that those men had committed so many murders, and kept the country in terror for so many years, that it was absolutely necessary they should be punished according to the sentence of the court. Who can tell the desolation of those unfortunate men, when, with a voice choked by my sobs and my tears, I told them that the governor had refused to grant the favour I had asked him for them. They fell on the ground and filled their cells with cries which would have broken the hardest heart. From those very cells we were hearing the noise of the men who were preparing the scaffold where they were to be hanged the next day. I tried to pray and read, but I was unable to do so. My desolation was too great to utter a single word. I felt as if I were to be hanged with them—and to say the whole truth, I think I would have been glad to hear that I was to be hanged the next day to save their lives. For there was fear in me, which was hunting me as a phantom from hell, the last three days. It seemed that, in spite of all my efforts, prayers, confessions, absolutions and sacraments, these men were not converted and that they were to be launched into eternity with all their sins.

When I was comparing the calm and true repentance of the two thieves, with whom I spent the night a few weeks before in the carriage with the noisy expressions of sorrow of these newly converted sinners, I could not help finding an immeasurable distance between the first and second of those penitents. No doubt had remained in my mind about the first, but I had serious apprehension about the last. Several circumstances,

which it would be too long and useless to mention here, were distressing me by the fear that all my chaplets, indulgences, medals, scapulars, holy waters, signs of the cross, prayers to the Virgin, auricular confession absolutions, used in the conversion of sinners, had not the divine and perfect power of a simple look to the dying Saviour on the cross. I was saying to myself with anxiety: "Would it be possible that those Protestants, who were with me in the carriage, had the true ways of repentance, pardon, peace, and life eternal in that simple look to the great Victim, and that we Roman Catholics, with our signs of the cross and holy waters, our crucifixes and prayers to the saints, our scapulars and medals, our so humiliating auricular confession, were only distracting the mind, the soul, and the heart of the sinner from the true and only source of salvation, Christ!" In the midst of those distressing thoughts I almost regretted having helped Chambers in giving up his Protestantism for my Romanism.

At about 4 p.m. I made a supreme effort to shake off my desolation, and nerve myself for the solemn duties God had entrusted to me. I put a few questions to those desolated men, to see if they were really repentant and converted. Their answers added to my fear that I had spoken too much of the Virgin and the saints, the indulgences, medals and scapulars, integrity of confession, and not enough of Christ and His death to them, but this had been so much mixed up with exhortations to trust in Mary, put their confidence in their medals, scapulars, confessions, etc., that it became almost evident to me that in our religion Christ was like the precious pearl lost in a mountain of sand and dust.

I then went to the private, neat little room, which the goaler had kindly allotted to me, and I fell on my knees to pray to God for myself and for my poor convicts. Though this prayer brought some calm to my mind, my distress was still very great. It was then that the thought came to my mind to go to the governor and make a new and supreme effort to have the sentence of death changed into that of perpetual exile to Botany Bay, and without a moment of delay I went to his palace.

It was about 7 p.m. when he reluctantly admitted me to his presence, telling me, when shaking hands, "I hope, Mr. Chiniquy, you are not coming to renew your request of the morning, for I cannot grant it."

Without a word to answer I fell on my knees, and for more than ten minutes I spoke as I had never spoken before. I spoke as we speak when we are ambassadors of God in a message of mercy. I spoke with my lips. I spoke with my sobs and my sighs.

For some time the governor was mute, as if stunned. He was not only a noble-minded man, but he had a most tender, affectionate and kind heart. His tears soon began to flow with mine, and his sobs mixed with my sobs; with a voice half suffocated by his emotion, he said:

"Father Chiniquy, you ask me a favour which I ought not to give, but I cannot resist your arguments, when your tears, your sobs, and your cries are like arrows which pierce and break my heart. I will give you the favour you ask."

It was nearly 10 p.m. when I knocked at the door of the gaoler, asking his permission to see my dear friends in their cells, to tell them that I had obtained their pardon, that they would not die. That gentleman could hardly believe me. It was only after reading twice the document I had in my hands that he saw that I told him the truth.

Looking at that parchment again, he said: "Have you noticed that it is covered and almost spoiled by the spots evidently made with the tears of the governor? You must be a kind of sorcerer to have melted the heart of such a man, and have wrenched from his hands the pardon of such convicts."

"I am not a sorcerer," I answered. "But you remember that our Saviour Jesus Christ has said, somewhere, that He had brought a fire from heaven—well, it is evident that he had thrown some sparks of that fire into my poor heart, for it was so fiercely burning when I was at the feet of the governor, that I think I would have died at his feet, had he not granted me that favour. No doubt that some sparks of that fire have also fallen on his soul and in his heart when I was speaking, for his cries, his tears, and his sobs were filling his room, and showing that he was suffering as much as myself. It was that he might not be consumed by that fire, that he granted my request. I am now the most happy man under heaven. Please make haste. Come with me and open the cells of those unfortunate men that I may tell what our merciful God has done for them." When entering their desolated cells I was unable to contain myself, I cried out: "Rejoice and bless the Lord, my dear friends! You will not die to-morrow. I bring your pardon with me!"

Two of them fainted, and came very near dying from excess of surprise and joy. The others, unable to contain their emotions, were crying and weeping for joy. They threw their arms around me to press me to their bosom, kiss my hands and cover them with their tears of joy. I knelt with them and thanked God, after which I told them how they must promise to God to serve Him faithfully after such a manifestation of His mercies. I read to them the 100th, 101st, 102nd, and 103rd Psalms, and I left them after twelve o'clock at night to go and take some rest. I was in need of it after a whole day of such work and emotions.

The next day I wanted to see my dear prisoners early, and I was with them before 7 a.m. As the whole country had been glad to hear that they were to be hanged that very day, the crowds were beginning to gather at that early hour to witness the deaths of those great culprits. The feelings of indignation were almost unmanageable when they heard they were not to be hanged, but only exiled for their life to Botany Bay. For a time it was feared that the mob would break the doors of the

gaol and lynch the culprits. Though very few priests were more respected and loved by the people, they would have probably torn me into pieces when they heard that it was I who had deprived the gibbet of its victims that day. The chief of police had to take extra-ordinary measures to prevent the wrath of the mob from doing mischief. He advised me not to show myself for a few days in the street.

More than a month passed before all the thieves and murderers in Canada, to the number of about seventy, who had been sentenced to be exiled to Botany Bay, could be gathered into the ship which was to take them into that distant land. I thought it was my duty during that interval to visit my penitents in gaol every day, and instruct them on the duties of the new life they were called upon to live. When the day of their departure arrived I gave a Roman Catholic New Testament, translated by De Sacy, to each of them to read and meditate on their long and tedious journey, and I bade them adieu, recommending them to the mercy of God, and the protection of the Virgin Mary and all the saints. Some months later I heard, that on the sea Chambers had cut loose his chains and those of some of his companions with the intention of taking possession of the ship, and escaping on some distant shore. But he had been betrayed, and was hanged on his arrival at Liverpool.

I had almost lost sight of those emotional days of my young years of priesthood. Those facts were silently lying among the big piles of the daily records which I had faithfully kept since the very days of my collegiate life at Nicolet, when, in 1878, I was called by the providence of God to go and lecture on Romanism in the noble and grand English colony of Australia, formerly known by me only as the penal colony of Botany Bay.

Some time after my arrival, when I was lecturing in one of the young and thriving cities of that country whose future destinies promise to be so great, a rich carross, drawn by two splendid English horses, driven by two men in livery, stopped before the house where I had put up for a few days. A venerable gentleman alighted from the carriage and knocked at the door, as I was looking at him from the window. I went to the door, to save trouble to my host, and I opened it. In saluting me, the stranger said: "Is Father Chiniquy here?"

"Yes, sir," I answered. "Father Chiniquy is the guest of this family."

"Could I have the honour of a few minutes' conversation with him?" replied the old gentleman.

"As I am Father Chiniquy, I can at once answer you that I will feel much pleasure in granting your request."

"Oh, dear Father Chiniquy," quickly replied the stranger, "is it possible that it is you? Can I be absolutely alone with you for half an hour, without anyone to see and hear us?"

"Certainly," I said; "my comfortable rooms are upstairs, and I am absolutely alone there. Please, sir, come and follow me."

When alone with me the stranger said: "Do you not know me?"

"How can I know you, sir?" I answered. "I do not even remember ever having seen you."

"You have not only seen me, but you have heard the confession of my sins many times; and you have spent many hours in the same room with me," replied the old gentleman.

"Please tell me where and when I have seen you, and also be kind enough to give me your name; for all those things have escaped from my memory."

"Do you remember the murderer and thief, Chambers, who was condemned to death in Quebec in 1837, with eight of his accomplices?" asked the stranger.

"Yes, sir; I remember well Chambers and the unfortunate men he was leading in the ways of iniquity," I replied.

"Well, dear Father Chiniquy, I am one of the criminals who filled Canada with terror for several years, and who were caught and rightly condemned to death. When condemned, we selected you for our father confessor, with the hope that through your influence we might escape the gallows; and we were not disappointed. You obtained our pardon; the sentence of death was commuted into a life of exile to Botany Bay. My name in Canada was A——, but here they call me B——. God has blessed me since in many ways; but it is to you I owe my life and all the privileges of my present existence. After God, you are my saviour. I came to bless and thank you for what you have done for me."

In saying that, he threw himself into my arms, pressed me to his heart, and bathed my face and my hands with his tears of joy and gratitude. But his joy did not exceed mine, and my surprise was equal to my joy to find him apparently in such good circumstances. After I had knelt with him to thank and bless God for what I had heard, I asked him to relate to me the details of his strange and marvellous story. Here is a short *résumé* of his answer:

"After you had given us your last benediction, when on board the ship which was to take us from Quebec to Botany Bay, the first thing I did was to open the New Testament you had given me and the other culprits, with the advice to read it with a praying heart. It was the first time in my life I had that Book in my hand. You were the only priest in Canada who would put such a Book in the hands of common people. But I must confess that its first reading did not do me much good, for I read more to amuse myself and satisfy my curiosity than through any good and Christian motive. The only good I received from that first reading was that I clearly understood for the first time why the priests of Rome fear and hate that Book, and why they take it out of the hands of their parishioners when they hear that they have it. It was in vain that I looked for mass, indulgences, chaplets, purgatory, auricular confession, Lent, holy waters, the worship of Mary, or prayers in an unknown tongue. I concluded from my first reading of the Gospel

that our priests were very wise to prevent us from reading a book which was really demolishing our Roman Catholic Church, and felt surprised that you had put in our hands a book which seemed to me so opposed to the belief and practice of our religion as you taught it to us when in jail, and my confidence in your good judgment was much shaken. To tell you the truth, the first reading of the Gospel went far to demolish my Roman Catholic faith, and to make a wreck of the religion taught me by my parents and at the college, and even by you. For a few weeks I became more sceptic than anything else. The only good that first reading of the Holy Book did me was to give me more serious thoughts and prevent me from uniting myself to Chambers and his conspirators in their foolish plot for taking possession of the ship and escaping to some unknown and distant shore. He had been shrewd enough to conceal a very small but exceedingly sharp saw between his toes before coming to the ship, with which he had already cut the chains of eighteen of the prisoners, when he was betrayed, and hanged on his arrival at Liverpool.

"But if the first reading of the Gospel did not do me much good, I cannot say the same thing of the second. I remember, that when handing to us that holy Book, you had told us never to read it except after a fervent prayer to God for help and light to understand it. I was really tired of my former life. In giving up the fear and love of God I had fallen into the deepest abyss of human depravity and misery, till I had come very near ending my life on the scaffold. I felt the need of a change. You had often repeated to us the words of our Saviour, 'Come unto Me, all ye who are weary and heavy laden, and I will give you rest;' but, with all the other priests, you had always mixed those admirable and saving words with the invocation of Mary, the confidence in our medals, scapulars, signs of the cross, holy waters, indulgences, auricular confessions, that the sublime appeal of Christ had always been, as it always will be, drowned in the Church of Rome by those absurd and impious superstitions and practices.

"One morning, after I had spent a sleepless night, and feeling as pressed down under the weight of my sins, I opened my Gospel Book, after ardent prayer for light and guidance, and my eyes fell on these words of John, 'Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world.' These words fell upon my poor guilty soul with a divine, irresistible power. With tears and cries of an unspeakable desolation I spent the day crying, 'O Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world, have mercy upon me! Take away my sins!' The day was not over when I felt and knew that my cries had been heard at the mercy-seat. The Lamb of God had taken away my sins! He had changed my heart and made quite a new man of me. From that day the reading of the Gospel was to my soul what bread is to the poor hungry man, and what pure and refreshing waters are to the thirsty traveller. My joy, my unspeakable joy, was to read the holy Book and speak

with my companions in chains of the dear Saviour's love for the poor sinners ; and, thanks be to God, a good number have found him altogether precious, and have been sincerely converted in the dark holes of that ship. When working hard at Sydney with the other culprits, I felt my chains to be as light as feathers when I was sure that the heavy chains of my sins were gone ; and though working hard under a burning sun from morning to night, I felt happy, and my heart was full of joy when I was sure that my Saviour had prepared a throne for me in His kingdom, and that He had bought a crown of eternal glory for me by dying on the cross to redeem my guilty soul.

"I had hardly spent a year in Australia, in the midst of the convicts, when a minister of the Gospel, accompanied by another gentleman, came to me and said : 'Your perfectly good behaviour and your Christian life has attracted the attention and admiration of the authorities, and the governor sends us to hand you this document, which says that you are no more a criminal before the law, but that you have your pardon, and you can live the life of an honourable citizen, by continuing to walk in the ways of God.' After speaking so, the gentleman put one hundred dollars in my hands, and added : 'Go, and be a faithful follower of the Lord Jesus, and God Almighty will bless you and make you prosper in all your ways.' All this seemed to me as a dream or vision from heaven. I would hardly believe my ears and eyes. But it was not a dream—it was a reality. My merciful heavenly Father had again heard my humble supplications ; after having taken away the heavy chains of my sins, He had mercifully taken away the chains which wounded my feet and my hands. I spent several days and nights in weeping and crying for joy, and in blessing the God of my salvation, Jesus the Redeemer of my soul and body.

'Some years after that we heard of discoveries of the rich gold mines in several parts of Australia.

"After having prayed God to guide me, I bought a bag of hard crackers, a ham and cheese, and started for the mines in company with several who were going, like myself, in search of gold. But I soon preferred to be alone. For I wanted to pray and to be united to my God, even when walking. After a long march, I reached a beautiful spot, between three small hills, at the foot of which a little brook was running down towards the plain below. The sun was scorching, there was no shade, and I was tired. I sat on a flat stone to take my dinner, and quenching my thirst with the water of the brook. I was eating and blessing my God at the same time for His mercies, when suddenly my eyes fell on a stone by the brook, which was about the size of a goose egg. But the rays of the sun were dancing on the stone, as if it had been a mirror. I went and picked it up. The stone was almost all gold of the purest kind ! It was almost enough to make me rich. I knelt to thank and bless God for this new token of His mercy toward me, and I began to look around to see if I would not find some

new pieces of the precious metal, and you may imagine my joy when I found that the ground was not only literally covered with pieces of gold of every size, from half an inch to the smallest dimensions, but that the very sand was in great part composed of gold. In a very short time, it was the will of God that I could carry to the bank particles of gold to the value of several thousand pounds. I continued to cover myself with rags and have old boots on in order not to excite the suspicion of anyone on the fortune which I was accumulating so rapidly. When I had about £80,000 deposited in the banks, a gentleman offered me £80,000 more for my claim, and I sold it. The money was invested by me on a piece of land which soon became the site of an important city, and I soon became one of the wealthy men of Australia. I then began to study hard and improve the little education I had received in Canada. I married, and my God has made me the father of several children. The people where I settled with my fortune and wife, not knowing my antecedents, have raised me to the first dignities of the place. Please, dear Mr. Chiniquy, come and take dinner with me to-morrow, that I may show you my house and some of my other properties, and also that I may introduce you to my wife and children. Let me ask the favour not to make them suspect that you have known me in Canada, for they think that I am a European."

When telling me his marvellous adventures, which I am obliged to condense and abridge, his voice was many times choked by his emotion, his tears, and his sobs, and more than once he had to stop. As for me, I was absolutely beside myself with admiration at the mysterious ways through which God leads His elect in all ages. "Now, I understand why my God had given me such a marvellous power over the governor of Canada when I wrenched your pardon from his hands almost in spite of himself," I said. "That merciful God willed to save you, and you are saved! May His name be for ever blessed."

The next day it was my privilege to be with his family at dinner. And never in my life have I seen a more happy mother, and a more interesting family. The long table was actually surrounded by them. After dinner he showed me his beautiful garden and his rich palace, after which, throwing himself into my arms, he said: "Dear Father Chiniquy, all those things belong to you. It is to you, after God, that I owe my life, all the blessings of a large and Christian family, and the honour of the high position I have in this country. May the God of heaven for ever bless you for what you have done for me."

I answered him: "Dear friend, you owe me nothing, I have been nothing but a feeble instrument of the mercies of God towards you. To that great and merciful God alone be the praise and the glory. Please ask your family to come here and join with us in singing to the praise of God the 103rd Psalm."

CHAPTER XXX.

The Miracles of Rome.

THE merchant fleet of the fall of 1836 had filled the Marine Hospital of Quebec with the victims of a ship-typhoid fever of the worst kind, which soon turned into an epidemic. Within the walls of that institution Mr. Glackmeyer, the superintendent, with two of the attending doctors, and the majority of the servants, were swept away during the winter months.

I was, in the Spring of 1837, almost the only one spared by that horrible pest. In order not to spread terror among the citizens of Quebec, the physicians and I had determined to keep that a secret. But, at the end of May, I was forced to reveal it to the Bishop of Quebec, My Lord Signaie; for I felt in my whole frame the first symptoms of that merciless disease. I prepared myself to die, as very few who had been attacked by it had escaped. I went to the bishop, told him the truth about the epidemic, and requested him to appoint a priest, immediately, as chaplain in my place, for, I added, I feel the poison running through my veins, and it is very probable that I have not more than ten or twelve days to live.

The young Mon. D'Estimenville was chosen, and though I felt very weak, I thought it was my duty to initiate him in his new and perilous work. I took him immediately to the hospital, where he had never been before, and when at a few feet from the door I said: "My young friend, it is my duty to tell you that there is a dangerous epidemic raging in that house since last fall, nothing has been able to stop it. The superintendent, two physicians, and most of the servants have been its victims. My escape till now is almost miraculous. But these last ten hours I feel the poison running through my whole body. You are called by God to take my place; but before you cross the threshold of that hospital, you must make the generous sacrifice of your life; for you are going on a battle-field from which only few have come out with their lives."

The young priest turned pale and said: "Is it possible that such a deadly epidemic is raging where you are taking me?" I answered: "Yes! my dear young brother, it is a fact, and I consider it my duty to tell you not to enter that house, if you are afraid to die!"

A few minutes of silence followed, and it was a solemn silence indeed! Did the angels of God appear to show him the crown given to those who die for their brethren? I do not know. What I do know is that a few months later, that young priest won that glorious crown by falling at his post of duty. He then took his handkerchief and wiped away some big drops of sweat which were rolling from his forehead on his cheeks and said: "Is there a more holy and desirable way of dying than in ministering to the spiritual and temporal wants of my brethren? No! If it is the will of God that I should fall

when fighting at the post of danger, I am ready. Let His holy will be done."

He followed me into the pestilential house with the heroic step of a soldier who runs at the command of his general to storm an impregnable citadel when he is sure to fall. It took me more than an hour to show him all the rooms and introduce him to the poor but very dear sick and dying mariners.

I felt then so exhausted that two friends had to support me on my return journey to the parsonage of St. Roch. My physicians were immediately called and soon pronounced my case so dangerous that three other physicians were called in consultation. For nine days I suffered the most horrible tortures in my brains and the very marrow of my bones, from the fever which so devoured my flesh as to seemingly leave but the skin.

On the ninth day, the physicians told the bishop, who had visited me, that there was no hope of my recovery. The last sacraments were administered to me and I prepared myself to die, as taught by the Church of Rome. The tenth day I was absolutely motionless and not able to utter a word. My tongue was parched like a piece of dry wood.

Through the terrible ravage of the whole system, my very eyes were so turned inside their orbits, the white part only could be seen; no food could be taken from the beginning of the sickness except a few drops of water, which were dropped through my teeth with much difficulty. But though all my physical faculties seemed dead, my memory, intelligence and soul were full of life, and acting with more power than ever. Now and then in the paroxysms of the fever, I used to see awful visions. At one time, suspended by a thread at the top of a high mountain, with my head down over a bottomless abyss; at another, surrounded by merciless enemies, whose daggers and swords were plunged through my body. But these were of short duration, though they have left such an impression on my mind that I still remember the minutest details. Death had at first no terror for me. I had done to the best of my ability, all that my Church had told me to do to be saved. I had, every day, given my last cent to the poor, fasted and done penance almost enough to kill myself, made my confessions with the greatest care and sincerity, preached with such zeal and earnestness as to fill the whole city with admiration.

One after the other, all the saints of heaven, beginning with the Holy Virgin Mary, were invoked by me that they might pray God to look down upon me in mercy and save my soul.

On the thirteenth night, as the doctors were retiring, they whispered to the Revs. Bailargeon and Parent, who were at my bedside: "He is dead or, if not, he has only a few minutes to live. He is already cold and breathless, and we cannot feel his pulse." Though these words had been said in a very low tone, they fell on my ears as a peal of thunder. The two young priests, who were my devoted friends, filled the room with such

cries that the curate and priest who had gone to rest, rushed to my room and mingled their tears and cries with theirs.

The words of the doctor, "He is dead !" were ringing in my ears as the voice of a hurricane ; I suddenly saw that I was in danger of being buried alive ; no words can express the sense of horror I felt at that idea. A cold, icy wave began to move slowly, but it seemed to me with irresistible force, from the extremities of my feet and hands towards the heart, as the first symptoms of approaching death. At that moment I made a great effort to see what hope I might have of being saved, invoking the help of the blessed Virgin Mary. With lightning rapidity, a terrible vision struck my mind ; I saw all my good works and penances, in which my Church had told me to trust for salvation, in the balance of the justice of God. These were in one side of the scales, and my sins on the other. My good works seemed only as a grain of sand compared with the weight of my sins.

This awful vision entirely destroyed my false and pharisaical security and filled my soul with an unspeakable terror. I could not cry to Jesus Christ, nor to God, His Father, for mercy ; for I sincerely believed what my Church had taught me on that subject, that they were both angry with me on account of my sins. With much anxiety I turned my thoughts, my soul and hopes, towards St. Anne and St. Philomene. The first was the object of my confidence since the first time I had seen the numberless crutches and other "*Ex Votos*" which covered the Church of "La Bonne St. Anne du Nord," and the second was the saint *à la mode*. It was said that her body had lately been miraculously discovered, and the world was filled with the noise of the miracles wrought through her intercession. Her medals were on every breast, her pictures in every house, and her name on all lips. With entire confidence in the will and power of these two saints to obtain any favour for me, I invoked them to pray God to grant me a few years more of life ; and with the utmost honesty of purpose, I promised to add to my penances, and live a more holy life, by consecrating myself with more zeal than ever to the service of the poor and sick. I added to my former prayer the solemn promise to have a painting of the two saints put in St. Anne's Church, to proclaim to the end of the world their great power in heaven, if they would obtain my cure and restore my health. Strange to say ! The last words of my prayer were scarcely uttered when I saw above my head St. Anne and St. Philomene sitting in the midst of a great light, on a beautiful golden cloud. St. Anne was very old and grave, but St. Philomene was very young and beautiful. Both were looking at me with great kindness.

However, the kindness of St. Anne was mixed with such an air of awe and gravity that I did not like her looks ; while St. Philomene had such an expression of superhuman love and kindness that I felt myself drawn to her by a magnetic power, when she said distinctly : "You will be cured," and the vision disappeared.

But I was cured, perfectly cured ! At the disappearance of the two saints I felt as though an electric shock went through my whole frame ; the pains were gone, the tongue was untied, the nerves were restored to their natural and usual power ; my eyes were opened, the old icy waves which were fast going from the extremities to the regions of my heart, seemed to be changed into a most pleasant warm bath, restoring life and strength to every part of my body. I raised my head, stretched out my hands, which I had not moved for three days, and looking around I saw four priests. I said to them, "I am cured, please give me something to eat, I am hungry."

Astonished beyond measure, two of them threw their arms around my shoulders to help me to sit a moment, and change my pillow ; when two others ran to the table which the kind nuns of Quebec had covered with delicacies in case I might want them. Their joy was mixed with fear, for they all confessed to me afterwards that they had at once thought that all this was nothing but the last brilliant flash of light which the flickering lamp gives before dying away. But they soon changed their minds when they saw I was eating ravenously, and that I was speaking to them and thanking God with a cheerful though very feeble voice.

"What does this mean ?" they all said. "The doctors told us last evening that you were dead ; and we have passed the night not only weeping over your death, but praying for your soul, to rescue it from the flames of purgatory, and now you look so hungry, so cheerful and well !"

I answered : "It means that I was not dead, but very near dying, and when I felt I was to die, I prayed to St. Anne and St. Philomene to come to my help and cure me : and they have come. I have seen them both, there above my head. Ah ! if I were a painter, what a beautiful picture I could make of that dear old St. Anne and the still dearer Philomene ! for it is St. Philomene who has spoken to me as the messenger of the mercies of God. I have promised to have their portraits painted and put into the church of the Good St. Anne du Nord. While I was speaking thus, the priests, filled with admiration and awe, were mute ; they could not speak, except with tears of gratitude. They honestly believed, with me, that my cure, was miraculous, and consented with pleasure to sing that beautiful hymn of gratitude, the "Te Deum."

To give an idea of the kind interest of the numberless friends whom God had given me when in Quebec, I will relate a single fact. The citizens who were near our parsonage having been told by a physician that the inflammation of my brain was so terrible, that the least noise, even the passing of carriages or the walking of horses on the streets, was causing me real torture, they immediately covered all the surrounding streets with several inches of straw, to prevent the possibility of any noise.

The physicians, having heard of my sudden cure, hastened to come and see what it meant. At first, they could scarcely believe their eyes. The night before they had given me up for

dead, after thirteen days' suffering with the most horrible and incurable of diseases ! And there I was, the very next morning perfectly cured ! No more pain, not the least remnant of fever, all the faculties of my body and mind perfectly restored !

They minutely asked me all the circumstances connected with that strange, unexpected cure ; and I told them simply but plainly how, at the very moment I expected to die, I had fervently prayed to St. Anne and St. Philomene, and how they had come, spoken to me and cured me.

Two of my physicians were Roman Catholics and three Protestants. They at first looked at each other without saying a word. It was evident they were not all partakers of my strong faith in the power of the two saints. While the Roman Catholic doctors, Messrs. Parent and Rousseau, seemed to believe in my miraculous cure, the Protestants energetically protested against that view in the name of science and common sense.

Dr. Douglas put me the following questions, and received the following answers. He said :

"Dear Father Chiniquy, you know you have not a more devoted friend in Quebec than I, and you know me too well to suspect that I want to hurt your religious feelings when I tell you that there is not the least appearance of a miracle in your so happy and sudden cure. If you will be kind enough to answer my questions, you will see that you are mistaken in attributing to a miracle a thing which is most common and natural. Though you are perfectly cured, you are very weak ; please answer only 'yes' or 'no' to my questions, in order not to exhaust yourself. Will you be so kind as to tell us if this is the first vision you have had during the period of that terrible fever ?"

ANSWER. I have had many other visions, but I took them as being the effect of the fever.

DOCTOR. Please make your answers shorter, or else I will not ask you another question, for it would hurt you. Tell us simply if you have not seen in those visions, at times, very frightful and terrible, and, at others, very beautiful things ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. Have not those visions stamped themselves on your mind with such power and vividness that you never forget them, and that you deem them more realities than mere visions of a sickly brain ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. Did you not feel sometimes much worse, and sometimes much better, after those visions, according to their nature ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. When at ease in your mind during that disease, were you not used to pray to the saints, particularly to St. Anne and St. Philomene ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. When you considered that death was very near (and it was indeed), when you heard my imprudent sentence,

that you had only a few minutes to live, were you not taken suddenly by such a fear of death as you never felt before ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. Did you not then make a great effort to repel death from you ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

DOCTOR. Do you know that you are a man of an exceedingly strong will, and that very few men can resist you when you want to do something ? Do you not know that your will is such an exceptional power that mountains of difficulties have disappeared before you, here in Quebec ? Have you not seen even me, with many others, yielding to your will almost in spite of ourselves, to what you wanted ? With a smile, I answered, "Yes, sir."

DOCTOR. Do you not know that the will—or, if you like it better, the soul—has a real, mysterious, and sometimes an irresistible power over the body, to silence its passions, calm its sufferings, and really heal its diseases, particularly when they are of a nervous nature, and in all cases of fever ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir ! I know that.

DOCTOR. Do you not remember seeing, many times, people suffering dreadfully from toothache, coming to us to have their teeth extracted, who were suddenly cured at the sight of the lancets and other surgical instruments we put upon the table for use ?

I answered with a laugh, "Yes, sir. I have seen that very often, and it has occurred to me once."

DOCTOR. Do you think that there was a supernatural power, then, in the surgical instruments, and that those sudden cures of toothache were miraculous ?

ANSWER. No, sir.

DOCTOR. Have you not read the volume of the Medical Directory I lent you on typhoid fever, where several cures exactly like yours are reported ?

ANSWER. Yes, sir.

Then addressing the physicians, Doctor Douglas said to them : "We must not exhaust our dear Father Chiniquy. We are too happy to see him full of life again, but from his answers you understand that there is no miracle here. His happy and sudden cure is a very natural and common thing. The vision was what we call the turning-point of the disease, when the mind is powerfully bent on some very exciting object, when that mysterious thing of which we know so little as yet, called the will, the spirit, the soul, fights as a giant against death, in which battle, pains, diseases, and even death, are put to flight and conquered.

"My dear Father Chiniquy from your own lips, we have it : you have fought, last night, the fever and approaching death, as a giant. No wonder that you won the victory, and, I confess, it is a great victory. I know it is not the first victory that you have gained, and I am sure it will not be the last. It is surely God who has given you that irresistible will. In that sense only

does your cure come from Him. Continue to fight and conquer as you have done last night, and you will live a long life. Death will long remember its defeat of last night, and will not dare approach you any more, except when you will be so old that you will ask it to come as a friend to put an end to the miseries of this present life. Good-bye."

And with friendly smiles, all the doctors pressed my hand and left me just as the bishop and the curate of Quebec, Mons. Baillargeon, my confessor, were entering the room.

An old proverb says, "There is nothing so difficult as to persuade a man who does not want to be persuaded." Though the reasoning and kind words of the doctor ought to have been gladly listened to by me, they had only bothered me. It was infinitely more pleasant, and it seemed then more agreeable to God, and more according to my faith in the power of the saints in heaven, to believe that I had been miraculously cured. Of course, the bishop, with his coadjutor and my Lord Turgeon, as well as my confessor, with the numberless priests and Roman Catholics who visited me during my convalescence, confirmed me in my views.

Three months after my recovery, I was at the parsonage of the curate of St. Anne, the Rev. Mr. Ranvoize, a relative of mine. He was about 65 years of age, very rich, and had a magnificent library. When young, he had enjoyed the reputation of being one of the best preachers in Canada.

Never had I been so saddened and scandalised as I was by him on this occasion. It was evening when I arrived with my tableau. As soon as we were left alone, the old curate said: "Is it possible, my dear young cousin, that you will make such a fool of yourself to-morrow? That so-called miraculous cure is nothing but '*naturæ suprema vis*,' as the learned of all ages have called it. Your so-called vision was a dream of your sickly brain, as it generally occurs in the moment of supreme crisis of the fever. It is what is called 'the turning point' of the disease, when a desperate effort of nature kills or cures the patient. As for the vision of that beautiful girl, whom you call St. Philomene, who has done you so much good, she is not the first girl, surely, who has come to you in your dreams, and done you good!" At these words he laughed so heartily that I feared he would split his sides. Twice he repeated this unbecoming joke.

I was, at first, so shocked at this unexpected rebuke, which I considered as bordering on blasphemy, that I came very near taking my hat without answering a word, to go and spend the night at his brother's; but after a moment's reflection I said to him:

"How can you speak with such levity on so solemn a thing? Do you not believe in the power of the saints, who being more holy and pure than we are, see God face to face, speak to Him and obtain favours which He would refuse us rebels? Are you not the daily witness of the miraculous cures wrought in your own church, under your own eyes? Why those thousands

of crutches which literally cover the walls of your church ?”

My strong faith, and the earnestness of my appeal to the daily miracles of which he was the witness, and above all, the mention of the numberless crutches suspended all over the walls of his church, brought again from him such a Homeric laugh, that I was disconcerted and saddened beyond measure. I remained absolutely mute: I wished I had never come into such company.

When he had laughed at me to his heart's content, he said: “My dear cousin, you are the first one to whom I speak in this way. I do it because, first: I consider you are a man of intelligence, and hope you will understand me. Secondly: because you are my cousin. Were you one of those idiotic priests, real blockheads, who form the clergy to-day; or, were you a stranger to me, I would let you go your way, and believe in those ridiculous, degrading superstitions of our ignorant and blind people, but I know you from your infancy, and I have known your father, who was one of my dearest friends: the blood which flows in your veins passes thousands of times every day through my heart. You are very young and I very old. It is a duty of honour and conscience in me to reveal to you a thing which I have thought better to keep till now a secret between God and myself. I have been here more than thirty years, and though the country is constantly filled with the noise of the great and small miracles wrought in my church every day, I am ready to swear before God, and to prove to any man of common sense, that not a single miracle has been wrought in my church since I have come here. Every one of the facts given to the Canadian people as miraculous cures, are sheer impositions, deceptions, the work of either fools, or the work of skilful impostors and hypocrites, whether priests or laymen. Believe me, my dear cousin, I have studied carefully the history of all these crutches. Ninety-nine out of a hundred have been left by poor lazy beggars, who, at first, thought with good reason that by walking from door to door with one or two crutches, they would create more sympathy and bring more into their purses; for how many will indignantly turn out of doors a lazy, strong and healthy beggar, who will feel compassion, and give largely to a man who is crippled, unable to work, and forced to drag himself painfully on crutches? Those crutches are then passports from door to door. They are the very keys to open both the hearts and purses. But the day comes when that beggar has bought a pretty good farm with his stolen alms; or when he is really tired, disgusted with his crutches and wants to get rid of them! How can he do that without compromising himself?

“By a miracle! Then, he will sometimes travel again hundreds of miles from door to door, begging as usual, but this time he asks the prayers of the whole family, saying: ‘I am going to the good St. Anne du Nord to ask her to cure my leg (or legs). I hope she will cure me, as she has cured so many others; I have great confidence in her power!’ Each one gives

twice, nay, ten times as much as before to the poor cripple, making him promise that if he is cured, he will come back and show himself, that they may bless St. Anne with him. When he arrives here, he gives me sometimes one, sometimes five dollars to say mass for him. I take the money, for I would be a fool to refuse it when I know that his purse has been so well filled. During the celebration of the mass, when he receives the communion, I hear generally a great noise, cries of joy ! ' A miracle ! A miracle ! ! ' The crutches are thrown on the floor, and the cripple walks as well as you or I ! And the last act of that religious comedy is the most lucrative one, for he fulfils his promise of stopping at every house he had ever been seen at with his crutches. He narrates how he was miraculously cured, how his feet and legs became suddenly all right. Tears of joy and admiration flow from every eye. The last cent of that family is generally given to the impostor, who soon grows rich at the expense of his dupes. This is the plain but true story of ninety-nine out of every hundred of the cures wrought in my church. The hundreth, is upon people as honest, but, pardon me the expression, as blind and superstitious as you are ; they are really cured, for they were really sick. But their cures are the natural effects of the great effort of the will. It is the result of a happy combination of natural causes which work together on the frame, and kill the pain, expel the disease and restore the health, just as I was cured of a most horrible toothache, some years ago. In the paroxysm I went to the dentist and requested him to extract the affected tooth. Hardly had his surgical instruments come before my eyes than the pain disappeared. I quietly took my hat and left, bidding a hearty 'good-bye' to the dentist, who laughed at me every time we met, to his heart's content.

" One of the weakest points of our religion is in the ridiculous, I venture to say, diabolical miracles, performed and believed every day among us, with the so-called relics and bones of the saints.

" But, don't you know that, for the most part, these relics are nothing but chickens' or sheep's bones. And what could I not say, were I to tell you what I know of the daily miraculous impostures of the scapulars, holy water, chaplets and medals of every kind. Were I a pope, I would throw all these mummeries, which come from paganism, to the bottom of the sea, and would present to the eyes of the sinners, nothing but Christ and Him crucified as the object of their faith, invocation and hope, for this life and the next, just as the Apostles Paul, Peter and James do in their Epistles."

I cannot repeat here all that I heard that night from that old relative, against the miracles, relics, scapulars, purgatory, false saints, and ridiculous practices of the Church of Rome. It would take too long, for he spoke three hours as a real Protestant. Sometimes what he said seemed to me according to common sense, but as it was against the practices of my Church and against my personal practices, I was exceedingly scanda-

lised and pained, and not at all convinced. I pitied him for having lost his former faith and piety. I told him at the end, without ceremony: "I heard, long ago, that the bishops did not like you, but I knew not why. However, if they could hear what you think and say about the miracles of St. Anne, they would surely interdict you."

"Will you betray me?" he added, "and will you report our conversation to the bishop?"

"No, my cousin," I replied, "I would prefer to be burned to ashes. I will not sell your kind hospitality for the traitor's money."

It was two o'clock in the morning when we parted to go to our sleeping rooms. But that night was again a sleepless one to me. Was it not too sad and strange for me to see that that old and learned priest was secretly a Protestant!

The next morning, the crowds began to arrive, not by hundreds, but by thousands, from the surrounding parishes. The channel between "L'Isle D'Orleans" and St. Anne was literally covered with boats of every size, laden with men and women who wanted to hear from my own lips the history of my miraculous cure, and see with their own eyes the picture of the two saints who had appeared to me. At 10 a.m., more than 10,000 people were crowded inside and outside the walls of the church.

No words can give an idea of my emotion and of the emotion of the multitude when, after telling them in a simple and plain way, what I then considered a miraculous fact, I disclosed the picture, and presented it to their admiration and worship. There were tears rolling on every cheek, and cries of admiration and joy from every lip.

The picture represented me dying in my bed of suffering, and the two saints seen at a distance above me and stretching their hands as if to say: "You will be cured." It was hung on the walls, in a conspicuous place, where thousands and thousands have come to worship it from that day to the year 1858, when the curate was ordered by the bishop to burn it, for it had pleased our merciful God that very year to take away the scales which were on my eyes and show me His saving light, and I had published all over Canada my terrible, though unintentional error in believing in that false miracle. I was so honest in my belief in a miraculous cure; and the apparition of the two saints had left such an impression on my mind that, I confess it to my shame, the first week after my conversion, I very often said to myself: "How is it that I now believe that the Church of Rome is false, when such a miracle has been wrought on me as one of her priests?"

But our God, whose mercies are infinite, knowing my honesty when a slave of Popery, was determined to give me the full understanding of my errors in this way.

About a month after my conversion, in 1858, I had to visit a dying Irish convert from Romanism, who had caught in Chicago the same fever which so nearly killed me at the Marine

Hospital at Quebec. I again caught the disease, and during twelve days passed through the same tortures and suffered the same agonies as in 1837. But this time, I was really happy to die ; there was no fear for me to see the good works as a grain of sand in my favour, and the mountains of my iniquities in the balance of God against me. I just had given up my pharisaical holiness of old ; it was no more in my good works, my alms, my penances, my personal efforts, I was trusting to be saved ; it was in Jesus alone. My good works were no more put by me in the balance of the justice of God to pay my debts, and to appeal for mercy. It was the blood of Jesus, the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world for me, which was in the balance. It was the tears of Jesus, the nails, the crown of thorns, the heavy cross, the cruel death of Jesus only, which was there to pay my debts and to cry for mercy. I had no fear then, for I knew that I was saved by Jesus, and that that salvation was a perfect act of His love, His mercy, and His power ; consequently I was glad to die.

But when the doctor had left me, the thirteenth day of my sufferings, saying the very same words of the doctors of Quebec : " He has only a few minutes to live, if he be not already dead," the kind friends who were around my bed, filled the room with their cries ! Although for three or four days I had not moved a finger, said a single word, or given any sign of life, I was perfectly conscious. I had heard the words of the doctor, and I was glad to exchange the miseries of this short life for that eternity of glory which my Saviour had bought for me. I only regretted to die before bringing more of my dear countrymen out of the idolatrous religion of Rome, and from the lips of my soul, I said : " Dear Jesus, I am glad to go with Thee just now, but if it be Thy will to let me live a few years more, that I may spread the light of the Gospel among my countrymen ; grant me to live a few years more, and I will bless Thee eternally, with my converted countrymen, for Thy mercy. This prayer had hardly reached the mercy-seat, when I saw a dozen bishops marching towards me, sword in hand, to kill me. As the first sword raised to strike was coming down to split my head, I made a desperate effort, wrenched it from the hand of my would-be murderer, and struck such a blow on his neck that the head rolled down to the floor. The second, third, fourth, and so on to the last, rushed to kill me ; but I struck such terrible blows on the necks of every one of them, that twelve heads were rolling on the floor and swimming in a pool of blood. In my excitement I cried to my friends around me : " Do you not see the heads rolling and the blood flowing on the floor ? "

And suddenly I felt a kind of electric shock from head to foot. I was cured ! perfectly cured ! ! I asked my friends for something to eat ; I had not taken any food for twelve days. And with tears of joy and gratitude to God, they complied with my request.

CHAPTER XXXI.

Degradation and Ruin of Beauport through Drunkenness.

ON the 21st September, 1838, I received a letter from my bishop appointing me curate of Beauport. That parish, which is a kind of suburb of Quebec, was considered the very nest of the drunkards of Canada. With a soil of unsurpassed fertility, the people of Beauport were, nevertheless, classed among the poorest, most ragged, and wretched people of Canada. For almost every cent they were getting at the market went into the hands of the saloon-keepers.

Hundreds of times I had seen the streets which led from St. Roch to the upper town of Quebec almost impassable, when the drunkards of Beauport were leaving the market to go home. How many times I heard them fill the air with their cries and blasphemies, and saw the streets reddened with their blood when fighting with one another like mad dogs !

The Rev. Mr. Begin, who was their curé since 1825, had accepted the moral principles of the great Roman Catholic theologian, Liguori, who says "that a man is not guilty of the sin of drunkenness so long as he can distinguish between a small pin and a load of hay." Of course the people would not find themselves guilty of sin so long as their eyes could make that distinction.

After weeping to my heart's content at the reading of the letter from my bishop, which had come to me as a thunderbolt, my first thought was that my misfortune, though very great, was not irretrievable. I knew that there were many priests who were as anxious to become curates of Beauport as I was opposed to it.

I immediately went to the palace, and did all in my power to persuade his lordship to select another priest for Beauport. He listened to my arguments with a great deal of patience and kindness, and answered: "My dear Mr. Chiniquy, you forget too often that 'implicit and perfect obedience' to his superiors is the virtue of a good priest ! You have given me a great deal of trouble and disappointment by refusing to relieve the good bishop Provencher of his too heavy burden. It was at my suggestion, you know very well, that he had selected you to be his co-worker along the coasts of the Pacific, by consenting to become the first Bishop of Oregon. Your obstinate resistance to your superiors in that circumstance, and in several other cases, is one of your weak points. If you continue to follow your own mind rather than obey those whom God has chosen to guide you, I really fear for your future. I have already too often yielded to your rebellious character. Through respect to myself, and for your own good, to-day I must force you to obey me. You have spoken of the drunkenness of the people of Beauport, as one of the reasons why I should not put you at the head of that parish ; but this is just one of the reasons why I have chosen you. You are the only priest in my diocese

able to struggle against the long-rooted and detestable evil with a hope of success.

Though far from being reconciled to my new position, I saw there was no help ; I had to obey. As my predecessor, Mr. Begin, was to sell all his house furniture, before taking charge of his far distant parish, La Riviere Guelle, he kindly invited me to go and buy, on long credit, what I wished for my own use, which I did. The whole parish was on the spot long before me, partly to show their friendly sympathy for their last pastor, and partly to see their new curate. I was not long in the crowd without seeing that my small stature and my leanness were making a very bad impression on the people, who were accustomed to pay their respects to a comparatively tall man, whose large square shoulders were putting me in the shade.

"He is hardly bigger than my tobacco-box," said one not far from me: "I think I could put him in my vest pocket."

"Has he not got the appearance of a salted sardine!" whispered a woman to her neighbour, with a hearty laugh.

Had I been a little wiser, I could have redeemed myself by some amiable or funny words, which would have sounded pleasantly in the ears of my new parishioners.

But, unfortunately for me, that wisdom is not among the gifts I received from nature. After a couple of hours of auction, a large cloth was suddenly removed from a long table, and presented to our sight an incredible number of wine and beer glasses, of empty decanters and bottles of all sizes and quality.

This brought a burst of laughter and clapping of hands from almost everyone. All eyes were turned towards me, and I heard from hundreds of lips: "This is for you, Mr. Chiniquy."

Without weighing my words, I instantly answered: "I do not come to Beauport to buy wine glasses and bottles, but to break them."

These words fell upon their ears as a spark of fire on a train of powder. Nine-tenths of that multitude, without being very drunk, had emptied from four to ten glasses of beer, or rum, which the Rev. Mr. Begin himself was offering them in a corner of the parsonage. A real deluge of insults and cursings overwhelmed me; and I soon saw that the best thing I could do was to leave the place without noise, and by the shortest way.

I immediately went to the bishop's palace, to try again to persuade his lordship to put another curate at the head of such a people.

"You see, my lord," I said, "that by my indiscreet and rash answer I have for ever lost the respect and confidence of that people. They already hate me; their brutal cursings have fallen upon me like balls of fire. I prefer to be carried to my grave next Sabbath, than to have to address such degraded people. I feel that I have neither the moral or the physical power to do any good there."

"I differ from you," replied the bishop. "Evidently the people wanted to try your mettle, by inviting you to buy those glasses, and you would have lost yourself by yielding to their desire."

Now they have seen that you are brave and fearless. It is just what the people of Beauport want ; I have known them for a long time. It is true that they are drunkards ; but, apart from that vice, there is not a nobler people under heaven. They have, literally, no education, but they possess marvellous common sense, and have many noble and redeeming qualities, which you will soon find out. You took them by surprise when you boldly said you wanted to break their glasses and decanters. Believe me, they will bless you if, by the grace of God, you fulfil your prophecy ; though it will be a miracle if you succeed in making the people of Beauport sober. But you must not despair. Trust in God ; fight as a good soldier, and Jesus Christ will win the victory.

Those kind words of my bishop did me good, though I would have preferred being sent to the back woods of Canada, than to the great parish of Beauport. I felt that the only thing that I had to do was to trust in God for success, and to fight as if I were to gain the day. It came to my mind that I had committed a great sin by obstinately refusing to become Bishop of Oregon, and my God, as a punishment, had given me the very parish for which I felt an almost insurmountable repugnance.

Next Sunday was a splendid day, and the church of Beauport was filled to its utmost capacity by the people, eager to see and hear, for the first time, their new pastor.

I had spent the last three days in prayers and fastings. God knows that never a priest, nor any minister of the Gospel, ascended the pulpit with more exalted views of his sublime functions than I did that day, and never a messenger of the Gospel had been more terrified than I was, when in that pulpit, by the consciousness of his own demerits, inability, and incompetency, in the face of tremendous responsibilities of his position. My first sermon was on the text : " Woe unto me if I preach not the Gospel " (I. Cor. 9 : 16). With a soul and heart filled with the profoundest emotions, a voice many times suffocated by uncontrollable sobs, I expounded to them some of the awful responsibilities of a pastor.

After the sermon, I told them : " I have a favour to ask of you. As it is the first, I hope you will not rebuke me. I have just now given you some of the duties of your poor young curate towards you ; I want you to come again this afternoon at half-past two o'clock, that I may give you some of your duties towards your pastor."

At the appointed hour the church was still more crowded than in the morning, and it seemed to me that my merciful God blessed still more that second address than the first.

The text was : " When he (the shepherd) putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice " (John 10 : 4).

Those two sermons on the Sabbath were a startling innovation in the Roman Catholic Church in Canada, which brought upon me, at once, many bitter remarks from the bishop and surrounding curates. Their unanimous verdict was that I wanted

to become a little reformer. They had not the least doubt that in my pride I wanted to show to the people "that I was the most zealous priest of the country." This was not only whispered from ear to ear among the clergy, but several times it was thrown into my face in the most insulting manner. However, my God knew that my only motives were, first, to keep my people away from the taverns, by having them before their altars during the greatest part of the Sabbath day; second, to impress more on their minds the great saving and regenerating truths I preached, by presenting them twice on the same day under different aspects.

I found such benefits from those two sermons, that I continued the practice during the four years I remained in Beauport, though I had to suffer and hear in silence many humiliating and cutting remarks from many co-priests. I had not been more than three months at the head of that parish, when I determined to organise a temperance society on the same principles as Father Mathew, in Ireland. I opened my mind, at first, on that subject to the bishop, with the hope that he would throw the influence of his position in favour of the new association, but to my great dismay and surprise, not only did he turn my project into ridicule, but absolutely forbade me to think any more of such an innovation.

"These temperance societies are a Protestant scheme," he said: "Preach against drunkenness, but let the respectable people who are not drunkards alone."

I left the bishop, much disappointed, but did not give up my plan. It seemed to me if I could gain the neighbouring priests to join with me in my crusade I wanted to preach against the usage of intoxicating drinks, we might bring about a glorious reform. But the priests, without exception, laughed at me, turned my plans into ridicule, and requested me, in the name of common sense, never to speak to them of giving up their social glass of wine.

I shall never be able to give any idea of my sadness, when I saw that I was to be opposed by my bishop and the whole clergy in the reform which I considered then, more and more every day, the only plank of salvation, not only of my dear people of Beauport, but of all Canada. I had recourse to all the saints of heaven for more strength and light; for I was determined, at any cost, to try and form a temperance society.

But every time I wanted to begin, I was frightened by the idea, not only of the wrath of the whole clergy, which would hunt me down, but still more of the ridicule of the whole country, which would overwhelm me in case of a failure. In these perplexities, I thought I would do well to write to Father Mathew and ask his advice and the help of his prayers. That noble apostle of temperance in Ireland answered me in an eloquent letter, and pressed me to begin the work in Canada as he had done in Ireland, relying on God, without paying any attention to the opposition of man.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The Hand of God in the Establishment of the Temperance Society in Beauport and Vicinity.

I HAD hardly finished reading the letter of Ireland's Apostle of Temperance, when I fell on my knees and said: "Thou knowest, O my God, that I am nothing but a sinner. There is no light, no strength in Thy poor unprofitable servant. Therefore, come down into my heart and soul, to direct me in that temperance reform which Thou hast put into my mind to establish. Without Thee I can do nothing, but with Thee I can do all things."

This was on a Saturday night, March 20th, 1839. The next morning was the first Sabbath of Lent. I said to the people after the sermon: "I have told you, many times, that I sincerely believe it is my mission from God to put an end to the unspeakable miseries and crimes engendered every day, here and in our whole country, by the use of intoxicating drinks. Alcohol is the greatest enemy of your souls and your bodies. It is the most implacable enemy of your wives, your husbands and your children. It is the most formidable enemy of our dear country and our holy religion. I must destroy that enemy. But I cannot fight alone. I must form an army and raise a banner in your midst, around which all the soldiers of the Gospel will rally. Jesus Christ Himself will be our General. He will bless and sanctify us—He will lead us to victory. The next three days will be consecrated by you and by me in preparing to raise that army. Let all those who wish to fill its ranks come and pass these three days with me in prayer and meditation at the feet of our sacred altars. Let even those who do not want to be soldiers of Christ, or to fight the great and glorious battles which are to be fought, come through curiosity to see a most marvellous spectacle. I invite every one of you, in the name of our Saviour, Jesus Christ, whom alcohol nails anew to the cross every day. I invite you in the name of the holy Virgin Mary, and of all the saints and angels of God, who are weeping in heaven for the crimes committed every day by the use of intoxicating drinks. I invite you in the names of the wives whom I see here in your midst, weeping because they have drunkard husbands. I invite you to come in the names of the fathers whose hearts are broken by drunkard children. I invite you to come in the name of so many children who are starving, naked, and made desolate by their drunken parents. I invite you to come in the name of your immortal souls, which are to be eternally damned if the giant destroyer, Alcohol, be not driven from our midst."

The next morning, at eight o'clock, my church was crammed by the people. My first address was at half-past eight o'clock, the second at 10.30 a.m., the third at 2 p.m., and the fourth at 5 p.m. The intervals between the addresses were filled by beautiful hymns selected for the occasion. Many times during

my discourse the sobs and the cries of the people were such that I had to stop speaking, to mix my sobs and my tears with those of my people. That first day seventy-five men, from among the most desperate drunkards, enrolled themselves under the banner of Temperance. The second day I gave again four addresses, the effects of which were still more blessed in their result. Two hundred of my dear parishioners were enrolled in the grand army which was to fight against their implacable enemy.

But it would require the hand of an angel to write the history of the third day, at the end of which, in the midst of tears, sobs, and cries of joy, three hundred more of that noble people swore, in the presence of their God, never to touch, taste, nor handle the cursed drinks with which Satan inundates the earth with desolation, and fills hell with eternal cries of despair. During these three days more than two-thirds of my people had publicly taken the pledge of temperance, and had solemnly said in the presence of God, at the foot of their altars: "For the love of Jesus Christ, and by the grace of God, I promise that I will never take any intoxicating drink, except as a medicine. I also pledge myself to do all in my power, by my words and example, to persuade others to make the same sacrifice."

The majority of my people, among whom we counted the most degraded drunkards, were changed and reformed, not by me, surely, but by the visible direct work of the great and merciful God, who alone can change the heart of man.

As a great number of people from the surrounding parishes, and even from Quebec, had come to hear me the third day through curiosity, the news of that marvellous work spread very quickly throughout the whole country. The press, both French and English, were unanimous in their praises and felicitations. But when the Protestants of Quebec were blessing God for that reform, the French Canadians, at the example of their priests, denounced me as a fool and a heretic.

The second day of our revival I had sent messages to four of the neighbouring curates, respectfully requesting them to come and see what the Lord was doing, and help me bless Him. But they refused. The indignation of the bishop knew no bounds. A few days after, he ordered me to go to his palace and give an account of what he called my "strange conduct."

When alone with me, he said: "Is it possible, Mr. Chiniquy, that you have so soon forgotten my prohibition not to establish that ridiculous temperance society in your parish? Had you compromised yourself alone by that Protestant comedy—for it is nothing but that—I would remain silent, in my pity for you. But you have compromised our holy religion by introducing a society whose origin is clearly heretical. Last evening, the venerable Grand Vicar Demars told me that you would sooner or later become a Protestant, and that this was your first step. Do you not see that the Protestants only praise you? Do you not blush to be praised only by heretics? Without suspecting it, you are just entering a road which leads to your ruin. You

have publicly covered yourself with such ridicule that I fear your usefulness is at an end, not only in Beauport, but in all my diocese. I do not conceal from you: my first thought, when an eye-witness told me yesterday what you had done, was to interdict you. I have been prevented from taking that step only by the hope that you will undo what you have done. I hope that you yourself will dissolve that anti-Catholic association, and promise to put an end to these novelties, which have too strong a smell of heresy to be tolerated by your bishop."

I answered: "My lord, your lordship has not forgotten that it was absolutely against my own will that I was appointed curate of Beauport; and God knows that you have only to say a word, and, without a murmur, I will give you my resignation, that you may put a better priest at the head of that people, which I consider, and which is really, to-day the noblest and the most sober people of Canada. But I will put a condition to the resignation of my position. It is, that I will be allowed to publish before the world that the Rev. Mr. Begin, my predecessor, has never been troubled by his bishop for having allowed his people, during twenty-three years, to swim in the mire of drunkenness; and that I have been disgraced by my bishop, and turned out from that same parish, for having been the instrument, by the mercy of God, in making them the most sober people in Canada."

The poor bishop felt, at once, that he could not stand on the ground he had taken with me. He was a few moments without knowing what to say. He saw also that his threats had no influence over me, and that I was not ready to undo what I had done. After a painful silence of a minute or two, he said:

"Do you not see that the solemn promises you have extorted from those poor drunkards are rash and unwise; they will break them at the first opportunity? Their future state of degradation, after such excitement, will be worse than the first."

I answered: "I would partake of your fears if that change were my work; but as it is the Lord's work, we have nothing to fear. The works of men are weak and of short duration, but the works of God are solid and permanent."

"About the prophecy of the venerable Mr. Demars, that I have taken my first step towards Protestantism by turning a drunken into a sober people, I have only to say that if that prophecy be true it would show that Protestantism is more apt than our holy religion to work for the glory of God and the good of the people. I hope that your lordship is not ready to accept that conclusion. My only answer to the remarks of your lordship, that the Protestants alone praise me, when the Roman Catholic priests and people condemn me, proves only one thing—viz., that Protestants, on this question, understand the Word of God and have more respect for it than we Roman Catholics. It would prove also that they understand the interests of humanity better than we do, and that they have more generosity than we have, to sacrifice their selfish propensities to the good of all. I take the liberty of saying to your lord-

ship, that in this, as in many other things, it is high time that we should open our eyes to our false position. Instead of remaining at the lowest step of the ladder of one of the most Christian virtues, temperance, we must raise ourselves to the top, where Protestants are reaping so many precious fruits. Besides, would your lordship be kind enough to tell me why I am denounced and abused here, and by my fellow-priests, and my bishop, for forming a temperance society in my parish, when Father Mathew, who wrote me lately to encourage and direct me in that work, is publicly praised by his bishops and blessed by the Pope for covering Ireland with temperance societies ? ”

“ Is your lordship ready to prove to me that Samson was a heretic in the camp of Israel when he fulfilled the promise made by his parents that he would never drink any wine or beer ; and John the Baptist, was he not a heretic and Protestant, as I am, when, to obey the voice of God, he did what I do to-day, with my dear people of Beauport ? ”

At that very moment, the sub-secretary entered to tell the bishop that a gentleman wanted to see him immediately on pressing business, and the bishop dismissed me.

With the exception of the secretary, Mr. Cazeault, all the priests I met that day and the next month, either gave me the cold shoulder or overwhelmed me with their sarcasms. One of them who had friends in Beauport, was bold enough to try to go through the whole parish to turn me into ridicule by saying that I was half crazy. But at the third house he met a woman who, after listening to bad advice he was giving to her husband, said to him : “ I do not know if our pastor is a fool in making people sober, but I know you are a messenger of the devil, when you advise my husband to drink again. You know that he was one of the most desperate drunkards of Beauport. You personally know also what blows I have received from him when he was drunk ; how poor and miserable we were ; how my children had to run on the streets, half naked, and beg, in order not to starve with me ! Now that my husband has taken the pledge of temperance, we have every comfort ; my dear children are well fed and clothed, and I find myself as in a little paradise. If you do not go out of this house at once, I will turn you out with my broomstick.”

And she would have fulfilled her promise, had not the priest had the good sense to disappear at the double quick.

The next four months after the foundation of the society in Beauport, my position when with the other priests was very painful and humiliating. I consequently avoided their company as much as possible. And as for my bishop, I took the resolution never to go and see him, except he should order me into his presence. But my merciful God indemnified me by the unspeakable joy I had in seeing the marvellous change wrought by Him among my dear people. Their fidelity in keeping the pledge was really wonderful, and soon became the object of the admiration of the whole city of Quebec and the surrounding

country. The change was so sudden, so complete and so permanent, that the scoffing bishop and priests, with their friends, had, at last, to blush and be silent.

The public aspect of the Parish was soon changed, the houses were repaired, the debts paid, the children well clad. But what spoke most eloquently about the marvellous reform was that the seven thriving saloons of Beauport were soon closed, and their owners forced to take other occupations. Peace, happiness, abundance and industry everywhere took the place of riots, fightings, blasphemies, and the squalid misery which prevailed before. The gratitude and respect of that noble people for their young curate knew no bounds ; as my love and admiration for them cannot be told by human words.

However, though the great majority of that good people had taken the pledge, and kept it honourably, there was a small minority, composed of the few who never had been drunkards, who had not enrolled themselves under our blessed banners. Though they were glad of the reform, it was very difficult to persuade them to give up their social glass ! I thought it was my duty to show them, in a tangible way, what I had so often proved with my words only, that the drinking of the social glass of wine, or of beer, is an act of folly, if not a crime. I asked my kind and learned friend, Dr. Douglas, to analyse, before the people, the very wine and beer used by them, to show that it was nothing else but a disgusting and deadly poison. He granted my favour. During four days that noble philanthropist extracted the alcohol, which is not only in the most common, but in the most costly and renowned wines, beer, brandy and whisky. He gave the alcohol to several cats and dogs, which died in a few minutes in the presence of the whole people.

These learned and most interesting experiments, coupled with his eloquent and scientific remarks, made a most profound impression. It was the corner-stone of the holy edifice which our merciful God built with His own hands in Beauport.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Temperance Societies in the Neighbouring Parishes.

THE people of Beauport had scarcely been a year enrolled under the banners of temperance, when the seven thriving taverns of that parish were deserted and their owners forced to try some more honourable trade for a living. This fact, published by the whole press of Quebec, more than anything forced the opponents, especially among the clergy, to silence, without absolutely reconciling them to my views. However, it was becoming every day more and more evident to all that the good done in Beauport was incalculable, both in a material and moral point of view. Several of the best thinking people of the surrounding parishes began to say to one another: "Why should we not try to bring into our midst this temperance reformation which is doing so much good in Beauport?"

On a certain day, one unfortunate woman who had received, with a good education, a rich inheritance, which her husband had spent in dissipation, came to tell me that she had gone to her curate to ask him to establish a temperance society in his parish, as we had done in Beauport; but he had told her "to mind her own business." She had then respectfully requested him to invite me to come and help do for his parishioners what I had done for mine, but she had been sternly rebuked at the mention of my name. The poor woman was weeping when she said: "Is it possible that our priests are so indifferent to our sufferings, and that they will let the demon of drunkenness torture us as long as we live, when God gives us such an easy and honourable way to destroy his power for ever?"

My heart was touched by the tears of that lady, and I said to her: "I know a way to put an end to the opposition of your curate, and force him to bring among you the reformation you so much desire; but it is a very delicate matter for me to mention to you. I must rely upon your most sacred promise of secrecy before opening my mind to you on that subject."

"I take my God to witness," she answered, "that I will never reveal your secret." "Well, madam, if I can rely upon your discretion and secrecy, I will tell you an infallible way to force your priest to do what has been done here."

"Oh! for God's sake," she said, "tell me what to do."

I replied: "The first time you go to confession, say to your priest that you have a new sin to confess which is very difficult to reveal to him. He will press you more to confess it. You will then say: 'Father, I confess I have lost confidence in you.' Being asked 'Why?' you will answer him: 'Father, you know the bad treatment I have received from my drunken husband, as well as hundreds of other wives in your parish from theirs; you know the tears we have shed on the ruin of our children, who are destroyed by the bad examples of their drunken fathers; you know the daily crimes and unspeakable abominations caused by the use of intoxicating drinks; you could dry

our tears and make us happy wives and mothers, you could convert our husbands and save our children by establishing the society of temperance here as it is in Beauport, and you refuse to do it. How, then, can I believe you are a good priest, and that there is any charity or compassion in you for us ?”

“Listen with a respectful silence to what he will tell you ; accept his penance, and when he asks you if you regret that sin, answer him that you cannot regret it till he has taken the providential means which God offers him to convert the drunkards.”

“Get as many other women whom you know are suffering as you do, as you can, to go and confess to him the same thing ; and you will see that his obstinacy will melt as the snow before the rays of the sun.”

My conjectures were correct. The poor priest was beside himself when forced every day to hear from the very lips of his most respectable female parishioners, that they were losing confidence in him. He feared lest he should lose his fine parish near Quebec, and be sent to some of the backwoods of Canada.

Three weeks later he was knocking at my door, where he had not been since the establishment of the temperance society. He was very pale and looked anxious. I could see in his countenance that I owed the honour of his visit to his fair penitents. However, I was happy to see him. He was considered a good priest, and had been one of my best friends before the formation of the temperance society. I invited him to dine with me, and made him feel at home as much as possible, for I knew by his embarrassed manner that he had a very difficult proposition to make. I was not mistaken. He at last said :

“Mr. Chiniquy, we had, at first, great prejudices against your temperance society ; but we see its blessed fruits in the great transformation of Beauport. Would you be kind enough to preach a retreat of temperance, during three days, to my people, as you have done here ?”

I answered, “Yes, sir ; with the greatest pleasure. But it is on condition that you will yourself be an example of the sacrifice, and the first to take the solemn pledge of temperance, in the presence of your people.”

“Certainly,” he answered ; “for the pastor must be an example to his people.”

Three weeks later his parish had nobly followed the example of Beauport, and the good curate had no words to express his joy. Without losing a day, he went to the two other curates of what is called “La Cote de Beauprè,” persuaded them to do what he had done and, six weeks after, all the saloons from Beauport to St. Joachim were closed.

Little by little, the country priests were thus giving up their prejudices, and were bravely rallying around our glorious banners of temperance. But my bishop, though less severe, was still very cold towards me. At last the good providence of God forced him, through great humiliation, to count our society

among the greatest spiritual and temporal blessings of the age.

At the end of August, 1840, the public press informed us that the Count de Forbin Janson, Bishop of Nancy in France, was just leaving New York for Montreal. That bishop, who was cousin and minister of Charles the Tenth, had been sent into exile by the French people, after the king had lost his crown in the revolution of 1830. Father Mathew had told me, in one of his letters, that this bishop had visited him, and blessed his work in Ireland, and had also persuaded the Pope to send him his apostolic benediction.

I saw at once the importance of gaining the approbation of this celebrated man, before he had been prejudiced by the bishop against our temperance societies. I asked and obtained leave of absence for a few days and went to Montreal, which I reached just an hour after the French bishop. I went immediately to pay my homage to him, told him all about our temperance work, asking him, in the name of God, to throw bravely the weight of his great name and position in the scale in favour of our temperance societies. He promised he would, adding, "I am perfectly persuaded that drunkenness is not only the great and common sin of the people, but still more of the priests in America, as well as in Ireland. Father Mathew is doing an incalculable good in Ireland; and, be sure of it, I shall do all in my power to strengthen your hands in that great and good work."

Some days later, the Bishop of Nancy was in Quebec, the guest of the Seminary, and a grand dinner was given in his honour, to which more than one hundred priests were invited, with the Archbishop of Quebec, his coadjutor, N. G. Turgeon, and the Bishop of Montreal, M. Q. R. Bourget.

As one of the youngest curates, I had taken the last seat, which was just opposite the four bishops, from whom I was separated only by the breadth of the table. When the rich and rare viands had been well disposed of, and the most delicate fruits had replaced them, bottles of the choicest wines were brought on the table in incredible numbers. Then the superior of the college, the Rev. Mr. Demars, knocked on the table to command silence and, rising on his feet, he said at the top of his voice: "Please, my lord bishops, and all of you, reverend gentlemen, let us drink to the health of my Lord Count de Forbin Janson, Primate of Loraine and Bishop of Nancy."

The bottles passing around were briskly emptied in to the large glasses put before every one of the guests. But when the wine was handed to me I passed it to my neighbour without taking a drop, and filled my glass with water. My hope was that nobody had paid any attention to what I had done; but I was mistaken. The eyes of my bishop, my Lord Signale, were upon me. With a stern voice he said: "Mr. Chiniquy, what are you doing there? Put wine in your glass, to drink with us the health of Mgr. de Nancy."

These unexpected words fell upon me as a thunderbolt, and really paralysed me with terror. I felt the approach of the

most terrible tempest I had ever experienced. My blood ran cold in my veins ; I could not utter a word. For what could I say there, without compromising myself for ever ? To openly resist my bishop, in the presence of such an august assembly, seemed impossible. But to obey him was also impossible ; for I had promised God and my country never to drink any wine. I wished then I had followed my first impression, which was not to come to that dinner. I think I would have suffocated had not a few tears rolled down from my eyes and helped the circulation of my blood. The Rev. Mr. Lafrance, who was by me, nudged me, and said : "Do you not hear the order of my Lord Signaie ? Why do you not answer, by doing what you are requested to do ?" I still remained mute, just as if nobody had spoken to me. My eyes were cast down ; I wished then I were dead. The silence of death reigning around the tables told me that everyone was waiting for my answer ; but my lips were sealed. After a minute of that silence, which seemed as long as a whole year, the bishop, with a loud and angry voice which filled the large room, repeated : "Why do you not put wine in your glass, and drink to the health of my Lord Forbin Janson, as the rest of us are doing ?"

I felt I could not be silent any longer. "My lord," I said, with a subdued and trembling voice, "I have put in my glass what I want to drink. I have promised my God and my country that I would never drink any more wine."

The bishop, forgetting the respect he owed to himself and to those around him, answered me in the most insulting manner : "You are nothing but a fanatic, and you want to reform us."

These words struck me as the shock of a galvanic battery, and transformed me into a new man. It seemed as if they had added ten feet to my stature and a thousand pounds to my weight. I forgot that I was the subject of that bishop, and remembered that I was a man, in the presence of another man. I raised my head and opened my eyes, and as quick as lightning I rose to my feet, and, addressing the Grand Vicar Demars, superior of the seminary, I said with calmness : "Sir, was it that I might be insulted at your table that you have invited me here ? Is it not your duty to defend my honour when I am here, your guest ? But, as you seem to forget what you owe to your guests, I will take my own defence against my unjust aggressor." Then, turning towards the Bishop of Nancy, I said : "My Lord de Nancy, I appeal to your lordship from the unjust sentence of my own bishop. In the name of God, and of His Son Jesus Christ, I request you to tell us here if a priest cannot, for his Saviour's sake, and for the good of his fellow-men, as well as for his own self-denial, give up for ever the use of wine and intoxicating drinks, without being abused."

No words can give an idea of the excitement of every one in that multitude of priests, who, accustomed from their infancy abjectly to submit to their bishop, were, for the first time, in the presence of such a hand-to-hand conflict between a powerless young curate and his all-powerful archbishop.

The Bishop of Nancy at first refused to grant my request. He felt the difficulty of his position ; but after Bishop Signaie had united his voice to mine, to press him to give his verdict, he rose and said :

“ My Lord Archbishop of Quebec, and you, Mr. Chiniquy, please withdraw your request. Do not press me to give my views on such a new, but important subject.”

But when the same pressing request was repeated by nine-tenths of that vast assembly of priests ; and that the archbishop pressed him more and more to pronounce his sentence, he raised his eyes and hands to heaven, and made a silent but ardent prayer to God. His countenance took an air of dignity, which I might call majesty, which gave him more the appearance of an old prophet than a man of our day. Then casting his eyes upon his audience, he remained a considerable time meditating. All eyes were upon him, anxiously waiting for the sentence. At last he opened his lips, but it was again pressingly to request me to settle the difficulty with the archbishop among ourselves, and to discharge him of that responsibility. But we both refused again to grant him his request, and pressed him to give his judgment. All this time I was standing, having said that I would never sit again at that table unless the insult was wiped away.

Then he said with unspeakable dignity : “ My Lord of Quebec, here, before us, is our young priest, Mr. Chiniquy, who, once on his knees in the presence of God and His angels, for the love of Jesus Christ, the good of his own soul and the good of his country, has promised never to drink ! We are witness that he is faithful to his promise, though he had been pressed to break it by your lordship.”

“ And because he keeps his pledge with such heroism, your lordship has called him a fanatic ! Now, I am requested by every one here, to pronounce my verdict on that painful occurrence. Here it is. Mr. Chiniquy drinks no wine ! But, if I look through the past ages, when God Himself was ruling His own people, through His prophets, I see Samson, who, by the special order of God, never drank wine or any other intoxicating drink. If from the Old Testament I pass to the New, I see John the Baptist, the precursor of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who, to obey the command of God, never drank any wine. When I look at Mr. Chiniquy, and see Samson at his right hand to protect him, and John the Baptist at his left to bless him, I find his position so strong and impregnable that I would not dare to attack or condemn him ! ”

The poor Archbishop was completely confounded. Nobody thought of drinking his wine ; and the health of the Bishop de Nancy was left undrunk. But a good number of priests filled their glasses with water and, giving me a silent sign of approbation, drank to my health. The society of temperance had been dragged by her enemies to the battle-field to be destroyed ; but she bravely fought and gained the victory.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

The God of Rome Eaten by a Rat.

HAS God given us ears to hear, eyes to see, and intelligence to understand? The Pope says, no! But the Son of God says, yes. One of the most severe rebukes of our Saviour to His disciples, was for their not paying sufficient attention to what their eyes had seen, their ears heard, and their intelligence perceived. "Perceive ye not yet, neither understand? Have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not, having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?" (Mark 8: 17, 18).

The solemn appeal of our Saviour to our common sense, is the most complete demolition of the whole fabric of Rome. The day that a man ceases to believe that God would give us our senses and our intelligence to ruin and deceive us, but that they were given to guide us, he is lost to the Church of Rome. The Pope knows it; hence the innumerable encyclicals, laws and regulations by which the Roman Catholics are warned not to trust the testimony of their ears, eyes, or intelligence.

"Shut your eyes," says the Pope to his priests and people; "I will keep mine opened, and I will see for you. Shut your ears, for it is most dangerous for you to hear what is said in the world. I will keep my ears opened, and will tell you what you must know. Remember that to trust your own intelligence, in the research of truth, and the knowledge of the Word of God, is sure perdition. If you want to know anything, come to me: I am the only sure infallible fountain of truth," saith the Pope.

And this stupendous imposture is accepted by the people and the priests of Rome with a mysterious facility, and retained with a most desolating tenacity.

It is to them what the iron ring is to the nose of the ox, when a rope is tied to it. The poor animal loses its self-control. Its natural strength and energies will avail nothing; it must go left or right, at the will of the one who holds the end of the rope.

Reader, please have no contempt for the unfortunate priests and people of Rome, but pity them, when you see them walking in the ways into which intelligent beings ought not to take a step. They cannot help it. The ring of the ox is at their nose, and the Pope holds the end of the rope. Had it not been for that ring, I would not have been long at the feet of the wafer god of the Pope. Let me tell you one of the shining rays of truth, which were evidently sent by our merciful God, with a mighty power, to open my eyes. But I could not follow it; the iron ring was in my nose, and the Pope was holding the end of the rope.

This was after I had been put at the head of the magnificent parish of Beauport, in the Spring of 1840. There was living at "La Jeune Lorette," an old retired priest, who was blind. He was born in France where he had been condemned to death, under the Reign of Terror. Escaped from the guillotine, he

had fled to Canada, where the Bishop of Quebec had put him in the elevated post of Chaplain of the Ursuline Nunnery. He had a fine voice, was a good musician, and had some pretensions to the title of poet. Having composed a good number of Church hymns, he had been called "Père Cantique;" but his real name was "Père Daule." His faith and piety were of the most exalted character among the Roman Catholics; though these did not prevent him from being one of the most amiable and jovial men I ever saw. But his blue eyes, sweet as the eyes of the dove; his fine yellow hair falling on his shoulders as a golden fleece; his rosy cheeks, and his constantly smiling lips, had been too much for the tender hearts of the good nuns. It was not a secret that "Père Cantique," when young, had made several interesting conquests in the nunnery. There was no wonder at that. Indeed, how could that young and inexperienced butterfly escape damaging his golden wings, at the numberless burning lamps of the fair virgins? But the mantle of charity had been put on the wounds which the old warrior had received on that formidable battlefield, from which even the Davids, Samsons, Solomons, and many others had escaped only after being mortally wounded.

To help the poor blind priest, the curates around Quebec used to keep him by turn in their parsonage, and give him the care and marks of respect due to his old age. After the Rev. Mr. Roy, curate of Charlesbourg, had kept him five or six weeks, I had taken him into my parsonage. It was in the month of May—a month entirely consecrated to the worship of the Virgin Mary, to whom Father Daule was a most devoted priest. His zeal was really inexhaustible, when trying to prove to us how Mary was the surest foundation of the hope and salvation of sinners; how she was constantly appeasing the just wrath of her Son Jesus Christ, who, were it not for His love and respect for her, would have long since crushed us down.

The Councils of Rome have forbidden the blind priests to say their mass; but on account of high piety, he had got from the Pope the privilege of celebrating the short mass of the Virgin, which he knew perfectly by heart. One morning when the old priest was at the altar, saying his mass, and I was in the vestry, hearing the confessions of the people, the young servant boy came to me in haste, and said, "Father Daule calls you; please come quickly."

Fearing something wrong had happened to my old friend, I lost no time, and ran to him. I found him nervously tapping the altar with his own two hands, as in an anxious search of some very precious thing. When very near to him, I said: "What do you want?" He answered with a shriek of distress: "The Good God has disappeared from the altar. He is lost!" Hoping that he was mistaken, and that he had only thrown away the Good God, "*Le bon Dieu*," on the floor, by some accident, I looked on the altar, at his feet, everywhere I could suspect that the *Good God* might have been moved away by some mistake of the hand. But the most minute search was

of no avail; the Good God could not be found. I really felt stunned. At first, remembering the thousand miracles I had read of the disappearance, and marvellous changes of form of the wafer God, it came to my mind that we were in the presence of some great miracle; and that my eyes were to see some of these great marvels of which the books of the Church of Rome are filled. But I had soon to change my mind, when a thought flashed through my memory which chilled the blood in my veins. The church of Beauport was inhabited by a multitude of the boldest and most insolent rats I have ever seen. Many times, when saying my mass, I had seen the ugly noses of several of them, who, undoubtedly attracted by the smell of the fresh wafer, wanted to make their breakfast with the body, blood, soul, and divinity of Christ. But, as I was constantly in motion, or praying with a loud voice, the rats had invariably been frightened and fled away into their secret quarters. I felt terror-stricken by the thought that the Good God had been taken away and eaten by rats.

Father Daule so sincerely believed what all the priests of Rome are bound to believe, that he had the power to turn the wafer into God, that, after he had pronounced the words by which the great marvel was wrought, he used to pass from five to fifteen minutes in silent adoration. He was then as motionless as a marble statue, and his feelings were so strong that often torrents of tears used to flow from his eyes on his cheeks. Leaning my head towards the distressed old priest. I asked him: 'Have you not remained, as you are used, a long time motionless, in adoring the Good God, after consecration?'

He quickly answered, "Yes; but what has this to do with the loss of the Good God?"

I replied in a low voice, but with a real accent of distress and awe, "Some rats have dragged and eaten the Good God!"

"What do you say?" replied Father Daule. "The Good God carried away and eaten by rats!"

"Yes," I replied, "I have not the least doubt about it."

"My God! my God! what a dreadful calamity upon me!" rejoined the old man; and raising his hands and his eyes to heaven, he cried out again, "My God! my God! Why have you not taken away my life before such a misfortune could fall upon me!"

At first I did not know what to say: a thousand thoughts, some very grave, some exceedingly ludicrous, crossed my mind more rapidly than I can say them. I stood there, as if nailed to the floor, by the old priest, who was weeping like a child, till he asked me, with a voice broken by his sobs, "What must I do now?"

I answered him: "The Church has foreseen occurrences of that kind, and provided for them the remedy. The only thing you have to do is to get a new wafer, consecrate it, and continue your mass as if nothing strange had occurred. I will go and get you, just now, new bread."

I went, without losing a moment, to the vestry, got and

brought a new wafer, which he consecrated and turned into a new god, and finished his mass, as I had told him. After it was over, I took the disconsolate old priest by the hand to my parsonage for breakfast. But all along the way he rent the air with his cries of distress. He would hardly taste anything, for his soul was really drowned in a sea of distress. I vainly tried to calm his feelings, by telling him that it was no fault of his; that this strange and sad occurrence was not the first of its kind; that it had been calmly foreseen by the Church, which had told us what to do in these circumstances: that there was no neglect, no fault, no offence against God or man on his part. But as he would not pay the least attention to what I said, I felt the only thing I had to do was to remain silent and respect his grief, by telling him to unburden his heart by his tears.

At last I lost patience, and said: "My dear Father Daule, allow me to tell you respectfully that it is quite time to stop these lamentations and tears. Our great and just God cannot like such an excess of sorrow and regret about a thing which was only, and entirely, under the control of His power and eternal wisdom."

"What do you say there?" replied the old priest, with a vivacity which resembled anger.

"I say that, as it was not in your power to foresee or to avoid that occurrence, you have not the least reason to act or to speak as you do. Let us keep our regrets and our tears for our sins: we have both committed many; we cannot shed too many tears on them. But there is no sin here, and there must be some reasonable limits to our sorrow. If anybody had to weep and regret without measure what has happened, it would be Christ. For He alone could foresee that event, and He alone could prevent it. Had it been His will to oppose this sad and mysterious fact, it was in His, not in our power to prevent it. He alone has suffered from it, because it was His will to suffer it."

"Mr. Chiniquy," he replied, "you are quite a young man, and I see you have the want of attention and experience which are often seen among young priests. You do not pay sufficient attention to the awful calamity which has just occurred in your church. If you had more faith and piety you would weep with me, instead of laughing at my grief. How can you speak so lightly of a thing which makes the angels of God weep? Our dear Saviour dragged and eaten by rats! Oh! great God! does not this surpass the humiliation and horrors of Calvary?"

"My dear Father Daule," I replied, "allow me respectfully to tell you that I understand, as well as you do, the nature of the deplorable event of this morning. I would have given my blood to prevent it. But let us look at that fact in its proper light. It is not a moral action for us: it did not depend on our will more than the spots on the sun. The only one who is accountable for that fact is our God! For, again I say,

that He was the only one who could foresee and prevent it. And, to give you plainly my own mind, I tell you here that if I were God Almighty, and a miserable rat would come to eat me, I would strike him dead before he could touch me."

There is no need of confessing it here ; every one who reads these pages, and pays attention to this conversation, will understand that my former so robust faith in my priestly power of changing the wafer into my God had melted away and evaporated from my mind, if not entirely, at least to a great extent.

Great and new lights had flashed through my soul in that hour ; evidently my God wanted to open my eyes to the awful absurdities and impieties of a religion whose God could be dragged and eaten by rats. Had I been faithful to the saving lights which were in me then, I was saved in that very hour ; and before the end of that day I would have broken the shameful chains by which the Pope had tied my neck to his idol of bread. In that hour it seemed to me evident that the dogma of transubstantiation was a monstrous imposture, and my priesthood an insult to God and man.

My intelligence said to me with a thundering voice : "Do not remain any longer the priest of a god whom you make every day, and whom the rats can eat."

Though blind, Father Daule understood very well, by the stern accents of my voice, that my faith in the God whom he had created that morning, and whom the rats had eaten, had been seriously modified, if not entirely crumbled down. He remained silent for some time, after which he invited me to sit by him ; and he spoke to me with a pathos and an authority which my youth and his old age alone could justify. He gave me the most awful rebuke I ever had ; he really opened on my poor wavering intelligence, soul, and heart, all the cataracts of heaven. He overwhelmed me with a deluge of Holy Fathers, Councils, and infallible Popes who had believed and preached before the whole world, in all ages, the dogma of transubstantiation.

If I had paid attention to the voice of my intelligence, and accepted the light which my merciful God was giving me, I could easily have smashed the arguments of the old priest of Rome ? But what place has intelligence in the Church of Rome ? What could my intelligence say ? I was forbidden to hear it. What was the weight of my poor, isolated intelligence, when put in the balance against so many learned, holy, infallible intelligences ?

Alas ! I was not aware then that the weight of the intelligence of God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, was on my side ; and that, weighed against the intelligence of the Popes, they were greater than all the words against a grain of sand.

One hour after, shedding tears of regret, I was at the feet of Father Daule, in the confessional box, confessing the great sin I had committed by doubting, for a moment, the power of the priests to change a wafer into God.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Visit of a Protestant Stranger—

He throws an Arrow into my priestly Soul, never to be taken out.

A FEW days before the arrival of Bishop de Forbin Janson, I was alone in my study, considering my false position towards my ecclesiastical superiors, on account of my establishing the temperance society against their formal protest. My heart was sad. My partial success had not blinded me to the reality of my deplorable isolation from the great mass of clergy. With very few exceptions, they were speaking of me as a dangerous man. In that sad hour, there were many clouds around my horizon, and my mind was filled with anxiety; when, suddenly, a stranger knocked at my door. He was a good-sized man, his smiling lips and honest face were beaming with the utmost kindness. His large and noble forehead told me, at once, that my visitor was a man of superior intellect. His whole mien was that of a true gentleman.

He pressed my hand with the cordiality of an old friend and, giving me his name, he told me at once the object of his visit in these words:

"I do not come here only in my name; but it is in the name of many, if not of all the English-speaking people of Quebec and Canada; I want to tell you our admiration for the great reform you have accomplished in Beauport. We know the stern opposition of your superiors and fellow-priests to your efforts, and we admire you more for that.

"Go on, sir, you have on your side the great God of Heaven, who has said to us all: 'Look not thou upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth its colour in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At the last, it biteth like a serpent, and stingeth like an adder.'

"Take courage, sir," he added; "you have, on your side, the Saviour of the world, Jesus Christ Himself, who has inspired His Apostle Paul to say: 'I will not drink any wine if it can be a cause of sin to my neighbour.' Fear not man, sir, when God the Father, and His Son, Jesus Christ, are on your side. If you find any opposition from some quarter; and if deluded men turn you into ridicule when you are doing such a Christian work, bless the Lord. For Jesus Christ has said: 'Blessed are they who do hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled. Blessed are ye when men shall revile you and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you, falsely, for My sake.'

"I come also to tell you, sir, that if there are men who oppose you, there are many more who are praying for you day and night, asking our heavenly Father to pour upon you His most abundant blessings. Intoxicating drinks are the curse of this young country. It is the most deadly foe of every father and mother, the most implacable enemy of every child in Canada. It is the ruin of our rich families, as well as the

destruction of the poor. The use of intoxicating drinks, under any form, or pretext, is an act of supreme folly: for alcohol kills the body and damns the soul of its blind victims.

"You have, for the first time, raised the glorious banner of temperance among the French Canadian people; though you are alone to-day, to lift up, be not discouraged. For, before long, you will see your intelligent countrymen rallying around it, to help you to fight and conquer. No doubt, the seed you sow to-day is often watered with your tears. But, before long, you will reap the richest crop; and your heart will be filled with joy, when your grateful country will bless your name."

After a few other sentences of the same elevated sentiments, he hardly gave me time enough to express my feelings of gratitude, and said: "I know you are very busy, I do not want to trespass upon your time. Good-bye, sir: may the Lord bless you, and be your keeper in all our ways."

He pressed my hand and soon disappeared. That stranger, whose visit had passed as quickly as the visit of an angel from God, had filled my heart with such joy and surprise at the unexpected news that all the English-speaking people of Canada were praying for me!

However, I did not fall on my knees to thank God; for my sentiments of gratitude to God were suddenly chilled by the unspeakable humiliation I felt when I considered that that stranger was a Protestant! The comparison I was forced to make between the noble sentiments, the high philosophy, the Christian principles of that Protestant layman, with the low expressions of contempt, the absolute want of generous and Christian thoughts of my bishop and my fellow-priests when they were turning into ridicule that temperance society which God was so visibly presenting to us as the best, if not the only way, to save the thousands of drunkards who were perishing around us, paralysed my lips, bewildered my mind, and made it impossible for me to utter a word of prayer. My first sentiments of joy and of gratitude to God soon gave way to sentiments of unspeakable shame and distress.

I was forced to acknowledge that these Protestants, whom my Church had taught me, through all her councils, to anathematize and curse as the damned slaves and followers of Satan, were, in their principles of morality, higher above us than the heavens are above the earth! I had to confess to myself that those heretics, whom my Church had taught me to consider as rebels against Christ and His Church, knew the laws of God and followed them much more closely than ourselves. They had raised themselves to the highest degree of Christian temperance, when my bishops, with their priests, were swimming in the deadly waters of drunkenness!

A voice seemed crying to me, "Where is the superiority of holiness of your proud Church of Rome over those so-called heretics, who follow more closely the counsels and precepts of the Gospel of Jesus Christ?"

I tried to stifle that voice, but could not. Louder and louder,

it was heard asking me, "Who is nearer God? The bishop who so obstinately opposes a reform which is evidently according to the Divine Word, or those earnest followers of the Gospel who make the sacrifice of their oldest and most cherished usages with such pleasure, when they see it is for the good of their fellow men and the glory of God?"

I wished then to be a hundred feet below the ground, in order not to hear those questions answered within my soul. But there was no help; I had to hear them, and to blush at the reality before my eyes. Pride! yes, diabolical pride! is the vice, *par excellence*, of every priest of Rome. Just as he is taught to believe and say that his Church is far above every other Church, so he is taught to believe and say that, as a priest, he is above all the kings, emperors, governors, and presidents of this world. *That* pride is the daily bread of the pope, the bishops, the priests, and even the lowest layman, in the Church of Rome.

It is also the great secret of their power and strength. It is this diabolical pride which nerves them with an iron will, to bring down everything to their feet, subject every human being to their will, and tie every neck to the wheels of their chariot. It is this fearful pride which so often gives them that stoical patience and indomitable courage in the midst of the most cruel pain, or in the face of the most appalling death, which so many deluded Protestants take for Christian courage and heroism.

If anyone suspects that I exaggerate in thus speaking of the pride of the priest, let him read the following haughty words which Cardinal Manning puts on the lips of the Pope in one of his lectures:

"I acknowledge no civil power; I am subject to no prince. I am more than this. I claim to be the supreme judge and director of the conscience of men: of the peasant who tills his field, and of the prince who sits upon the throne; of the household that lives in the shade of privacy and the legislator that makes laws for the kingdom. I am the sole, last, supreme judge of what is right or wrong."

Is it not evident that the Holy Ghost speaks of this pride, of the priests and of the Pope, the high priest of Rome, when He says: "That man of sin, that son of perdition, who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped, so that he, as God, sits in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God."

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Erection of the Column of Temperance.

THE battle fought and gained at the grand dinner of the Quebec Seminary by the society of temperance had been decisive. The triumph was as complete as it was glorious. Hereafter her march to the conquest of Canada was to be a triumph. Her blessed banners were soon to be planted over all the cities, towns, and villages of my dear country. To commemorate the expression of their joy and gratitude to God to the remotest generations, the people of Beauport erected the beautiful Column of Temperance, which is still seen halfway between Quebec and Montmorency Falls. The Bishop de Nancy, my Lord Forbin Janson, blessed that first monument of temperance, September 7th, 1841, in the midst of an immense multitude of people. The parishes of St. Peter, St. John, St. Famille (Orleans Island), with St. Michael, were the first, after Lange Gardien, Chateau Richer, St. Anne and St. Joachim, to request me to preach on temperance.

Soon after, the whole population of St. Roch, Quebec, took the pledge with a wonderful unanimity, and kept it long with marvellous fidelity. In order to show to the whole country their feelings of gratitude, they presented me with a fine picture of the Column of Temperance and a most complimentary address, written and delivered by one of the most promising young men in Quebec, Mr. John Cauchon, who was raised some years later to the dignity of a Cabinet Minister, and who has been the worthy lieutenant-governor of Manitoba.

That address was soon followed by another from the citizens of Quebec and Beauport presented, along with my portrait, by Mr. Joseph Parent, then editor of the *Canadien*, and afterwards Provincial Secretary of Canada.

What a strange being man is! How fickle are his judgments! In 1842, they had no words sufficiently flattering to praise the very man in the face of whom they were spitting in 1838, for doing the very same thing! Was I better for establishing the society of temperance in 1842 than I was in establishing it in 1838? No! And was I worse when in 1838, bishops, priests, and people were abusing, slandering, and giving me bad names for raising the banners of temperance over my country, than I was in continuing to lift it up in 1842? No!

This sudden and complete reversal of the judgment of men in so short a period of time had the good and providential effect of filling my mind with the most supreme indifference, not to say contempt, for what men thought or said of me.

Let not my readers think, however, that I was absolutely indifferent to this change of public feeling. For no words can tell the joy I felt at the assurance which these public manifestations afforded me that the cause of temperance was to triumph everywhere in my country.

Let me tell here a fact too honourable to the people of Beauport to be omitted. As soon as the demon of intemperance was driven from my parish, I felt my first duty was to give my attention to education, which had been so shamefully neglected by my predecessors that there was not a single school in the parish worthy of that name. I proposed my plan to the people, asked their co-operation, and set to work without delay.

I began by erecting the fine stone school-house near the church, on the site of the old parsonage; the old walls were pulled down, and on the old foundation a good structure was soon erected with the free collections raised in the village. But the work was hardly half finished when I found myself without a cent to carry it on. I saw at once that, having no idea of the value of education, the people would murmur at my asking any more money. I therefore sold my horse, a fine animal given me by a rich uncle, and with the money finished the building.

My people felt humiliated and pained at seeing their pastor obliged to walk when going to Quebec or visiting the sick. They said to each other: "Is it not a burning shame for us to have forced our young curate to sell his fine horse to build our school houses, when it would have been so easy to do that work ourselves? Let us repair our faults."

On my return from establishing the society of temperance in St. John, two weeks later, my servant man said to me: "Please, M. le Curé, come to the stable and see a very curious thing." "What curious thing can there be?" I answered. "Well, sir, please come, and you will see."

What was both my surprise and pleasure to find one of the most splendid Canadian horses there, as mine! For my servant said to me: "During your absence the people have raised five hundred dollars and bought this fine horse for you. They say they do not want any longer to see their curate walking in the mud. When they drove the horse here that I might present him to you as a surprise on your arrival, I heard them saying that with the temperance society, you have saved them more than five hundred dollars every week in money, time, and health, and that it was only an act of justice to give you the savings of a week."

The only way of expressing my gratitude to my noble people was to redouble my exertions in securing the benefits of a good education to their children. I soon proposed to the people to build another school-house, two miles distant from the first. But I was not long without seeing that this new enterprise was to be still more uphill work than the first one among the people, of whom hardly one in fifty could sign his name. "Have not our fathers done well without those costly schools?" said many. "What is the use of spending so much money for a thing that does not add a day to our existence, nor an atom to our comfort?"

I soon felt confronted by such a deadly indifference, not to

say opposition, on the part of many of the best farmers, that I feared for a few days lest I had really gone too far. The last cent. of my own revenue was not only given, but a little personal debt created to meet the payment, and a round sum of 500 dollars had to be found to finish the work. I visited the richest man of Beauport to ask him to come to my rescue. Forty years before, he had come to Beauport bare-footed, without a cent. to work. He had employed his first earned dollars in purchasing some rum, with which he had doubled his money in two hours; and had continued to double his money, at that rate, in the same way, till he was worth nearly 200,000 dollars. He had then stopped selling rum, to invest his money in city properties. He answered me: "My dear curate, I would have no objection to give you the 500 dollars you want, if I had not met the Grand Vicar Demars yesterday, who warned me, as an old friend against what he calls your dangerous and exaggerated views in reference to the education of the people. He advised me, for your own good, and the good of the people, to do all in my power to induce you to desist from your plan of covering our parishes with schools."

"Will you allow me," I answered, "to mention our conversation to Mr. Demars, and tell him what you have just said about his advising you to oppose me in my efforts to promote the interests of education?"

"Yes, sir, by all means," answered Mr. Des Roussell. "I allow you to repeat to the venerable superior of the Seminary of Quebec what he said to me yesterday; it was not a secret, for there were several other farmers of Beauport to whom he said the same thing. If you ignore that the priests of Quebec are opposed to your plans of educating our children you must be the only one who does not know it, for it is a public fact. Your difficulties in raising the funds you want come only from the opposition of the rest of the clergy to you in this matter; we have plenty of money in Beauport to-day, and we would feel happy to help you. But you understand that our good will is somewhat cooled by the opposition of men whom we are accustomed to respect."

I replied: "Do you not remember, my dear Mr. Des Roussell, that those very same priests opposed me in the same way, in my very first efforts to establish the temperance society in your midst?"

"Yes, sir," he answered with a smile, we remember it well; but you have converted them to your views now."

"Well, my dear sir, I hope we shall convert them also in this question of education."

The very next morning, I was knocking at the door of the Rev. Grand Vicar Demars, after I had tied my splendid horse in the courtyard of the Seminary of Quebec. I was received with the utmost marks of courtesy. Without losing any time, I repeated to the old Superior what Mr. Des Roussell had told me of his opposition to my educational plans, and respectfully asked him if it were true.

The poor Grand Vicar seemed as if thunder-struck by my abrupt, though polite question. He tried, at first, to explain what he had said, by taking a long circuit; but I mercilessly brought him to the point at issue, and forced him to say, "Yes, I said it."

I then rejoined and said: "Mr. Grand Vicar, I am only a child before you, when comparing my age with yours; however, I have the honour to be the curate of Beauport, it is in that capacity that I respectfully ask you by what right you oppose my plans for educating our children?"

"I hope, Mr. Chiniquy," he answered, "that you do not mean to say that I am an enemy of education; for I would answer you that this is the first house of education on this continent, and that I was at its head before you were born. I hope that I have the right to believe and say that the old Superior of the Seminary of Quebec understands, as well as the young curate of Beauport, the advantage of a good education. But I will repeat to you what I said to Mr. Des Roussell, that it is a great mistake to introduce such a general system of education as you want to do in Beauport. Let every parish have its well-educated notary, doctor, merchants, and a few others to do the public business; that is enough. Besides, you know that since the conquest of Canada by Protestant England, the Protestants are waiting for their opportunity to spread the Bible among our people. The only barrier we can oppose to that danger, is to have in future, as in the past, only a very limited number of our people who can read and write."

In my answer, among other things, I said: "Go into the country, look at the farm which is well cultivated, ploughed with attention and skill, richly manured, and sown with good seed, is it not infinitely more pleasant and beautiful to live on such a farm, than on one that is neglected, unskillfully managed and covered with noxious weeds? Well, the difference between a well-educated and an uneducated people is still greater in my mind."

"I know that the priests of Canada, in general, have your views, and it is for that reason that the parish of Beauport, with its immense revenues, has been left without a school worthy of the name, from its foundation till my going there. But my views are absolutely different. And as for your fear of the Bible—I confess we are antipodes to each other. I consider that one of the greatest blessings God has bestowed upon me is, that I have read the Bible, when I was on my mother's knees. I do not even conceal from you, that one of my objects in giving a good education to every boy and girl of Beauport, is to put the Gospel of Christ in their hands, as soon as they are able to read it."

At the end of our conversation, which was very excited on both sides, though kept in the bounds of politeness, during nearly two hours, I said: "Mr. Grand Vicar, I did not come here to convert you to my views, this would have been impertinence on my part; nor can you convert me to yours, if you

are trying it, for you know I have the bad reputation of being a hard case ; I came to ask you, as a favour, to let me work according to my conscience in a parish which is mine and not yours. Do not interfere any more in my affairs between me and my parishioners, than you would like me to interfere in the management of your seminary. You know, Mr. Grand Vicar, that I have always respected you as my father ; you have many times been my adviser, my confessor, and my friend ; I hope you will grant me the favour I ask from you in the name of our common Saviour."

The old priest was a kind-hearted man ; these last words melted his heart. He promised what I wanted, and we parted from each other on better terms than I had expected at first.

When crossing the courtyard of the seminary, I saw the Archbishop Signaie, who, coming from taking a ride, had stopped to look at my horse and admire it. When near him, I said : " My lord, this is a bishop's horse and ought to be in your hands."

" It is what I was saying to my secretary," replied the bishop. " How long is it since you got it ? "

" Only a few days ago, my lord."

" Have you any intention of selling it ? "

" I would if it would please my bishop," I replied.

" What is the price ? " asked the bishop.

" Those who gave it to me paid 500 dollars for it," I replied.

" Oh ! oh ! that is too dear," rejoined the bishop, " with 500 dollars we can get five good horses. Two hundred would be enough."

" Your lordship is joking. Were I as rich as I am poor, one thousand dollars would not take that noble animal from my hands, except to have it put in the carriage of my bishop."

" Go and make a cheque of 200 dollars to the order of Mr. Chiniquy," said the bishop to his sub-secretary, Mr. Belisle.

When the secretary had gone to make the cheque, the bishop being alone with me, took from his *portfeuille* three bank bills of 100 dollars each, and put them into my hands, saying : " This will make up your 500 dollars, when my secretary gives you the cheque. But please say nothing to anybody, not even my secretary. I do not like to have my private affairs talked of around the corners of the streets. That horse is the most splendid I ever saw, and I am much obliged to you for having sold it to me." I was also very glad to have 500 dollars in hand. For with 300 dollars I could finish my school-house, and there was 200 dollars more to begin another three miles distant.

Just two weeks later, when I was dressing myself at sunrise, my servant man came to my room and said : " There are twenty men on horseback who want to speak to you."

" Twenty men on horseback who want to speak to me ! " I answered. " Are you dreaming ? "

" I do not dream," answered my young man ; " there they are at the door, on horseback, waiting for you."

I was soon dressed and in the presence of twenty of my

best farmers, on horseback, who had formed themselves in a half-circle to receive me.

"What do you want, my friends?" I asked them.

One of them, who had studied a few years in the Seminary of Quebec, answered: "Dear pastor, we come in the name of the whole people of Beauport, to ask your pardon for having saddened your heart by not coming as we ought to your help in the superhuman efforts you make to give good schools to our children. Our first thought when we heard that you had sold the horse we had given you, was to present you with another. We have been prevented from doing this by the certainty that you would sell it again, either to help some poor people or to build another school-house. As we cannot bear to see our pastor walking in the mud when going to the city, or visiting us, we have determined to put another horse into your hands, but in such a way that you will not have the right to sell it. We ask you, then, as a favour, to select the best horse here among these twenty which are before you, and to keep it as long as you remain in our midst, which we hope will be very long. It will be returned to its present possessor if you leave us; and be sure dear pastor, that the one of us who leaves his horse in your hands will be the most happy and proudest of us all."

When speaking thus, that noble-hearted man had several times been unable to conceal the tears which were rolling down his cheeks.

I tried in vain at first to speak. My feelings of gratitude and admiration could be expressed only with my tears. It took some time before I could utter a single word. At last I said: "My dear friends, this is too much for your poor pastor. I feel overwhelmed by this grand act of kindness. I do not say that I thank you—the word thank is too small—too short and insignificant to tell you what your poor unworthy pastor feels at what his eyes see and his ears hear just now. The great and merciful God, who has put those sentiments into your hearts, alone can repay you for the joy with which you fill my soul. I would hurt your feelings, I know, by not accepting your offering: I accept it. But to punish your speaker, Mr. Parent, for his complimentary address, I will take his horse, for the time I am curate of Beauport, which I hope will be till I die." And I laid my hand on the bridle of that splendid animal.

There was then a struggle which I had not expected. Every one of the nineteen whom I left with their horses began to cry: "Oh! do not take that horse; it is not worth a penny; mine is much stronger," said one. "Mine is much faster," cried out another. "Mine is a safe rider," said a third. Every one wanted me to take his horse, and tried to persuade me that it was the best of all; they really felt sorry that they were not able to make me change my mind.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Sent to Succeed Rev. Mr. Varin, Curate of Kamouraska.

ON the morning of the 25th of August, 1842, we blessed and opened the seventh school of Beauport. From that day all the children were to receive as good an education as could be given in any country place in Canada. Those schools had been raised on the ruins of the seven taverns which had so long spread ruin, shame, desolation, and death over that splendid parish. My heart was filled with an unspeakable joy at the sight of the marvellous things which, by the hand of God, had been wrought in such a short time.

At about two p.m. of that never-to-be-forgotten day, after I had said my vespers, and was alone, pacing the alleys of my garden, under the shade of the old maple trees bordering the Northern part of that beautiful spot, I was reviewing the struggles and the victories of these last four years: it seemed that everything around me, not only the giant trees which were protecting me from the burning sun, but even to the humblest grasses and flowers of my garden, had a voice to tell me, "Bless the Lord for His mercies."

By the great mercy of God that parish of Beauport, which at first had appeared to me as a bottomless abyss in which I was to perish, had been changed for me into an earthly paradise. There was only one desire in my heart. It was that I never should be removed from it. Like Peter on Mount Tabor, I wanted to pitch my tent in Beauport to the end of my life. But the rebuke which had shamed Peter came as quickly as lightning to show me the folly and vanity of my dreams.

Suddenly the carriage of the Bishop of Quebec came in sight, and rolled down to the door of the parsonage. The sub-secretary, the Rev. Mr. Belisle, alighting from it, directed his steps towards the garden when he had seen me, and handed me the following letter from the Right Rev. Turgeon, Coadjutor of Quebec:

"My dear Mons. Chiniquy:

His lordship Bishop Signaie and I wish to confer with you on a most important matter. We have sent our carriage to bring you to Quebec. Please come without the least delay.

Truly yours, FLAV. TURGEON."

One hour after, I was with the two bishops. My Lord Signaie said: "Monseigneur Turgeon will tell you why we have sent for you in such haste."

"Mons. Chiniquy," said Bishop Turgeon, "is not Kamouraska your birthplace?"

"Yes, my lord."

"Do you like that place, and do you interest yourself much in its welfare?"

"Of course, my lord, I like Kamouraska; not only because it is my birthplace, and the most happy years of my youth were spent in it, but also because, in my humble opinion, the

beauties of its scenery, the purity of its atmosphere, the fine manners and proverbial intelligence of its people, make it the very gem of Canada."

"You know," rejoined the bishop, "that Rev. Mons. Varin has been too infirm, these last years, to superintend the spiritual interests of that important place, it is impossible to continue putting a young vicar at the head of such a parish, where hundreds of the best families of our aristocracy of Quebec and Montreal resort every Summer. We have, too long, tried that experiment of young priests in the midst of such a people. It has been a failure. Drunkenness, luxury, and immorality of the most degrading kind are eating up the very life of Kamouraska to-day. Not less than thirty illegitimate births are known and registered in different places from Kamouraska these last twelve months. It is quite time to stop that state of affairs, and you are the only one, Mons. Chiniquy, on whom we can rely for that great and difficult work."

These words passed through my soul as a two-edged sword. My lips quivered, I felt as if I were choking and my tongue with difficulty muttered: "My lord, I hope it is not your intention to remove me from my dear parish of Beauport."

"No, Mons. Chiniquy, we will not make use of our authority to break the sacred and sweet ties which unite you to the parish of Beauport. But we will put before your conscience the reasons we have to wish you at the head of the great and important parish of Kamouraska."

For more than an hour the two bishops made strong appeals to my charity for the multitudes who were sinking into the abyss of drunkenness and every vice, and had no one to save them.

"See how God and men are blessing you to-day," added the Archbishop Signaie, "for what you have done at Beauport! Will they not bless you still more if you save that great and splendid parish of Kamouraska, as you have saved Beauport? Will not a double crown be put on your forehead by your bishops, your country and your God, if you consent to be the instrument of the mercies of God towards the people of your own birth-place, and the surrounding parishes?"

My bishops had spoken to me with such kindness! Their paternal and friendly appeals had surely more power over me than orders. Not without many tears, but with a true good will, I consented to give up the prospects of peace and comfort which were in store for me in Beauport, to plunge myself again into a future of endless troubles and warfare, by going to Kamouraska.

There is no need of saying that the people of Beauport did all in their power to induce the bishops to let me remain among them some time longer. But the sacrifice had to be made. I gave my farewell address on the second Sabbath of September; in the midst of indescribable cries, sobs and tears, and on the 17th of the same month, I was on my way to Kamouraska. I had left everything behind me in Beauport, even to my books,

in order to be freer in that formidable conflict which seemed to be in store for me in my new parish.

When I took leave of the Bishop of Quebec, they showed me a letter just received by them from Mons. Varin, filled with the most bitter expressions of indignation on account of the choice of such a fanatic and fire-brand as Chiniquy for a place so well known for its peaceful habits and harmony among all classes. The last words of the letter were as follows:—

“The clergy and people of Kamouraska and vicinity consider the appointment of Mons. Chiniquy to this parish as an insult, and we hope and pray that your lordship may change your mind on the subject.”

In showing me the letter, my lords Signaie and Turgeon said: “We fear that you will have more trouble than we expected with the old curate and his partisans, but we commend you to the grace of God and the protection of the Virgin Mary, remembering that our Saviour has said: ‘Fear not, I have overcome the world.’ ”

I arrived at Kamouraska the 21st September, 1842, on one of the finest days of the year. But my heart was filled with an unspeakable desolation, for all along the way, the curates had told me that the people, with their old pastor, were unanimous in their opposition to my going there. It was even rumoured that the doors of the church would be shut against me, the next Sunday. To this bad news were added two very strange facts. My brother Achilles, who was living at St. Michel, was to drive me from that place to St. Roch des Aulnets, whence my other brother, Louis, would take me to Kamouraska. But we had not travelled more than five or six miles, when the wheel of the newly-finished and beautifully painted buggy, having struck a stone, the seat was broken into fragments, and we both fell to the ground.

By chance, as my brother was blessing the man who had sold him that gig for a new and first-class conveyance, a traveller going the same way passed by. I asked him for a place in his caleche, bade adieu to my brother, and consoled him by saying: “As you have lost your fine buggy in my service, I will give you a new and better one.”

Two days after, my second brother was driving me to my destination, and when about three or four miles from Kamouraska, his fine horse stepped on a long nail which was on the road, and fell down and died. I took leave of him, and consoled him also by promising to give him another horse. Another carriage took me safely to the end of my journey. However, having to pass the church, which was about 200 yards from the parsonage, I dismissed my driver at the door of the sacred edifice, and took my satchel in my hand, which was my only baggage, entered the church and spent more than an hour in fervent prayers, or rather in cries and tears. I felt so heart-sick that I needed that hour of rest and prayer. The tears I shed there relieved my burdened spirit.

A few steps from me, in the cemetery, lay the sacred remains

of my beloved mother, whose angelic face and memory were constantly before me. Facing me, was the altar where I had made my first communion ; at my left was the pulpit which was to be the battlefield where I had to fight the enemies of my people, and of my God, who, I had been repeatedly told, were cursing and grinding their teeth at me. But the vision of the old curate I had soon to confront, and who had written such an impudent letter against me to the bishops, and the public opposition of the surrounding priests to my coming into their midst, were the most discouraging aspects of my new position. I felt as if my soul had been crushed.

My new responsibilities came so vividly before my mind in that distressing hour, that my courage for a moment failed me. I reproached myself for the act of folly in yielding to the request of the bishops. It seemed evident that I had accepted a burden too heavy for me to bear. But I prayed with all the fervour of my soul to God and to the Virgin Mary, and wept to my heart's content.

There is a marvellous power in the prayers and tears which come from the heart. I felt a new man. I seemed to hear the trumpet of God calling me to the battlefield. My only business then was to go and fight, relying on Him for victory. I took my travelling bag, went out of the church and walked slowly towards the parsonage, which has been burnt since. It was a splendid two-storey building, eighty feet in length, with capacious cellars. It had been built shortly after the conquest of Canada, as a store for contraband goods ; but after a few years of failure became the parsonage of the parish.

The Rev. Mons. Varin, though infirm and sick, had watched me from his window and felt bewildered at my entering the church and remaining so long.

I knocked at the first door, but nobody answered. I opened it, and crossed the first large room to knock at the second door ; but here also, no answer came except from two furious little dogs. I knocked at the third and fourth doors with the same result—no one to receive me.

I knew that the next was the old curate's sleeping-room. At my knocking, an angry voice cried out : "Walk in." I entered, made a step towards the old and infirm curate, who was sitting in his large arm chair. As I was about to salute him, he angrily said : "The people of Beauport have made great efforts to keep you in their midst, but the people of Kamouraska will make great efforts to turn you out of this place."

"Mons. le Cure," I answered calmly, "God knoweth that I never desired to leave Beauport for this place. But I think it is the great and merciful God Who has brought me here by the hand ; and I hope He will help me to overcome any opposition, from whatever quarter it may come."

He replied angrily : "Is it to insult me that you call me 'Mons. le Curé?' I am no more the curate of Kamouraska. You are the curate now, Mr. Chiniquy."

"I beg your pardon, my dear Mr. Varin ; *you* are still. I hope

you will remain all your life, the honoured and beloved curate of Kamouraska. The respect and gratitude I owe you have caused me to refuse the titles and honours which our bishop wanted to give me."

"But, then, if I am the curate, what are you?" replied the old priest with more calmness.

"I am nothing but a simple soldier of Christ, and sower of the good seed of the Gospel," I answered.

"Well! well! this is beautiful, grand, sublime," said the old priest, with a voice filled with friendly emotions. "But where is your household furniture, your library?"

"My household furniture," I answered, "is in this little bag, which I hold in my hand. I do not want any of my books as long as I have the pleasure and honour to be with the good Mons. Varin, who will allow me, I am sure of it, to ransack his splendid library, and study his rare and learned books."

"But what rooms do you wish to occupy?" rejoined the good old curate.

"As the parsonage is yours and not mine," I answered, "please tell me where you want me to sleep and rest. I will accept, with gratitude, any room you will offer me, even if it was in your cellar or granary. My only ambition is to be your right-hand man, and to learn from your old experience and your sincere piety, how to live and work as a good priest of Jesus Christ."

I had not finished the last sentence when the old man burst into tears, threw himself into my arms, pressed me to his heart, bathed me with his tears and said, with a voice half-suffocated by his sobs: "Dear Mr. Chiniquy, forgive me the evil things I have written and said about you. You are welcome in my parsonage, and I bless God to have sent me such a young friend, who will help me to carry the burden of my old age." I then handed him the bishop's letter, which confirmed all I had said about my mission of peace towards him. From that day to his death, which occurred six months after, I never had a more sincere friend than Mr. Varin.

The principle reason the people had to oppose my coming to Kamouraska was that I was the nephew of the Hon. Amable Dionne, who had made a colossal fortune at their expense. The Rev. Mr. Varin, who was always in his debt, was also forced by the circumstances, to buy everything, both for himself and the Church, from him, and had to pay without a murmur the most exorbitant prices for everything.

In that way, the Church and the curate, though they had very large revenues, had never enough to clear their accounts. When the people heard that the nephew of Mon. Dionne was their curate, they said to each other: "Now our poor Church is forever ruined, for the nephew will, still more than the curate, favour his uncle, and the uncle will be less scrupulous than ever in asking most unreasonable prices for his merchandise. They felt they had more than fallen from Charybdis into Scylla.

The very next day after my arrival, the beadle told me that the Church needed a few yards of cotton for some repairs, and asked me if he would not go as usual, to Mr. Dionne's store. I told him to go there first, ask the price of that article, and then go to the other stores, ordering him to buy at the cheapest one. Thirty cents was asked at Mr. Dionne's and only fifteen at Mr. St. Pierre's : of course, we bought at the latter's store.

The day was not over, before this apparently insignificant fact was known all over the parish, and was taking the most extraordinary and unforeseen proportions. Farmers would meet with their neighbours and congratulate themselves that, at last, the yoke imposed upon them by the old curate and Mr. Dionne was broken ; that the taxes they had to pay the store were at an end, with the monopoly which had cost them so much money. Many came to Mr. St. Pierre, to hear from his own lips that their new curate had, at once, freed them from what they considered the long and ignominious bondage, against which they had so often, but so vainly protested. For the rest of the week this was the only subject of conversation. They congratulated themselves that they had, at last, a priest with such an independent and honest mind, that he would not do them any injustice, even to please a relative in whose house he had spent the years of his childhood.

This simple act of fair play towards that people won over their affection. Only one dark little spot remained in their minds against me. They had been told that the only subject on which I could preach was : rum, whisky, and drunkenness. And it seemed to them exceedingly tedious to hear nothing else from the curate, particularly when they were more than ever determined to continue drinking their social glasses of brandy, rum, and wine.

There was an immense crowd at church the next Sunday. My text was : "As the Father has loved Me, so have I loved you." Showing them how Jesus had proved that He was their friend. But their sentiments of piety and pleasure at what they heard were nothing compared to their surprise when they saw that I preached nearly an hour without a word on whisky, rum, or beer.

People are often compared to the waters of the sea, in the Holy Scriptures. When you see the roaring waves dashing on that rock to-day, as if they wanted to demolish it, do not fear that this fury will last long. The very next day, if the wind has changed, the same waters will leave that rock alone, to spend their fury on the opposite rock. So it was in Kamouraska. They were full of indignation and wrath when I set my feet in their midst : but a few days later, those very men would have given the last drop of their blood to protect me. The dear Saviour had evidently seen the threatening storm which was to destroy His poor unprofitable servant. He had heard the roaring waves which were dashing against me. So He came down and bid the storm "be still" and the waves be calm.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

**The Girl in the Garb of a Man in the Service
of the Curates of Quebec and Eboulements.**

TWO days after my arrival at Kamouraska, I received a letter from the surrounding priests, at the head of whom was the Grand Vicar Mailloux, expressing the hope that I would not try to form any temperance society in my new parish, as I had done at Beauport; for the good reasons, they said, that drunkenness was not prevailing in that part of Canada as it was in the city of Quebec. I answered them, politely, that so long as I should be at the head of this new parish, I would try, as I had ever done, to mind my own business, and I hoped that my neighbouring friends would do the same.

The next Sabbath the crowd was greater than at the first. Having heard that the merchants were to start the next day, with their schooners, to buy their winter provisions of rum, I said in a very solemn way, before my sermon:

"My friends, I know that to-morrow the merchants leave for Quebec to purchase their rum. Let me advise them, as their best friend, not to buy any; and as the ambassador of Christ, I forbid them to bring a single drop of those poisonous drinks here. It will surely be their ruin, if they pay no attention to this friendly advice; for they will not sell a single drop of it after next Sabbath. That day, I will show to the intelligent people of this parish, that rum and all the other drugs sold here under the name of brandy, wine, and beer, are nothing else than disgusting, deadly, and cursed poisons."

I then preached on the words of our Saviour: "Be always ready; for ye know neither the day nor the hour when the Son of Man cometh." Though the people seemed much pleased and impressed by that second sermon, they felt exceedingly irritated at my few warning words to the merchants.

"If our young curate," said they, "thinks he will lead us by the nose, as he has done with the drunkards of Beauport, he will soon see his mistake. Instead of one hundred tons, as you brought last fall, bring us two hundred this year; we will drink them to his health. We have had a good crop and we want to spend a jolly Winter."

It is probable that the church of Kamouraska had never seen within its walls such a crowd as on the second Sabbath of October, 1842. It was literally crammed. Curiosity had attracted the people who, not less eager to hear my first grand sermon against rum, than to see the failure they expected, and wished, of my first efforts to form a temperance society. Long before the public service, at the door of the church, as well as during the whole preceding week, the people had pledged themselves never to give up their strong drink, and never to join the temperance society.

But what are the resolutions of man against God? Is He not their Master? The half of that first sermon on temperance

was not heard, when that whole multitude had forgotten their public promises. The hearts were not only touched—they were melted and changed by God, who wanted to show once more that His works of mercy were above all the works of His hands.

From the very first day of my arrival in Kamouraska, I had made a serious and exact inquiry about the untold miseries brought upon the people by intoxicating drinks. I had found that, during the last twenty years, twelve men had been drowned and eight had been frozen to death, who had left twenty widows and sixty orphans in the most distressing poverty. Sixty farmers had lost their lands and had been obliged to emigrate to other places, where they were suffering all the pangs of poverty from the drunkenness of their parents; several other families had their properties mortgaged for their whole value to the rum merchants, and were expecting every day to be turned out from their inheritances, to pay their rum bills. Several mothers had died in delirium tremens, one had hung herself, another drowned herself when drunk. One hundred thousand dollars had been paid to the rum merchants during the last fifteen years. Two hundred thousand more was due to the storekeeper; three-fourths of which were for strong drink. Four men had been murdered, among whom was their landlord, Achilles Tache, from their drunken habits.

When I had recapitulated all these facts, which were public and undeniable, and depicted the desolation of the ruined families composed of their own brothers, sisters and dear children; when I brought to their minds the tears of the widows, the cries of the starving and naked children, the shame of the families, the red hands of the murderers, and the mangled bodies of their victims; the eternal cries of the lost from drunkenness, the broken-hearted fathers and mothers whose children had been destroyed by strong drink; when I proved to them that there was not a single one in their midst who had not suffered, either in his own person, or in that of his father or mother, brothers, sisters or children.

When the sermon, which lasted two hours, was finished I asked all those who were determined to help me in stopping the ravages of intoxicating drinks, in drying the tears which they caused to flow, and saving the precious souls they were destroying, to come forward and take the public pledge of temperance by kissing a crucifix which I held in my hand. Thirteen hundred and ten came. Not fifty of the people had refused to enrol themselves under the blessed and glorious banner of temperance!

The very same day, the wives of the merchants sent dis patches to their husbands in Quebec, to tell them what had been done, and not a single barrel of intoxicating drink was brought by them. The generous example of the admirable people of Kamouraska spoke with an irresistible eloquence to the other parishes of that district, and before long, the blessed banners of temperance floated over all the populations of St. Pascal, St. Andrew, Isle Verte, Cacouna, Riviere, du Loup, Rimouski,

Matane, St. Anne, St. Roch, Madawaska, and the Eboulements, La Malbaye, and the other parishes on the North side of the river; and the people kept their pledge with such fidelity that the trade in rum was literally killed in that part of Canada, as it had been in Beauport and its vicinity.

The blessed fruits of this reform were soon felt and seen everywhere, in the public prosperity, and the spread of education. Kamouraska, which was owing 200,000 dollars to the merchants in 1842, had not only paid its interest, but had reduced its debt to 100,000 dollars, when I left to go to Montreal in 1846. God only knows my joy at these admirable manifestations of His mercies towards my country. However, the joys of man are never without a mixture of sadness.

In the goodness of God, being invited by all the curates to establish temperance societies among their people, I had the sad opportunity, as no priest ever had in Canada, to know the secret and public scandals of each parish. When I went to the Eboulements, on the North side of the river, invited by the Rev. Noel Toussignant, I learned from the very lips of that young priest, and the ex-priest Tetreau, the history of the most shameful scandals.

In 1830, a young priest of Quebec, called Derome, had fallen in love with one of his young female penitents of Vercheres, where he had preached a few days, and he had persuaded her to follow him to the parsonage of Quebec. The better to conceal their iniquity from the public, he persuaded his victim to dress herself as a young man, and throw her dress in the river, to make her parents and the whole parish believe that she was drowned. I had seen her many times at the parsonage of Quebec, under the name of Joseph, and had much admired her refined manners, though more than once I was very much inclined to think that the smart Joseph was no one else than a lost girl. But the respect I had for the curate of Quebec (who was the coadjutor of the bishop) and his young vicars, caused me to reject those suspicions as unfounded. However, many even among the first citizens of the city had the same suspicions, and they pressed me to go to the coadjutor and warn him; but I refused, and told those gentlemen to do that delicate work themselves, and they did it.

The position of that high dignitary and his vicar was not then an agreeable one. Their bark had evidently drifted into dangerous waters. To keep Joseph among themselves was impossible, after the friendly advice from such high quarters, and to dismiss him was not less dangerous. He knew too well how the curate of Quebec, with his vicars, were keeping their vows of celibacy, to dismiss him without danger to themselves; a single word from his lips would destroy them. Happily for them Mr. Clement, then curate of the Eboulements, was in search of such a servant, and took him to his parsonage, after persuading the bishop-coadjutor to give Joseph a large sum of money to seal his lips.

Things went on pretty smoothly between Joseph and th●

priest for several years, till some suspicions arose in the minds of the sharp-sighted people of the parish, who told the curate that it would be safer and more honourable for him to get rid of his servant. In order to put an end to those suspicions, and to retain him in the parsonage, the curate persuaded him to marry the daughter of a poor neighbour.

The three banns were published, and the two girls were duly married by the curate, who continued his criminal intimacies, in the hope that no one would trouble any more on that subject. But not long after he was removed to La Petite Riviere, and in 1838 the Rev. Mr. M. Tetreau was appointed curate of the Eboulements. This new priest, knowing nothing of the abominations which his predecessor had practised, continued to employ Joseph. One day, when Joseph was working at the gate of the parsonage, in the presence of several people, a stranger came and asked if Mr. Tetreau was at home.

"Yes, sir, Mr. Curate is at home," answered Joseph; "but as you seem a stranger to the place, would you allow me to ask you from what parish you come?"

"I am not ashamed of my parish," answered the stranger, "I come from Vercheres."

At the word "Vercheres," Joseph turned so pale that the stranger was puzzled. He looked carefully at him, and exclaimed: "Oh! my God! What do I see here? Genevieve! Genevieve! over whom we have mourned so long as drowned! Here you are disguised as a man!"

"Dear uncle" (it was her uncle); "for God's sake, not a word more here!"

But it was too late; the people who were there had heard the uncle and the niece. Their long and secret suspicions were well-founded. One of their former priests had kept the girl, under the disguise of a man, in his house; and to blind his people more thoroughly, he had married that girl to another, in order to have them both in his house when he pleased, without awakening any suspicion.

The news went almost as quickly as lightning, from one end of the parish to the other and spread all over the country, on both sides of the St. Lawrence. I had heard of it with horror, but I could not believe it. However, I had to believe it when, on the spot, I heard it from the lips of the ex-curate, M. Tetreau, and the new curate, M. Noel de Toussignant, and from the lips of the landlord, the Honourable Mr. Laterriere, the following details, which had come to light only a short time before.

The justice of the peace had investigated the matter in the name of public morality. Joseph was brought before the magistrates, who decided that a physician should be charged to make, not a *post-mortem*, but an *ante-mortem* inquest. The Honourable Mr. Laterriere, who made the inquest, declared that Joseph was a girl, and the bonds of marriage were legally dissolved.

In the same time, the curate M. Tetreau had sent a dispatch to the Right Rev. Bishop-coadjutor of Quebec, informing him

that the young man whom he had kept in his house, several years, was legally proved a girl; a fact which, I need hardly state, was well known by the bishop and his vicars! They immediately sent a trustworthy man with £500, to induce the girl to leave the country without delay, lest she were prosecuted and sent to the penitentiary. She accepted the offer, and crossed the lines to the United States with her 2,000 dollars, where she was soon married and where she still lives.

I wished that story had never been told me, or at least, that I might be allowed to doubt some of its circumstances; but there was no help. I was forced to acknowledge that in my Church of Rome there was such corruption from head to foot, which could scarcely be surpassed in Sodom. I remember what the Rev. Mr. Perras had told me of the tears and desolation of Bishop Plessis, when he had discovered that all the priests of Canada, with the exception of three, were Atheists.

I would not be honest, did I not confess that the personal knowledge of that fact, which I learned in all its scandalous details from the very lips of unimpeachable witnesses, saddened me, and for a time shook my faith in my religion to its foundation. I felt secretly ashamed to belong to a body of men so completely lost to every sense of honesty, as the priests and bishops of Canada. I had heard of many scandals before. The infamies of the grand vicar Manceau and Quiblier of Montreal, Cadieux at Three Rivers, and Viau at Rivière Ouelle. The public acts of depravity of the priests Lelievre, Tabeau, Pouliot, Belisle, Brunet, Quevillon, Huot, Lajuste, Rabby, Crevier, Bellecourt, Valle, Mignault, Noel, Pinet, Duguez, Davelly, and many others, were well known by me, as well as by the whole clergy. But the abominations of which Joseph was the victim seemed to overstep the conceivable limits of infamy. For the first time, I sincerely regretted that I was a priest. The priesthood of Rome seemed then to me the very fulfilment of the prophecy of Revelation, about the great prostitute, who makes the nations drunk with the wines of her prostitutions.

Auricular confession, which I knew to be the first, if not the only cause, of these abominations, appeared to me, what it really is, a school of perdition for the priest and his female penitents. The priest's oath of celibacy, was to my eyes, in those hours of distress, but a shameful mask to conceal a corruption which was unknown in the most depraved days of old paganism. New and bright lights came, then, before my mind which had followed them, would have guided me to the truth of the Gospel. But I was blind! The Good Master had not yet touched my eyes with His divine and life-giving hand. I had no idea that there could be any other church than the Church of Rome in which I could be saved. I was, however, often saying to myself: "How can I hope to conquer on a battlefield where so many, as strong and even much stronger than I am, have perished?"

I felt no longer at peace. My soul was filled with trouble and anxiety. I not only distrusted myself, but I lost confidence

in the rest of the priests and bishops. In fact, I could not see any one in whom I could trust. Though my beautiful and dear parish of Kamouraska was, more than ever, overwhelming me with tokens of its affection, gratitude and respect, it had lost its attraction for me. To whatever side I turned my eyes, I saw nothing but the most seducing examples of perversion. It seemed as if I were surrounded by numberless snares, from which it was impossible to escape.

When my soul was as drowned under the waves of a bitter sea, the Rev. Mr. Guignes, Superior of the Monastery of the Fathers of Oblates of Mary Immaculate, at Longueil, near Montreal, came to pass a few days with me, for the benefit of his health. I spoke to him of that shameful scandal, and did not conceal from him that courage failed me, when I looked at the torrent of iniquity.

"We are here alone, in the presence of God," I said to him. "I confess that I feel an unspeakable horror at the moral ruin which I see everywhere in our Church. My priesthood, of which I was so proud till lately, seems to me, to-day, the most ignominious yoke, when I see it dragged in the mud of the most infamous vices, not only by the immense majority of the priests, but even by our bishops. How can I hope to save myself, when I see so many, stronger than I am, perishing all around me?"

The Reverend Superior, with the kindness of a father and the gravity of an apostle, answered me:

"I understand your fears perfectly. They are legitimate and too well-founded. Like you, I am a priest; and like you, if not more than you, I know the numberless and formidable dangers which surround the priest."

He spoke to me, with an irresistible eloquence, of the peace of soul which a regular priest enjoys within the walls of his monastery. He represented, in the most attractive colours, the spiritual and constant joys of the heart which one feels when living, day and night, under the eyes of a superior to whom he has vowed a perfect submission. He added, "Your providential work is finished in the diocese of Quebec. The temperance societies are established everywhere. We are in need of your long experience and your studies on that subject, in the diocese of Montreal. Come with us. We are more than thirty priests, oblates of Mary Immaculate, who will be too happy to second your efforts in that noble work, which is too much for one man alone. Moreover, you cannot do justice to your great parish of Kamouraska and to the temperance cause together. You must give up one, to consecrate yourself to the other. Take courage, my young friend! Offer to God the sacrifice of your dear Kamouraska."

It seemed to me that I could oppose no reasonable argument to these considerations. I fell on my knees, and made the sacrifice. The last Sabbath of September, I gave my farewell address to the people of Kamouraska, to go to Longueil and become a novice of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Noviciate in the Monastery of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate of Longueuil.

ON the first Sabbath of November, 1846, after a retreat of eight days, I fell on my knees, and asked as a favour to be received as a novice of the religious order of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate of Longueuil, whose object is to preach retreats (revivals) among the people. No child of the Church of Rome ever enrolled himself with more earnestness and sincerity under the mysterious banners of her monastic armies than I did that day. It is impossible to entertain more exalted views of the beauty and holiness of the monastic life than I had. To live among the holy men who had made the solemn vows of poverty, obedience and chastity, seemed to me the greatest and the most blessed privilege which my God could grant on earth.

Within the walls of the peaceful monastery of Longueuil, among those holy men who had, long since, put an impassable barrier between themselves and that corrupted world, from the snares of which I was just escaping, my conviction was that I should see nothing but actions of the most exalted piety; and that the deadly weapon of the enemy could not pierce those walls protected by the Immaculate Mother of God!

The vow of perfect poverty was to save me, for ever, from the cares of the world. Having, hereafter, no right to possess a cent. the world would become to me a paradise, where food, clothing, and lodging would come without anxiety or care. My father superior would supply all these things, without any other condition on my part than to love and obey a man of God whose whole life was to be spent in guiding my steps in the ways of the most exalted evangelical virtues. Had not that father himself made a solemn vow to renounce all the honours and dignities of the Church, that his whole mind and heart might be devoted to my holiness on earth, and my salvation in Heaven?

How easy to secure that salvation now! I had only to look to that father on earth, and obey him as my Father in Heaven. Yes! The will of that Father was to be, for me, the will of my God. Though I might err in obeying him, my errors would not be laid to my charge. To save my soul, I should have only to be like a corpse, or a stick in the hands of my father superior. Without any anxiety or any responsibility whatever of my own, I was to be led to heaven as the new-born child in the arms of his loving mother, without any fear, thoughts or anxiety of his own.

With the Christian poet I could have sung:—

“Rocks and storms I fear no more,
When on that eternal shore.
Drop the anchor! furl the sail!
I am safe within the vail.”

How short were to be these fine dreams of my poor deluded mind ! When on my knees, Father Guigues handed me, with great solemnity, the Latin books of the rules of that monastic order, which is their real gospel, warning me that it was a *secret book*, that there were things in it that I ought not to reveal to anyone ; and he made me solemnly promise that I would never show it to anyone outside of the order.

When alone, the next morning in my cell, I thanked God and the Virgin Mary for the favours of the last day, and the thought came voluntarily to my mind :

"Have you not, a thousand times, heard and said that the Holy Church of Rome absolutely condemns and anathematizes secret societies ? And, do you not belong, to-day, to a secret society ? How can you reconcile the solemn promise of secrecy you made last night, with the anathemas hurled by all your popes against secret societies ? After having, in vain, tried, in my mind, to reconcile these two things, I happily remembered that I was a corpse, that I had for ever given up my private judgment—that my only business was to obey. "Does a corpse argue against those who turn it from side to side ? Is it not in perfect peace ?"

I bade my rebellious intelligence to be still, my private judgment to be mute, and, to distract my mind from this first temptation, I read that book with the utmost attention. I had not gone through it all before I understood why it was kept from the eyes of the curates and the other secular priests. To my unspeakable amazement, I found that, from the beginning to the end, it speaks with the most profound contempt for them all ; I said to myself : "What would be the indignation of the curates, if they should suspect that these strangers from France have such a bad opinion of them all ! Would the good curates receive them as angels from heaven, and raise them so high in the esteem of the people, if they knew that the first thing an oblate has to learn, is that the secular priest is to-day steeped in immorality, ignorance, worldliness, laziness, gluttony, etc. ; that he is the disgrace of the Church, which would speedily be destroyed were she not providentially sustained and kept in the ways of God by the holy monastic men whom she nurses as her only hope !" Clear as the light of the sun on a bright day, the whole fabric of the Order of the Oblates presented itself to my mind, as the most perfect system of Pharisaism the world had ever seen.

The oblate who studies his book of rules, his only gospel, must have his mind filled with the idea of his superior holiness, not only over the poor sinful, secular priest, but over everyone else. The oblate alone is Christian, holy, and sacred ; the rest of the world is lost ! I said to myself : "Is it to attain to this pharisaical perfection that I have left my beautiful and dear parish of Kamouraska, and given up the honourable position which God had given me ?"

However, after some time spent in these sad and despondent reflections, I again felt angry with myself ; I quickly directed

my mind to the frightful, unsuspected, and numberless scandals I had known in almost every parish I had visited. I remembered the drunkenness of that curate, the impurities of this, the ignorance of another, the worldliness, and absolute want of faith of others, and concluded that, after all, the oblates were not far from the truth in their bad opinion of the secular clergy. I ended my sad reflections by saying to myself: "After all, if the oblates live a life of holiness, as I expect to find here, is it a crime that they should see, feel, and express among themselves, the difference which exists between a regular and a secular clergy? Am I come here to judge and condemn these holy men? No! I came here to save myself by the practice of the most heroic Christian virtues, the first of which is that I should absolutely, and for ever, give up my *private judgment*—consider myself as a corpse in the hand of my superior."

With all the fervour of my soul, I prayed to God and to the Virgin Mary day and night, that week, that I might attain that supreme state of perfection, when I would have no will, no judgment of my own. The days of that first week passed very quickly, spent in prayer, reading and meditation of the Scriptures, study of ecclesiastical history and ascetical books, from half-past five in the morning till half-past nine at night. The meals were taken at the regular hours of seven, twelve and six o'clock, during which, with rare exceptions, silence was kept, and pious books were read. The quality of the food was good; but, at first, before they got a female cook to preside over the kitchen, everything was so unclean, that I had to shut my eyes at meals, not to see what I was eating. I should have complained, had not my lips been sealed by that strange monastic view of perfection—that every religious man is a corpse! What does a corpse care about the cleanliness or uncleanness of what is put into its mouth? The third day, having drank at breakfast a glass of milk which was literally mixed with the dung of the cow, my stomach rebelled; a circumstance which I regretted exceedingly, attributing it to my want of monastic perfection. I envied the high state of holiness of the other fathers who had so perfectly attained to the perfection of submission that they could drink that impure milk, as if it had been clean.

Everything went on well the first week, with the exception of a dreadful scare I had, at the dinner of the first Friday. Just after eating soup, when listening with the greatest attention to the reading of the life of a saint, I suddenly felt as if the devil had taken hold of my feet; I threw down my knife and fork, and I cried at the top of my voice, "My God! my God! what is there?" and as quick as lightning, I jumped on my chair to save myself from Satan's grasp. My cries were soon followed by an inexpressible burst of convulsive laughter from every one. "What does that mean? Who has taken hold of my feet?" I asked.

Father Guigues tried to explain the matter to me, but it took

him a considerable time. When he began to speak, an irrepressible burst of laughter prevented his saying a word. The fits of laughter became still more uncontrollable, on account of the seriousness with which I was repeatedly asking them who could have taken hold of my feet ! At last someone said, "It is Father Lagier, who wanted to kiss your feet !" At the same time, Lagier, walking on his hands and knees, his face covered with sweat and dirt, was crawling out from under the table ; rolling on the floor, in such an uncontrollable fit of laughter, that he was unable to stand.

Of course when I understood that no devil had tried to drag me by the feet, but that it was simply one of the father oblates who, to go through one of the common practices of humility in that monastery, had crawled under the table to take hold of the feet of everyone and kiss them, I joined with the rest of the community, and laughed to my heart's content.

Not many days after this, we were going, after tea, from the dining-room to the chapel, to pass five or ten minutes in adoration of the wafer-god ; we had two doors to cross, and it was pretty dark. Being the last who had entered the monastery, I had to walk first, the other monks following me ; we were reciting, with a loud voice, the Latin Psalm : "*Miserere mihi Deus.*" We were all marching pretty fast when, suddenly, my feet met a large though unseen object, and down I fell, and rolled on the floor ; my next companion did the same, and rolled over me, and so did five or six others who, in the dark, had also struck their feet on that object. In a moment, we were five or six "Holy Fathers" rolling on each other, on the floor, unable to rise up, splitting our sides with convulsive laughter. Father Brunette, in one of his fits of humility, had left the table a little before the rest, with the permission of the Superior, to lay himself flat on the floor, across the door. Not suspecting it, and unable to see anything, I had entangled my feet on that living corpse, as also the rest of those who were walking too close behind me to stop before tumbling over one another. No one can describe my feelings of shame when I saw, almost every day, some performance of this kind going on.

In vain, I said to myself, "Chiniquy, thou art not come here to philosophise on this or that, but to sanctify thyself by becoming like a corpse, which has no preconceived ideas, no acquired store of knowledge, no rule of common sense to guide it. Poor, wretched, sinful Chiniquy, thou art here to save thyself by admiring every iota of the holy rules of your superiors, and obey every word of their lips."

I felt angry against myself, and unspeakably sad when, after whole weeks and months of efforts, not only to silence the voice of my reason, but to kill it, it had more life than ever, and was more and more loudly protesting against the unmanly, unchristian, and ridiculous daily usages and rules of the monastery.

Twice every week, I went to reveal to my guide and confessor, Father Allard, the master of the novices, my interior

struggling ; my constant, though vain efforts, to subdue my rebellious reason. He always gladdened me with the promise that, sooner or later, I should have that interior perfect peace which is promised to the humble monk when he has attained the supreme monastic perfection of considering himself as a corpse, as regards the rules and will of his superiors. My sincere and constant efforts to reconcile myself to the rules of the monastery were, however, soon to receive a new and rude check. I had read in the book of rules, that a true monk must closely watch those who live with him, and secretly report to his superior the defects and sins which he detects in them. The first time I read that strange rule, my mind was so taken up by other things, that I did not pay much attention to it. But the second time I studied that clause, the blush came to my face, and in spite of myself, I said : "Is it possible that we are a band of spies ?" I was not long in seeing the disastrous effects of this most degrading and immoral rule. One of the fathers, for whom I had a particular affection for his many good qualities, and who had many times given me the sincere proof of his friendship, said to me one day : "For God sake, my dear Father Chiniquy, tell me if it is you who denounced me to the Superior for having said that the conduct of Father Guigues towards me was uncharitable ?"

"No ! my dear friend," I answered, "I never said such a thing against you, for two reasons : The first is, that you have never said a word in my presence which could give me the idea that you had such an opinion of our good Father Superior ; the second reason is, that though you might have told me anything of that kind, I would prefer to have my tongue cut, and eaten by dogs, than to be a spy, and denounce you !"

"I am glad to know that," he rejoined, "for I was told by some of the fathers that you were the one who had reported me to the Superior as guilty, though I am innocent of that offence, but I could not believe it." He added with tears, "I regret having left my parish to be an Oblate, on account of that abominable law which we are sworn to fulfil. That law makes a real hell of this monastery, and, I suppose, of all monastic orders, for I think it is a general law with all religious houses. When you have passed more time here you will see that that law of detection puts an insurmountable wall between us all ; it destroys every spring of happiness."

"I understand, perfectly well, what you say," I answered him ; "the last time I was alone with the Father Superior, he asked me why I had said that the present Pope was an old fool ; he persisted in telling me that I must have said it, 'for' he added 'one of our most reliable fathers has assured me you said it.' 'Well my dear Father Superior,' I answered him, 'that reliable father has told you a big lie ; I never said such a thing, for the good reason that I sincerely think that our present Pope is one of the wisest that ever ruled the Church.' " I added : "Now I understand why there is so much unpleasantness in our mutual intercourse, during the hours we are allowed

to talk. I see that nobody dares to speak his mind on any grave subject."

It is on this spying system, which is the curse and the hell of our monastic houses, that a celebrated French writer, who had been a monk himself, wrote of all the monks :

"Monks enter a monastery without knowing each other. They live there, without loving each other, and they depart from each other without any regret."

However, though I sincerely deplored that there was such a law of espionage among us, I tried to persuade myself that it was like the dark spots of the sun, which do not diminish its beauty, its grandeur and its innumerable blessings. The Society of the Oblates was still to me the blessed ark where I should find a sure shelter against the storms which were desolating the rest of the world.

Not long after my reception as a novice, the providence of God put before our eyes one of those terrible wrecks which would make the strongest of us tremble. Suddenly, at the hour of breakfast, the Superior of the Seminary of St. Sulpice, and grand vicar of the Diocese of Montreal, the Rev. Mr. Quiblies, knocked at our door, to rest an hour and breakfast with us, when on his way to France.

This unfortunate priest, who had been among the best orators and the best looking men Montreal had ever seen, had lived such a profligate life with his penitent nuns and ladies of Montreal, that a cry of indignation from the whole people had forced Bishop Bourget to send him back to France. Our Father Superior took the opportunity of the fall of that talented priest, to make us bless God for having gathered us behind the walls of our monastery, where the efforts of the enemy were powerless. But alas ! we were soon to know, at our own expense, that the heart of man is deceitful everywhere.

It was not long after the public fall of the grand vicar of Montreal, when a fine-looking widow was engaged to preside over our kitchen. She was more than forty years old, and had very good manners. Unfortunately, she had not been four months in the monastery, when she fell in love with her father confessor, one of the most pious of the French Oblate Fathers. The modern Adam was not stronger than the old one against the charms of the new Eve. Both were found, in an evil hour, forgetting one of the holy laws of God. The guilty priest was punished and the weak woman dismissed. From that day the Oblates began to appear to me pretty much like other men. Till then, I had looked at them with my eyes shut, and I had seen nothing but the glittering colours with which my imagination was painting them. From that day, I studied them with my eyes opened.

In the Spring of 1847, having a severe indisposition, the doctor ordered me to go to the Hotel Dieu of Montreal, which was then near the splendid St. Mary's Church. I made there, for the first time, the acquaintance of a venerable old nun, who was very talkative. She was one of the Superiors of the house;

her family name was Urtubise. Her mind was still full of indignation at the bad conduct of two Father Oblates, who, under the pretext of sickness, had lately come to her monastery to seduce the young nuns who were serving them. She told me how she had turned them out ignominiously, forbidding them ever to come again, under any pretext to the hospital. She was young when Bishop Lartigue, being driven away from the Sulpician Seminary of Montreal, in 1824, had taken refuge with his secretary, the Rev. Ignace Bourget, in the modest walls of that nunnery. She told me how the nuns had soon to repent having received that bishop with his secretary and other priests.

"It was nearly the ruin of our community. The intercourse of the priests with a certain number of nuns," she said, "was the cause of so much disorder and scandal, that I was deputed, with some other nuns, to the bishop to respectfully request him not to prolong his stay in our nunnery. I told him, in my name, and in the name of many others, that if he would not comply with our legitimate request, we should instantly leave the house, go back to our families and get married—that it was better to be honestly married than to continue to live as the priests, even our father confessors, wanted us to do."

She then said to me: "For God's sake, do not reveal these things to the world, till the last one of us is dead, if God spares you." She then covered her face with her hands, burst into tears, and left the room.

I remained, horrified. Her words fell upon me as a thunderbolt. I regretted having heard them, though I was determined to respect her request not to reveal the terrible secret she had entrusted to me. My God knows that I never repeated a word of it till now. But I think it is my duty to reveal to my country and the whole world the truth on that grave subject, as it was given to me by a most respectable and unimpeachable eyewitness.

The terrible secrets which Sister Urtubise had revealed to me rendered my stay in the Hotel Dieu as unpleasant as it had been agreeable at first. Though not quite recovered, I left the same day, for Longueuil, where I entered the monastery with a heavy heart. The day before, two of the Fathers had come back from a two or three months' evangelical excursion among the lumber men, who were cutting wood in the forests, along the Ottawa River and its tributaries, from one to two hundred miles North-west of Montreal. I was glad to hear of their arrival. I hoped that the interesting history of their evangelical excursions, narrow escapes from the bears and wolves of the forests; their hearty receptions by the honest and sturdy lumbermen, which the Superior had requested me to write, would cause a happy diversion from the deplorable things I had recently learned. But only one of those Fathers could be seen, and his conversation was anything but interesting and pleasant. There was evidently a dark cloud around him. And the other Oblate, his companion, where was he? The very day of his arrival, he had been ordered to keep his room, and make a

retreat of ten days, during which time he was forbidden to speak to anyone.

I inquired from a devoted friend among the old Oblates the reason of such a thing. After promising never to reveal to the Superiors the sad secret he trusted me with, he said: "Poor Father D—— has seduced one of his fair penitents, on the way. She was a married woman, the lady of the house where our missionaries used to receive the most cordial hospitality. The husband having discovered the infidelity of his wife, came very near killing her; he ignominiously turned out the two Fathers, and wrote a terrible letter to the Superior. The companion of the guilty Father denounced him and confessed everything to the Superior, who has seen that the letter of the enraged husband was only giving too true and correct a version of the whole unfortunate and shameful occurrence. Now, the poor weak Father, for his penance, is condemned to ten days of seclusion from the rest of the community. He must pass that whole time in prayer, fasting, and acts of humiliation, dictated by the Superior."

"Do these deplorable facts occur very often among the father oblates?" I asked.

My friend raised his eyes, filled with tears, to heaven, and with a deep sigh he answered: "Dear Father Chiniquy, would to God that I might be able to tell you that it is the first crime of that nature committed by an Oblate. But, alas! you know, by what has occurred with our female cook, not long ago, that it is not the first time that some of our fathers have brought disgrace upon us all. And you know also the abominable life of Father Telmont with the two nuns at Ottawa!"

"If it be so," I replied, "where is the spiritual advantage of the regular clergy over the secular?"

"The only advantage I see," answered my friend, "is that the regular clergy gives himself with more impunity to every kind of debauch and licentiousness than the secular. The monks being concealed from the eyes of the public, inside the walls of their monasteries—where nobody, or at least, very few people have access—are more easily conquered by the devil, and more firmly kept in his chains, than the secular priests. The sharp eyes of the public, and the daily intercourse the secular priests have with their relations and parishioners, form a powerful and salutary restraint upon the bad inclinations of our depraved nature. In the monastery, there is no restraint except the childish and ridiculous punishments of retreats, kissing of the floor or of the feet, the prostration of the ground, as Father Brunet did, a few days after your coming amongst us.

"There is surely more hypocrisy and selfishness among the regular than the secular clergy. That great social organization which forms the human family is a divine work. Yes! those great social organizations which are called the city, the township, the country, the parish, and the household, where everyone is called to work in the light of day, is a divine organization.

and makes society as strong, pure, and holy as it can be.

"I confess that there are also terrible temptations, and deplorable falls here, but the temptations are not so unconquerable, and the falls are not so irreparable, as in these dark recesses and unhealthy prisons raised by Satan only for the birds of night, called monasteries or nunneries.

"The priest and the woman who fall in the midst of a well-organized Christian Society, break the heart of the beloved mother, cover with shame a venerable father, cause the tears of cherished sisters and brothers to flow, pierced with a barbed arrow the hearts of thousands of friends; they forever lose their honour and good name. These considerations are so many providential, I dare say divine shields, to protect the sons and daughters of Eve against their own frailty. The secular priest and the woman shrink before throwing themselves into such a bottomless abyss of shame, misery, and regret. But behind the thick and dark walls of the monastery, or the nunnery, what has the fallen monk or nun to fear? Nobody will hear of it, no bad consequences worth mentioning will follow, except a few days of retreat, and some childish, ridiculous penances.

"As you ask me, in earnest, what are the advantages of a monastic life over a secular, in a moral and social point of view, I will answer you: In the monastery, man as the image of God forgets his divine origin, loses his dignity; and as a Christian, he loses the most holy weapons Christ has given to His disciples to fight the battle of life. He, at once and forever, loses that law of self-respect, for others, which is one of the most powerful and legitimate barriers against vice. Yes! that great and divine law of self-respect, which God Himself has implanted in the heart of every man and woman who live in a Christian society, is completely destroyed in the monastery and nunnery.

"If you study the true history, *not the lying history*, of monachism, you will find the details of a corruption impossible anywhere else, not even among the lowest houses of prostitution. Read the memoirs of Scipio de Ricci, one of the most pious and intelligent bishops our Church ever had, and you will see that the monks and the nuns of Italy live the very life of the brutes in the fields. Yes! Read the terrible revelations of what is going on among those unfortunate men and women, whom the iron hand of monachism keeps tied in their dark dungeons, you will hear from the very lips of the nuns that the monks are more free with them than the husbands are with their legitimate wives; you will see that every one of those monastic institutions is a new Sodom!

"The monastic axiom, that the highest point of perfection is attained only when you consider yourself a corpse in the hand of your superior is anti-social and anti-christian; it is simply diabolical. It transforms into a vile machine that man whom God had created in His likeness, and made for ever free. It degrades below the brute that man whom Christ, by His death,

has raised to the dignity of a child of God, and inheritor of an eternal kingdom in heaven. Everything is mechanical, material, false in the life of a monk and a nun.

"Their best actions are mechanical. Their acts of humility are to crawl under the table and kiss the feet of each other, or to make a cross on a dirty floor with the tongue, or lie down in the dust to let the rest of the monks or nuns pass over them ! Have you not remarked how those so-called monks speak with the utmost contempt of the rest of the world ? One must have opportunities, as I have had, of seeing the profound hatred which exists among all monastic orders against each other. How the Dominicans have always hated the Franciscans, and how, they both hate the Jesuits, who pay them back in the same coin ! What a strong and nameless hatred divides the Oblates, to whom we belong, from the Jesuits. The Jesuits never lose an opportunity of showing us their supreme contempt ! You are aware that, on account of those bad feelings, it is absolutely forbidden to an Oblate to confess to a Jesuit, as we know it is forbidden to the Jesuits to confess to an Oblate, or to any other priest."

"I need not tell you, for you know, that their vow of poverty is a mask to help them to become rich with more rapidity than the rest of the world. Is it not under the mask of that vow that the monks of England, Scotland, and France, became the masters of the richest lands of those countries, which the nations were forced by bloody revolutions to wrench from their grasp ?

"I have seen much more of the world than you. When a young priest, I was chaplain, confessor, and intimate friend of the Duchesse de Berry, the mother of Henry V., now the only legitimate King of France. When, in the midst of those great and rich princes and nobles of France, I never saw such a love of money, of honour, of vain glory, as I have seen among the monks since I have become one of them. When the Duchess de Berry finished her providential work in France, after making the false step which ruined her I threw myself into the religious order of the Chartreux. I have lived several years in their palatial monastery of Rome ; have cultivated and enjoyed their sweet fruits in their magnificent gardens ; but I was not there long without seeing the fatal error I had committed in becoming a monk. During the many years I resided in that splendid mansion, where laziness, stupidity, filthiness, gluttony, superstition, tediousness, ignorance, pride, and unmentionable immoralities, with very few exceptional cases, reigned supreme, I had every opportunity to know what was going on in their midst. Life soon became an unbearable burden, but for the hope I had of breaking my fetters. At last, I found out that the best, if not the only way of doing this, was to declare to the Pope that I wanted to go and preach the Gospel to the savages of America.

"I made my declaration, and by the Pope's permission, the doors of my gaol were opened, with the condition that I should

join the Order of the Oblates Immaculate, in connection with which I should evangelise the savages of the Rocky mountains.

"I have found among the monks of Canada the very same things I have seen among those of France and Italy. With very few exceptions, they are all corpses, absolutely dead to every sentiment of true honesty and real Christianity.

"My dear Father Chiniquy," he added, "I trust you as I trust myself when I tell you for your own good, a secret which is known to God alone. When I am on the Rocky Mountains, I will raise myself up, as the eagles of those vast countries, and I shall go up to the regions of liberty, light and life; I will cease being a corpse, to become what my God has made me—a free and intelligent man: I will cease to be a corpse, in order to become one of the redeemed of Christ, who serve God in Spirit and in truth.

"Christ is the light of the world; monachism is its night! Christ is the strength, the glory, the life of man; monachism, is its decay, shame and death! Christ died to make us free; the monastery is built to make slaves of us! Christ died that we might be raised to the dignity of the children of God; monachism is established to bring us down much below the living brutes, for it transforms us into corpses! Christ is the highest conception of humanity; monachism is the lowest."

I regret that the remarkable monk, whose abridged views on monachism I have here given, should have requested me never to give his name, when he allows me to tell some of his adventures, which will make a most interesting romance. Faithful to his promise, he went, as an Oblate, to preach to the savages of the Rocky Mountains, and there, without noise, he slipped out of their hands; broke his chains to live the life of a free man of Christ, in the holy bonds of a Christian marriage with a respectable American lady.

Weak and timid soldier that I was once; frightened by the ruins spread everywhere on the battlefield, I looked around to find a shelter against the impending danger; I thought that the monastery of the oblates of Mary Immaculate was one of those strong towers, built by my God, where the arrows of the enemy could not reach me, and I threw myself into it.

But I was hardly beginning to hope that I was out of danger, behind those dark high walls, when I saw them shaking like a drunken man, and the voice of God passed like a hurricane over me. Suddenly, the high towers and walls around me fell to the ground and were turned to dust. Not one stone remained on another. And I heard a voice saying to me: "Soldier! come out and get in the light of the sun; trust no more in the walls built by the hand of man; they are nothing but dust. Come and fight in the open day, under the eyes of God, protected only by the Gospel banner of Christ!"

I listened to the voice, and I bade adieu to the inmates of the monastery of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate.

CHAPTER XL.

I give my Reasons for Leaving the Oblates to Bishop Bourget.

THE eleven months spent in the monastery of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate were among the greatest favours God has granted me. What I had read of the monastic orders, and what my honest, though deluded imagination had painted of the holiness, purity, and happiness of monastic life, could not be blotted out of my mind, except by a kind of miraculous interposition. No testimony whatever could have convinced me that the monastic institutions were not one of the most blessed of the Gospel. Their existence, in the bosom of the Church of Rome was, for me, an infallible token of her divine institution, and miraculous preservation; and their absence among Protestants, one of the strongest proofs that those heretics were entirely separated from Christ. Without religious orders, the Protestant denominations were to me as dead and decayed branches cut from the true vine, which are doomed to perish.

Just as the eyes of Thomas were opened, and his intelligence was convinced of the divinity of Christ, only after he had seen the wounds in His hands and side, so I could never have believed that the monastic institutions were of heathen and diabolical origin, if my God had not forced me to see with my own eyes, and to touch with my fingers, their corruptions.

Though I remained, for some time longer, a sincere Catholic priest, I dare say that God Himself had just broken the strongest tie of my affections and respect for that Church.

Long before my leaving the Oblates, many influential priests of the district of Montreal had told me that my only chance of success, if I wanted to continue my crusade against the demon of drunkenness, was to work alone.

"Those monks are pretty good speakers on temperance," they unanimously said, "but they are nothing else than a band of comedians. After delivering their eloquent tirades against the use of intoxicating drinks, to the people, the first thing they do is to ask for a bottle of wine, which soon disappears!"

"God visibly blesses your work with a marvellous success! Come to us," said the curates, "not as sent by the Superior of the Oblates, but as sent by God Himself to regenerate Canada. Present yourself as a French-Canadian priest, a child of the people."

At the head of the French-Canadian curates, who spoke thus, was my venerable personal friend and benefactor, the Rev. Mr. Brassard, curate of Longueuil. He had not only been one of my most devoted friends and teachers, when I was studying in the college of Nicolet, but had helped me, with his own money, to go through the last four years of my studies, when I was too poor to meet my collegiate expenses. No one had thought more highly than he of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate, when they first settled in Canada. But their monastery was too

near his parsonage for their own benefit. His sharp eyes, high intelligence and integrity of character, soon detected that there was more false varnish than pure gold on their glittering escutcheon. Several love scrapes between some of the oblates and the pretty young ladies of his parish, and the long hours of night spent by Father Allard with the nuns, established in his village, under the pretext of teaching them grammar and arithmetic, had filled him with disgust. But what had absolutely destroyed his confidence, was the discovery of a long-suspected iniquity, which at first seemed incredible to him. Father Guiges, the superior, after his nomination, but before his installation to the Bishopric of Ottawa, had been closely watched, and was at last discovered opening the letters of Mr. Brassard, which many times, had passed from the post-office through his hands. That criminal action had come very near to being brought before the courts of law by Mr. Brassard; this was avoided only by Father Guiges acknowledging his guilt, asking pardon in the most humiliating way, before me and several other witnesses.

Long before I left the Oblates, Mr. Brassard said to me: "The Oblates are not the men you think them to be. I have been sorely disappointed in them, and your disappointment will be no less than mine, when your eyes are opened. I know that you will not remain long in their midst. I offer you, in advance, the hospitality of my parsonage, when your conscience calls you out of their monastery!"

I availed myself of this kind invitation on the evening of the 1st of November, 1847. The next week was spent in preparing the memoir which I intended to present to my Lord Bourget, Bishop of Montreal, as an explanation of my leaving the Oblates. I knew that he was disappointed and displeased with the step I had taken.

The curate of Chambly, Rev. Mr. Mignault, having gone to the bishop, to express his joy that I had left the monks, in order to serve again in the Church, in the ranks of the secular clergy, had been very badly received. The bishop had answered him: "Mr. Chiniquy may leave the Oblates if he likes; but he will be disappointed if he expects to work in my diocese."

A few days later I called upon his lordship and was received very coldly. He said: "I cannot conceal from you my surprise and pain, at the rash step you have just taken. What a shame, for all your friends to see your want of consistency and perseverance! Had you remained among those good monks, your moral strength would have increased more than ten-fold. But you have stultified yourself in the eyes of the people, as well as in mine; you have lost the confidence of your best friends, by leaving, without good reasons, the company of such holy men. Some bad rumours are already afloat against you, which gives me to understand that you are an unmanageable man, a selfish priest, whom the superiors have been forced to turn out as a black sheep."

Those words were uttered with an expression of bad feeling

which told me I had not heard the tenth part of what he had in his heart. However, as I came into his presence prepared to hear all kinds of bad reports I remained perfectly calm.

I answered: "My lord, allow me to tell you that, in taking the solemn step of leaving the monastery of Longueuil, I was not afraid of what the world would say, or think of me. My only desire is to save my soul, and give the rest of my life to my country and my God, in a more efficacious way than I have yet done. The rumours which seem to trouble your lordship about my supposed expulsion from the Oblates do not affect me in the least, for they are without the least foundation. From the first day of my stay in that monastery, all the inmates, from the superior, to the last one, had overwhelmed me with the most sincere marks of kindness and even of respect. If you had seen the tears which were shed by the brothers, when I bade them adieu, you would have understood that I never had more devoted and sincere friends than the members of that religious community. Please read this important document, and you will see that I kept my good name during my stay in that monastery. I handed him the following testimonial letter which the Superior had given me when I left:

"I, the undersigned, Superior of the noviciate of the Oblates of Mary Immaculate at Longueuil, do certify that the conduct of Mr. Chiniquy, when he was in our monastery, has been worthy of the sacred character which he possesses, and after this year of solitude, he does not less deserve the confidence of his brethren in the holy ministry than before. We wish, moreover, to give our testimony of his persevering zeal in the cause of temperance. We think that nothing was more of a nature to give a character of stability to that admirable reform, and to secure perfect success, than the profound reflections and studies of Mr. Chiniquy, when in the solitude of Longueuil, on the importance of that work.

T. F. ALLARD, *Superior of the Noviciate O. M. I.*"

It was really most pleasant for me to see that every line of that document read by the bishop was blotting out some of the stern and unfriendly lines which were on his face, when speaking to me. Nothing was more amiable than his manners, when he handed it back to me saying: "I thank God to see that you are still worthy of my esteem and confidence, as when you entered that monastery. But would you be kind enough to give me the real reasons why you have so abruptly separated from the Oblates?"

"Yes, my lord, I will give them to you; but your lordship knows that there are things of such a delicate nature, that the lips of man shiver and rebel when required to utter them. Such are some of the deplorable things which I have to mention to your lordship. I have put those reasons in these pages, which I respectfully request your lordship to read," and I handed him the *Memoir*, about thirty pages long, which I had prepared.

The bishop read, very carefully, five or six pages, and said:

"Are you positive as to what you write here?"

"Yes, my lord! They are as true and real as I am here."

The bishop turned pale and remained a few minutes silent, biting his lips, and after a deep sigh, said: "Is it your intention to reveal those sad mysteries to the world, or can we hope that you will keep that secret?"

"My lord," I answered, "if your lordship and the Oblates deal with me, as I hope they will do, as with an honourable Catholic priest; if I am kept in the position which an honest priest has a right to fill in the Church, I consider myself bound, in conscience and honour, to keep those things secret. But, if from any abuse, persecutions emanating from the Oblates, or any other party, I am obliged to give to the world the true reasons of my leaving that monastic order, your lordship understands that, in self-defence, I will be forced to make these revelations!"

"But the Oblates cannot say a word, or do anything wrong against you," promptly answered the bishop, "after the honourable testimony they have given you."

"It is true, my lord, that I have no reason to fear anything from the Oblates!" I answered, "but those religious men are not the only ones who might force me to defend myself. You know another who has my future destinies in his hands. You know that my future course will be shaped on his own towards me."

With an amiable smile the bishop answered: "I understand you. But I pledge myself that you have nothing to fear from that quarter. Though I frankly tell you that I would have preferred seeing you work as a member of that monastic institution, it may be that it is more according to the will of God that you should go among the people, as sent by God, rather than by a superior, who might be your inferior in the eyes of many, in that glorious temperance of which you are evidently the blessed apostle in Canada. I am glad to tell you that I have spoken of you to his holiness, and he requested me to give you a precious medal, which bears his most perfect features, with a splendid crucifix. His holiness has graciously attached 300 days' indulgence for every one who will take the pledge of temperance in kissing the feet of that crucifix. Wait a moment," added the bishop, "I will go and get them and present them to you."

When the bishop returned, holding in his hands these two infallible tokens of the kind sentiments of the Pope towards me, I fell on my knees to receive them and press them both to my lips with the utmost respect. When handing me those gifts, the bishop addressed me the kindest words which a bishop can utter to his priest, or a father to his beloved son. He granted me the power to preach and hear confessions all over his diocese, and he dismissed me only after having put his hand on my head and asked God to pour upon me His most abundant benedictions everywhere I should go to work in the holy cause of temperance in Canada.

CHAPTER XLI.

Preparations for the Last Conflict.

OUR adorable Saviour said: "What king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able, with ten thousand, to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?" (Luke xiv: 31). To follow that advice, how often had I fallen on my knees before my God, to implore the necessary strength and wisdom to meet that terrible enemy which was marching against me and my brethren. Often I was so discouraged by the sense of my personal incapacity, that I came near fainting and flying away at the sight of the power and resources of the foe! But the dear Saviour's voice had as many times strengthened me, saying, "Fear not, I am with thee!" He seemed at every hour to whisper in my ears: "Cheer up, I have overcome the world!" Trusting, then, in my God alone for victory, I nevertheless understood that my duty was to arm myself with the weapons which the learned and wise men of past ages had prepared. I again studied the best works written on the subject of wine, from the learned naturalist, Pliny, to the celebrated Sir Astley Cooper. I not only compiled a multitude of scientific notes, arguments, and facts from these books, but prepared a *Manual of Temperance*, which obtained so great a success, for such a small country as Canada, that it went through four editions of twenty-five thousand copies in less than four years. But my best source of information and wisdom was from letters received from Father Mathew, and my personal interviews with him, when he visited the United States.

The first time I met him, in Boston, he told me how he regretted his having, at first, too much relied on the excitement and enthusiasm of the multitudes. "Those fits," he said, "pass away as quickly as the clouds of the storm; and they, too often, leave no more traces of their passage. Persevere in the resolution you have taken in the beginning, never to give the pledge, except when you give a complete course of lectures on the damning effects of intoxicating drinks. How can we expect that the people will forever give up beverages which they honestly, though ignorantly, believe to be beneficial and necessary to their body? The first thing we do we must demonstrate to them that these alcoholic drinks are absolutely destructive of their temporal, as well as their eternal life. So long as the priest and the people believe, as they do to-day, that rum, brandy, wine, beer, and cider give strength to help man to keep up his health in the midst of his hard labours; that they warm his blood in Winter and cool it in Summer; all our efforts, and even our successes, will be like the burning of a bundle of straw, which makes a bright light, attracts the attention for a moment, and leaves nothing but smoke and cinders."

"Hundreds of times I have seen my Irish countrymen honest-

ly taking the pledge for life ; but before a week had elapsed, they had obtained a release from their priests under the impression that they were unable to earn their own living and support their families without drinking those detestable drugs. Very few priests in Ireland have taken the pledge, and still fewer have kept it. In New York, only two Irish priests gave up their intoxicating glass, and the very next week I met both of them drunk. Archbishop Hughes turned my humble efforts to ridicule, before his priests, in my own presence, and drank a glass of brandy to my health with them at his own table to mock me. And here, in Boston, the drinking habits of the bishop and his priests are such, that I have been forced, through self-respect, to quietly withdraw from his palace and come to this hotel. This bad conduct paralyses and kills me."

In saying these last words, that good and noble man burst into a fit of convulsive sobs and tears ; his breast was heaving under his vain efforts to suppress his sighs. He concealed his face in his hands, and for nearly ten minutes he could not utter a word.

The spectacle of the desolation of a man whom God had raised so high, and so much blessed, and the tears of one who had himself dried up so many tears, and brought so much joy, peace and comfort, to so many homes, has been one of the most solemn lessons my God ever gave me. I then learned more clearly than ever, that all the glory of the world is *Vanity*, and that one of the greatest acts of folly is to rely for happiness on the praises of men, and the success of our own labours. For who had received more merited praises, and who had seen his own labours more blessed by God and man, than Father Mathew, whom all ages will call "The Apostle of Temperance of Ireland" ?

My gratitude to Mr. Brassard caused me to choose his parish, near Montreal, for the first grand battlefield of the impending struggle against the enemy of my God and my country ; and the first week of Advent determined upon for the opening of the campaign. But the nearer the day chosen to draw the sword against the modern Goliath, the more I felt the solemnity of my position, and the more I needed the help of Him on whom alone we can trust.

I had determined never to lecture on temperance in any place without previously inquiring, from the most reliable sources about :

1st. The number of deaths and accidents caused by drunkenness the last fifteen or twenty years.

2nd. The number of orphans and widows made by drunkenness.

3rd. The number of rich families ruined, and the number of poor families made poorer by the same cause.

4th. The approximate sum of money expended by the people during the last twenty years.

As the result of my enquiries, I learned that during that short period, 32 men had lost their lives when drunk ; and

through their drunkenness 25 widows and 73 orphans had been left in the lowest degree of poverty ; 72 rich families had been entirely ruined and turned out of their once happy homes by the demon of intemperance, and 90 kept poor. More than three hundred thousand dollars had been paid in cash without counting the loss of time, for the intoxicating beverages drank by the people of Longueuil during the last twenty years.

For three days, I spoke twice a day to crowded congregations. My first text was: "Look not upon the wine when it is red, when it giveth its colour in the cup, when it moveth itself aright. At last, it biteth like a serpent and stingeth like an adder" (Proverbs xxiii: 31, 32).

The first day I showed how alcoholic beverages were biting like a serpent, and stinging like an adder, by destroying the lungs, the brain, and the liver, the nerves and the muscles, the blood, and the very life of man.

The second day I proved that intoxicating drinks were the most implacable and cruel enemies of the fathers, the mothers, the children ; of the young and old ; of the rich and the poor ; of the farmers, the merchants, and the mechanics.

The third day I proved, clearly, that those intoxicating liquors were the enemy of the intelligence, and the soul of man : the Gospel of Christ and of His holy Church ; the enemy of all the rights of man and the laws of God.

My conclusion was, that we were all bound to raise our hands against that gigantic and implacable foe, whose arm was raised against every one of us. I presented the thrilling tableau of our friends, near and dear relations, and neighbours, fallen and destroyed around us ; the thousands of orphans and widows, whose fathers and husbands had been slaughtered by strong drink. I brought before their minds the picture of the starving children, the destitute widows and mothers, whose lives had to be spent in tears, ignominy, desolation and unspeakable miseries, from the use of strong drink.

Then holding the crucifix, blessed and given to me by the Pope, I showed what Christ had suffered on the cross for sins engendered by the use of intoxicating drinks. And I requested them to listen to the voices of the thousands of desolate orphans, widows, wives, and mothers, coming from every corner of the land ; the voices of their priests and their Church ; the voices of the angels, the Virgin Mary and the saints in heaven ; the voice of Jesus Christ their Saviour, calling them to put an end to the deluge of evils and unspeakable iniquities caused by the use of those cursed drinks ; "for," said I, "those liquors are cursed by millions of mothers and children, widows and orphans, who owe to them a life of shame, tears, and untold desolations. They are cursed by the Virgin Mary and the angels who are the daily witnesses of the iniquities with which they deluge the world. They are cursed by the millions of souls which they have plunged into eternal misery. They are cursed by Jesus Christ, from whose hands they have wrenched untold millions of souls, for whom He died on Calvary."

Every one of those truths, incontrovertible for Roman Catholics, were falling with irresistible power on that multitude of people. The distress and consternation were so profound and universal, that they reacted, at last, on the poor speaker, who several times could not express what he himself felt except with his tears and sobs.

When I hoped that, by the great mercy of God, all resistances were subdued, the obstacles removed, the intelligences enlightened, the will conquered, I closed the address, which had lasted more than two hours, by an ardent prayer to God, to grant us the grace to give up for ever the use of those accursed poisons, and I requested every one to repeat with me, in their hearts, the solemn pledge of temperance in the following words:

"Adorable and dear Saviour, Jesus Christ, who died on the cross to take away my sins and save my guilty soul, for Thy glory, the good of my brethren and of my country, as well as for my own good, I promise, with Thy help, never to drink, nor to give to anybody, any intoxicating beverages, except when ordered by an honest physician."

Our Merciful God had visibly blessed the work and His unprofitable servant. The success was above our sanguine expectations. Two thousand three hundred citizens of Longueuil enrolled under the banner of temperance. Instead of inviting them to sign any written pledge, I asked them to come to the foot of the altar and kiss the crucifix I was holding, as the public and solemn pledge of their engagement. The first thing done by the majority of the intelligent farmers of Longueuil, on their return from the church, was to break their decanters and their barrels, and spill the last drop of the accursed drink on the ground.

Seven days later, there were eighty requests in my hand to go and show the ravages of alcoholic liquors to many other parishes.

Boucherville, Chambly, Varennes, St. Hyacinthe, etc. Three Rivers, the great city of Montreal, with all the priests of St. Sulpice, the parishes along the Chambly river. Laprairie, Lachine. In a word, the vast diocese of Montreal, Three Rivers, and St. Hyacinthe, one after the other, raised the war cry against the usage of intoxicating drinks, with a unanimity and determination which seemed to be more miraculous than natural.

During the four years, I gave 1,800 public addresses, in 200 parishes, with the same fruits, and enrolled more than 200,000 people under the banner of temperance. Everywhere, the taverns, the distilleries and breweries were shut, and their owners forced to take to other trades to make a living; not on account of any stringent law, but by the simple fact that the whole people had ceased drinking their beverages, after having been fully persuaded that they were injurious to their bodies, opposed to their happiness, and ruinous to their souls.

The convictions were so unanimous and strong on that subject, that, in many places, the last evening I spent in their

midst, the merchants used to take their barrels of rum, beer, wine and brandy to the public squares, make a pyramid of them, to which I was invited to set fire. The whole population, attracted by the novelty and sublimity of that spectacle, would fill the air with their cries and shouts of joy. When the husbands and wives, the parents and children of the redeemed drunkards rent the air with their cries of joy at the destruction of their enemy, and the fire was in full blaze, one of the merchants would give me an axe to stave in the last barrel of rum. After the last drop was emptied, I usually stood on it to address some parting words to the people.

Such a spectacle baffles any description. The brilliant lights of the pine and cedar trees, mixed with all kinds of inflammable materials which everyone had been invited to bring, changed that darkest hour of that night into the brightest of days. The flames, fed by the fiery liquids, shot forth their tongues of fire towards heaven, as if to praise their great God, whose merciful hand had wrought the marvellous reformation we were celebrating. The thousand faces, illuminated by the blaze, beamed with joy. The noise of the cracking barrels, mixed with that of a raging fire; the cries and shouts of that multitude, with the singing of the *Te Deum*, formed a harmony which filled every soul with sentiments of unspeakable happiness. But where shall I find words to express my feelings, when I had finished speaking! The mothers and wives and some dear children, were crowding around me with their families and redeemed ones, to thank me, press my hand to their lips, and water them with their grateful tears.

The only things which marred that joy were the exaggerated honours and unmerited praises with which I was really overwhelmed. I was, at first, forced to receive an ovation from the curates and people of Longueuil and the surrounding parishes, when they presented to me my portrait, painted by the artist Hamel, which filled me with confusion, for I felt so keenly that I did not deserve such honours. But it was still worse at the end of May, 1849. Judge Mondelet was deputed by the bishop and the priests of the city of Montreal, accompanied by 15,000 people, to present me with a gold medal, and a gift of 400 dollars.

But the greatest surprise my God had in store for me was kept for the end of June, 1850. At that time, I was deputed by 40,000 teetotalers, to present a petition to the Parliament of Toronto, in order to make the rum-sellers responsible for the ravages caused to families of the poor drunkards to whom they had sold their poisonous drugs. The House of Commons having appointed a committee of ten members to help me to frame that Bill, it was an easy matter to have it pass through the three branches. I was present when they discussed and accepted that Bill. Napoleon was not more happy after he had won the battle of Austerlitz than I was when I heard that my "pet bill" had become law and that, thereafter, the innocent victims of the drunken father or husband would receive an indemnity

from the landsharks who were fattening on their poverty and unspeakable miseries.

But what was my surprise and consternation when, immediately after the passing of that Bill, the Hon. Mr. Dewitt rose and proposed that a public expression of gratitude should be given me by Parliament, under the form of a large pecuniary gift !

His speech seemed to me filled with such exaggerated eulogiums, that I would have been tempted to think it was mockery, had I not known the Protestant gentleman was one of my most sincere friends. He was followed by the Honourables Baldwin and Lafontaine, Ministers at the time, and half-a-dozen other members, who went still further into what I so justly consider the regions of exaggeration. It seemed to me bordering on blasphemy to attribute to Chiniquy a reformation which was so clearly the work of my merciful God.

The speeches on that subject lasted two hours, and were followed by a unanimous vote to present me with £500, as a testimony of the gratitude of the people for my labours in the temperance reform of Canada. Previous to that, the bishops of Quebec and Montreal had given me tokens of their esteem which, though unmerited, had been better appreciated by me.

When in May, 1850, the Archbishop of Quebec, my Lord Turgeon, sent the Rev. Charles Baillargeon, curate of Quebec, to Rome, to become his successor, he advised him to come to Longueuil and get a letter from me, which he might present to the Pope, with a volume of my *Temperance Manual*. I complied with his request, and wrote to the Pope. Some months later, I received the following lines:—

Rome, August 10, 1850.

REV. MR. CHINIQUY.

SIR AND DEAR FRIEND,—Monday, the 12th, was the first opportunity given me to have a private audience with the Sovereign Pontiff. I presented him your book, with your letter, which he received, I will not say with that goodness which is so eminently characteristic of him, but with all special marks of satisfaction and approbation, while charging me to state to you that he accords his apostolic benediction to you and to the holy work of temperance you preach. I consider myself happy to have had to offer on your behalf, to the Vicar of Jesus Christ, a book which, after it had done so much good to my countrymen, had been able to draw from his venerable lips such solemn words of approbation of the temperance society and of blessings on those who are its apostles ; and it is also, for my heart, a very sweet pleasure to transmit them to you.

Your friend,

CHARLES BAILLARGEON, *Priest*.

A short time before I received that letter from Rome, my Lord Bourget, Bishop of Montreal, had officially given me the title of "Apostle of Temperance," in the following document. "*IGNATIUS BOURGET, by the Divine Mercy and Grace of the Holy Apostolic See, Bishop of Montreal.*"

"To all who would inspect the present letters, we make known and certify that the venerable Charles Chiniquy, "Apostle of Temperance," Priest of our Diocese, is very well known to us, and we regard him as proved to lead a praiseworthy life, and one agreeable to his ecclesiastical profession. Through the tender mercies of our God, he is under no ecclesiastical censures, at least, which have come to our knowledge.

We entreat each and all, Archbishop, Bishop, and other dignitaries of the Church, to whom it may happen that he may go, that they, for the love of Christ, entertain him kindly and courteously, and as often as they may be asked by him, permit him to celebrate the holy sacrifice of the mass, and exercise other ecclesiastical privileges of piety, being ourselves ready to grant him these and other greater privileges. In proof of this we have ordered the present letters to be prepared under our sign and seal, and with subscription of our Secretary, in our palace of the blessed James, in the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty, on the sixth day of the month of June.

+ IGNATIUS. BISHOP OF MARIANOPOLIS.

By order of the most illustrious and most Reverend Bishop of Marianopolis, D.D.

J. O. PARE, Canon,
Secretary."

No words from my pen can give an idea of the distress and shame I felt when these unmerited praises and public honours began to flow upon me. For, when the siren voice of my natural pride was near to deceive me, there was the noise of a sudden storm in my conscience, crying with a louder voice: "Chiniquy, thou art a sinner, unworthy of such praises and honours."

This conflict made me very miserable. I said to myself, "Are those great successes due to my merits, my virtues, and my eloquence? No! Surely no! They are due to the great mercy of God for my dear country. Will I not for ever be put to shame if I consent to these flattering voices which come to me from morning to night, to make me forget that to my God alone, and not to me, must be given the praise and glory of that marvellous reform? These praises were coming every day, thicker and thicker, through the thousand trumpets of the press, as well as through the addresses daily presented me from the places which had been reformed.

Those unmerited honours were bestowed on me by multitudes who came in carriages and on horseback, bearing flags, with bands of music, to receive me on the borders of their parishes, where the last parishes had just brought me with the same kind of ovations. Sometimes the roads were lined on both sides by thousands and thousands of maple, pine or spruce trees, which they had carried from distant forests, in spite of all my protests.

How many times the curates, who were sitting with me in the best carriages, drawn by the most splendid horses, asked me: "Why do you look so sad, when you see all these faces

beaming with joy?" I answered, "I am sad, because the unmerited honours these good people do me seem to be the shortest way the devil has found to destroy me."

"But the reform you have brought about is so admirable and so complete—the good which is done to the individuals, as well as to the whole country, is so great and universal, that the people want to show you their gratitude." "Do you know my dear friends," I answered, "that that marvellous change is too great to be the work of man? Is it not evidently the work of God? To Him, and Him alone, then we ought to give the praise and glory."

My constant habit, after these days of ovation, was to pass a part of the night in prayer to God, to the Virgin Mary, and to all the saints, to prevent me from being hurt by these worldly honours. Another source of serious anxiety for me was then coming from the large sums of money constantly flowing from the hands of my too kind and grateful reformed countrymen into mine.

It was very seldom that the public expressions of gratitude presented me in their rhetorical addresses were not accompanied by a gift of from 50 dollars to 200 dollars, according to the means and importance of the place. Those sums multiplied by the 365 days of the year would have soon made me one of the richest men in Canada.

But I confess that, when in the presence of God, I went to the bottom of my heart, to see if it were strong enough to carry such a glittering weight, I found it, by far, too weak. I knew so many who, though evidently stronger than I was, had fallen on the way and perished under the too heavy burden of their treasures, that I feared for myself at the sight of such unexpected and immense fortune. Besides, when only 18 years old, my venerable and dear benefactor, the Rev. Mr. Leprohon, director of the College of Nicolet, had told me a thing I had never forgotten: "Chiniquy," he said, "I am sure you will be what we call a successful man in the world. You will easily make your way among your contemporaries; and, consequently, it is probable that you will have many opportunities of becoming rich. But when silver and gold flow into your hands, do not pile and keep it. For, if you set your affections on it, you will be miserable in this world and damned in the next. You must not do like the fattened hogs which are useful only after death. Give it while you are living. Then you will be blessed not only by God and man, but you will be blessed by your own conscience."

These solemn warnings from one of the wisest and best friends God had ever given me, when young, has never gone out of my mind. I found them corroborated in every page of that Bible which I loved so much, and studied every day. I found them also written, by God, in my heart. I then, on my knees, took the resolution, without making an absolute vow of it, to keep only what I wanted for my daily support and give the rest to the poor.

CHAPTER XLII.

**My Sermon on the Virgin Mary.
My first Serious Doubts about the Church of Rome.**

THE 15th of August, 1850, I preached in the Cathedral of Montreal, on the Blessed Virgin Mary's power in heaven, when interceding for sinners. I was sincerely devoted to the Virgin Mary. Nothing seemed to me more natural than to pray to her, and rely on her protection. The object of my sermon was to show that Jesus Christ cannot refuse any of the petitions presented to Him by His mother; that she has always obtained the favours she asked her Son Jesus to grant to her devotees. Of course, my address was more sentimental than Scriptural, as it is the style among the priests of Rome. But I was honest; and I sincerely believed what I said.

"Who among you, my dear brethren," I said to the people, "will refuse any of the reasonable demands of a beloved mother? Who will break and sadden her loving heart when, with supplicating voice and tears, she presents to you a petition which it is in your power, nay, to your interests, to grant? For my own part, were my beloved mother still living, I would prefer to have my right hand crushed and burned to cinders, to have my tongue cut out, than to say, No! to my mother, asking me any favour which it was in my power to bestow.

"These are the sentiments which the God of Sinai wanted to engrave in the very hearts of humanity, when giving His laws to Moses, in the midst of lightnings and thunders, and these are the sentiments which the God of the Gospel wanted to impress on our souls by the shedding of His blood on Calvary. These sentiments of filial respect and obedience to our mothers, Christ Jesus, the Son of God and Son of Mary, practised to perfection. Although God and man, He was still in perfect submission to the will of His mother, of which He makes a law to each of us.

"The Gospel says, in reference to His parents, Joseph and Mary, 'He was subject unto them' (Luke ii: 51). What a grand and shining revelation we have in these few short words: 'Jesus was subject unto Mary'! Is it not written in the same Gospel, that 'Jesus is the same to-day as He was yesterday, and will be for ever'? He has not changed. He is still the Son of Mary, as He was when only twelve years old. In His divine humanity, He is still subject unto Mary, as He was then.

"That is why our holy Church, which is the pillar and fountain of Truth, invites you and me to-day, to put an unbounded confidence in her intercession. Remembering that Jesus has always granted the petitions presented to Him by His divine mother, let us put our petitions in her hands, if we want to receive the favours we are in need of.

"The second reason why all must go to Mary for the favours we want from heaven is, that we are sinners—rebels in the

sight of God. Jesus Christ is our Saviour. Yes ! but He is also our God, infinitely just, infinitely holy. He hates our sins with an infinite hatred. He abhors our rebellions with an infinite, a godly hatred. If we had loved and served Him faithfully, we might go to Him, not only with hope, but with the assurance of being welcomed. But we have forgotten and offended Him ; we have trampled His blood under our feet ; we have joined with those who nailed Him on the cross, pierced His heart with the lance, and shed His blood to the last drop. We belong to the crowd which mocked at His tortures, and insulted Him at His death. How can we dare to look at Him and meet His eyes ? Must we not tremble in His presence ? Must we not fear before that Lion of the Tribe of Judah whom we have wounded and nailed to the cross ?

"This is why our holy Church, speaking through her infallible pontiff, the Vicar of Christ, Gregory XVI., has told us, in the most solemn manner, that 'Mary is the only hope of sinners.' "

Winding up my arguments, I added : " We are those insolent, ungrateful rebels. Jesus is the King of kings against whom we have, a thousand times, risen in rebellion. He has a thousand good reasons to refuse our petitions, if we are impudent enough to speak to Him ourselves. But look at the right hand of the offended King, and behold His dear and divine mother. She is your mother also. For it is to every one of us, as well as to John, that Christ said on the cross, speaking of Mary, 'Behold your mother.'

"Jesus has never refused any favour asked by the Queen of heaven. He cannot rebuke His mother. Let us go to her ; let us ask her to be our advocate and plead our cause, and she will do it. Let us suppliantly request her to ask for our pardon, and she will do it."

*

*

*

I then sincerely took these glittering sophisms for the true religion of Christ, as all the priests and people of Rome are bound to take them to-day, and presented them with all the earnestness of an honest, though deluded mind.

My sermon had made a visible and deep impression. Bishop Prince, coadjutor of my Lord Bourget, who was among my hearers, thanked and congratulated me for the good effect it would have on the people, and I sincerely thought I had said what was true and right before God.

But when night came, before going to bed, I took my Bible as usual, knelt down before God, in the neat little room I occupied in the bishop's palace, and read the twelfth chapter of Matthew, with a praying heart and a sincere desire to understand it, and be benefitted thereby. Strange to say, when I reached the 46th verse, I felt a mysterious awe, as if I had entered, for the first time, into a new and most holy land. Though I had read that verse and the following many times, they came to my mind with a freshness and newness as if I had never seen them before.

Bishop Prince, then coadjutor of Bishop Bourget and late bishop of St. Hyacinthe, where he became insane in 1858 and died in 1860, had been my personal friend from the time I entered the college at Nicolet, where he was Professor of Rhetoric. He very often came to confession to me, and had taken a lively interest in my labours on temperance.

When alone with him, I said, "My lord, I thank you for your kindness in allowing me to unburden my heart to you. I have passed the most horrible night of my life. Temptations against our holy religion, such as I never had before, have assailed me all night. Your lordship remembers the kind words you addressed to me, yesterday, about the sermon I preached. But, last night, very different things came to my mind, which have changed the joys of yesterday into the most unspeakable desolation. You congratulated me yesterday on the manner I had proved that Jesus had always granted the requests of His mother, and that He cannot refuse any of her petitions. The whole night it has been told me that this was a blasphemous lie, and from the Holy Scriptures themselves I have been nearly convinced that you and I, nay, that our holy Church, are preaching a blasphemous falsehood every time we proclaim the doctrine of the worship of Mary, as the Gospel truth."

The poor bishop, thunderstruck by this simple and honest declaration, quickly answered: "I hope you have not yielded to these temptations, and that you will not become a Protestant as so many of your enemies whisper to each other."

"It is my hope, my lord, that our merciful God will keep me, to the end of my life, a dutiful and faithful priest of our holy Church. However, I cannot conceal from your lordship that my faith was terribly shaken last night."

Your lordship has congratulated me for having said that Jesus Christ has always granted the petitions of Mary. Please tell me how you reconcile that proposition with the text, and I handed him the Gospel of Matthew, pointing to the last five verses of the twelfth chapter, I requested him to read them aloud." He read them and said: "Now what do you want from me?"

"My lord, I want respectfully to ask you how we can say that Jesus has always granted the requests of His mother, when this evangelist tells us that He never granted her petitions, when acting in His capacity of Saviour of the world. Must we not fear that we proclaim a blasphemous falsehood when we support a proposition directly opposed to the Gospel?" The poor bishop seemed absolutely confounded by this simple and honest question.

In order to help him out of the inextricable difficulties into which I had at once pushed him, I said "My lord, will you allow me to put a few more questions to you?"

"With pleasure," he answered.

"Well! my lord, who came to this world to save you and me? Is it Jesus or Mary?"

"It is Jesus," answered the bishop.

"Who was called, and is, in reality, the sinner's best friend ? Was it Jesus or Mary ?"

The bishop answered: "It was Jesus."

"Now please allow me a few more questions."

"When Jesus and Mary were on earth, whose heart was most devoted to sinners ? Who loved them with a more efficacious and saving love ; was it Jesus or Mary ?"

"Jesus being God, His love was evidently more efficacious and saving than Mary's," answered the bishop.

"In the days of Jesus and Mary, to whom did Jesus invite sinners to go for their salvation ; was it to Himself or Mary ?" I asked again.

The bishop answered: "Jesus has said to all sinners, 'Come unto Me.' He never said come or go to Mary."

"Have we any examples, in the Scriptures, of sinners, who, fearing to be rebuked by Jesus, have gone to Mary and obtained access to Him through her, and been saved through her intercessions ?"

"I do not remember of any such cases," replied the bishop.

I then asked: "To whom did the penitent thief, on the cross, address himself to be saved: was it to Jesus or Mary ?"

"It was to Jesus," replied the bishop.

"Did that penitent thief do well to address himself to Jesus on the cross, rather than to Mary who was at his feet ?" said I.

"Surely he did better," answered the bishop.

"Now, my lord, allow me only one question more. You told me that Jesus loved sinners, when on earth, infinitely more than Mary ; that He was infinitely more their true friend than she was ; that He infinitely took more interest in their salvation, than Mary ; that it was infinitely better for sinners to go to Jesus than to Mary, to be saved ; will you please tell me if you think that Jesus has lost, in heaven, since He is sitting at the right hand of His Father, any of His divine and infinite superiority of love and mercy over Mary for sinners ; and can you show me that what Jesus has lost has been gained by Mary ?"

"I do not think that Christ has lost any of His love, and power to save us, now that He is in heaven," answered the bishop.

"Now, my lord, if Jesus is still my best Friend ; my most powerful, merciful, and loving Friend, why should I not go directly to Him ? Why should we, for a moment, go to any one who is infinitely inferior, in power, love and mercy, for our salvation ?"

The bishop was stunned by my question. He stammered some unintelligible answer, excused himself for not being able to remain any longer, on account of some pressing business ; and extending his hand to me before leaving, he said: "You will find an answer to your questions and difficulties in the Holy Fathers."

"Can you lend me the Holy Fathers, my lord ?"

He replied: "No, sir, I have them not."

This last answer, from my bishop, shook my faith to its foundation, and left my mind in a state of great distress. With the sincere hope of finding in the Holy Fathers some explanations which would dispel my painful doubts, I immediately went to Mr. Fabre, the bookseller of Montreal, who got me from France, the edition of the Holy Fathers, by Migne. I studied, with the utmost attention, every page where I might find what they taught of the worship of Mary, and the doctrine that Jesus Christ had never refused any of her prayers.

What was my desolation, my shame, and my surprise, to find that the Holy Fathers of the first six centuries had never advocated the worship of Mary, and that the many eloquent pages on the power of Mary in heaven, and her love for sinners, found in every page of my theologians, and other ascetic books I had read till then, were but impudent lies ; additions interpolated in their works a hundred years after their death.

When discovering these forgeries, under the name of the Holy Fathers, of which my Church was guilty, how many times, in the silence of my long nights of study and prayerful meditations, did I hear a voice telling me : "Come out of Babylon !"

But where could I go ? Out of the Church of Rome, where could I find the salvation which was to be found only within her walls ? I said to myself, "Surely there are some errors in my dear Church. The dust of ages may have fallen on the precious gold of her treasures, but will I not find still more damnable errors among those hundreds of Protestant Churches which, under the name of Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Baptists, Methodists, etc., are divided and sub-divided into scores of contemptible sects anathematising and denouncing each other before the world ?"

My ideas of the great family of Evangelical Churches, comprised under the broad name of Protestantism, were so exaggerated then, that it was absolutely impossible for me to find in them that unity which I considered the essential of the Church of Christ. The hour was not yet come, but it was coming fast, when my dear Saviour would make me understand His sublime words : "I am the vine and ye are the branches." It was some time later, when under the beautiful vine I had planted in my own garden, and which I had cultivated with mine own hands, I saw that there was not a single branch like another in that prolific vine. Some branches were very big, some very thin, some very long, some very short, some going up, some going down, some straight as an arrow, some crooked as a flash of lightning, some turning to the West, some to the East, some to the North, and others to the South. But, although the branches were so different from each other in so many things, they all gave me excellent fruit, so long as they remained united to the vine.

CHAPTER XLIII.

The Holy Fathers.

Purgatory and the Sucking Pig of the Poor Man of Varennes.

THE most desolate work of a sincere Catholic priest is the study of the Holy Fathers. He does not take a step in the labyrinth of their discussions and controversies without seeing the dreams of his theological studies and religious views disappear as the thick morning mist when the sun rises above the horizon. Bound, as he is, by a solemn oath, to interpret the Holy Scriptures only according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers, the first thing which puzzles and distresses him, is their absolute want of unanimity on the greater part of the subjects which they discuss. The fact is, that more than two-thirds of what one Father has written is to prove that what some other Holy Father has written is wrong and heretical.

The student of the Fathers not only detects that they do not agree with one another, but finds that many of them do not even agree with themselves. Very often they confess that they were mistaken when they said this or that; that they have lately changed their minds; that they now hold for saving truth what they formerly condemned as a damning error!

What becomes of the solemn oath of every priest, in presence of this undeniable fact? How can he make an act of faith when he feels that its foundation is nothing but falsehood?

No words can give an idea of the mental tortures I felt when I saw positively that I could not, any longer, preach on the eternity of the suffering of the damned, nor believe in the real presence of the body, soul, and divinity of Christ in the sacrament of communion; nor in the supremacy of the sovereign pontiff of Rome, nor in any of the other dogmas of my Church, without perjuring myself! For there was not one of those dogmas which had not been flatly and directly denied by some Holy Fathers.

It is true, that in my Roman Catholic theological books, I had long extracts of Holy Fathers, very clearly supporting and confirming my faith in those dogmas. For instance, I had the apostolic liturgies of St. Peter, St. Mark, and St. James, to prove that the sacrifice of the mass, purgatory, prayers for the dead, transubstantiation, were believed and taught from the very days of the apostles.

What was my dismay when I discovered that those liturgies were nothing else than vile and audacious forgeries presented to the world by my Popes and my Church as Gospel truth!

I could not find words to express my sense of shame and consternation, when I became sure that the same Church which had invented these apostolic liturgies, had accepted and circulated the false decretals of Isidore, and forged innumerable additions and interpolations to the writings of the Holy Fathers,

When I contemplated that blessed Mary, whom I loved, as so tenderly approaching the house where she was to meet her divine Son, who had been so long absent from her, my heart suddenly throbbed in sympathy with hers. How happy she must have felt, when she heard that He was, now near enough to allow her to go and see Him ! How quick were her steps. How cheerful and interesting the meeting ! How the beloved Saviour will repay by His respectful and divine love to His beloved mother, the trouble and the fatigue of her long journey ! My heart beat with joy at the privilege of witnessing that interview, and of hearing the respectful words Jesus would address to His mother !

With heart and soul throbbing with these feelings, I slowly read : " While He talked to the people, behold, His mother and His brethren stood without, desiring to speak with Him. Then one of them said unto Him : Behold Thy mother and Thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with Thee."

" But He answered and said unto him that told Him. Who is My mother ? Who are my brethren ? And He stretched forth His hands towards His disciples, and said : Behold My mother and My brethren ! For whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, sister, and mother."

I had hardly finished reading the last verse when big drops of sweat began to flow from my face, my heart beat with a tremendous speed, and I came near fainting. A voice, the voice of my conscience, whose thunders were like the voice of a thousand Niagaras, was telling me : " Do you not see that you have preached a sacrilegious lie this morning, when, from the pulpit, you said to your ignorant and deluded people, that Jesus always granted the petitions of His mother, Mary ? Are you not ashamed to deceive yourself, and deceive your poor countrymen with such silly falsehoods ?

" Read, read again these words ! and understand that, far from granting all the petitions of Mary, Jesus has always, except when a child, said No ! to her requests. He has always rebuked her, when she asked Him anything in public ! Here she came to ask Him a favour before the whole people. It is the easiest, the most natural favour that a mother ever asked of her son. It is a favour that a son has never refused to a mother. He answers by a rebuke, a public and a solemn rebuke ! Is it through want of love and respect for Mary that He gave her that rebuke ? No ! Never a son loved and respected a mother as He did. But it was a solemn protest against the blasphemous worship of Mary, as practised by the Church of Rome."

I felt at once bewildered and confounded by the voice which was shaking my very bones, that I thought it was the devil's voice, and, for a moment, I feared I was possessed of a demon.

" My God," I cried, " have mercy upon me ! Come to my help ! Save me from my enemy's hand !"

As quick as lightning the answer came : " It is not Satan's

voice you hear. It is I, thy Saviour and thy God, who speaks to thee. Read what Mark, Luke, and John tell you about the way I received her petitions, from the very day I began to work, and speak publicly as the Son of God, and the Saviour of the world."

These cries of my awakening intelligence were sounding in my ears for more than one hour before I consented to obey them. At last, with a trembling hand, and a distressed mind, I took my Bible and read in St. Mark, chap. iii., verses 31 to 35: "There came then His brethren and His mother, and standing without, sent unto Him, calling Him. And the multitude sat about Him, and they said unto Him: Behold, Thy mother and Thy brethren without seek for Thee. And He answered them, saying: Who is My mother, or My brethren? And he looked round about on them which sat about Him, and said: Behold My mother and My brethren! For whosoever shall do the Will of God the same in My brother, and My sister, and mother."

The reading of these words acted upon me as the shock of a sword going through and through the body of one who had already been mortally wounded. I felt absolutely confounded. The voice continued to sound in my ears. "Do you not see you have presented a blasphemous lie, every time you said that Jesus always granted the petitions of His mother?"

I remained again, a considerable time, bewildered, not knowing how to fight down thoughts which were so mercilessly shaking my faith, and demolishing the respect I had kept till then, for my Church. After more than half-an-hour of vain struggle to silence those thoughts, it came to my mind that St. Luke had narrated this interview of Mary and Jesus in a very different way. I opened the holy Book again to read the eighth chapter. But how shall I find words to express my distress when I saw that the rebuke of Jesus Christ was expressed in a still sterner way by St. Luke than by the two other evangelists!

"Then came to Him His mother and His brethren, and could not come at Him for the press. And it was told Him by certain which said, Thy mother and Thy brethren stand without, desiring to see Thee. And He answered and said unto them, My mother, and My brethren, are these which hear the Word of God, and do it" (Luke viii: 19-21).

It then seemed to me as if those three evangelists said to me: "How dare you preach, with your apostate and lying Church, that Jesus has always granted all the petitions of Mary, when we were ordered by God to write and proclaim that all the public petitions she had presented to Him, when working as the Son of God, and the Saviour of the world, had been answered by a public rebuke?"

What could I answer? How could I stand the rebuke of these three evangelists? Trembling from head to foot, I fell upon my knees, crying to the Virgin Mary to come to my help and pray that I might not succumb to this temptation, and lose my faith and confidence in her. But the more I prayed, the

louder the voice seemed to say: "How dare you preach that Jesus has always granted the petitions of Mary, when we tell you the contrary by the order of God Himself?"

My desolation became such, that a cold sweat covered my whole frame again; my head was aching, and I think I would have fainted had not I been released by a torrent of tears. In my distress, I cried: "Oh! my God! my God! look down upon me in Thy mercy: strengthen my faith in Thy Holy Church! Grant me to follow her voice and obey her commands with more and more fidelity; she is Thy beloved Church. She cannot err. She cannot be an apostate Church." But in vain I wept and cried for help. My whole being was filled with dismay and terror from the voices of the three witnesses, who were crying louder and louder:

"How dare you preach that Christ has always granted the petitions of Mary, when the Gospels, written under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, tell you so clearly the contrary?"

When I had, in vain, wept, prayed, cried, and struggled from ten at night till three in the morning; the miraculous change of water into wine, by Christ, at the request of His mother, suddenly came to my mind. I felt a momentary relief from my terrible distress, by the hope that I could prove to myself that in this case the Saviour had obeyed the demands of His holy mother. I eagerly opened my Bible again and read:

"And the third day there was a marriage in Cana, of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there. And both Jesus was called, and His disciples, to the marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus said unto Him, They have no wine. Jesus saith unto her: Woman, what have I to do with thee? Mine hour is not yet come. His mother saith unto the servants: Whatsoever He saith unto you, do it" (John ii: 2).

Till that hour I had always accepted that text in the sense given in the Church of Rome, as proving that the very first miracle of Jesus Christ was wrought at the request of His mother. And I was preparing myself to answer the three mysterious witnesses: "Here is proof that you are three devils, and not three evangelists, when you tell me that Jesus never granted the petitions of His mother, except when a child. Here is the glorious title of Mary to my confidence in her intercession; here is the seal of her irresistible superhuman power over her divine Son; here is the undeniable evidence that Jesus cannot refuse anything asked by His divine mother!" But when, armed with these explanations of the Church, I was preparing to meet what Matthew, St. Mark, and St. Luke had just told me, a sudden distressing thought came to my mind; and this thought was as if I had heard the three witnesses saying: "How can you be so blind as not to see that instead of being a favour granted to Mary, this first miracle is the first opportunity chosen by Christ to protest against her intercession. It is a solemn warning to Mary never to ask anything from Him, and to us, never to put any confidence in her requests. Here, Mary, evidently full of compassion for those

poor people, who had not the means to provide wine for the guests who had come with Jesus, wants her Son to give them the wine they wanted. How does Christ answer her request ? He answers it by a rebuke, a most solemn rebuke. Instead of saying, "Yes, mother, I will do as you wish," He says, "Woman, what have I to do with thee ?" which clearly means, "Woman, thou hast nothing to do with this matter. I do not want you to speak to Me of the bridegroom's distress. It was My desire to come to their help and show My divine power. I do not want you to put yourself between the wants of humanity and Me. I do not want the world to believe that you have any right, any power or influence over Me, or more compassion on the miseries of man than I have. Is it not to Me, and Me alone, the lost children of Adam must look to be saved ? Woman, what have I to do with thee in My great work of saving this perishing world ? Nothing, absolutely nothing. I know what I have to do, to fulfil, not your will, but My Father's will !"

That is what Jesus meant by the solemn rebuke given to Mary. He wanted to banish all idea of her ever becoming an intercessor between man and Christ. He wanted to protest against the doctrine of the Church of Rome, that it is through Mary that He will bestow His favour, to His disciples, and Mary understood it well when she said, "Whatsoever He saith unto you, do it." Never come to me, but go to Him. "For there is no other name given among men whereby we must be saved."

Every one of these thoughts passed over my distressed soul like a hurricane. Every sentence was like a flash of lightning in a dark night. I was like a poor dismantled ship suddenly overtaken by the tempest in the midst of the ocean.

During the long hours of that night my God was contending with me, and I was struggling against Him. But though brought down to the dust, I was not conquered. My understanding was very nearly convinced. My rebellious and proud will was not yet ready to yield. The chains by which I was tied to the feet of the idols of Rome, though rudely shaken, were not yet broken. However, to say the truth, my views about the worship of Mary had received a severe shock, and were much modified. That night had been sleepless ; and in the morning my eyes were red, and my face swollen with my tears. When at breakfast, Bishop Prince, who was sitting by me, asked, "Are you sick ? Your eyes are as if you had wept all night ?"

"Your lordship is not mistaken, I have wept the whole night !" I answered.

"Wept all the night !" replied the bishop. "Might I know the cause of your sorrow ?"

"Yes, my lord. You can, you must know it. But please come to your room. What I have to say is of such a private and delicate nature, that I want to be alone with your lordship, when opening my mind to the cause of my tears."

masses to take the soul of your wife out of purgatory, but give me five shillings; for you know the price of a low mass is one shilling."

The poor man answered: "I can no more give one dollar than I can give five. I have not a cent.; and my three poor little children are as naked and starving as myself."

"Well! well," answered the curate, "when I passed this morning, before your house, I saw two beautiful sucking pigs. Give me one of them, and I will say you five masses."

The poor man said: "These small pigs were given me by a charitable neighbour, that I might raise them to feed my poor children next winter. They will surely starve to death if I give my pigs away."

I could not listen any longer to that strange dialogue; every word of which fell upon my soul as a shower of burning coals. I was beside myself with shame and disgust.

A quarter-of-an-hour later, the curate knocked at my door and said: "Tea is ready; please come down!" I answered: "I am not well; I want some rest. Please excuse me if I do not take my tea to-night."

It would require a more eloquent pen than mine to give the correct history of that sleepless night. The hours were dark and long. "My God! my God!" I cried, a thousand times, "is it possible that, in my so dear Church of Rome, there can be such abominations as I have seen and heard to-day? Dear and adorable Saviour, if Thou wert still on earth, and should see the soul of a daughter of Israel fallen into a burning furnace, wouldst Thou ask a shilling to take it out? Wouldst Thou force the poor father, with his starving children, to give their last morsel of bread to persuade Thee to extinguish the burning flames?"

"Is it possible that there is such a fiery prison for the sinners after death, and that neither Thyself nor any of Thy apostles has said a word about it?"

"Several of the Fathers consider purgatory as of Pagan origin. Tertullian speaks of it only after he had joined the sect of the Montanists, and he confesses that it is not through the Holy Scriptures, but through the inspiration of the Paraclete of Montanus, that he knows anything about purgatory. Augustine, the most learned and pious of the Holy Fathers, does not find purgatory in the Bible, and positively says that its existence is dubious; that everyone may believe what he thinks proper about it."

Before saying my mass the next morning, I went to confess my criminal cowardice, and I repaired my cowardice by giving five dollars to that poor man.

I spent the morning in hearing confessions till ten o'clock, when I delivered a very exciting sermon on the malice of sin, proved by the sufferings of Christ on the cross. This address gave a happy diversion to my mind, and made me forget the sad story of the sucking-pig.

After the sermon, the curate took me by the hand to his

dining-room, where he gave me, in spite of myself, the place of honour. He had the reputation of having one of the best cooks of Canada, in the widow of one of the governors of Nova Scotia, whom he had as housekeeper. The dishes before our eyes did not diminish this good reputation. The first dish was a sucking-pig, roasted with an art and perfection such as I had never seen ; it looked like a piece of pure gold, and its smell would have brought water to the lips of the most penitent anchorite.

I had not tasted anything for the last twenty-four hours ; had preached two exciting sermons, and spent six hours in hearing confessions. I felt hungry ; and the sucking-pig was the most tempting thing to me. It was a real epicurean pleasure to look at it and smell its fragrance. Besides, that was a favourite dish with me. I cannot conceal that it was with real pleasure that I saw the curate, after sharpening his long glittering knife on the file, cutting a beautiful slice from the shoulders, and offering it to me. I was too hungry to be over-patient. My knife and fork had soon done their work. I was carrying to my mouth the tempting and succulent mouthful when, suddenly, the remembrance of the poor man's sucking-pig came to my mind. I laid the piece on my plate, and with painful anxiety, looked at the curate and said : " Will you allow me to put you a question about this dish ? "

" Oh, yes ; ask me not only one, but two questions, and I will be happy to answer you," answered he.

" Is this the sucking-pig of the poor man of yesterday ? " I asked.

With a convulsive fit of laughter, he replied. " Yes ; it is just it. If we cannot take away the soul of the poor woman out of the flames of purgatory, we will, at all events, eat a fine sucking-pig ! "

The other thirteen priests filled the room with laughter, to show their appreciation of their host's wit. However, their laughter was not of long duration. With a feeling of shame and uncontrollable indignation, I pushed away my plate with such force, that it crossed the table and nearly fell on the floor ; saying, with a sentiment of disgust which no pen can describe : " I would rather starve to death than eat of that execrable dish ; I see in it the tears of the poor man ; I see the blood of his starving children ; it is the price of a soul. No ! no, gentlemen ; do not touch it. You know Mr. Curate, how 30,000 priests and monks were slaughtered in France in the bloody days of 1792. It was for such iniquities as this that God Almighty visited the Church of France. The same future awaits us here in Canada."

The poor curate, stunned by the solemnity of my words, as well as by the consciousness of his guilt, lisped some excuse. The sucking-pig remained untouched ; and the rest of the dinner had more the appearance of a burial ceremony than of a convivial repast. By the mercy of God I had redeemed my cowardice of the day before.

CHAPTER XLVI.

The Valley of the Mississippi.**Intemperance of the Bishop and Priests of Detroit.**

ON the 15th December, 1850, I received the following letter :
Chicago, Ill., December 1st, 1850.
REV. FATHER CHINIQUY, Apostle of Temperance, Canada.

DEAR SIR,—When I was in Canada, last fall, I intended to confer with you on a very important subject. But you were then working in the diocese of Boston, and my limited time prevented me from going so far to meet you. You are aware that the lands of the State of Illinois and the whole valley of the Mississippi are among the richest and most fertile in the world. In a near future those regions, which are now a comparative wilderness, will be the granary, not only of the United States, but of the whole world ; and those who will possess them, will not only possess the very heart and arteries of this young and already so great republic, but will become its rulers.

It is our intention, without noise, to take possession of those vast and magnificent regions of the West in the name and for the benefit of our holy Church. Our plan to attain that object is as sure as easy. There is, every year, an increasing tide of emigration from the Roman Catholic regions of Europe and Canada towards the United States. Unfortunately, till now, our emigrants have blindly scattered themselves among the Protestant populations, which too often absorb them and destroy their faith.

Why should we not direct their steps to the same spot ? Why should we not, for instance, induce them to come and take possession of these fertile States of Illinois, Missouri, Iowa, Kansas, etc. They can get those lands now at a nominal price. If we succeed, as I hope we will, our holy Church will soon count her children here by ten and twenty millions, and through their numbers, their wealth and unity, they will have such a weight in the balance of power that they will rule everything.

The Protestants, always divided among themselves, will never form any strong party without the help of the united vote of our Catholic people ; and that party alone, which will ask and get our help by yielding to our just demands will rule the country. Then, in reality, though not in appearance, our holy Church will rule the United States, as she is called by our Saviour Himself to rule the whole world. There is, to-day, a wave of emigrants from Canada towards the United States, which, if not stopped or well directed, is threatening to throw the good French-Canadian people into the mire of Protestantism. Your countrymen when once mixed with the numberless sects which try to attract them, are soon shaken in their faith. Their children sent to Protestant schools, will be unable to defend themselves against the wily and united efforts made to pervert them.

But put yourself at the head of the emigrants from Canada, France and Belgium; prevent them from settling any longer among the Protestants, by inducing them to follow you to Illinois, and with them, you will soon see here a Roman Catholic people, whose number, wealth and influence, will amaze the world. God Almighty has wonderfully blessed your labours in Canada in that holy cause of temperance. But now the work is done, the same great God presents to your Christian ambition a not less great and noble work for the rest of your life. Make use of your great influence over your countrymen to prevent them from scattering any longer among Protestants, by inducing them to come here, in Illinois. You will then lay the foundation of a Roman Catholic French people, whose piety, unity, wealth and number will soon renew and revive, on this continent, the past and fading glories of the Church of Rome.

We have already, at Bourbonnais, a fine colony of French-Canadians. They long to see and hear you. Come and help me to make that comparatively small, though thriving people, grow with emigrants from the French-speaking countries of Europe and America, till it covers the whole territory of Illinois with its sturdy sons and pious daughters. I will ask the Pope to make you my coadjutor, and you will soon become my successor, for I already feel too weak and unhealthy to bear alone the burden of my too large diocese.

Please consider what I propose to you before God, and answer me. But be kind enough to consider this overture as strictly confidential between you and me, till we have brought our plans into execution.

Truly yours,

+ OLIV VANDEVELD, *Bishop of Chicago.*

I answered him that the Bishops of Boston, Buffalo and Detroit, had already advised me to put myself at the head of the French-Canadian emigration, in order to direct its tide towards the vast and rich regions of the West. I wrote him that I felt as he did, that it was the best way to prevent my countrymen from falling into the snares laid before them by Protestants, among whom they were scattering themselves. I told him that I would consider it a great honour and privilege to spend the last part of my life in extending the power and influence of our holy Church over the United States, and that I would in June next, pay my respects to him in Chicago. I added that after I should have seen those territories of Illinois and the Mississippi valley with my own eyes, it would be more easy to give him a definite answer. I ended my letter by saying. "But I respectfully request your lordship to give up the idea of selecting me for your coadjutor, or successor. I have already twice refused to become a bishop. That high dignity is too much above my capacities to be ever accepted by me."

Without speaking to anybody of the proposition of the Bishop of Chicago, I was preparing to go and see the new field where he wanted me to work, when, in the beginning of May, 1851, I received a very pressing invitation from my Lord Lefebvre,

in order to make them say the very contrary of what they intended.

How many times, when alone, studying the history of the shameless fabrications, I said to myself: "Does the man whose treasury is filled with pure gold forge false coins, or spurious pieces of money? No! How, then, is it possible that my Church does possess the pure truth, when she has been at work during so many centuries, to forge such egregious lies, under the names of liturgies and decretals about the holy mass, purgatory, the supremacy of the Pope, etc.

"If those dogmas could have been proved by the Gospel and the true writings of the Fathers, where was the necessity of forging lying documents? Would the Popes and councils have treasuries with spurious bank bills, if they had had exhaustless mines of gold in hand? What right has my Church to be called holy and infallible, when she is publicly guilty of such impostures?"

From my infancy I had been taught, with all the Roman Catholics, that Mary is the mother of God, and many times, every day, when praying to her, I used to say, "Holy Mary, mother of God, pray for me."

But what was my distress when I read in the *Treatise on Faith*, by St. Augustine, chapter iv., § 9, these very words: "When the Lord said: 'Woman what have I to do with thee? Mine hour has not yet come' (John ii: 4), He rather admonishes us to understand that, in respect of His being God, there was no mother for Him."

Thus, as the unexpected contradictions of the Holy Fathers to the tenets of my Church, and their furious and uncharitable divisions among themselves, were striking me, I plunged deeper and deeper in the deep waters of the Fathers and the Word of God, with the hope of getting rid of the deadly darts which were piercing my Roman Catholic conscience. But it was in vain. The deeper I went, the more deadly the weapons would stick to the flesh and bone of my soul. How deep was the wound I received from Gregory the Great, one of the most learned Popes of Rome, against the supremacy and universality of the Pope of Rome, as taught to-day, the following extract from his writings will show: "But I confidently say that whosoever calls himself universal bishop, or desires to be called so, in his pride, he prefers himself to the rest. And he is led to error with a similar pride. For as that wicked one wishes to appear as God, above all men, whosoever he is, who alone desires to be called a supreme bishop, extols himself above the other bishops" (Epist. Greg. Mag. Lib. vii. Indict. xv. Ep. xxxiii. ad. Maur. Aug.).

These words wounded me very painfully. I showed them to Mr. Brassard, saying. "Do you not see here the incontrovertible proof of what I have told you many times, that, during the first six centuries of Christianity, we do not find the least proof that there was anything like our dogma of the supreme power and authority of the Bishop of Rome, or any other bishop,

over the rest of the Christian world? If there is anything which comes to the mind with an irresistible force, when reading the Fathers of the first centuries, it is that not one of them had any idea that there was, in the Church, any man chosen by God, to be, in fact or name, the universal and supreme pontiff. With such an undeniable fact before us, how can we believe and say, that the religion we profess and teach is the same which was preached from the beginning of Christianity?"

"My dear Chiniquy," answered Mr. Brassard, "did I not tell you, when you bought the Holy Fathers, that you were doing a foolish and dangerous thing? In every age, the man who singularises himself and walks out of the common tracks of life is subject to fall into ridicule. As you are the only priest in Canada, who has the Holy Fathers, it is thought and said, in many quarters, that it is through pride you got them; that it is to raise yourself above the rest of the clergy that you study them not only at home, but that you carry some wherever you go. I see, with regret, that you are fast losing ground in the mind, not only with the bishop, but of the priests in general, on account of your indomitable perseverance to giving all your spare time to their study. You are also too free and imprudent in speaking of what you call the contradictions of the Holy Fathers, and their want of harmony with some of our religious views. Many say that this too great application to study, without a moment of relaxation, will upset your intelligence and trouble your mind. They even whisper that there is danger ahead for your faith, which you do not suspect, and that they would not be surprised if the reading of the Bible and the Holy Fathers would drive you into the abyss of Protestantism. I know that they are mistaken, and I do all in my power to defend you. But, I thought, as your most devoted friend, that it was my duty to tell you these things, and warn you before it was too late."

I replied: "Bishop Prince told me the very same thing, and I will give you the answer he got from me. 'When you ordain a priest, do you not make him swear that he will never interpret the Holy Scriptures, except according to the unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers? Ought you not, then, to know what they teach? For, how can we know their unanimous consent without studying them? Is it not more than strange that, not only the priests do not study the Holy Fathers, but the only one in Canada who is trying to study them is turned into ridicule and suspected of heresy? Is it my fault if that precious stone, called 'unanimous consent of the Holy Fathers, which is the very foundation of our religious belief and teaching, is to be found nowhere in them? Is it my fault if Origen never believed in the eternal punishment of the damned; if St. Cyprian denied the supreme authority of the Bishop of Rome, if St. Augustine positively said that nobody was obliged to believe in auricular confession, and the real presence of the body of Christ in the eucharist? Is it my fault if one of the most learned and holy Popes, Gregory the Great, has called

by the name of Antichrist all his successors for taking the name of supreme pontiff, and trying to persuade the world that they had, by divine authority, a supreme jurisdiction and power over the rest of the Church ? ”

“ And what did Bishop Prince answer you ? ” rejoined Mr. Brassard.

“ Just as you did, by expressing his fears that my too great application to the study of the Bible and the Holy Fathers, would either send me to the lunatic asylum, or drive me into the bottomless abyss of Protestantism.”

I answered him in a jocose way. “ that if the too great study of the Bible and the Holy Fathers were to open me the gates of the lunatic asylum, I feared I would be left alone there, for I know that they are keeping themselves at a respectable distance from those dangerous writings. I know enough of the Holy Fathers to assure your lordship that the oath we take of accepting the Word of God according to the unanimous consent, is a miserable blunder, if not a blasphemous perjury. It is evident that Pius IV., who imposed the obligation of that oath upon us all, never read a single volume of the Holy Fathers. He would not have been guilty of such an incredible blunder, if he had known that the Holy Fathers are unanimous in only one thing, which is to differ from each other on almost everything ; except, we suppose, that, like the last Pope, he was too fond of good champagne, and that he wrote that ordinance after a luxurious dinner.”

I spoke this last sentence in a half-serious and half-joking way. The bishop answered : “ Who told you that about our last Pope ? ”

“ Your lordship,” I answered, “ told me that, when you complimented me on the apostolic benediction which the present Pope sent me through my Lord Baillargeon, ‘ that his predecessor would not have given me his benediction for preaching temperance because he was too fond of wine ! ’ ”

“ Oh, yes ! I remember now,” answered the bishop. “ But it was a bad joke on my part, which I regret.”

“ Good or bad joke,” I replied, “ it is not the less a fact, that our last Pope was too fond of wine. There is not a single priest of Canada who has not gone to Rome, without bringing that back as a public fact, from Italy.”

“ And what did my Lord Prince say to that,” asked Mr. Brassard.

“ Just as when he was cornered by me on the subject of the Virgin Mary, he abruptly put an end to the conversation, by looking at his watch and saying that he had a call to make at that very hour.”

*

*

*

Not long after that painful conversation about the Holy Fathers, it was the will of God that a new arrow should be thrust into my Roman Catholic conscience.

I had been invited to give a course of three sermons at Varennes. The second day, at tea time, after preaching and

hearing confessions for the whole afternoon, I was coming from the church with the curate, when, half-way to the parsonage, we were met by a poor man, who looked more like one coming out of the grave than a living man; he was covered with rags, and his pale and trembling lips indicated that he was reduced to the last degree of human misery. Taking off his hat, through respect for us, he said to Rev. Primeau, with a trembling voice: "You know, Rev. M. le Curé, that my poor wife died, and was buried ten days ago, but I was too poor to have a funeral service sung the day she was buried, and I fear she is in purgatory. For almost every night I see her, in my dreams, wrapped up in burning flames. She cries to me for help, and asks me to have a high mass sung for the rest of her soul. I come to ask you to be so kind as to sing that high mass for her."

"Of course," answered the curate, "your wife is in the flames of purgatory, and suffers there the most unspeakable tortures which can be relieved only by the offering of the holy sacrifice of mass. Give me five dollars and I will sing that mass to-morrow morning."

"You know very well, Rev. M. le Cure," answered the poor man, in a most supplicating tone, "that my wife has been sick, as well as myself, a good part of the year. I am too poor to give you five dollars!"

"If you cannot pay, you cannot have any mass sung. You know it is the rule. It is not in my power to change it."

These words were said by the curate with a high and unfeeling tone, which was in absolute contrast with the solemnity and distress of the poor sick man. They made a very painful impression upon me, for I felt for him. I knew the curate was well off, at the head of one of the richest parishes of Canada; that he had several thousand dollars in the bank. I hoped, at first, that he would kindly grant the petition presented to him, without speaking of the pay, but I was disappointed. My first thought, after hearing his harsh rebuke, was to put my hand in my pocket and take one of the several five-dollar gold pieces I had, and give it to the poor man, that he might be relieved from his terrible anxiety about his wife. It came also to my mind to say to him, "I will sing your high mass for nothing to-morrow." But alas! I must confess, to my shame, I was too cowardly to do that noble deed.

When I was feeling ashamed of my own cowardice, and still more indignant against myself than against the curate, he said to the disconcerted man: "That woman is your wife; not mine. It is your business, and not mine, to see how to get her out of purgatory." Turning to me, he said in a most amicable way: "Please, sir, come to tea." We hardly started, when the poor man, raising his voice, said, in a most touching way: "I cannot leave my poor wife in the flames of purgatory; if you cannot sing a high mass, will you please say five low masses to rescue her soul from those burning flames?"

The priest turned towards him and said: "Yes, I can say five

Bishop of Detroit, to lecture on temperance to the French-Canadians, who were then forming the majority of the Roman Catholics of that city.

That bishop had taken the place of Bishop Rese, whose public scandals and infamies had covered the whole Catholic Church of America with shame. During the last years he had spent in his diocese, very few weeks had passed without his being picked up beastly drunk in the lowest taverns, and even in the streets of Detroit, and dragged, unconscious, to his palace.

After long and vain efforts to reform him, the Pope and the bishops of America had happily succeeded in persuading him to go to Rome, and pay his respects to the so-called Vicar of Jesus Christ. This was a snare too keenly laid to be suspected by the drunken bishop. He had hardly set his feet in Rome when the inquisitors threw him into one of their dungeons, where he remained till the republicans set him at liberty, in 1848, after Pope Pius IX. had fled to Civita Vecchia.

In order to blot out from the face of his Church the black spots with which his predecessor had covered it, my Lord Lefebvre made the greatest display of zeal for the cause of temperance. As soon as he was inducted, he invited his people to follow his example and enrol themselves under its banners, in a very powerful address on the evils caused by the use of intoxicating drinks. At the end of his eloquent sermon, laying his right hand on the altar, he made a solemn promise never to drink any alcoholic liquors.

His telling sermon on temperance, with his solemn and public promise, was published through almost all the papers of that time, and I read it many times to the people with good effect. When, on my way to Illinois, I reached the city of Detroit to give a course of lectures demanded by the bishop, in the first week of June, though the bishop was absent, I immediately began to preach to an immense audience in the Cathedral. I had agreed to give five lectures, and it was only during the third one that Bishop Lefebvre arrived. After paying me great compliments for my zeal and success in the temperance cause, he took me by the hand to his dining-room, and said: "Let us go and refresh ourselves."

I shall never forget my surprise and dismay, when I perceived the long dining-table, covered with bottles of brandy, wine, beer, etc., prepared for himself and his six or seven priests who were already around it, joyfully emptying their glasses. My first thought was to express my indignation, but I accepted the seat offered me by the bishop at his right hand.

"Father Chiniquy," he said, "this is the sweetest claret you ever drank." And before I could utter a word, he had filled my large glass with the wine, and drank his own to my health.

Looking at the bishop in amazement, I said: "What does this mean, my lord?"

"It means that I want to drink with you the best claret you ever tasted."

"Do you take me for a comedian? and have you called me

here to play such a strange comedy?" I replied with lips trembling with indignation.

"I did not invite you to play a comedy," he answered. "I invited you to lecture on temperance to my people, and you have done it in a most admirable way, these last three days. Though you did not see me, I was present at this evening's address. I never heard anything so eloquent on that subject as what you said. Now that you have fulfilled your duty, I must do mine, which is to treat you as a gentleman and drink a bottle of wine with you."

"My lord, allow me to tell you that I would not deserve to be called, or treated as a gentleman, were I vile enough to drink wine after the address I gave this evening."

"I beg your pardon for differing from you," answered the bishop. "Those drunken people to whom you spoke so well against the evils of intemperance, are in need of the stringent and bitter remedies you offer them in your teetotalism. But here we are sober men and gentlemen, we do not want such remedies. I never thought that the physicians were absolutely bound to take the pills they administer to their patients."

"I hope your lordship will not deny me the right you claim for yourself to differ with me in this matter. I entirely differ from you when you say that men who drink as you do with your priests, have a right to be called sober men."

"I fear, Mr. Chiniquy, that you forget where you are, and to whom you speak just now," replied the bishop.

"It may be that I have made a blunder, and that I am guilty of some grave error in coming here, and speaking to you as I am doing, my lord. In that case, I am ready to ask your pardon. But before I retract what I have said, please allow me to respectfully ask you a very simple question."

Then taking from my pocket-book his printed address, and his public and solemn promise never to drink, neither to offer any intoxicating drinks to others, I read it aloud, and said: "Are you the same Bishop of Detroit, called Lefebvre, who has made this solemn promise? If you are not the same man, I will retract and beg your pardon: but if you are the same, I have nothing to retract."

My answer fell upon the poor bishop as a thunderbolt.

He lisped some unintelligible and insignificant explanation, which, however, he ended by a *coup d'état* in saying:

"My dear Mr. Chiniquy, I did not invite you to preach to the bishop, but only to the people of Detroit."

"You are right, my lord, I was not called to preach to the bishop, but allow me to tell you that if I had known sooner, that when the Bishop of Detroit, with his priests, solemnly, publicly, and with their right hands on the altar, promised that they would never drink any intoxicating drinks, it means that they will drink and fill themselves with those detestable liquors, till their brains shiver with their poisonous fumes, I would not have troubled you with my presence or remarks here. However, allow me to tell your lordship to be kind enough to find another

lecturer for your temperance meetings. For I am determined to take the train to-morrow morning for Chicago."

There is no need to say that during that painful conversation, the priests (with only one exception) were as full of indignation against me as they were full of wine. I left the table and went to my sleeping apartment overwhelmed with sadness and shame.

Half-an-hour later, the bishop was with me, conjuring me to continue my lectures, on account of the fearful scandals which would result from my sudden and unexpected exit from Detroit. He at first, tried to persuade me that he was ordered to drink, by his own physicians, for his health; but I showed him that this was a mythical illusion. He then said that he regretted what had occurred, and confessed that it would be better if the priests practised what they preached to the people.

He spoke to me with such earnestness, of the souls saved, the tears dried, the happiness restored to hundreds of families, by temperance, that he touched the most sensitive chords of my heart, and got from me the promise that I would deliver the other two expected lectures. He was so glad, that he pressed me on his bosom, and gave me, what we call in French, *le baiser de paix* (the kiss of peace).

The dawn of the next day found me feverish, and unable to get any rest in bed. Hoping that the fresh air of the morning would do me good, I went to the beautiful garden, covered with fruit trees of all kinds, which was then around the episcopal residence. But what was my surprise to see the Bishop leaning on a tree, with his handkerchief over his face, and bathed in tears. I approached him with the least noise possible. I saw that he did not perceive me. By the motion of his head and shoulders, it became evident to me that he was in anguish of soul. I said to him: "My dear bishop, what is the matter? Why do you weep and cry at such an early hour?"

Pressing my hand convulsively in his, he answered: "Dear Father Chiniquy, you do not yet know the awful calamity which has befallen me this night."

"What calamity?" I asked.

"Do you not remember," he answered, "that young priest who was sitting at your right hand, last evening? Well! He went away, during the night, with the wife of a young man, whom he had seduced, and stole 4,000 dollars from me before he left."

"I am not at all surprised at that, when I remember how that priest emptied his glasses of beer and wine last night."

"You are right! You are right! God Almighty has punished me for breaking the public pledge I had taken, never to drink any intoxicating drinks."

Of course, the next two days that I was the guest of Bishop Lefebvre, not a single drop of intoxicating drink was seen on the table. But I know that not long after, that representative of the Pope forgot again his solemn vows, and continued with his priests, drinking, till he died a most miserable death in 1875.

CHAPTER XLV.

**I Decline sending a Rich Widow to a Nunnery
to enrich the Bishop. A Plot to Destroy Me.**

THE journey from Detroit to Chicago, in the month of June, 1851, was not so pleasant as it is to-day. The Michigan Central Railroad was completed then to New Buffalo. We took the steamer there and crossed Lake Michigan to Chicago, where we arrived the next morning, after nearly perishing in a terrible storm. On the 15th June, I first landed, with great difficulty, on a nearby wrecked wharf, at the mouth of the river. Some of the streets I had to cross in order to reach the bishop's palace were almost impassable. In many places loose planks had been thrown across them to prevent people from sinking in the mud and quicksands.

When I entered the miserable house called the "bishop's palace," I could hardly believe my eyes. The planks of the lower floor, in the dining-room were floating, and it required a great deal of ingenuity to keep my feet dry while dining with him for the first time. But the Christian kindness and courtesy of the bishop made me more happy in his poor house than I felt, later, in the white marble palace built by his haughty successor, C. Regan.

There were, then, in Chicago, about 200 French-Canadian families, under the pastorate of the Rev. M. A. Lebel, who, like myself, was born in Kamouraska. The drunkenness and other immoralities of the clergy, pictured to me by that priest, surpassed all I had ever heard or known.

After getting my promise that I would never reveal the fact before his death, he assured me that the last bishop had been poisoned by one of his grand vicars in the following way. He said, the grand vicar, being father confessor of the nuns of Loretto, had fallen in love with one of the so-called virgins, who died a few days after becoming the mother of a still-born child. This fact having transpired, and threatening to give a great deal of scandal, the bishop thought it was his duty to make an inquest and punish his priest, if he should be found guilty. But the grand vicar, seeing that his crime could easily be detected considered that the shortest way to escape exposure was to put an end to the inquest by murdering the poor bishop. A poison, very difficult to detect, was administered, and the death of the prelate soon followed, without exciting any surprise in the community.

Horried by the long and minute details of that mystery of iniquity, I came very near returning to Canada, immediately, without going any further.

Leaving Chicago, it took me nearly three days to cross the vast prairies, which were then a perfect wilderness, between Chicago and Bourbonnais, where I spent three weeks preaching and exploring the country, extending from the Kankakee river to the South-west, towards the Mississippi.

It was only then that I plainly understood the greatness of the plans of the bishop, and that I determined to sacrifice the exalted position God had given me in Canada to guide the steps of the Roman Catholic emigrants from France, Belgium, and Canada, towards the regions of the West, in order to extend the power and influence of my Church all over the United States.

On my return to Chicago, in the second week of July, all was arranged with the bishop for my coming back in the Autumn, to help him to accomplish his gigantic plans.

However, it was understood between us that my leaving Canada for the United States would be kept a secret till the last hour, on account of the stern opposition I expected from my bishop.

The last thing to be done, on my return to Canada, in order to prepare the emigrants to go to Illinois, rather than any other part of the United States, was to tell them through the press the unrivalled advantages which God had prepared for them in the West. I did so by a letter, which was published not only by the press of Canada, but also in many papers of France and Belgium. I reproduce the following extracts from it.

Montreal, Canada East.

August, 13th, 1851.

It is impossible to give our friends, by narration, an idea of what we feel, when we cross, for the first time, the immense prairies of Illinois. It is a spectacle which must be seen to be well understood.

As you advance in the midst of these boundless deserts, where your eyes perceive nothing but lands of inexhaustible richness, remaining in the most desolating solitude, you feel something which you cannot express by any words.

Is your soul filled with joy, or your heart broken with sadness? You cannot say; you lift up your eyes to heaven, and the voice of your soul is chanting a hymn of gratitude. Tears of joy are trickling down your cheeks, and you bless God, whose curse seems not to have fallen on the land where you stand: "Cursed is the earth in thy work; and thistles shall it bring forth to thee."

You see around you the most luxuriant verdure; flowers of every kind, and magnificent above description.

But, if in the silence of meditation, you look with new attention on those prairies, so rich, so magnificent, you feel an inexpressible sentiment of sadness, and addressing yourself to the blessed land, you say: "Why art thou so solitary? Why is thy wild game alone here to glorify God?"

And if you continue to advance through those immense prairies, which, like a boundless ocean, are spreading their rolling waves before you, and seem to long after the presence of man, to cover themselves with incalculable treasures, you remember your friends in Canada, and more particularly those among them who, crushed down by misery, are watering with the sweat of their brow a sterile and desolated soil, you say:

"Ah ! if such and such of my friends were here, how soon they would see their hard and ungrateful labours changed into the most smiling and happy position."

Perhaps I will be accused then of trying to depopulate my country, and drive my countrymen from Canada to the United States.

No ! No ! I never had so perverse a design. Here is my mind about the subject of emigration, and I see no reason to be ashamed of it, or to conceal it.

It is a fact that a great number (and much greater than is generally believed) of French-Canadians are yearly emigrating from Canada, and nobody regrets it more than I do ; but as long as those who govern Canada will not pay more attention to that evil, it will be an incurable one, and every year Canada will lose thousands and thousands of its strongest arms and noblest hearts, to benefit our happy neighbours.

With many others, I had the hope that the eloquent voice of the poor settlers in our Eastern townships would be heard, and that the government would help them ; but that hope is gone like a dream, and we have now every reason to fear that our unfortunate settlers of the East will be left to themselves.

*

*

*

I would never have published the letter if I had foreseen its effects on the farmers of Canada. In a few days after its appearance their farms fell to half their value. Every one, in some parishes, wanted to sell their lands and to emigrate to the West. It was only for want of purchasers that we did not see an emigration which would have surely ruined Canada. I was frightened by its immediate effect on the public mind. However, while some were praising me to the skies for having published it, others were cursing me, and calling me a traitor. The very day after its publication I was in Quebec, where the Bishops of Canada were met in Council. The first one I met was my Lord de Charbonel, Bishop of Toronto. After having blessed me, he pressed my hand in his and said :

"I have just read your admirable letter. It is one of the most beautiful and eloquently written articles I ever read. The Spirit of God has surely inspired every one of its sentences. I have, just now, forwarded six copies of it to different journals of France and Belgium, where they will be re-published and do an incalculable amount of good, by directing the French-speaking Catholic emigrants towards a country where they will run no risk of losing their faith, with the assurance of securing a future of unbounded prosperity for their families. Your name will be put among the names of the greatest benefactors of humanity."

Though these compliments seemed to me much exaggerated and unmerited, I cannot deny that they pleased me, by adding to my hopes and convictions that great good would surely come from the plan I had of gathering all the Roman Catholic emigrants on the same spot, to form such large and strong congregations, that they would have nothing to fear from

heretics. I thanked the bishop for his kind and friendly words, and left him to go and present my respectful salutations to my Bishop of Montreal, my Lord Bourget, and give him a short sketch of my voyage to the far West. I found him alone in his room, in the very act of reading my letter. A lioness who had just lost her whelps would not have looked upon me with more angry and threatening eyes than that bishop did.

"Is it possible," he said, "Mr. Chiniquy, that your hand has written and signed such a perfidious document? How could you so cruelly pierce the bosom of your own country, after her dealing so nobly with you? Do you not see that your treasonable letter will give such an impetus to emigration that our most thriving parishes will soon be turned into solitude? Though you do not say it we feel, at every line of that letter, that you also will leave our country, to give help and comfort to our natural enemies."

Surprised by this unexpected burst of bad feelings. I kept my *sang froid*, and answered:

"My lord, your lordship has surely misunderstood me, if you have found in my letter any treasonable plan to ruin our country. Please read it again, and you will see that every line has been inspired by the purest motives of patriotism, and the highest views of religion. How is it possible that the worthy Bishop of Toronto should have told me that the Spirit of God Himself had dictated every line of that letter, when my good bishop's opinion is so completely opposite?"

The abrupt answer the bishop gave to these remarks clearly indicated that my absence would be more welcome than my presence. I left him, after asking his blessing, which he gave me in the coldest manner possible.

On the 25th August, I was back at Longueuil, from my voyage to Quebec, which I had extended as far as Kamouraska, to see again the noble-hearted parishioners, whose unanimity in taking the pledge of temperance, and admirable fidelity in keeping it, had filled my heart with such joy.

I related my last interview with Bishop Bourget to my faithful friend, Mr. Brassard. He answered me: "The present bad feelings of the Bishop of Montreal against you, are not a secret to me. Unfortunately the low-minded men who surround and counsel him are as unable as the bishop himself to understand your exalted views in directing the steps of the Roman Catholics towards that splendid valley of the Mississippi. They are beside themselves, because they see that you will easily succeed in forming a grand colony of French-speaking people in Illinois. Now, I am sure of what I say, though I am not free to tell you how it came to my knowledge, there is a plot somewhere to dishonour and destroy you at once. Those who are at the head of that plot hope that if they can succeed in destroying your popularity nobody will be tempted to follow you to Illinois. For, though you have concealed it as well as you could, it is evident to everyone now, that you are the man selected by the bishops of the West to direct the uncertain steps of the

poor emigrants towards those rich lands."

"Do you mean, my dear Mr. Brassard," I replied, "that there are priests around the Bishop of Montreal cruel and vile enough to forge calumnies against me, and spread them before the country in such a way that I shall be unable to refute them?"

"It is just what I mean," answered Mr. Brassard. "Mind what I tell you; the bishop has made use of you to reform the diocese. He likes you for that work. But your popularity is too great to-day for your enemies; they want to get rid of you, and no means will be too vile or criminal to accomplish your destruction, if they can attain their object."

"But, my dear Mr. Brassard, can you give me any details of the plots which are in store against me?" I asked.

"No! I cannot, for I know them not. But be on your guard; for your few but powerful enemies are jubilant. They speak of the absolute impotency to which you will soon be reduced, if you accomplish what they so maliciously and falsely call your treacherous objects."

I answered: "Our Saviour said to all His disciples: 'In the world ye shall have tribulation. But be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.' I am more determined than ever to put my trust in God, and to fear no man."

Two hours after this conversation, I received the following from the Rev. M. Pare, secretary to the Bishop.—
TO THE REV. MR. CHINIQUY, Apostle of Temperance.

MY DEAR SIR,—My Lord Bishop of Montreal would like to see you upon some important business. Please come at your earliest convenience. Yours truly, JOS. PARE, Secretary.

The next morning I was alone with Monseigneur Bourget, who received me very kindly. He seemed at first to have entirely banished the bad feelings he had shown in our last interview at Quebec. After making friendly remarks on my continual labours and success in the cause of temperance, he stopped for a moment, and seemed embarrassed how to resume the conversation. At last he said:—

"Are you not the father confessor of Mrs. Chenier?"

"Yes, my lord. I have been her confessor since I lived in Longueuil."

"Very well, very well," he rejoined; "I suppose you know that her only child is a nun, in the Congregation Convent?"

"Yes, my lord, I know it," I replied.

"Could you not induce Mrs. Chenier to become a nun also?" asked the bishop.

"I never thought of that, my lord," I answered, "and I do not see why I should advise her to exchange her beautiful cottage, washed by the fresh and pure waters of the St. Lawrence, where she looks so happy and cheerful, for the gloomy walls of the nunnery."

"But she is still young and beautiful: she may be deceived by temptations when she is there, in that beautiful house,

surrounded by all the enjoyments of her fortune," replied the bishop.

"I understand your lordship. Yes, Mrs. Chenier has the reputation of being rich, though I know nothing of her fortune; she has kept well the charms and freshness of her youth. However, I think the best remedy against the temptations you seem to dread so much for her, is to advise her to marry. A good Christian husband seems to me a much better remedy against the dangers, to which your lordship alludes, than the cheerless wall of a nunnery."

"You speak just as a Protestant," rejoined the bishop, with an evident nervous irritation. "We remark that though you hear the confessions of a great number of young ladies, there is not a single one of them who has ever become a nun. You seem to ignore that the vow of chastity is the shortest way to a life of holiness in this world and happiness in the next."

"I am sorry to differ from your lordship in that matter," I replied; "but I cannot help it. The remedy you have found against sin is quite modern. The old remedy offered by our God Himself is very different and much better, I think."

"'It is not good that man shall remain alone, I will make a helpmeet for him,' said our Creator in the earthly paradise. 'And to avoid fornication, let every man have his wife, and let every woman have her own husband,' said the same God, through His apostle Paul."

"I know too well how the great majority of nuns keep their vows of chastity to believe that the modern remedy against the temptations you mention is an improvement on the old one found and given by our God," I answered.

With an angry look, the bishop replied: "This is Protestantism, Mr. Chiniquy. This is sheer Protestantism."

"I respectfully ask your pardon for differing from your lordship. This is not Protestantism. It is simply and absolutely the 'pure Word of God.' But, my lord, God knows that it is my sincere desire, as it is my interest and my duty, to do all in my power to deserve your esteem. I do not want to vex nor disobey you. Please give me a good reason why I should advise Mrs. Chenier to enter a convent, and I will comply with your request the very first time she comes to confess."

Resuming his most amiable manner, the bishop answered me: "My first reason is, the spiritual good which she would receive from her vows of perpetual chastity and poverty in a nunnery. The second reason is, that the lady is rich; and we are in need of money. We would soon possess her whole fortune; for her only child is already in the Congregation Convent."

"My dear bishop," I replied, "you already know what I think of your first reason. After having investigated that fact, not in the Protestant books, but from the lips of nuns themselves, as well as from their father confessors, I am fully convinced that the real virtue of purity is much better kept in the homes of our Christian mothers, married sisters, and female friends, than in the secret rooms, not to say prisons, where the

poor nuns are enchained by the heavy fetters assumed by their vows, which the great majority curse when they cannot break them."

"And for the second reason, your lordship gives me to induce Mrs. Chenier becoming a nun, I am again sorry to say, that I cannot conscientiously accept it. I have not consecrated myself to the priesthood to deprive respectable families of their legal inheritance in order to enrich myself, or anybody else. I know she has poor relations who need her fortune after her death."

"Do you pretend to say that your bishop is a thief?" angrily rejoined the bishop.

"No, my lord! By no means. No doubt, from your high standpoint of view, your lordship may see things in a very different aspect from what I see them, in the low position I occupy in the Church. But, as your lordship is bound to follow the dictates of his conscience in everything, I also feel obliged to give heed to the voice of mine."

This painful conversation had already lasted too long. I was anxious to see the end of it; for I could easily read in the face of my superior, that every word I uttered was sealing my doom. I rose up to take leave of him, and said: "My lord, I beg your pardon for disappointing your lordship." He coldly answered me:

"It is not the first time, though I would it were the last, that you show such a want of respect and submission to the will of your superiors. But as I feel it is a conscientious affair on your part, I have no ill-will against you, and I am happy to tell you that I entertain for you all my past esteem. The only favour I ask from you just now is, that this conversation may be kept a secret."

I answered: "It is still more to my interest than yours to keep this unfortunate affair a secret between us. I hope that neither your lordship, nor the Great God, who alone has heard us, will ever make it an imperious duty for me to mention it."

"What good news do you bring me from the bishop's palace?" asked my venerable friend, Mr. Brassard, when I returned late in the afternoon.

"I would have very spicy, though unpalatable news to give you, had not the bishop asked me to keep what has been said between us a secret."

Mr. Brassard laughed outright at my answer, and replied:

"A secret! A secret! Ah! but it is a gazette secret; for the bishop has bothered me, as well as many others, with that matter, frequently, since your return from Illinois. Several times he has asked us to persuade you to advise your devoted penitent, Mrs. Chenier, to become a nun. I knew he invited you to his palace, yesterday, for that object."

"The eyes and the heart of our poor bishop," continued Mr. Brassard, "are too firmly fixed on the fortune of that lady."

"What a deceitful man that bishop is," I answered indignantly. "He has given me to understand that this was a

most sacred secret between him and me, when I see, by what you say, that it is nothing else than a farcical secret, known by the hundreds who have heard of it."

"But, please, my dear Mr. Brassard, tell me, is it not a burning shame that our nunneries are changed to real traps, to steal, cheat, and ruin so many unsuspecting families? I have no words to express my disgust and indignation, when I see that all those great demonstrations and eloquent tirades about the perfection and holiness of the nuns, on the part of our spiritual rulers, are nothing else, in reality, than a veil to conceal their stealing operations. Do you not feel that those poor nuns are the victims of the most stupendous system of swindling the world has ever seen?"

I am more than ever disgusted and terrified, not only by the unspeakable corruptions, but also by the stupendous system of swindling, which is their foundation stone. The bishop surely did not know me, when he thought that I would consent to be the instrument of his hypocrisy, and that under the false pretext of a delusive perfection, I would throw that lady into a dungeon for her life, that he might become rich with her inheritance."

Mr. Brassard answered me: "I cannot blame you for your disobeying the bishop, in this instance. I foretold him what has occurred; for I knew what you think of the nuns. Though I do not go as far as you in that, I cannot absolutely shut my eyes to the facts which stare us in the face. Those monkish communities have, in every age, been the principal cause of the calamities which have befallen the Church. For their love of riches, their pride and laziness, with their other scandals, have always been the same.

"Had I been able to foresee what has occurred inside the walls of the nunnery I built up here, I never would have erected it. However, now that I have built it, it is as a child of my old age; I feel bound to support it to the end. This does not prevent me from being afflicted when I see the facility with which our poor nuns yield to the criminal desires of their too weak confessors. It is evident that our bishop multiplies too fast those religious houses."

"My fear is that they will, sooner than we expect, bring upon our Church in Canada, the same cataclysms which have desolated her in England, France, Germany, and even Italy."

"My dear Chiniquy, gird your loins well, sharpen your sword for the impending conflict. My fear is, that the bishop, and his advisers will never forget your wrenching from their hands the booty they were coveting so long. They will never forgive the spirit of independence with which you have rebuked them. In fact, the conflict has already begun. May God protect you against the open blows and the secret machinations they have in store for you."

I answered him: "I do not fear them. I put my trust in God. It is for His honour I am fighting and suffering. He will surely protect me from those sacrilegious traders of souls."

CHAPTER XLVI.

The Plot to Destroy Me.—The Interdict.

THE first week of September, 1851, I was hearing confessions in one of the Churches of Montreal, when a fine-looking girl came to confess sins, whose depravity surpassed anything I had ever heard. Though I forbade her twice to do it, she gave me the names of several priests who were accomplices of her orgies. The details of her iniquities were told with such cynical impudence that the idea struck me, at once, that she was sent by someone to ruin me. I abruptly stopped her disgusting stories by saying, "The way you confess your sins is a sure indication that you do not come here to reconcile yourself to God, but to ruin me. By the grace of God you will fail. I forbid you to come any more to my confessional. If I see you again among my penitents, I will order the beadle to turn you out of the Church." I instantly shut the door of the small aperture through which she was speaking to me.

She answered something which I could not understand. But the tone of her voice, the shaking of her hands and head, with her manner of walking, when she left the confessional, indicated that she was beside herself with rage, as she went to speak a few words to a carter who was in the Church, preparing himself to confess. The next evening, I said to Mr. Brassard that I suspected that a girl was sent to my confessional to ruin me.

He answered: "Did I not warn you some time ago that there was a plot to destroy you? I have not the least doubt but that that girl was hired to begin that diabolical work. You have no idea of my anxiety about you. For I know your enemies will not shrink from any iniquity to destroy your good name, and prevent you from directing the tide of emigration from Canada to the valley of the Mississippi."

I replied that I could not partake of his fears; that God knew my innocence and the purity of my motives; He would defend and protect me.

"My dear Chiniquy," replied Mr. Brassard, "I know your enemies. They are not numerous, but they are implacable, and their power for mischief knows no limits. Surely, God can save you from their hands; but I cannot share your security for the future."

As the clock struck twelve, I bade him good night, and ten minutes later I was sound asleep.

The following day I went to deliver a course of lectures on temperance to several parishes South of Laprarie, till the 28th of September, after which I came back from St. Constant to rest for a few days, and prepare to start for Chicago.

On my arrival, I found on my table a short letter from Bishop Bourget, telling me that, for a criminal action, which he did not want to mention, committed with a person he

would not name, he had withdrawn all my priestly powers and indicted me.

I handed the letter to Mr. Brassard, and said: "Is not this the fulfilment of your prophecies? What do you think of a bishop who interdicts a priest without giving him a single fact, and without even allowing him to know his accusers?"

"It is just what I expected from the implacable vengeance of the Bishop of Montreal. He will never give you the reasons of your interdict, for he knows well you are innocent, and he will never confront you with your accusers; for it would be too easy for you to confound them."

"But is not this against all the laws of God and man? Is it not against the laws of the Church?" I replied.

"Of course it is," answered he, "but do you not know, that on this continent of America, the bishops have, long ago, thrown overboard all the laws of God and man, and all the laws of the Church, to rule and enslave the priests?"

I replied: "If it be so, are not Protestants correct, when they say that our Church has rejected the Word of God, to follow the traditions of man? What can we answer them when they tell us that our Church has no right to be called the Church of God? Would the Son of God have given up His life on the cross to save men, that they might be the property of a few lawless tyrants, who should have the right to take away their honour and life?"

"I am not ready to answer those puzzling questions," he answered; "but this is the fact. Though it is absolutely against the laws of the Church, to condemn a priest without showing him his guilt, and confronting him with his accusers, our modern bishops, every week, condemn some of their priests without specifying any fact, or even giving them the names of their accusers."

"Mind what I tell you," I replied. "I will not allow the bishop to deal with me in that way. If he dares to trample the laws of the Gospel under his feet, to accomplish my ruin, and satisfy his vengeance, I will teach him a lesson that he will never forget. Thanks be to God, it is not the gory cross of the bloody Inquisition, but the emblem of the British Lion, which I see floating on the tower, to protect our honour and life in Canada. I am innocent; God knows it. My trust is in Him; He will not forsake me. I will go immediately to the bishop. If he never knew what power there is in an honest priest, he will know to-day."

Two hours later, I was knocking at the bishop's door. He received me with icy politeness.

"My lord," I said, "you already know why I am in your presence. Here is a letter from you, accusing me of a crime which is not specified, under the testimony of accusers whom you refuse to name. And before hearing me, and confronting me with my accusers, you punish me as guilty. You not only take away my honour, with that unjust sentence, but my life. I come in the name of God, and of His Son, Jesus Christ, to

respectfully ask you to tell me the crime of which I am accused, that I may show you my innocence. I want to be confronted with my accusers, that I may confound them."

The bishop was, at first, evidently embarrassed by my presence; his lips were pale and trembling, but his eyes were dry and red, like the tiger's eyes in the presence of his prey. He answered: "I cannot grant your request, sir."

Opening, then, my New Testament, I read: "Receive no accusation against a priest, except under two or three witnesses" (I. Tim. v: 19). I added: "It was after I had heard this voice of God, and of His holy Church, that I was consecrated to be a priest. I hope it is not the intention of your lordship to put aside this Word of God, and of His Church. It is not your intention to break that solemn covenant made by Christ with His priests, and sealed with His blood?"

With an air of contempt and tyrannical authority, which I had never suspected to be possible in a bishop, he answered: "I have no lesson of Scripture, or canonical law to receive from you, sir, and no answer to give to your impertinent questions: you are interdicted! I have nothing to do with you."

These words, uttered by the man whom I was accustomed to consider as my superior, had a strange effect upon me. I felt as if awakening from a long and painful dream.

For the first time, I understood the sad prophecies of the Rev. Mr. Brassard, and I realised the horror of my position. My ruin was accomplished. Though I knew that that high dignitary was a monster of hypocrisy, injustice, and tyranny, he had, among the masses, the reputation of a saint. His unjust sentence would be considered as just and equitable by the multitude over whom he was reigning supremely; at a nod of his head, the people would fall at his feet, and obey his commands to crush me. All ears would be shut, and all hearts hardened against me. In that fatal hour, for the first time in my life, my moral strength and courage failed me. I felt as if I had just fallen into a bottomless abyss, out of which it was impossible to escape. What would my innocence, known only to God, avail me, when the whole world would believe me guilty? No words of mine can give an idea of the mental torture of that horrible hour.

For more than a quarter of an hour, not a word was exchanged between the bishop and me. He seemed very busy writing letters, while I was resting my head between my hands and shedding torrents of tears. At last I fell on my knees, took the hands of the bishop in mine, and, with a voice half-choked with sighs, I said: "My lord, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in the presence of God, I swear that I have done nothing which could bring such a sentence against me. I again implore your lordship to confront me with my accusers, that I may show you my innocence."

With a savage insolence, the bishop withdrew his hands, as if I had contaminated them, and said, after rising from his chair: "You are guilty: go out of my presence."

A thousand times since I have thanked God that I had no dagger with me ; for I would have plunged it into his heart. But, strange to say, the diabolical malice and dishonesty of that depraved man suddenly brought back my former self-respect and courage. I at once took the stern resolution to face the storm. I felt, in my soul that giant strength which, often God Himself implants in the breast of the oppressed, when he is in the presence of his merciless tyrants. It seemed that a flash of lightning had passed through my soul, after having written in letters of fire, on the walls of the palace, "Mystery of iniquity."

Relying on the God of truth and justice, who knew my innocence and the great perversity of my oppressor, I left the room, without saying a word, and hastened back to Longueuil, to acquaint the Rev. Mr. Brassard with my firm resolution to fight the bishop to the end. He burst into tears when I told him what had occurred in the bishop's palace.

"Though innocent, you are condemned," he said. "The infallible proof of your innocence is the cruel refusal to allow you to be confronted with your accusers. Were you guilty, they would have been too glad to show it, by confronting you before these witnesses. But the perversity of your accusers is so well known, that they are ashamed of giving their names. The bishop prefers to crush you under the weight of his unmerited reputation for justice and holiness ; for very few know him as we do. My fear is that he will succeed in destroying you. Though innocent, you are condemned and lost ; you will never be able to contend against such a mighty adversary."

"My dear Mr. Brassard, you are mistaken," I replied. I never was so sure of coming out victorious from a conflict as to-day. The monstrous iniquity of the bishop carries its antidote with it. It was not a dream I saw when he so ignominiously turned me out of his room. A flash of lightning passed before my eyes, and wrote, as if on the walls of the palace, 'Mystery of Iniquity' ! When Canada, and the whole of Christendom, shall know the infamous conduct of that dignitary—when they shall see 'the mystery of iniquity' which I shall stamp upon his forehead, there will be only one cry of indignation against him ! Oh ! if I can only find out the names of my accusers ! How will I force that mighty tyrant to withdraw that sentence, at double quick."

"I am determined to show, not only to Canada, but to the whole world, that this infamous plot is but the work of the vile male and female slaves by whom the bishop is surrounded. My first thought was to start immediately for Chicago, where Bishop Vanderveld expected me. But I am resolved not to go until I have forced my merciless oppressor to withdraw his unjust sentence. I will immediately go to the Jesuit College, where I purpose spending the next eight days in prayer and retreat. The Jesuits are the ablest men under heaven to detect the most hidden things. I hope they will help me to un-

earth that dark mystery of iniquity, and expose it to the world."

"I am glad to see that you do not fear the terrible storm which is upon you, and that your sails are so well trimmed," answered Mr. Brassard. "You do well in putting your trust in God first, and in the Jesuits afterwards. The fearless way in which you intend to meet the attacks of your merciless enemies will give you an easy victory. My hope is that the Jesuits will help you to find out the names of your false accusers, and that you will make use of them to hurl back in the face of the bishop the shame and dishonour he had prepared for you."

"At six p.m., in a modest, well-lighted and ventilated room of the College, I was alone with the venerable Mr. Schneider, its director.

I told him how the Bishop of Montreal, four years before, after giving up his prejudices against me, when I had left the Oblates, had earnestly supported me in my labours. I acquainted him also with the sudden change of these good feelings, into the most uncontrollable hatred, from the day I had refused to force Mrs. Chenier to become a nun, that he might secure her fortune. I told him also how those bad feelings had found new food in my plan of consecrating the rest of my life to direct the tide of the French-Catholic emigration towards the Mississippi Valley. I exposed to him my suspicions about that miserable girl I had turned out of my confessional. "I have a double object in view," I added. "The first is, to spend the last eight days of my residence in Canada in prayer. But my second is, to ask the help of your charity, wisdom, and experience, in forcing the bishop to withdraw his unjust sentence against me. I am determined, if he does not withdraw it, to denounce him before the whole country, and to challenge him, publicly, to confront me with my accusers."

"If you do that," answered Mr. Schneider, "I fear lest you not only do an irreparable damage to the Bishop of Montreal, but to our holy Church also."

I replied: "Our holy Church would indeed suffer irreparable damage, if she sanctioned the infamous conduct of the bishop; but this is impossible."

"You are correct," rejoined the Jesuit. "Our holy Church cannot sanction such criminal conduct."

It would be too long to repeat here all the encouraging words which that wise Jesuit uttered.

Father Schneider was a European priest, who was in Montreal only since 1849. He had won my confidence the very first time I met him, and I had chosen him, at once, for my confessor and adviser. The third day of my retreat, Father Schneider came to my room earlier than usual, and said: "I have worked hard the last two days, to find out the name and residence of the carter to whom that miserable girl spoke in the church, after you had turned her out of your confessional, and I have it. If you have no objection, I will send for him. He may know that girl and induce her to come here."

"By all means, dear father," I answered, "do it without losing a moment."

Two hours later, the carter was with me. I recognised him as one of those dear countrymen whom our society of temperance had transformed into a new man. I asked him if he remembered the name of the girl who, a few days before, had spoken to him in the Church, after going out of my confessional.

"Yes, sir! I know her well. She has a very bad name, though she belongs to a respectable family,"

I added: "Do you think you can induce her to come here, by telling her that a priest, in Jesus College, wants to see her? But do not give her my name."

He answered: "Nothing is more easy. She will be here in a couple of hours, if I find her at home."

At three p.m., the carter was again knocking at my door, and said, in a low voice: "The girl you want is in the parlour; she has no idea that you are here, for she told me that you were preaching in St. Constant. She seems to be very angry against you, and bitterly complains against your want of courtesy, the very first time she went to confess to you."

"Is it possible that she told you that?" I replied.

"Yes, sir! she told me that to explain her terrible excitement when coming out of your confessional, the other day; she then requested me to drive her home. She was really beside herself, and swore that she would make you pay for your harsh words and rude manners towards her. You will do well to be on your guard with her. She is one of the most depraved girls of Montreal, and has a most dangerous tongue, though to the shame of our holy religion, she is daily seen in the bishop's palace."

I immediately went to Father Schneider, and said: "My dear father, by the mercy of God, the girl we want to see is in the parlour. But what I have just heard from the carter who drove her, I have not the least doubt that she is the one employed by the bishop to slander me, and get a pretext for what he has done. Please come with me to witness my innocence. But, take your Gospel, ink, paper, and pen with you."

"All right," answered the wise Jesuit.

Two minutes later we were in her presence.

It is impossible to describe her dismay when she saw me. She came near fainting. I feared she would not be able to utter a word. I spoke to her very kindly, and ran to get a glass of cold water, which did her good.

When she recovered, I said to her, with a tone of mixed authority and kind firmness. "You are here in the presence of God and of two of His priests. That great God will hear every word which will fall from your lips. You must speak the truth. You have denounced me to the bishop as guilty of some great iniquity. You are the cause of my being interdicted. You alone can repair the injury you have done me. That injury is very great; but it can be easily repaired by you. In the presence of that venerable priest, say whether or

not I am guilty of the crime you have brought to my charge ! ”

At those words the unfortunate girl burst into tears. She hid her face in her handkerchief, and with a voice half-suffocated with sighs, she said : “ No, sir ! You are not guilty. ”

I added : “ Confess another thing. Is it not a fact that you had come to my confessional more with the intention of tempting me to sin than to reconcile yourself to God ? ”

“ Yes, sir ! ” she added, “ that was my wicked intention. ”

“ Continue to tell the truth, and our great and merciful God will forgive you. Is it not to revenge yourself for my rebuking you, that you have brought the false accusations to the bishop in order that he might interdict me ? ”

“ Yes, sir ! that is the only reason I had for accusing you. ”

After Father Schneider had made four copies of those declarations, signed by him as witness, and after she had sworn on the Gospel, I forgave her the injury she had done me, I gave her some good advice and dismissed her.

“ Is it not evident, ” I said to Father Schneider, “ that our merciful God never forsakes those who trust Him ? ”

“ Yes ; I never saw the interposition of God so marvellously manifested as in this perfect deliverance from the hands of your enemies. But, please tell me why you requested me to make four copies of her sworn declaration of your innocence ; was not one sufficient ? ” said Mr. Schneider.

I answered : “ One of those copies was for the bishop ; another will remain in your hands, Mr. Brassard will have one, and I need one for myself. For the dishonesty of the bishop is so evident to me now, that I think him able to destroy the copy I will send him, with the hope, after its destruction, of keeping me at his feet. If he does that new act of iniquity, I will confound him with the three other authentic copies which will remain. Besides, this unfortunate girl may die sooner than we expect. In that case, I would find myself again with the bishop’s knife on my throat, if I had no other retraction to the perjured declaration which he has persuaded her to give him. ”

“ You are right, ” replied Father Schneider. “ Now the only thing for you to do is to send that retraction to the bishop, with a firm and polite request to retract his unjust sentence against you. Let me do the rest with him. The battle is over. It has been fierce but short. However, thanks be to God, you have a most complete victory over your unjust aggressors. The bishop will do all in his power, no doubt, to make you forget this darkest page of his life. ”

The shrewd Jesuit was correct in his previsions. Never did any bishop receive me with so many marks, not only of kindness, but I dare say of respect, than Bishop Bourget, when, after my retreat, I went to take leave of him, before my departure from Canada for the United States.

“ I trust, my lord, ” I said, “ that to-day I can hope to possess my full confidence and friendly feelings of your lordship ? ”

“ Certainly, my dear Mr. Chiniquy, certainly ; you possess

my full confidence and friendship. I dare say more ; you possess my most sincere gratitude for what you have done in my diocese."

I answered, "I am much obliged to your lordship for this expression of your kind feelings. But now I have two new favours to ask from your lordship. The first is a written document expressive of those kind feelings. The second is a chalice from your hands to offer the holy sacrifice of mass the rest of my life."

"I will grant your request with the utmost pleasure," answered the bishop ; and, without losing a moment, he wrote the following letter.

Montreal, Oct. 13th, 1851.

SIR,—You request me to give you permission to leave my diocese, in order to go and offer your services to the Bishop of Chicago. As you still belong to the Diocese of Quebec, I think you ought to address yourself to my lord of Quebec, to get the extract you want. As for me, I cannot but thank you for what you have done in our midst ; and in my gratitude towards you, I wish you the most abundant blessing from heaven. Every day of my life I will remember you. You will always be in my heart, and I hope that on some future day the providence of God will give me some opportunity of showing you all the feelings of gratitude I feel towards you.

I remain, your most obedient servant,

+ *IGNACE, Bishop of Montreal.*

REV. C. CHINIQUEY.

Though that letter was a most perfect recantation of all he had said and done against me, and was of immense value to me in such circumstances, the bishop added to its importance by the exceedingly kind manner in which he handed it to me.

As he was going into another room he said : "I will give you the silver chalice you want, to offer the holy sacrifice of mass the rest of your days."

But he came back and said : "My secretary is absent, and has the key of the trunk which contains those vases."

"It makes no difference, my lord," I replied, "please order your secretary to put that chalice in the hands of the Rev Mr. Brassard, who will forward it, with a box of books which he has to send to me, to Chicago, next week.

The bishop very kindly promised to do so ; and he fulfilled his promise. The next day, that precious gift was put in the hands of Mr. Brassard, in the presence of several priests.

It was sent, the following week, to Chicago, where I got it, and that fine silver chalice is still in my possession.

I then fell on my knees, and said, "My lord, I am just leaving Canada for the Far West, please give me your benediction."

He blessed me and pressed me to his heart with the tenderness of a father, saying : "May God Almighty bless you wherever you go, and in everything you do, till the end of your life."

CHAPTER XLVII.

I Arrive at Chicago and Select the Spot for my Colony.

THOUGH I had kept my departure from Canada as secret as possible, it had been suspected by many ; and Mr. Brassard, unable to resist the desire that his people should give me the expression of their kind feelings, had let the secret slip from his lips two days before I left. I was not a little surprised, a few hours before my taking leave of him, to see his whole parish gathered at the door of the parsonage to present me with the following address.

TO THE REV. FATHER CHINIQUEY.

VENERABLE SIR,—It is only three years since we presented you your portrait, not only as an expression of our gratitude for your labours and success in the cause of temperance in our midst, but also as a memorial, which would tell our grandchildren the good you have done to our country. We were, then, far from thinking that we were so near the day when we would have the sorrow to see you separating yourself from us.

Your unforeseen exit from Canada fills us with regret and sadness, which is increased by the fear we have, that the reform you have started, and so gloriously established everywhere, will suffer from your absence. May our merciful God grant that your faithful co-labourers may continue it, and walk in your footsteps.

While we submit to the decrees of providence, we promise that we will never forget the great things you have done for the prosperity of our country. Your likeness, which is in every Canadian family, will tell to the future generations what Father Chiniquey has done for Canada.

We console ourselves by the assurance that wherever you go, you will raise the glorious banner of temperance among those of our countrymen who are scattered in the land of exile. May those brethren put on your forehead the crown of immortality, which you have so well deserved for your noble work in our midst. Signed

L. M. BRASSARD, *Priest and Curate.*

H. HICKS, *Vicar.*

AND 300 OTHERS.

I answered.

GENTLEMEN,— I thank you for the honour you do me by your address. But allow me to tell you, that the more I look upon the incalculable good resulting from the Temperance Reform I have established, nearly from one end of Canada to the other, the more I would deceive myself, were I to attribute to myself the whole merit of that blessed work.

If our God has chosen me, His so feeble servant, as the instrument of His infinite mercies towards our dear country, it is because He wanted us to understand that He alone could make the marvellous change we see everywhere, and that we shall give all the glory to Him.

It is more to the fervent prayers and to the good examples of our venerable bishops and curates, than to my feeble efforts, that we owe the triumph of temperance in Canada ; and it is my firm conviction that that holy cause will lose nothing by my absence.

Our merciful God has called me to another field. I have heard His voice. Though it is a great sacrifice for me to leave my own beloved country, I must go to work in the midst of a new people in the distant lands of Illinois.

From many parts of Europe and Canada, multitudes are rushing towards the Western territories of the United States, to secure to their families the incalculable treasures which the good providence of God has scattered over those broad prairies.

Those emigrants are in need of priests. They are like those little ones of whom God speaks in His Word, who wanted bread and had nobody to give them any : " I have heard their cries ; I have seen their wants." And in spite of the great sacrifice I am called upon to make, I must bless the Good Master, who calls me to work in that vineyard, planted by His own hands, in those distant lands.

If anything can diminish the sadness of my feelings when I bid adieu to my countrymen, it is the assurance given me by the noble people of Longueuil, that I have in Canada many friends whose fervent prayers will constantly ascend to the throne of grace, to bring the benedictions of heaven upon me wherever I go.

C. CHINIQUEY.

I arrived at Chicago on the 29th October, 1851, and spent six days with Bishop Vanderveld in maturing the plans of our Catholic colonisation. He gave me the wisest advices, with the most extensive powers which a bishop can give a priest, and urged me to begin at once the work, by selecting the most suitable spot for such an important and vast project. My heart was filled with uncontrollable emotions when the hour came to leave my superior and go to the conquest of the magnificent State of Illinois, for the benefit of my Church. I fell at his knees to ask his benediction, and requested him never to forget me in his prayers. He was not less affected than I was, and pressing me to his bosom, bathed my face with his tears, and blessed me.

It took me three days to cross the prairies from Chicago to Bourbonnais. Those prairies were then a vast solitude, with almost impassable roads. At the invitation of their priest, Mr. Courgeault, several people had come long distances to receive and overwhelm me with the public expressions of their joy and respect.

After a few days of rest in the midst of their interesting young colony, I explained to Mr. Courgeault that, having been sent by the bishop to found a settlement of Roman Catholic emigrants, on a sufficiently grand scale to rule the government of Illinois, it was my duty to go further South, in order to find the most suitable place for the first village I intended to raise. But, to my unspeakable regret, I saw that my proposition filled

the heart of that unfortunate priest with the most bitter feelings of jealousy and hatred. It had been just the same thing with the Rev. Mr. Lebel, at Chicago.

The very moment I told him the object of my coming to Illinois I felt the same spirit of jealousy had turned him into an implacable enemy. I had expected very different things from those two priests, for whom I had entertained, till then, most sincere sentiments of esteem. So long as they felt I had left Canada to help them increase their small congregations, by inducing the emigrants to settle among them, they loaded me, both in public and private, with marks of their esteem. But the moment they saw that I was going to found, in the very heart of Illinois, settlements on such a large scale, they banded together to paralyse and ruin my efforts. Had I suspected such opposition from the very men on whose moral help I had relied for the success of my colonizing schemes, I would never have left Canada for Illinois. But it was now too late to stop my onward march. Trusting in God alone for success, I felt that those two men were to be put among those unforeseen obstacles which Heaven wanted me to overcome if I could not avoid them. I persuaded six of the most respectable citizens of Bourbonnais to accompany me, in three wagons, in search of the best site for the centre of my future colony. I had a compass to guide me through those vast prairies, which were spread before me like a boundless ocean. I wanted to select the highest point in Illinois for my first town, in order to secure the purest air and water for the new emigrants.

I was fortunate enough, under the guidance of God, to succeed better than I expected, for the government inspectors have lately acknowledged that the village of St. Anne occupies the very highest point of that splendid State.

To my surprise, ten days after I had selected that spot, fifty families from Canada had planted their tents around mine, on the beautiful site which forms to-day the town of St. Anne.

We were at the end of November, and though the weather was still mild, I felt I had not one hour to lose in order to secure shelters for every one of those families before the cold winds and chilly rains of winter should spread sickness and death among them. The greater part were illiterate and poor people, without any idea of the dangers and incredible difficulties of establishing a new settlement, where everything had to be created. There were, at, first, only two small houses, one 25 by 30, and the other 16 by 20 feet, to lodge us.

With the rest of my dear emigrants, wrapped in buffalo robes, with my overcoat for my pillow, I slept soundly many nights on the bare floor during the three months which I took to get my first house erected.

Having taken the census of the people on the first of December, I found two hundred souls, one hundred of whom were adults. I said to them: "There are not three of you, if left alone, able to prepare a shelter for your families this winter; but if, forgetting yourselves, you work for each other, as true

friends and brethren, you will increase your strength tenfold, and in a few weeks there will be a sufficient number of small, but solid buildings, to protect you against the storms and snow of the winter which is fast coming upon us. Let us go to the forest together and cut the wood, to-day ; and to-morrow we will draw that timber to one of the lots you have selected, and you will see with what marvellous speed the house will be raised, if your hands and hearts are perfectly united to work for each other, under the eyes and for the love of the merciful God who gives us this splendid country for our inheritance. But before going to the forest, let us kneel down and ask our heavenly Father to bless the work of our hands, and grant us to be of one mind and one heart, and to protect us against the too common accidents of those forests and building works."

We all knelt on the grass, and, as much with our tears as with our lips, we sent to the mercy-seat a prayer, which was surely heard by the One who said : " Ask and you will receive," and we started for the forest.

The reader would scarcely believe me, were I to tell them with what marvellous rapidity the first forty small, but neat houses, were put up on our beautiful prairies. Whilst the men were cutting timber, and raising one another's houses, the women would prepare the common meals. We obtained our flour and pork from Bourbonnais and Momence, at a very low price ; and, as I was a good shot, one or two friends and I used to kill every day enough prairie chickens, quails, ducks, wild geese, brants and deer, to feed more people than were in our young colony.

When I saw that a sufficient number of houses had been built to give shelter to every one of the emigrants, I called a meeting and said, " My dear friends, by the great mercy of God, and in almost a miraculous way (thanks be to the unity and charity which have bound you to each other till now, as members of the same family), you are in your little, but happy, homes, and you have nothing to fear from the winds and snow of the winter. I think that my duty now is to direct your attention to the necessity of building a two-storey house. The upper part will be used as a school-house for your children on weekdays and for a chapel on Sundays, and the lower part will be my parsonage. I will furnish the money for the flooring, shingles, the nails and the windows, and you will give me your work gratis to cut and draw the timber and put it up. I will also pay the architect, without asking a cent from you. It is quite time to provide a school for your children ; for in this country, as in any other place, there is no possible prosperity or happiness for a people if they neglect the education of their children. Now we are too numerous to continue having our Sabbath worship in any private house, as we have done till now. What do you think of this ? "

They unanimously answered : " Yes ! after you have worked so hard to give a home to every one of us, it is just that we should help you to make one for yourself. We are happy to

hear that it is your intention to secure a good education for our children. Let us begin the work at once." This was on 16th of January, 1852.

The next day, we were seventy-two men in a neighbouring forest felling the great oaks; and on 17th April, only three months later, that fine two-storey building, nearly forty feet square, was blessed by Bishop Vandeveld.

It was surmounted by a nice steeple, thirty feet high, in which we had put a bell, weighing 250 pounds, whose solemn sound was to tell our joys and sorrow over the boundless prairies.

On that day, instead of being only fifty families, as at the last census, we numbered more than one hundred, among whom more than 500 were adults. The chapel which we thought, at first, would be too large, was filled to its utmost capacity on the day of consecration to God.

Not a month later, we had to speak of making an addition of forty feet more, which, when finished six months later, was found to be still insufficient for the accommodation of the constantly increasing flood of emigration, which came, not only from Canada, but from Belgium and France. It soon became necessary to make a new centre, and expand the limits of the new colony; which I did by planting a cross at l'Erable, about fifteen miles South-west of St. Anne, and another at a place we call St. Mary, twelve miles South-east, in the county of Iroquois. These settlements were soon filled; for that very Spring, more than one thousand new families came from Canada to join us.

No words can express the joy of my heart, when I saw with what rapidity, my (then) so dear Church of Rome was taking possession of those magnificent lands, and how soon she would be unrivalled mistress, not only of the State of Illinois, but of the whole valley of the Mississippi. But the ways of men are not the ways of God. I had been called, by the Bishops of Rome, to Illinois, to extend the power of that Church. But my God had called me there, that I might give to that Church the most deadly blow she has ever received on this Continent.

My task is now to tell my readers how the God of Truth, and Light, and Life, broke, one after another, all the charmed bonds by which I was kept a slave at the feet of the Pope and how He opened my eyes, and those of my people, to the unsuspected and untold abominations of Romanism.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

Impostures and Criminal Life of the Priest in Bourbonnais.

PLEASE accompany me to Bourbonnais; I have to confer with you and the Rev. Mr. Courjeault, on important matters," said the bishop, half-an-hour before leaving St. Anne, after having blessed the chapel.

"I intended, my lord, to ask your lordship to grant me that honour before you offered it," I answered.

Two hours of good driving took us to the parsonage of the Rev. Mr. Courjeault, who had prepared a sumptuous dinner, to which several of the principal citizens of Bourbonnais had been invited. When all the guests had departed, and the bishop, Mr. Courjeault, and I were alone, he drew from his trunk a bundle of weekly newspapers of Montreal, Canada, in which several letters, very insulting and compromising for the bishop, were published, signed R.L.C. Showing them to me, he said: "Mr. Chiniquy, can I know the reasons you had for writing such insulting things against your bishop?"

"My lord," I answered, "I have no words to express my surprise and indignation when I read those letters. But, thanks be to God, I am not the author of those infamous writings. I would rather have my right hand cut off than allow it to pen such false and perfidious things against you or anyone else."

"Do you assure me that you are not the writer of those letters? Are you positive in that denial; and do you know the contents of these lying communications?" replied the bishop.

"Yes, my lord, I know the contents of these communications. I have read them, several times, with supreme disgust and indignation; and I positively assert that I never wrote a single line of them."

"Then, can you tell me who did write them?" said the bishop.

I answered: "Please, my lord, put that question to the Rev. Mr. Courjeault: he is more able than anyone to satisfy your lordship on the matter." I looked at Mr. Courjeault with an indignant air, which told him that he could no longer wear the mask, behind which he had concealed himself for the last three or four months. The eyes of the bishop were also turned, and firmly fixed on the wretched man.

No! never had I seen anything so strange as the countenance of that guilty man. His face, though usually ugly, suddenly took a cadaverous appearance; his eyes were fixed on the floor, as if unable to move.

The only signs of life left in him were given by his knees, which were shaking convulsively; and by the big drops of sweat rolling down his unwashed face. The bishop, with expressions of indignation, exclaimed:

"Mr. Courjeault, you are the writer of those infamous and

slanderous letters ! Three times you have written, and twice you told me, verbally, that they were coming from Mr. Chiniquy. I do not ask you if you are the author of these slanders against me. I see it written in your face. Your malice against Mr. Chiniquy is really diabolical. You wanted to ruin him in my estimation, as well as in that of his countrymen. And to succeed the better in that plot you publish the most egregious falsehoods against me in the Canadian press, to induce me to denounce Mr. Chiniquy as an impostor. How is it possible that a priest can so completely give himself to the devil ? ”

Addressing me, the bishop said : “ Mr. Chiniquy, I beg your pardon for having believed and repeated, that you were depraved enough to write those calumnies against your bishop ; I was deceived by that deceitful man. I will immediately retract what I have written and said against you.”

Then addressing Mr. Courjeault he said : “ The least punishment I can give you is to turn you out of my diocese, and write to all the Bishops of America, that you are the vilest priest I ever saw, that they may never give you any position on this Continent.”

These last words had hardly fallen from the lips of the bishop, when Mr. Courjeault fell on his knees, before me, and bathing with his tears my hands, said : “ Dear Mr. Chiniquy, I see the greatness of my iniquity against you and against our common bishop. For the dear Saviour Jesus’ sake, forgive me. I take God to witness that you will never have a more devoted friend than I will be. And you, my lord, allow me to tell you, that I thank God that my malice and my great sin against both you and Mr. Chiniquy is known and punished at once. However, in the name of our crucified Saviour, I ask you to forgive me. God knows that, hereafter, you will not have a more obedient and devoted priest than I.”

It was a most touching spectacle to see the tears, and hear the sobs of that repentant sinner. I answered : “ Yes, Mr. Courjeault, I forgive you with all my heart, as I wish my merciful God to forgive me my sins. May the God who sees your repentance forgive you also ! ”

With staggering step, he went to the bishop.

Bishop Vandeveld, who was gifted with a most sensitive and kind nature, was also shedding tears, when I lifted up Mr. Courjeault to press him to my heart, and to tell him again, with my voice choked with sobs : “ I forgive you most sincerely, as I want to be forgiven.”

He asked me : “ What do you advise me to do ? Must I forgive also ? And can I continue to keep him at the head of this important mission ? ”

“ Yes, my lord. Please forgive and forget the errors of that dear brother ; he has already done so much good to my countrymen of Bourbonnais. I pledge myself that he will hereafter be one of your best priests.”

And the bishop forgave him, after some very appropriate and paternal advice, admirably mixed with mercy and firmness.

It was then about three o'clock in the afternoon. We separated to say our vespers and matins (prayers which took nearly an hour). I had just finished reciting them in the garden, when I saw the Rev. Mr. Courjeault walking from the church towards me, but his steps were uncertain as one distracted, or half-drunk. I was puzzled at the sight, for he was a strong teetotaler, and I knew he had no strong drink in the church. He advanced three or four steps, then retreated. At last he came very near, but his face had such an expression of terror and sadness, that he was hardly recognisable. He muttered something that I could not understand.

He then put his hands on his face, and again muttered something; his voice was drowned in tears and sobs. Supposing that he was coming to ask me again to pardon his past malice and calumnies against me, I felt an unspeakable compassion for him. As there were a couple of seats near by, I said to him: "My dear Courjeault, come and sit here with me; and do not think any more of what God Almighty has blotted out with the blood of His Son. I will never think any more of your momentary errors; you may look upon me as your most devoted friend."

"Dear Mr. Chiniquy," he answered, "I have to reveal to you another dark mystery of my miserable life. Since more than a year, I have lived with the beadle's daughter as if she were my wife! She has just told me, that she is to become a mother in a few days, and that I have to see to that, and give her 500 dollars. She threatens to denounce me publicly, to the bishop and the people, if I do not support her and her offspring. Would it not be better for me to flee away, this night, and go back to France to live in my own family and conceal my shame? Sometimes, I am even tempted to throw myself in the river, to put an end to my miserable and dishonoured existence. Do you think that the bishop would forgive this new crime, if I threw myself at his feet and asked pardon? Would he give me another place in his vast diocese, where my misfortunes and my sins are not known? Please tell me what to do."

I remained absolutely stupefied, and did not know what to answer. Though I had compassion for the unfortunate man, I must confess that this new development of his hypocrisy and rascality, filled me with an unspeakable horror and disgust. He had, till then, wrapped himself in such a thick mantle of deception, that many of his people looked upon him as an angel of purity. His infamies were so well concealed under an exterior of extreme moral rigidity, that several of his parishioners looked upon him as a saint, whose relics could perform miracles. Not long before, two young couples, of the best families in Bourbonnais, having danced in a respectable social gathering, had been condemned by him, and compelled to ask pardon, publicly, in the Church. So many sad thoughts filled my mind, that I was confused and unable to give him any advice. I answered:

"Your misfortune is really great. If the bishop were not here, I might, perhaps, tell you my mind about the best thing to do, just now. But the bishop is here; he is the only man to whom you have to go to know how to come out of the bottomless abyss into which you have fallen."

With staggering step, he went to the bishop.

Half-an-hour later the bishop came to me. He was pale and his eyes reddened with his tears; he said to me:

"Mr. Chiniquy, what an awful scandal! What a new disgrace for our holy Church! That Mr. Courjeault, whom I thought till to-day to be one of my best priests, is an incarnate devil; what shall I do with him?"

"My dear bishop," I answered, "the more I consider these scandals here, the less I see how we can save the Church from becoming a dreadful wreck. I feel too much the responsibility of my advice to give it. Let your lordship, guided by the Spirit of God, do what you consider best for the honour of the Church and the salvation of so many souls, which are in danger of perishing when this scandal becomes known. For me, the only thing I can do is to conceal my face with shame, go back to my young colony, to pray, and weep, and work."

The bishop replied: "Here is what I intend to do: Mr. Courjeault tells me that there is not the least suspicion among the people of his sin, and that it is an easy thing to send that girl to the house provided in Canada for priests' offences without awakening any suspicion. He seems so penitent, that I hope hereafter we have nothing to fear from him. He will now live the life of a good priest here, without giving any scandal. But if I remove him, there will be some suspicion of his fall, and the awful scandal we want to avoid will come. Please lend me 100 dollars, which I will give to Mr. Courjeault, to send that girl to Canada as soon as possible; and he will continue here, to work with wisdom after this terrible trial. What do you think of that plan?"

"If your lordship is sure of the conversion of Mr. Courjeault, and that there is no danger of his great iniquity being known by the people, evidently the wisest thing you can do is to send that girl to Canada, and keep Mr. Courjeault here. Though I see great dangers even in that way of dealing in this sad affair. But, unfortunately, I have not a cent in hand to-day, and I cannot lend you the 100 dollars you want."

"Then," said the bishop, "I will give a draft on a bank of Chicago, but you must endorse it."

"I have no objection, my lord, to endorse any draft signed by your lordship," I replied.

Though it was late in the day, and I had at first proposed to spend the night there, I came back to my dear colony of St. Anne. Bourbonnais appeared to me like a burning house, in the cellar of which there was a barrel of powder, from which one could not keep himself too far away.

Five days later, four of the principal citizens of that interesting but sorely tried place, knocked at my door. They were

went as a deputation from the whole village, to ask me what to do about their curate, Mr. Courjeault. They told me that several of them had, long since, suspected what was going on between that priest and the beadle's daughter, but they had kept that secret. However, yesterday they said the eyes of the parish had been opened to the awful scandal.

"The disgusting demonstrations and attention of the curate, when the victim of his lust went away in the carriage, left no doubt in the minds of anyone that she is to have a child in Montreal."

"Now, Mr. Chiniquy, we are here to ask your advice. Please tell us what to do?"

"My dear friends," I answered, "it is not from me, but from our common bishop, that you must ask what is to be done in such deplorable affairs."

They replied: "Would you not be kind enough to come to Bourbons with us, and go to our unfortunate priest, to tell him that his criminal conduct is known by the whole people, and that we cannot decently keep him a day longer as our Christian teacher."

"I do not see any reason to refuse you that favour," I answered. Three hours later, in the presence of those four gentlemen, I was delivering my sad message to the unfortunate curate. He received it as his death warrant.

After spending four hours with us in settling his affairs, he fell on his knees, with torrents of tears he asked pardon for the scandal he had given, and requested us to ask pardon of the whole parish, and at twelve o'clock at night he left for Chicago. That hour was a sad one indeed for us all. But my God had a still sadder hour in store for me. The people of Bourbons had requested me to give them some religious evening services the next week, and I was just at the end of one of them, the 7th May, when suddenly the Rev. Mr. Courjeault entered the church, walked through the crowd, saluting this one, smiling on that one, and pressing the hands of many. His face bore the marks of impudence and debauchery. From one end of the church to the other, a whisper of amazement and indignation was heard.

"Mr. Courjeault! Mr. Courjeault!! Great God! What does this mean?"

I observed that he was advancing towards me, probably with the intention of shaking hands before the people, but I did not give him time to do it; I left by the back door and went to the parsonage, which was only a few steps distant. He then went to the back door to have a talk with the people, but very few gave him that chance. Though he affected to be exceedingly gay, jocose, and talkative, he could not get many people to stop and hear him. Every one, particularly the women, was filled with disgust at his impudence. Seeing himself nearly deserted at the church door, he turned his steps towards the parsonage, which he entered, whistling. When he beheld me, he laughed and said:

"Oh Oh! Our dear little Father Chiniquy here? How do you do?"

"I am quite unwell," I answered, "since I see that you are so miserably destroying yourself."

"I am not destroying myself," he answered, "but it is you who want to turn me out of my beautiful parish of Bourbonnais, to take my place. With the four blockheads who accompanied you the other day, you have frightened and persuaded me that my misfortune with Mary was known by all the people; but our good bishop has understood that this was a trick of yours. I came back to take possession of my parish, and turn you out."

"If the bishop has sent you back here to turn me out, that I may go back to my dear colony, he has just done what I asked him to do; for he knows better than any man for what great purpose I came to this country, and that I cannot do my work so long as he asks me to take care of Bourbonnais. I will go at once, and leave you in full possession of your parsonage."

I left, and ordered my servant man to drive me back to St. Anne. But when crossing the village, I saw that there was a terrible excitement among the people. Several times they stopped me, and requested me to remain in their midst and advise them what to do.

But I refused, saying to them: "It would be an insult on my part to advise you anything in a matter where your duty as men and Catholics is so clear. Consult the respect you owe to yourselves, to your families, and to your Church, and you will know what to do."

It took me all night, which was very dark, to come back to St. Anne, where I arrived at dawn, the 9th May, 1852.

The next Sabbath day, I held a public service in my chapel, which was crowded, without making any allusion to that deplorable affair. On the Monday following, four citizens of Bourbonnais were deputed to tell me what they had done, and ask me not to desert them in that hour of trial, but to remember that I was their countryman, and that they had nobody else to whom they could look for help to fulfil their religious duties. Here is the substance of their message.

"As soon as we saw that you had left our village, without telling us what to do, we called a public meeting, where we passed the following resolutions:

"1st. No personal insult shall be given to Mr. Courjeault."
"2nd. We cannot consent to keep him a single hour as our pastor."

"3rd. When, next Sabbath, he will begin his sermon, we will instantly leave the Church, and go to the door, that he may remain absolutely alone, and understand our stern determination not to have him any more for our spiritual teacher."

"4th. We will send these resolutions to the bishop, and ask him to allow Mr. Chiniquy to divide his time and attention between his new colony and us."

Strange to say, poor Mr. Courjeault, shut up in his parsonage that night, knew nothing of that meeting. He had not found a single friend to warn him of what was to happen the next Sunday. That Sunday, the weather was magnificent, and there never had been such a multitude of people at the Church.

The miserable priest, thinking by that unusual crowd, that everything was to be right with him that day, began his mass and went to the pulpit to deliver his sermon. But he had hardly pronounced the first words when, at a signal given by someone, the whole people, without a single exception, ran out of the Church.

Of course, this fell upon him as a thunderbolt, and he came very near fainting. However, recovering himself, he went to the door, and having with his tears and sobs, as with his words, persuaded the people to listen to what he had to tell them. He said: "I see that the hand of God is upon me, and I deserve it. I have sinned, and made a mistake by coming back. You do not want me any more to be your pastor. I cannot complain of that, this is your right, you will be satisfied. I will leave the place for ever to-night. I only ask you to forgive my past errors and pray for me."

This short address was followed by the most deadly silence; not a voice was heard to insult him. Many, on the contrary, were so much impressed with the sad solemnity of this occurrence that they could not refrain their tears. The whole people went back to their homes with broken hearts. Mr. Courjeault left Bourbonnais that very night, never to return again. But the awful scandal he had given did not disappear with him.

A voice from heaven was as if heard by many of us.

"Do you not see that in your Church of Rome you do not follow the Word of God, but the lying traditions of men? Is it not evident that your priests' celibacy is a snare and an institution of Satan?"

Many asked me to show them, in the Gospel, where Christ had established the law of celibacy.

"I will do better," I added; "I will put the Gospel in your hands, and you will see for yourselves, in that holy Book, what is said on that matter."

The very same day I ordered a merchant, from Montreal, to send me a large box filled with New Testaments, printed by the order of the Archbishop of Quebec; and on the 25th as many from New York. Very soon it was known by every one of my emigrants that not only had Jesus never forbidden His priests and apostles to marry, but He had left them free to have their wives, and live with them, according to the very testimony of Paul.

And they began seriously to suspect that the great powers of the Pope and his bishops were nothing but a sacrilegious usurpation. I was not long without seeing that the reading of the Holy Scriptures by my dear countrymen was changing them into other men. This was not yet the bright light of the day, but it was the blessed dawn.

CHAPTER XLIX.

Correspondence with the Bishop.

ON the 20th of May, 1852, I received the following letter from Bishop Vandeveld.

MY DEAR MR. CHINIQUEY,—The Rev. Mr. Courjeault is just returned from Bourbonnais, where he ought never to have gone back; he has just told me of his complete failure, and ignominious exit. I bitterly regret having allowed him to go there again. But he had so persuaded me that his criminal conduct with his servant girl was ignored by the people, that I had yielded to his request.

I feel that this new attempt on his part to impose himself on that honest people has added to the enormity of his first scandal. I advise him now to go back to France, where he can more easily conceal his shame than in America. But one of the darkest features of that disgusting affair is, that I am obliged to pay 500 dollars which the girl asked, in order to prevent Mr. Courjeault from being dragged before the civil tribunal, and sent to jail.

The malice of that priest against you has received its just reward. But my fear is, that you have another implacable enemy here in Mr. Lebel, whose power to do evil is greater than Mr. Courjeault's.

Before you began your great work of directing the flood of Roman Catholic emigration towards this country, to secure it to our holy Church, he was in favour of that glorious scheme, but his jealousy against you has suddenly changed his mind. He has, lately, addressed a letter to the Canadian press, every word of which is an unmitigated falsehood. Of course the Bishop of Montreal, who is more than ever opposed to our colonisation plan, has published that lying letter in his journal; more than that, he has reproduced the testimony of a perjured man, who swears that many of the people of Illinois are bitten and killed by rattlesnakes, and those who escape are taxed six cents for each pane of glass of their windows.

Will you be discouraged by this opposition! I hope not. This opposition is the greatest evidence we could have that our scheme is from God, and that He will support you. I am tempted to interdict Mr. Lebel, and send him back to Canada, for writing things which he so well knows to be false. The want of a French-speaking priest for your countrymen of Chicago is the only thing which has prevented me from withdrawing his faculties. But I have warned him, that if he writes any more against the truth, I will punish him as he deserves.

For you, my dear Sir, I will address to you the very words which God Himself addressed to His servant Joshua: "Be strong and of good courage; for unto this people shalt thou divide, for an inheritance, the land which I swear unto their fathers to give them" (Joshua i: 6).

I agree with what you wrote me in your last letter, that

the charge I have given you of Bourbonnais, *pro tempore*, will seriously interfere with your other numberless duties towards your dear emigrants. But there is no help; the only thing I can promise, is to relieve you as soon as possible. I have no other priest to whom I can trust the interesting mission of Bourbonnais. For Father Huick is too old and infirm for such work; it is evidently the will of God that you should extend your labours over the first limits you had fixed. Be faithful to the end, and the Lord will be with you, and support you throughout all your labours and tribulations. Yours truly,

+ OLIV VANDEVELD, *Bishop of Chicago*.

REV. MR. CHINIQUEY.

During the next six months, more than 500 families from France, Belgium and Canada, came and gave to our colony a life, power, and prosperity, impossible for me to depict; the joy I felt at this unforeseen success was much diminished, however, by the sudden news that Mr. Courjeault had come back from France, where he spent only one month. Not daring to visit Bourbonnais again, he was lurking on the frontiers of Indiana, only a few miles distant, evidently with some sinister intention.

Driven to a state of madness by his jealousy and hatred, that unfortunate man addressed to me, on the 23rd January, 1853, the most abusive letter I ever received, and ended it by telling me that the fine (though unfinished) church at Bourbonnais, which he had built, was to be burned, and that my life would be in danger if I remained at the head of that mission.

I immediately sent that letter to the bishop, asking his advice. In his answer, he told me that he thought that Mr. Courjeault was wicked enough to fulfil his threats. He added: "Though I have not yet clear evidence of it, it is my fear that Mr. Lebel is united with Mr. Courjeault, in the diabolical plot of burning your church at Bourbonnais. Several people have reported to me that he says your presence there will be the ruin of that people, and the destruction of their church.

After vain efforts to insure the church, I wrote to the bishop. "The only way to escape the impending danger is to finish the church at once, and insure it after. I have just made a collection of 400 dollars among the people of Bourbonnais, to which I added 300 dollars from my own private resources: and will go to work immediately if your lordship has no objections."

Having got the approbation of my superior, on the 1st of March I began to put the last hand to that building. We worked almost day and night, till the 1st May, when it was all finished. I dare affirm that for a country place, that church was unsurpassed in beauty. The inside frame-work was all made of the splendid black oak of Bourbonnais, polished and varnished by most skilful men, and they looked like a mirror. Very seldom have I seen anything more grand and beautiful

than the altar, made also of that precious black oak. It was late at night, when, with my fellow-labourers, covered with dust and sweat, we could say with joy the solemn words, "It is finished!" Afterwards we sung the *Te Deum*. Had I had any opportunity, at that late hour, it was my thought and desire to insure it. But I was forced to postpone this till the next Monday.

The next day (the first Sabbath of May, 1853), the sun seemed to come out from the horizon and rise above our heads with more than usual magnificence. The air was calm and pure, and the numberless Spring flowers of our gardens mingling their perfumes with the fragrant leaves of the splendid forest at the front of the village, the balmy atmosphere, the songs of the birds, seemed to tell us that this Sabbath day was to be the most happy one for me and my dear people of Bourbonnais. The church had never been so crowded. The hymns we sung had never been so melodious, and the words of gratitude which I addressed to my God, when I thanked Him for the church He had given us, in which to adore and bless Him, had never been so sincere and earnest.

Alas! Who would suspect that, six hours later, that same people, gathered around the smoking ruins of their church, would rend the air with their cries of desolation! Such, however, was the case. While taking my dinner, after the public service, two little boys, who had remained in the church to wait for the hour of the Catechism, ran to the parsonage, crying—"Fire! Fire! Fire!"

Bare-headed, and half-paralysed with the idea that my church was on fire, I went out to see the awful reality. A girdle of smoke and fire was already issuing from almost every part, between the top of the wooden walls and the roof. I had rushed to the church with a pail of water in my hand. But it was too late to make any use of it; the flames were already running and leaping with a fearful rapidity over the fresh varnish like a long train of powder. In less than two hours all was finished again.

No doubt could remain in our minds. This was the work of an incendiary, for there was no fire in the church after the service. Many strangers who had come from a distance, had gone through the whole nave and the upper galleries, to have a better sight of the whole building, and two of them had been seen by the little boys, remaining ten or fifteen minutes alone; they had gone back to some of the houses of the village without being remarked by anybody—for it was dinner time, and there was nobody to watch them.

Though stunned by that awful calamity, the noble-hearted people of Bourbonnais did not lose their minds. Seeing that they were all gathered around the smoking ruins, at about 6 p.m., I addressed to them a few words to support their courage. I told them that it was only in the midst of great trials and difficulties that men could show their noblest qualities

and their true manhood ; that if we were true men, instead of losing our time in shedding tears and rending the air with our cries of desolation, we would immediately put our hands to the work, and begin the very next day to raise up, not a frame building, which the flames could turn to ashes in a few minutes, and which the storm could blow down over our heads, but a stone church, which would stand before God and man as an imperishable monument of their faith, indomitable courage, and liberality. We immediately started a subscription to erect, without delay, a stone church. In less than one hour, 4,000 dollars in money, and more than 5,000 dollars in time, timber, stone and other material, were subscribed, every cent of which has been faithfully given for the erection of that fine stone church of Bourbonnais.

The next Thursday, Bishop Vandeveld came from Chicago to confer with me about what could be done to repair that terrible loss, and to inquire confidentially of me as to the author of that fire. All the facts we gathered pointed in the same direction. It was evident that the miserable Courjeault, with Lebel, the French-Canadian priest of Chicago, had done that evil work through their emissaries. No doubt of this remained in my mind when I learned that soon after, Mr. Courjeault had thrown himself into one of those dark dungeons called a monastery of La Trappe, which Satan has built on earth as a preparation for the dark hereafter of the wicked.

The unexpected visit of my bishop had, at first, rejoiced me, by the hope that he would bring me words of encouragement. But what was my disappointment when he said to me: "My dear Mr. Chiniquy, I must reveal to you a thing that I have not yet made known to anyone. It is confidential, and I request you not to say a word before it is accomplished. I cannot remain any longer Bishop of Illinois! No! I cannot any longer resume the responsibilities of such a high position, because it is beyond my power to fulfil my duties and do what the Church requires of me. The conduct of the priests of this diocese is such, that, should I follow the regulations of the canon, I would be forced to interdict all my priests, with the exception of you and two or three others.

"They are all either notorious drunkards, or given to public or secret concubinage ; several of them have children by their own nieces, and two by their own sisters. I do not think that ten of them believe in God. Religion is nothing to them but a well-paying comedy. Where can I find a remedy to such a general evil ? Can I punish one of them and leave the others free in their abominable doings, when they are almost all equally guilty ? Would not the general interdiction of these priests be the death-blow of our Church in Illinois ? Besides, how can I punish them when I know that many of them are ready to poison me the very moment I raise a finger against them ? I suppose that you do not ignore the fact that my poor predecessor was poisoned by one of those priests, who had

seduced several nuns, when he was in the very act of investigating the matter. I intend to go to Rome as soon as I receive my permit from the Pope, to renounce at his feet the Bishopric of Chicago, which I will not keep on any consideration.

"If the Pope does not give me another diocese, with a better set of priests, I prefer to spend the rest of my life at the head of a small congregation, where I shall not have on my shoulders the awful responsibility which is killing me here. The last horrible deeds of Courjeault and Lebel, of which you are the victim to-day, has filled the bitter cup which God has put to my lips to drink. It is overflowing. I cannot endure it."

When speaking so the bishop's face was bathed with tears. It was very late, too late, indeed, to make the remonstrances which came to my mind, in order to change his resolutions.

I determined to wait till the next morning, when I should have plenty of time, I hoped, to expel the dark thoughts and give him more courage. Besides, I was myself so discouraged by those awful disclosures that I was in need of mental as well as bodily rest. But alas! the next day was to be one of the darkest of my priestly life!

When the hour for breakfast came the next morning, I went to awaken the bishop. What was my dismay when I found him drunk!

Before going to bed he had secretly asked my housekeeper to give him a bottle of wine which I used to celebrate mass. It was a large bottle containing nearly a quart of wine, which would last me at least six months, the whole of which he had drunk during the night.

I had been told that Bishop Vandeveld (as well as the greater part of the bishops of the United States) was a drunkard; but I had never believed it. He always drank very moderately before me at any time I sat at his table, or he at mine. It appears that it was at night, when nobody could see him, that he gave himself up to that detestable habit. His room was filled with the odour of what he had vomited, after drinking such an enormous quantity of wine. He left the room at noon, only after the fumes of the wine had almost entirely disappeared, and requested the housekeeper to cleanse it herself, without letting the servants know anything of the occurrence of the night.

The destruction of my dear church by the hand of incendiaries was surely a great calamity for me; but the fall of the bishop, from the high position he had in my heart and mind, was still greater.

I had the means in hand to rebuild that church; but my confidence in my bishop was irremediably and for ever lost. Never had a son loved his father more sincerely than I had loved him; and never had a priest felt a more sincere respect for his bishop than I for him. Oh! what a terrible wound was made in my heart that day! What torture I felt! How many times since I have blessed my God for these wounds.

Without them, I should never have known, that instead of being in the bosom of the Immaculate Church of Christ, I was the slave of that great Babylon, which poisons the nations with the wine of her abominations.

My love and respect for Bishop Vandeveld were very strong chains, by which I was bound to the feet of the idols of Rome. I will eternally bless God for having Himself broken these chains on that day of supreme desolation. The remaining part of the day, as well as the hour of the next morning which the bishop spent in my house, I remained almost mute in his presence. He was not less embarrassed when he asked me my views about his project of leaving the diocese. I answered him, in a few words, that I could not disapprove his purpose ; for I would, myself, prefer to live in a dark forest, in the midst of wild animals, than among drunken, atheist priests and bishops.

Some months later I learned, without regret, that the Pope had accepted his resignation of the Bishopric of Chicago, and appointed him Bishop of Natchez, in Louisiana. His successor to the Bishopric of Chicago was the Rev. O'Regan.

One of the very first things which this new bishop did was to bring Bishop Vandeveld before the criminal tribunal, as a thief, accusing him of having stolen 100,000 dollars from the Bishopric of Chicago, and carrying them away with him. There is no need to say this action caused a terrible scandal. Not only in Illinois, but through the United States, both priests and laymen had to blush, and cast down their eyes before the world. The two bishops, employing the best lawyers to fight each other, came very near proving to the world that both of them were equally swindlers and thieves ; when the Pope forced them both to stop their contestation, and bring the affair before his tribunal, at Rome. There it was decided that the 100,000 dollars which had really been taken from Chicago to the Natchez diocese, should be equally divided between the two bishops.

I was in desolation at finding that my faith in my Church was, in spite of myself, shaken by these scandals. With burning tears rolling down my cheeks, and with a broken and humiliated heart, I fell, one night, on my knees, and asked God to have mercy upon me, by strengthening my faith and preserving it from ruin. But it seemed that neither my tears nor my cries were of any avail, and I remained the whole night as a ship struck by a hurricane, drifting on an unknown sea, without a compass or a rudder. I was not aware of it then, but I learned it after, that the divine and sure Pilot was directing my course towards the port of salvation.

It seemed to me, though long after that, that my duty was to go and pay my respects to my new bishop, and open to him my heart as to my best friend, and the guide whom God Himself had chosen to heal the wounds of my soul by pouring the oil and wine of charity into them.

I shall never forget the day (the 11th of December, 1854), when I saw Bishop O'Regan for the first time, nor the painful impressions I received from that first interview. He was of medium stature, with a repugnant face, and his head was always in motion; all its motions seemed the expression of insolence, contempt, tyranny, and pride; there was absolutely nothing pleasant, either in his words or in his manners. I fell on my knees to ask his benediction when I had given him my name, and kissed his hand which seemed as cold as that of a corpse.

"Ah! ah! you are Father Chiniquy," he said. "I am glad to see you, though you have deferred your visit a long time; please sit down, I want some explanation from you about a certain very strange document, which I have just read to-day;" and he went, at the double quick, to his room to get the document. There were two Irish priests in the room, who came a few minutes before me. When we were alone, one of them said: "We had hoped that we would gain by changing Bishop Vandeveld for this one. But my fear is that we have only passed from Charybdis into Scylla," and they laughed outright. But I could not laugh. I was more inclined to weep. After less than ten minutes of absence, the bishop returned, holding in his hand a paper, which I understood to be the deed of the eleven acres of land I had bought, and on which I had built my chapel of St. Anne.

"Do you know this paper?" he asked me, in an angry manner.

"Yes, my lord, I know it," I answered.

"But then," he quickly replied, "you must know that that title is a nullity, a fraud, which you ought never to have signed."

"Your venerable and worthy predecessor has accepted it," I answered, "and what might have been incorrect has been made valid, I hope, by his acceptance."

"I do not care a straw about what my predecessor has done," he abruptly answered, "he is not here to defend himself; neither are we here to discuss his merits or demerits. We have not to deal with my Lord Vandeveld, but with a document which is a nullity, a deception, which must be thrown into the fire; you must give me another title of that property!"

And, saying this, he flung the deed on the floor. I calmly picked it up, and said: "I exceedingly regret, my lord, that my first interview with your lordship should be the occasion of such an unexpected act. But I hope this will not destroy the paternal sentiments which God must have put into the heart of my bishop for the last and the least of his priests. I see that your lordship is very busy; I do not want to trespass on your valuable time; I take this rejected document with me, to make another one, which I hope will be more agreeable to your views."

I leave the reader to imagine the sentiments which filled

my mind when coming back to my colony. I did not dare to say a word to my people about our bishop. When questioned by them, I gave the most evasive answers I could.

It seemed that my most pressing duty, after my first interview, was to bring my heart nearer to my God than ever; to read and study the Bible with more attention, and to get my people to take more than ever the Word of God as their daily bread. I began, also, to speak more openly of our Christian rights, as well as our duties, as these are set forth in the Gospel of Christ.

Some time before this, feeling more than ever that I could not do justice to my colony by keeping any longer the charge of Bourbonnais, I had respectfully sent my resignation to the bishop, which had been accepted. A priest had been called by him to take my place there. But he was, ere long, guilty of a public scandal with his servant girl. The principal citizens of Bourbonnais protested against his presence in their midst, and soon forced the bishop to dismiss him. His successor was the miserable priest, Lebel, who had been turned out of Chicago for a criminal offence with his own niece, and was now to be the curate of Bourbonnais. But his drunkenness and other public vices caused him to be interdicted, and expelled from the place in the month of September, 1855. About the same time, a priest, who had been expelled from Belgium for a great scandal, was sent to Kankakee as the curate of the French-Canadians of that interesting young city. After his expulsion from Belgium, he had come to Chicago where, under another name, he had made a fortune, and for five or six years kept a house of prostitution. Becoming tired of that occupation, he offered 5,000 dollars to the bishop if he would accept him as one of his priests, and give him a parish. Bishop O'Regan being in need of money accepted the gift, and fulfilled the condition.

As soon as he had taken possession of that interesting mission, he came with Mr. Lebel to pay me a visit. I received them as politely as possible, though they were both half drunk when they arrived. After dinner they went to shoot prairie chickens, and got so drunk that one of them, Mr. Lebel, lost his boots in a slough, and came back to my house barefooted, without noticing his loss.

But what was my surprise and sadness, not long before these two infamous priests were ignominiously turned out by their people, to receive a letter from my bishop, which ended in these words: "I am sorry to hear that you refuse to live on good terms with your two neighbouring brother priests. This ought not to be, and I hope to hear soon that you have reconciled yourself with them, in a friendly way, as you ought to have done long ago."

I answered him: "It is my interest as well as my duty, to obey my bishop. I know it. But as long as my bishop gives me for neighbours, priests, one of whom has lived publicly

with his own niece, as his wife, and the other who has kept a house of prostitution in Chicago, I respectfully ask my bishop to be excused for not visiting them."

The bishop felt insulted by my letter, and was furious against me. It came to be a public fact that he had said before many people: "I would give anything to the one who would help me to get rid of that unmanageable Chiniquy."

Among those who heard the bishop was a land speculator, a real land-shark, against whom a bill for perjury had been found by the jury of Iroquois county, the 27th April, 1854. That man was very angry against me for protecting my poor countrymen against his too sharp speculations. He said to the bishop, 'If you pay the expenses of the suit, I pledge myself to have Chiniquy put in jail.'

The bishop answered him: "No sum of money will be too great to be delivered from a priest who alone gives me more trouble than the rest of my clergy."

To comply with the desires of the bishop, this speculator dragged me before the criminal court of Kankakee, on the 16th day of May, 1855; but he lost his action, and was condemned to pay the costs.

It was my impression that the bishop, having so often expressed in public his bad feelings against me, would not visit my colony. But I was mistaken. On the 11th June, taking the Revs. Mr. Lebel and Carthual for his companions, he came to St. Anne to administer the sacrament of confirmation.

As the infamous conduct of those two priests was known to every one of my people, I felt a supreme disgust at their arrival, and came very near forbidding them to sit at my table. Having, however, asked the bishop to give me half-an-hour of private interview I respectfully, but energetically, protested against the presence of these two degraded men in my house.

He coldly answered me. "Mr. Chiniquy, you forget that I am the Bishop of Illinois, and that you are a simple priest whom I can interdict and remove from here when I like. I do not come here to receive your lessons, but to intimate to you my orders. You seem to forget that charity is above all others the virtue which must adorn the soul of a good priest. Your great zeal is nothing before God, and it is less than nothing before me so long as you have not charity."

"My lord," I answered, "allow me respectfully to tell you that though you are a bishop, and I a simple priest, the Gospel of Christ, which we have to preach, tells us to avoid the company of publicly vicious and profligate men. My conscience tells me that, through respect for myself and my people, and through respect for the Gospel I preach, I must avoid the company of men, one of whom has lived with his niece as his wife, and the other has, till very lately, been guilty of keeping a house of prostitution in Chicago. Your lordship may ignore these things and, in consequence of that, may give his confi-

dence to these men ; but nothing is more apt to destroy the faith in our French-Canadian people than to see such men in your company when you come to administer the sacrament of confirmation."

He angrily answered me: "I see now the truthfulness of what people say about you. It is to the Gospel you constantly appeal on everything. The Gospel! the Gospel! is surely a holy book; but remember that it is the *Church* which must guide you. Christ has said: 'Hear My Church.' I am here the interpreter, ambassador—the representative of the Church—when you disobey me, it is the Church you disobey."

"Now, my lord, that I have fulfilled what I consider a conscientious duty, I promise that, through respect for your lordship, and to keep myself in the bonds of peace with my bishop, I to-day, will deal with these two priests as if they were worthy of the honourable position you give them."

"All right! all right!" replied the bishop. "But it must be near the hour for dinner."

"Yes, my lord, I have just heard the bell calling us."

After the blessing of the table by the bishop, he looked at the Rev. Carthuval, who was sitting just before him, and said: "What is the matter with you, Mr. Carthuval, you do not look well?"

"No, my lord, I am not well, I want to go to bed." He was correct, he was not well—for he was drunk.

During the public services, he had left the chapel to come down and ask for a bottle of the wine I kept to celebrate mass. The housekeeper, thinking he wanted the wine in the chapel, handed him the bottle which he drank in her presence, afterwards he went up to the chapel to help the bishop in administering the confirmation to the 150 people whom I had prepared.

As soon as dinner was finished, the bishop requested me to take a walk with him. After giving me some compliments on the beauty of the site I had chosen for my first village and chapel, he saw, at a short distance, a stone building, which was raised only a little above the windows and, directing his steps towards it, he stopped only 20 or 30 feet distant, and asked me: "Whose house is this?"

"It is mine, my lord."

"It is yours!" he replied, "and to whom does that fine garden belong?"

"It is mine, also, my lord."

"Well! well!" he rejoined. "Where did you get the money to purchase that fine piece of land, and build that house?"

"I got the money where every honest man gets what he possesses: in my hard labour, and in the sweat of my brow," I replied.

"I want that house and that piece of land!" rejoined the bishop, with an imperative voice.

"So do I," I replied.

"You must give me that house, with the land on which it is built," said the bishop.

"I cannot give them as long as I am in need of them, my lord."

"I see that you are a bad priest, as I have often been told, since you disobey your bishop," he rejoined with an angry manner.

"I replied: 'I do not see why I am a bad priest, because I keep what my God has given me.'"

"Are you ignorant of the fact that you have no right to possess any property?" he answered.

"Yes! my lord, I am ignorant of any law in our holy Church that deprives me of any such rights. If, however, your lordship can show me any such law, I will give you the title of the property."

"If there is not such a law," he replied, stamping on the ground with his feet, "I will get one passed."

"My lord," I replied, "you are a great bishop. You have great power in the Church, but allow me to tell you that you are not great enough to have such a law passed in our holy Church!"

"You are an insolent priest," he answered, with an accent of terrible anger, "and I will make you repent for your insolence."

He then turned his face towards the chapel, without waiting for my answer, and ordered the horses to be put in the carriage, that he might leave in the shortest possible time. A quarter-of-an-hour later, he had left St. Anne, where he was never to come again. The visit of that mitred thief, with his two profligate priests, though very short, did much, by the mercy of God, to prepare our minds to understand that Rome is the great harlot of the Bible, which seduces the nations with the wine of her prostitution.

CHAPTER L.

The Immaculate Conception of the Virgin Mary.

THE 8th December, 1854, Pope Pius IX. was sitting on his throne ; a triple crown of gold and diamonds was on his head ; silk and damask—red and white vestments on his shoulders ; five hundred mitred prelates were surrounding him ; and more than fifty thousand people were at his feet, in the incomparable St. Peter's Church of Rome. After a few minutes of most solemn silence, a Cardinal, dressed with his purple robe, left his seat, and gravely walked towards the Pope, kneeled before him, and humbly prostrating himself at his feet, said : "Holy Father, tell us if we can believe and teach that the Mother of God, the Holy Virgin Mary, was immaculate in her conception ?"

The Supreme Pontiff answered : "I do not know ; let us ask the light of the Holy Ghost."

The Cardinal then withdrew ; the Pope and the numberless multitudes fell on their knees ; and the choir sang the "*Veni Creator Spiritus*."

The last note of the sacred hymn had hardly rolled under the vaults of the temple, when the same Cardinal left his place, and again advanced towards the throne of the Pontiff, prostrated himself at his feet and said :

"Holy Father, tell us if the Holy Mother of God, the blessed Virgin Mary, was immaculate in her conception ?"

The Pope again answered, "I do not know ; let us ask the light of the Holy Ghost."

And again the "*Veni Creator Spiritus*" was sung.

The most solemn silence had, a second time, succeeded to the melodious sacred song, when again the eyes of the multitude were following the grave steps of the purple-robed Cardinal advancing, for the third time, to the throne of the successor of St. Peter, to ask again : "Holy Father, tell us if we can believe that the blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, was immaculate ?"

The Pope, as if he had just received a direct communication from God, answered with a solemn voice : "Yes ! We must believe that the Blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of God, was immaculate in her conception. . . . There is no salvation to those who do not believe this dogma !"

And, with a loud voice, the Pope intoned the *Te Deum* ; the bells of the three hundred churches of Rome rang ; the cannons of the citadel were fired. The last act of the most ridiculous and sacrilegious comedy the world had ever seen was over, the doors of heaven were for ever shut against those who would refuse to believe the anti-scriptural doctrine that there is a daughter of Eve who has not inherited the sinful nature of Adam, to whom the Lord said in His justice. "Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return" ! and of the children of whom

the God of Truth has said: "There is none righteous, no, not one, for all have sinned" ! (Romans iii : 10, 23).

We look in vain to the first centuries of the Church to find any traces of that human aberration. The first dark clouds which Satan had brought to mar the Gospel truth on that subject appeared only between the eighth and ninth centuries. But in the beginning that error made very slow progress ; those who propagated it at first were a few ignorant fanatics, whose names are lost in the night of the dark ages.

It is only in the twelfth century that it began to be openly preached by some brainless monks. But then it was opposed by the most learned men of the time. We have a very remarkable letter of St. Bernard to refute some monks of Lyons who were preaching this new doctrine.

A little later, Peter Lombard adopted the views of the monks of Lyons, and wrote a book to support that opinion ; but he was refuted by St. Thomas Aquinas, who is justly considered, by the Church of Rome, as the best theologian of that time.

After that, the celebrated Order of the Franciscans used all their influence to persuade the world that "Mary was immaculate in her conception" ; but they were vigorously opposed and refuted by the not less celebrated Order of the Dominicans. These two learned and powerful bodies, during more than a century, attacked each other without mercy on that subject, and filled the world with the noise of their angry disputes, both parties calling their adversaries heretics. They succeeded in driving the Roman Catholics of Europe into two camps of fierce enemies.

It will appear almost incredible to-day, but it is a fact, the greatest number of the large cities of Europe, particularly in Spain, were then reddened with the blood of the supporters and opponents of that doctrine. In order to put an end to these contentions, which were troubling the peace of their subjects, the kings of Europe sent deputation after deputation to the Popes to know, from their infallible authority, what to believe on the subject.

Phillip III. and Philip IV. made what we may call supreme efforts to force the Popes, Paul V., Gregory XV., and Alexander VII., to stop the shedding of blood, and disarm the combatants, by raising the opinion in favour of the Immaculate Conception to the dignity of a Catholic dogma. But they failed. The only answer they could get from the infallible head of the Church of Rome was that "that dogma was not revealed in the Holy Scriptures, had never been taught by the apostles, nor by the Fathers, and had never been believed or preached by the Church of Rome as an article of faith."

The only thing the Popes could do to please the supplicant kings and bishops, and nations of Europe in those days, was to *forbid* both parties to call the other *heretics* ; and to *forbid* to say that it was an article of faith which ought to be believed to be saved.

At the Council of Trent, the Franciscans, and all the partisans of the "Immaculate Conception," gathered their strength to have a decree in favour of the new dogma ; but the majority of the bishops were against that sacrilegious innovation.

It was reserved to the unfortunate Pius IX. to drag the Church of Rome to that last limit of human folly. In the last century, a monk, called Father Leonard, had a dream, in which he heard the Virgin Mary telling him: "That there would be an end to wars in the world, and to the heresies and schisms in the Church, only after a Pope should have obliged by a decree, all the faithful to believe that she was 'immaculate in her conception.' "

That dream, under the name of a "celestial vision," had been extensively circulated, by means of little tracts. Many believed it to be a genuine revelation from heaven ; and, unfortunately, the good-natured, but weak-minded Pius IX., was among the number. When he was in exile in Gaeta, he had, himself, a dream, which he took for a vision, on the same subject. He saw the Virgin, who told him that he should come back to Rome and get an eternal peace for the Church, only after he should have promised to declare that the "Immaculate Conception" was a dogma, which every one had to believe to be saved. He awoke from his dream much impressed by it ; and the first thing he did when up was to make a vow to promulgate the new dogma as soon as he should be back at Rome.

By the promulgation of the new dogma, Pius IX., far from securing an eternal peace to his Church, far from destroying what he is pleased to call the heresies which are attacking Rome on every side, has done more to shake the faith of the Roman Catholics than all their enemies.

No words can sufficiently express the dignified and supreme contempt with which, before that epoch, the priests of Rome were speaking of the "new articles of faith, the novelties of the arch-heretics, Luther, Calvin, Knox," etc. How eloquent were the priests of Rome, before the 8th December, 1854, when saying to their poor innocent dupes: "In our holy Church of Rome there is no change, no innovations, no novelties, no new dogmas. We believe to-day just what our fathers believed, and what they have taught us ; we belong to the Apostolic Church, which means we believe only what the Apostles have believed and preached."

But, alas ! for the poor priests of Rome to-day ! They have to confess that those high-sounding denunciations against what they call the *new* doctrines of the heretics, were nothing but big guns loaded to the mouth to destroy the Protestants, which are discharging their deadly missiles against the crumbling walls of the Church of Rome. They have to confess that their pretensions to an unchangeable creed is all mere humbug, shameful lies ; they have to confess that the Church of Rome is FORGING NEW DOGMAS, NEW ARTICLES OF FAITH ; they do not any longer dare to say to the disciples of the Gospel: "Where

was your religion before the days of Luther and Calvin?" for the secret voice of their conscience says to-day to the Roman Catholics: "Where was your religion before the 8th of December, 1854?" and they cannot answer.

I will never forget the sadness which overcame me when I received the order from Bishop O'Regan to proclaim that new dogma to my people (then all Roman Catholics). It was as if an earthquake had shaken and destroyed the ground on which my feet were resting. My most cherished illusions about the immutability and infallibility of my Church were crumbling down, in my intelligence, in spite of my efforts to keep them up.

The Archbishop of Paris, at the head of the most learned members of the clergy of France, had sent his protest to the Pope against this dogma before it was decreed; and he had eloquently foretold the deplorable consequences which would follow that innovation; but their warning voice failed to make any impression on the mind of the infatuated Pope. And we children of God, must we not acknowledge the hand of the Lord in that blindness of "the Man of Sin!" The days are not far away that a cry of joy will be heard from one end of the world to the other: "Fear God, and give glory to Him! Babylon is fallen! Babylon is fallen! because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornications."

When the Pope on the morning of the 8th December, 1854, answered twice: "I do not know," to the question put to him: "Is the Virgin Mary Immaculate in her Conception?" and then, a minute after, to the same question, he answered: "Yes! I know it; the Holy Virgin Mary was Immaculate in her Conception," he proved to his most credulous dupes that he was nothing but a sacrilegious comedian.

Such is the unenviable position which the Pope made to himself and to his Church. Interrogated by the nations of Europe about what was to be believed on the "Conception of the Virgin Mary" the Church of Rome, during ten centuries, had answered: "I do not know." And, remember, that she wants to be believed INFALLIBLE when she says she "knows nothing about the Immaculate Conception." To-day that same Church assures us, through the infallible decree of Pius IX., that she knows, and that she has *always* known and believed the Virgin Mary was Immaculate!

A few days after I had read to my congregation the decree of the Pope proclaiming the new dogma, and damning all those who would not believe it, one of my most intelligent farmers put to me the following questions on the new articles of faith:

"Mr. Chiniquy, please tell me, have I correctly understood the letter from the Pope you read us last Sunday? Does the Pope tell us in that letter that we can find this new dogma of the 'Immaculate Conception' in the Holy Scriptures, that it has been taught by the fathers, and that the Church has constantly believed it from the days of the apostles?"

I answered: "Yes, my friend, the Pope tells us all those

things in his letter which I read in the church last Sabbath."

"But sir, will you be so kind as to read me the verses of the Holy Scriptures which are in favour of the Immaculate Conception of the Holy Virgin Mary."

"My dear friend," I replied, "I am sorry to say that I have never found, in the Holy Scriptures, a single word to tell us that Mary is immaculate, but I have found many words, and very clear words, which say the very contrary thing. For instance, the Holy Ghost, in the epistle of St. Paul to the Romans, (v. 18): '*By the offence of one, judgment came upon all men to condemnation.*' This little, but inexorable '*all,*' includes the Virgin Mary in the condemnation and in the guilt. In the same epistle to the Romans (chap. iii: 22, 23), the Holy Ghost, speaking of the children of Adam—Israelites and Gentiles—says there is no difference, they have *all* sinned and come short of the glory of God! And in v. 10 of the same chapter, the Holy Ghost, speaking of the Jews and Gentiles, says: '*There is none righteous—no, not one!*' And the Lord has never repealed in any part that I know of the Holy Scriptures, this awful '*no not one.*' "

"Now, please tell me the name of the Holy Fathers who have preached that we must believe in the Immaculate Conception, or be for ever damned, if we do not believe in it?"

I answered to my parishioner: "I would have preferred, my dear friend, that you should have never come to put to me these questions: but as you ask me the truth I must tell you the truth. I have studied the Fathers with a pretty good attention, but I have not yet found a single one of them who was of that opinion in any way."

"I hope," added the good farmer, "you will excuse me if I put to you another question on this subject. Perhaps you do not know it, but there is a good deal of feeling and talking about the new article of faith among us since last Sabbath: I want to know a little more about it. The Pope says in his letter that the Church of Rome has always believed and taught that dogma of Immaculate Conception. Is that correct?"

"Yes, my friend, the Pope says that in his Encyclical; but these last nine hundred years more than one hundred Popes have declared that the Church had never believed it. Even several Popes have forbidden to say '*that the Immaculate Conception was an article of faith*'—and they solemnly permitted to believe and say what we please on that matter."

"If it be so with this new dogma, how can we know it is not so with the other dogmas of our Church, as the confession, the purgatory, etc.?" added the farmer.

"My dear friend, do not allow the devil to shake your faith. We are living in bad days indeed. Let us pray God to enlighten us and save us. I would have given much had you never put to me these questions."

CHAPTER LI.

The Abominations of Auricular Confession.

I DO not exaggerate when I say that for many noble-hearted well-educated, high-minded women to be forced to unvell their hearts before the eyes of a man, to open to him all the most secret recesses of their souls, all the most sacred mysteries of their single or married life, to allow him to put to them questions which the most depraved woman would never consent to hear from her vilest seducer, is often more horrible and intolerable than to be tied on burning coals.

More than once I have seen women fainting in the confessional box, who told me afterwards that the necessity of speaking to an unmarried man on certain things, on which the most common laws of decency ought to have for ever sealed their lips, had almost killed them ! Not hundreds, but thousands of times, I have heard from the lips of dying girls, as well as married women, the awful words : " I am for ever lost ! All my past confessions and communions have been so many sacrileges ! I have never dared to answer correctly the questions of my confessors ! Shame has sealed my lips and damned my soul ! "

How many times I remained as one petrified by the side of a corpse, when these last words, having hardly escaped the lips of one of my female penitents, who had been snatched out of my reach by the merciless hand of death, before I could give her the pardon through the deceitful sacramental absolution. I then believed, as the dead sinner herself had believed, that she would not be forgiven except by that absolution.

For there are not only thousands, but millions of Roman Catholic girls and women whose keen sense of modesty and womanly dignity are above all the sophisms and diabolical machinations of their priests. They never can be persuaded to answer " Yes " to certain questions of their confessors. They would prefer to be thrown into the flames and burnt to ashes rather than to allow the eyes of a man to pry into the sacred sanctuary of their souls. Though sometimes guilty before God, and under the impression that their sins will never be forgiven if not confessed, the laws of decency are stronger in their hearts than the laws of their perfidious Church. No consideration, not even the fear of eternal damnation, can persuade them to declare to a sinful man sins which God alone has the right to know, for He alone can blot them out with the blood of His Son, shed on the Cross.

But what a wretched life must that be of these exceptional noble souls, which Rome keeps in the dark dungeons of her superstition ? They read in all their books, and hear from all their pulpits, that if they conceal a single sin from their confessors, they are for ever lost ! But, being absolutely unable to trample under their feet the laws of self-respect and decency,

which God Himself has impressed in their souls, they live in constant dread of eternal damnation. No human words can tell their desolation and distress when at the feet of their confessors they find themselves under the horrible necessity of speaking of things on which they would prefer to suffer the most cruel death rather than to open their lips, or to be for ever damned if they do not degrade themselves for ever in their own eyes, by speaking on matters which a respectable woman will never reveal to her own mother, much less to a man !

I have known only too many of these noble-hearted women, who, when alone with God, in a real agony of desolation and with burning tears, had asked Him to grant them what they considered the greatest favour, which was, to lose so much of their self-respect as to be enabled to speak of those unmentionable things ! just as their confessors wanted them to speak ; and, hoping that their petition had been granted, they went again to the confessional-box, determined to unveil their shame before the eyes of that inexorable man. But when the moment had come for the self-immolation, their courage failed, their knees trembled, their lips became pale as death, cold sweat poured from all their pores. The voice of modesty and womanly self-respect was speaking louder than the voice of their false religion. They had to go out of the confessional-box unpardoned—nay, with the burden of a new sacrilege on their conscience.

I do here publicly challenge the whole Roman Catholic priesthood to deny that the greater part of their female penitents remain a certain period of time—some longer, some shorter—under that most distressing state of mind.

Yes, by far the greater majority of women, at first, find it impossible to pull down the sacred barriers of self-respect, which God Himself has built around their hearts, intelligences, and souls, as the best safeguard against the snares of this polluted world. Those laws of self-respect, by which they cannot consent to speak an impure word into the ears of a man, and which shut all the avenues of the heart against his unchaste questions, even when speaking in the name of God—those laws of self-respect are so clearly written in their conscience, and they are so well understood by them to be a most Divine gift, that, as I have already said, many prefer to run the risk of being forever lost by remaining silent.

It takes many years of the most ingenious (I do not hesitate to call it diabolical) effort of the priest to persuade the majority of their female penitents to speak on questions which even pagan savages would blush to mention among themselves. Some persist in remaining silent on those matters during the greater part of their lives, and many of them prefer to throw themselves into the hands of their merciful God, and die without submitting to the defiling ordeal, even after they have felt the poisonous stings of the enemy, rather than receive their pardon from a man, who, as they feel, would surely have been

scandalised by the recital of their human frailties. All the priests of Rome are aware of this natural disposition of their female penitents. There is not a single one—no, not a single one of their moral theologians, who does not warn the confessors against that stern and general determination of the girls and married women never to speak in the confessional on matters which may, more or less, deal with sins against the seventh commandment.

Not a single Roman Catholic priest will dare to deny what I say on this matter; for they know that it would be easy for me to overwhelm them with such a crowd of testimonials that their grand imposture would for ever be unmasked.

I intend, at some future day, if God spares me and gives me time for it, to make known some of the innumerable things which the Roman Catholic theologians and moralists have written on this question. It will form one of the most curious books ever written; and it will give unanswerable evidence of the fact that, instinctively, without consulting each other, and with a unanimity which is almost marvellous, the Roman Catholic women, guided by the honest instincts which God has given them, shrink from the snares put before them in the confessional-box; and that everywhere they struggle to nerve themselves with a superhuman courage against the torturer who is sent by the Pope to finish their ruin, and to make shipwrecks of their souls.

How many times have I wept as a child when some noble-hearted and intelligent young girl, or some respectable married woman, yielding to the sophisms with which I, or some other confessor, had persuaded them to give up their self-respect and their womanly dignity, to speak with me on matters on which a decent woman should never say a word with a man. They have told me of their invincible repugnance, their horror of such questions and answers, and they have asked me to have pity on them. Yes. I have often wept bitterly at my degradation when a priest of Rome. I have realised all the strength, the grandeur, and the holiness of their motives for being silent on these defiling matters, and I could not but admire them. It seemed at times that they were speaking the language of angels of light; that I ought to fall at their feet and ask their pardon for having spoken to them of questions on which a man of honour ought never to converse with a woman whom he respects.

But alas! I had soon to reproach myself, and regret those short instances of my wavering faith in the infallible voice of my Church; I had soon to silence the voice of my conscience, which was telling me, "Is it not a shame that you, an unmarried man, dare to speak on these matters with a woman? Do you not blush to put such questions to a young girl? Where is your self-respect? Where is your fear of God? Do you not promote the ruin of that girl by forcing her to speak on these matters?"

How many times my God has spoken to me as He speaks to

all the priests of Rome, and said with a thundering voice: "What would that young man do, could he but hear the questions you put to his wife? Would he not blow out your brains? And that father, would he not pass his dagger through your breast, if he could know what you asked his poor trembling daughter? Would not the brother of that young girl put an end to your miserable life if he could hear the unmentionable subjects on which you speak in the confessional?"

I was compelled by all the Popes, the moral theologians, and the Councils of Rome, to believe that this warning voice of my merciful God was the voice of Satan; I had to believe, in spite of my own conscience and intelligence, that it was good, nay, necessary, to put those polluting, damning questions. My infallible Church was mercilessly forcing me to oblige those poor trembling, weeping, desolate girls and women, to swim with me and all her priests in those waters of Sodom and Gomorrah, under the pretext that their self-will would be broken down, their fear of sin and humility increased, and that they would be purified by our absolutions.

In the beginning of my priesthood, when I was in Quebec, I was not a little surprised and embarrassed to see a very accomplished and beautiful lady, whom I used to meet almost every week at her father's house, entering the box of my confessional. She had been used to confess to another young priest of my acquaintance and she was always looked upon as one of the most pious girls of that city. Though she had disguised herself as much as possible in order that I might not know her, I felt sure that I was not mistaken—she was the amiable Mary

Not being absolutely certain of the correctness of my impressions, I left her entirely under the hope that she was a perfect stranger to me. At the beginning she could hardly speak, her voice was suffocated by her sobs, and through the little apertures of the thin partition between her and me, I saw two streams of big tears trickling down her cheeks. After much effort she said: "Dear Father, I hope you do not know me, and that you will never try to know me, I am a desperately great sinner. Oh! I fear that I am lost! But if there is still a hope for me to be saved, for God's sake, do not rebuke me! Before I begin my confession allow me to ask you not to pollute my ears by questions which our confessors are in the habit of putting to their female penitents; I have already been destroyed by those questions. Before I was seventeen years old, God knows that His angels are not more pure than I was; but the chaplain of the nunnery, where my parents had sent me for my education, though approaching old age, put to me, in the confessional, a question which at first, I did not understand, but unfortunately, he had put the same questions to one of my young class-mates, who made fun of them in my presence, and explained them to me; for she understood them too well. This first unchaste conversation of my life plunged my thoughts

into a sea of iniquity, till then absolutely unknown to me; temptations of the most humiliating character assailed me for a week, day and night; after which, sins which I would blot out with blood, if it were possible, overwhelmed my soul as with a deluge. But the joys of the sinner are short. Struck with terror at the thought of the judgments of God, after a few weeks of the most deplorable life, I determined to give up my sins and reconcile myself to God. Covered with shame, and trembling from head to foot, I went to confess to my old confessor, whom I respected as a saint and cherished as a father. It seems to me that, with sincere tears of repentance, I confessed to him the greatest part of my sins, though I concealed one of them through shame and respect for my spiritual guide. But I did not conceal from him that the strange questions he had put to me at my last confession were, with the natural corruption of my heart, the principal cause of my destruction.

"He spoke to me very kindly, encouraged me to fight against my bad inclinations, and at first gave me very good and kind advice. But when I thought he had finished speaking, and as I was preparing to leave the confessional-box, he put to me two new questions of such a polluting character that I fear neither the blood of Christ nor all the fires of hell will ever be able to blot them out from my memory. Those questions have achieved my ruin; they have stuck to my mind like two deadly arrows: they are day and night before my imagination: they fill my very arteries and veins with a deadly poison.

"A month later we were obliged, by the rules of our convent, to go and confess; but by this time I was so completely lost that I no longer blushed at the idea of confessing my shameful sins to a man! It was the very contrary. I had a real diabolical pleasure in the thought that I should have a long conversation with my confessor on those matters, and that he would ask me more of his strange questions. In fact, when I told him everything without a blush, he began to interrogate me, and God knows what corrupting things fell from his lips into my poor criminal heart! Every one of his questions was thrilling my nerves and filling me with the most shameful sensations! After an hour of this criminal *tête-a-tête* with my old confessor (for it was nothing else but a criminal *tête-a-tête*), I perceived that he was as depraved as I was myself. With some half-covered words he made a criminal proposition, which I accepted with covered words also; and during more than a year we have lived together in the most sinful intimacy. Though he was much older than I, I loved him in the most foolish way. When the course of my convent instruction was finished, my parents called me back to their home. I was really glad of that change of residence, for I was beginning to be tired of my criminal life. My hope was that, under the direction of a better confessor, I should reconcile myself to God and begin a Christian life.

"Unfortunately for me, my new confessor, who was very young, began also his interrogations. He soon fell in love with me, and I loved him in a most criminal way. I have done with him things which I hope you will never request me to reveal to you, for they are too monstrous to be repeated, even in the confessional. I do not say these things to take away the responsibility of my iniquities with this young confessor from my shoulders, for I think I have been more criminal than he was. It is my firm conviction that he was a good and holy priest before he knew me; but the questions he put to me, and the answers I had to give him, melted his heart—I know it—just as boiling lead would melt the ice on which it flows.

"This is the way I have lived these last few years. But last Sabbath, God, in His infinite mercy, looked down upon me. He inspired you to give us the Prodigal Son as a model of true conversion, and as the most marvellous proof of the infinite compassion of the dear Saviour for the sinner. I have wept day and night since that happy day, when I threw myself into the arms of my loving, merciful Father. Even now I can hardly speak, because my regret for my past iniquities, and my joy that I am allowed to bathe the feet of the Saviour with tears, are so great that my voice is as choked.

"You understand that I have forever given up my last confessor. I come to ask you to do me the favour to receive me among your penitents. Oh! do not reject nor rebuke me, for the dear Saviour's sake! Be not afraid to have at your side such a monster of iniquity! But before going further, I have two favours to ask of you. The first is, that you will never do anything to ascertain my name; the second is, that you will never put to me any of those questions by which so many penitents are lost and so many priests for ever destroyed. Twice I have been lost by those questions. Oh! dear father, let me become your penitent, that you may help me to go and weep with Magdalene at the Saviour's feet! Do respect me, as He respected that true model of all the sinful, but repenting women! Did our Saviour put to her any question? Did He extort from her the history of things which a sinful woman cannot say without forgetting the respect she owes to herself and to God? No! You told us not long ago that the only thing our Saviour did was to look at her tears and her love. Well, please do that, and you will save me!"

I was then a very young priest, and never had any words so sublime come to my ears in the confessional-box. Her tears and her sobs, mingled with the frank declaration of the most humiliating actions, had made such a profound impression upon me that I was, for some time, unable to speak. It had come to my mind, also, that I might be mistaken about her identity, and that perhaps she was not the young lady that I had imagined. I could then easily grant her first request, which was to do nothing by which I could know her. The second part of her prayer was more embarrassing; for the theologians are

very positive in ordering the confessors to question their penitents, particularly those of the female sex, in any circumstances. I encouraged her in the best way I could to persevere in her good resolutions by invoking the blessed Virgin Mary and St. Philomene, and I asked her to come back in a week for my answer.

The very same day, I went to my own confessor, the Rev. Mr. Baillargeon, then curate of Quebec, and afterwards Archbishop of Canada. I told him the singular and unusual request she had made, that I should never put to her any of those questions suggested by the theologians, to ensure the integrity of the confession. I did not conceal from him that I was much inclined to grant her that favour; for I repeated what I had already several times told him, that I was supremely disgusted with the infamous and polluting questions which the theologians forced us to put to our female penitents. I told him frankly that several old and young priests had already come to confess to me; and that, with the exception of two, they had told me that they could not put those questions and hear the answers they elicited without falling into the most damnable sins.

My confessor seemed to be much perplexed about what he should answer. He asked me to come the next day, that he might review some theological books, in the interval. The next day I took down in writing his answer, which I find in my old manuscripts, and I give it here in all its sad crudity:

"Such cases of the destruction of female virtue by the questions of the confessors is an unavoidable evil. It cannot be helped; for such questions are absolutely necessary in the greater part of the cases with which we have to deal. Men generally confess their sins with so much sincerity that there is seldom any need for questioning them, except when they are ignorant. But St. Liguori, as well as our personal observation, tells us that the greater part of girls and women, through a false and criminal shame, very seldom confess the sins they commit against purity. It requires the utmost charity in the confessors to prevent those unfortunate slaves of their secret passions from making sacrilegious confessions and communions. With the greatest prudence and zeal he must question them on those matters, beginning with the smallest sins, and going, little by little, as much as possible by imperceptible degrees, to the most criminal actions. As it seems evident that the penitent referred to in your questions of yesterday is unwilling to make a full and detailed confession of all her iniquities, you cannot promise to absolve her without assuring yourself by wise and prudent questions, that she has confessed everything. You must not be discouraged when, through the confessional, or any other way, you learn of the fall of priests into the common frailties of human nature with their penitents."

This answer was far from satisfying me. It seemed to me composed of soft-soap principles. I went back with a heavy heart and anxious mind; and God knows that I made fervent

prayers that this girl might never come again to give me her sad history. I was then hardly twenty-six years old, full of youth and life. It seemed to me that the stings of a thousand wasps to my ears could not do me so much harm as the words of that dear, beautiful, accomplished, but lost girl.

I do not mean to say that the revelations which she made had, in any way diminished my esteem and my respect for her. It was just the contrary. Her tears and her sobs at my feet ; her agonising expressions of shame and regret ; her noble words of protest against the disgusting and polluting interrogations of the confessors had raised her very high in my mind. My sincere hope was that she would have a place in the kingdom of Christ with the Samaritan woman, Mary Magdalene, and all the sinners who have washed their robes in the blood of the Lamb.

At the appointed day, I was in my confessional, listening to the confession of a young man, when I saw Miss Mary entering the vestry, and coming directly to my confessional-box, where she knelt by me. Though she had, still more than the first time, disguised herself behind a long, thick, black veil, I could not be mistaken ; she was the very same amiable young lady in whose father's house I used to pass such pleasant and happy hours. I had often listened, with breathless attention, to her melodious voice when she was giving us, accompanied by her piano, some of our beautiful church hymns. Who could then see and hear her without almost worshipping her ? The dignity of her steps, and her whole mien, when she advanced towards my confessional, entirely betrayed her and destroyed her incognito.

Oh ! I would have given every drop of blood in that solemn hour, that I might have been free to deal with her just as she had so eloquently requested me to do—to let her weep and cry at the feet of Jesus to her heart's content. Oh ! if I had been free to take her by the hand, and silently show her the dying Saviour, that she might have bathed His feet with her tears, and spread the oil of her love on His head, without my saying anything else but : "Go in peace : thy sins are forgiven."

But, there, in that confessional-box, I was not a servant of Christ, to follow His divine, saving words, and obey the dictates of my conscience. I was a slave of the Pope ! I had to stifle the cry of my conscience, to ignore the inspirations of my God ! There, my conscience had no right to speak ; my intelligence was a dead thing ! The theologians of the Pope alone had a right to be heard and obeyed ! I was not there to save, but to destroy ; for, under the pretext of purifying, the real mission of the confessor, often, if not always, in spite of himself, is to scandalise and damn the souls.

As soon as the young man who was making his confession at my left hand had finished, I without noise turned myself towards her, and said, through the little aperture, "Are you ready to begin your confession ?" She did not answer me. All that I

could hear was: "Oh, my Jesus, have mercy upon me ! I come to wash my soul in Thy blood ; wilt Thou rebuke me ?"

During several minutes she raised her hands and eyes to heaven, and wept and prayed. It was evident that she had not the least idea that I was observing her ; she thought the door of the little partition between her and me was shut. But my eyes were fixed upon her ; my tears were flowing with her tears, and my ardent prayers were going to the feet of Jesus with her prayers. I would not have interrupted her for any consideration, in this, her sublime communion with her merciful Saviour.

After a pretty long time, I made a little noise with my hand, and putting my lips near the opening of the partition which was between us, I said in a low voice, "Dear sister, are you ready to begin your confession ?" She turned her face a little towards me, and said in a trembling voice, "Yes, dear father, I am ready." She then stopped again to weep and pray, though I could not hear what she said. After some time in silent prayer, I said, "My dear sister, if you are ready, please begin your confession."

She then said, "My dear father, do you remember the prayers which I made to you the other day ? Can you allow me to confess my sins without forcing me to forget the respect that I owe to myself, to you, and to God, who hears us ? And can you promise that you will not put to me any of those questions which have already done me such irreparable injury ? I frankly declare to you that there are sins in me that I cannot reveal to anyone, except to Christ, because He is my God, and that He already knows them all. Let me weep and cry at His feet ; can you not forgive me without adding to my iniquities, by forcing me to say things that the tongue of a Christian woman cannot reveal to a man ?"

"My dear sister," I answered, "were I free to follow the voice of my own feelings, I would be only too happy to grant your request ; but I am here only as a minister of our holy Church, and bound to obey the laws. Through her most holy Popes and theologians she tells me that I cannot forgive your sins, if you do not confess them all, just as you have committed them."

With a piercing cry she exclaimed, "Then, O God, I am lost —for ever lost !"

This cry fell upon me like a thunderbolt ; but I was still more terror-stricken when, looking through the aperture, I saw she was fainting ; I heard the noise of her body falling upon the floor, and of her head striking against the sides of the confessional-box. Quick as lightning I ran to help her, took her in my arms, and called a couple of men, who were at a little distance, to assist me in laying her on a bench. I washed her face with some cold water and vinegar. She was as pale as death, but her lips were moving, and she was saying something

which nobody but I could understand: "I am lost—lost for ever!"

We took her home to her disconsolate family, where, during a month, she lingered between life and death. Her first two confessors came to visit her; but having asked everyone to go out of the room, she politely, but absolutely, requested them to go away, and never come again. She asked me to visit her every day, "for," she said, "I have only a few more days to live. Help me to prepare myself for the solemn hour which will open to me the gates of eternity!"

Every day I visited her, and I prayed and wept with her. Many times, when alone, with tears I requested her to finish her confession; but, with a firmness which, then, seemed to be mysterious and inexplicable, she politely rebuked me.

One day, when alone with her, I was kneeling by the side of her bed to pray, I was unable to articulate a single word, because of the inexplicable anguish of my soul on her account, she asked me, "Dear father, why do you weep?"

I answered, "How can you put such a question to your murderer? I weep because I have killed you, dear friend."

This answer seemed to trouble her exceedingly. She was very weak that day. After she had wept and prayed in silence she said, "Do not weep for me, but weep for so many priests who destroy their penitents in the confessional."

We remained silent for a long time; then she said, "It is true that I was not prepared for the rebuke you have given me, the other day, in the confessional; but you acted conscientiously as a good and honest priest. I know you must be bound by certain laws."

She then pressed my hand with her cold hand and said, "Weep not, dear father, because that sudden storm has wrecked my too fragile bark. The storm was to take me out of the bottomless sea of my iniquities to the shore where Jesus was waiting to receive and pardon me. The night after you brought me, half dead, here to my father's house, I had a dream. Oh, no! it was not a dream, it was a reality. My Jesus came to me; He was bleeding; His crown of thorns was on His head; the heavy cross was bruising His shoulders. He said to me, with a voice so sweet that no human tongue can imitate it, 'I have seen thy tears, I have heard thy cries, and I know thy love for Me; thy sins are forgiven; take courage; in a few days thou shalt be with me.' " She had hardly finished her last word when she fainted, and I feared lest she should die just then, when I was alone with her.

I called the family, who rushed into the room. The doctor was sent for. He found her so weak that he thought proper to allow only one or two persons to remain in the room with me. He requested us not to speak at all: "For," said he, "the least emotion may kill her instantly; her disease is, in all probability, an aneurism of the aorta, the big artery which carries the blood to the heart: when it breaks she will go as

quick as lightning." It was nearly ten at night when I left the house to go and take some rest. But it is not necessary to say that I passed a sleepless night.

It was very probable that she would die the next day, and I was forbidden to show her the crown of glory which Jesus has prepared in His kingdom for the repenting sinner. My desolation was really unspeakable, and I think I would have been suffocated and have died that night if the stream of tears which constantly flowed from my eyes had not been as a balm to my distressed heart.

At nine a.m. the next day I was by the bed of our dear sick Mary. I cannot sufficiently tell the joy I felt when the doctor and the whole family said to me, "She is much better; the rest of last night has wrought a marvellous change indeed."

With a really angelic smile she extended her hand towards me, that I might press it in mine, and she said, "I thought last evening that the dear Saviour would take me to Him, but He wants me, dear father, to give you a little more trouble; however, be patient, it cannot be long before the solemn hour of the appeal will ring. Will you please read me the history of the suffering and death of the beloved Saviour, which you read me the other day? It does me so much good to see how He has loved me, such a miserable sinner." There was a calm and solemnity in her words which struck me singularly, as well as all those who were there.

After I had finished reading, she exclaimed, "He has loved me so much that He died for my sins!" And she shut her eyes as if to meditate in silence; but there was a stream of big tears rolling down her cheeks. I knelt down by her bed, with her family to pray but I could not utter a single word. The idea that this dear child was there, dying from the cruel fanaticism of my theologians and my own cowardice in obeying them, was as a mill-stone to my neck. It was killing me.

After we had silently prayed and wept by her bedside, she requested her mother to leave her alone with me. When I saw myself alone, under the irresistible impression that this was her last day, I fell on my knees again, and with tears of the most sincere compassion for her soul, I requested her to shake off her shame and to obey our holy Church, which requires every one to confess their sins if they want to be forgiven.

She calmly, but with an air of dignity which no human words can express, said, "Is it true that, after the sins of Adam and Eve, God Himself made coats of skins and clothed them, that they might not see each other's nakedness?"

"Yes," I said, "this is what the Holy Scriptures tell us."

"Well, then, how is it possible that our confessors dare to take away from us that holy divine coat of modesty and self-respect? Has not Almighty God Himself made, with His own hands, that coat of womanly modesty and self-respect, that we might not be to you and to ourselves a cause of shame and sin?"

I was really stunned by the beauty, simplicity, and sublimity of that comparison. I remained absolutely mute and confounded. Though it was demolishing all the traditions and doctrines of my Church, and pulverising all my holy doctors and theologians, that noble answer found such an echo in my soul, that it seemed to me a sacrilege to try to touch it with my finger.

After a short time of silence she continued, "Twice I have been destroyed by priests in the confessional. They took away from me that divine coat of modesty and self-respect which God gives to every human being who comes into this world, and twice I have become for those very priests a deep pit of perdition into which they have fallen, and where, I fear, they are forever lost ! My merciful heavenly Father has given me back that coat of skins, that nuptial robe of modesty, self-respect and holiness, which had been taken away from me. He cannot allow you, or any other man, to tear away and spoil that vestment which is the work of His hand." The words had exhausted her ; it was evident to me that she wanted some rest. I left her alone, but I was absolutely beside myself.

At four o'clock in the afternoon I went back again to the house of my dear dying Mary. The mother took me apart, and very politely said, "My dear Mr. Chiniquy, do you not think it is time that our dear child should receive the last sacraments ? She seemed to be so much better this morning, and we were full of hope : but she is now rapidly sinking. Please lose no time in giving her the holy viaticum and the extreme unction."

I said : "Yes, madam ; let me pass a few minutes alone with our dear child, that I may prepare her for the last sacraments."

When alone with her I again fell on my knees, and, amidst torrents of tears, I said, "Dear sister, it is my desire to give you the holy viaticum and extreme unction ; but tell me how can I dare to do a thing so solemn against all the prohibitions of our holy Church ? How can I give you the holy communion without first giving you absolution ? And how can I give you absolution when you earnestly persist in telling me that you have so many sins which you will never declare to me or to any other confessor ?"

Calmly, and with a smile of joy such as I had never seen before, nor seen since, she said, "I thank you and bless you, dear father, for the parable of the Prodigal Son, on which you preached a month ago. You have brought me to the feet of the dear Saviour ; there I have found a peace and a joy surpassing anything that human heart can feel ; I have thrown myself into the arms of my Heavenly Father, and I know He has mercifully accepted and forgiven His poor prodigal child ! Oh, I see the angels with their golden harps around the throne of the Lamb ! Do you not hear the celestial harmony of their songs ? I go—I go to join them in my Father's house. I SHALL NOT BE LOST !"

While she was thus speaking to me, my eyes were really turned into two fountains of tears; I was unable, as well as unwilling, to see anything, so entirely overcome was I by the sublime words which were flowing from the lips of that dear dying child, who was no more a sinner, but a real angel of heaven to me. I was listening to her words; there was a celestial music in every one of them. But she had raised her voice in such a strange way, when she had begun to say, "I go to my Father's house," and she had made such a cry of joy when she had let the last words, "not be lost," escape her lips, that I raised my head and opened my eyes to look at her. I suspected that something strange had occurred.

I got to my feet, passed my handkerchief over my face to wipe away the tears which were preventing me from seeing with accuracy, and looked at her. Her hands were crossed on her breast, and there was on her face the expression of a really superhuman joy; her beautiful eyes were fixed as if they were looking on some grand and sublime spectacle; it seemed to me at first that she was praying. In that very instant the mother rushed into the room, crying, "My God! my God! What does that cry 'lost' mean?" For her last words, "not to be lost" particularly the last one, had been pronounced with such a powerful voice, that they had been heard almost everywhere in the house.

I made a sign with my hand to prevent the distressed mother from making any noise and troubling her dying child in her prayer, for I really thought that she had stopped speaking, as she used so often to do when alone with me, in order to pray. But I was mistaken. The redeemed soul had gone, on the golden wings of love, to join the multitude of those who have washed their robes in the blood of the Lamb, to sing the eternal Alleluia.

Lost and degraded by auricular confession, only after having given it up, that precious soul was to find peace and life, when washed in the blood of the Lamb, as the only hope and refuge of sinners

Her words, filled with a superhuman wisdom, and her burning tears, came to me by the marvellous Providence of God, as the first beams of the Sun of Righteousness, to teach me that auricular confession was a Satanic invention.

Had this young person been the only one to tell me that, I might still have held some doubt about the diabolical origin of that institution. But thousands and thousands, before and after her, have been sent by a merciful God to tell me the same tale, till after 25 years of experience it became a certitude to me that that modern invention of Rome must, sooner or later, with very few exceptions, drag both the confessor and his female penitents into a common and irreparable ruin.*

* Those who would like to know all about the abominations of auricular confession should read "The Priest, The Woman, and The Confessional," by Father Chiniquy. It is probably the only book ever written on that subject which completely unveils the mask of Rome, by telling the whole truth.

CHAPTER LII.

Conduct of Priests at the Ecclesiastical Retreat.

ON the 1st August, 1855, I received the following letter:

The College, Chicago, July 24th, 1855.

REV. MR. CHINIQUEY,—You will have the goodness to attend a spiritual retreat to be given next month at the College, in Chicago, for the clergy of the diocese of Chicago and Quincy.

The spiritual exercises, which will be conducted by the Rt. Rev. the Bishop of Louisville, are to commence on Tuesday, the 28th Aug., and will terminate on the following Sunday. This arrangement will necessitate your absence from your church on Sunday the 14th, after Pentecost, which you will make known to your congregation. No clergyman is allowed to be absent from this retreat without the previous written consent of the bishop of the diocese, which consent will not be given except in cases which he will judge to be of urgent necessity.

By order of the Rt. Rev. Bishop,

MATTHEW DILLON, *Pro. Secretary.*

Wishing to study the *personnel* of that Irish clergy of which Bishop Vandevelde had told such frightful things, I went to St. Mary's University, two hours ahead of time. Never did I see such a band of jolly fellows. Their dissipation and laughter, their exchange of witty and, too often, unbecoming expressions, the tremendous noise they made in addressing each other at a distance. Their "Hallo, Patrick!" "Hallo, Murphy!" "Hallo, O'Brien! How do you do? How is Bridget? Is Marguerite still with you?" The answers: "Yes! yes! She will not leave me;" or, "No! no! The crazy girl is gone," were invariably followed with outbursts of laughter.

Though nine-tenths of them were evidently under the influence of intoxicating drinks, not one could be said to be drunk. But the strong odour of alcohol, mixed with the smoke of cigars, soon poisoned the air and made it suffocating. I had withdrawn in a corner, alone, in order to observe everything. What stranger, in entering that large hall, would have suspected that those men were about to begin one of the most solemn and sacred actions of a priest of Jesus Christ! With the exception of five or six, they looked more like a band of carousing raftsmen, than priests.

About an hour before the opening of the exercises, I saw one of the priests with hat in hand, going to everyone collecting money, and with the utmost hilarity and pleasure, each one threw his bank-bills into the hat. I supposed that this collection was intended to pay for our board, during the retreat, and I prepared the fifteen dollars I wanted to give. When they came near me, the big hat was literally filled with five and ten dollar bills. Before handing my money to them, I asked: "What is the object of that collection?"

"Ah! ah!" they answered with a hearty laugh, "Dear Father Chiniquy, is it possible that you do not know it yet! Don't you know, that when we are so crowded as we will be here this week, the rooms are apt to become too warm, and we get thirsty, Then a little drop to cool the throat and quench the thirst is needed;" and the collectors laughed outright.

I answered politely, but seriously: "Gentlemen, I came here to meditate and pray; and when I am thirsty, the fresh and pure water of Lake Michigan will quench my thirst. I have given up long ago the use of intoxicating drinks. Please excuse me, I am a teetotaler." "So are we!" they answered, with a laugh; "We have all taken the pledge from Father Mathew; but this does not prevent us from taking a little drop to quench our thirst and keep our health. Father Mathew is not so merciless as you are."

"I know Father Mathew well," I answered; "I have written to him and seen him many times. Allow me to tell you that we are of the same mind about the use of intoxicating drink."

"Is it possible! you know Father Mathew! and you are exchanging letters with him! What a holy man he is, and what good he has done in Ireland, and everywhere," they answered. "But the good he has done will not last long," I said, "if all his disciples keep their pledges as you do."

As we were talking, a good number of priests came around us to hear what was said; for it was evident to all, that the bark of their collectors, not only had come to shallow waters, but had struck on a rock. One of the priests said: "I thought we were to be preached to by Bishop Spaulding, I had no idea that it was Father Chiniquy who had that charge." "Gentlemen," I answered, "I have as much right to preach to you in favour of temperance as you have to preach to me in favour of intemperance. You may do as you please about the use of strong drink, during the retreat; but I hope I also may have the right to think and do as I please in that matter." "Of course," they all answered, "but you are the only one who will not give us a cent to get a little drop." "So much the worse for you all, gentlemen, if I am the only one. But please excuse me, I cannot give you a cent for that object."

They then left me, saying something which I could not understand, but they were evidently disgusted with what they considered my stubbornness and want of good manners. I must, however, say here, that two of them, Mr. Dunn, pastor of one of the best congregations of Chicago, and the other, unknown to me, came to congratulate me on the stern rebuke I had given to the collectors.

"I regret," said Mr. Dunn, "the five dollars I have thrown into the hat. If I had spoken to you before, and had known that you would be brave enough to rebuke them, I would have stood by you and kept my money for better use. It is really a shame that we should be preparing ourselves for a retreat by wasting 500 dollars for such a shameful object. They have

just told me that they have raised that sum for the champagne, brandy, whisky and beer they will drink this week. Ah! what disgrace! What a cry of indignation would be raised against us if such a shameful thing should be known! I am sorry about the unkind words those priests have spoken to you; but you must excuse them, for they are already full of bad whisky. Do not think, however, that you are friendless here, in our midst. You have more friends than you think among the Irish priests; and I am one of them, though you do not know me. Bishop Vandeveld has often spoken to me of your grand colonisation work among the French."

Mr. Dunn then pressed my hand in his and, taking me a short distance from the others, said: "Consider me hereafter as your friend: you have won my confidence by the fearless way in which you have just spoken, and the common sense of your arguments. You have lost a true friend in Bishop Vandeveld. I fear that our present bishop will not do you justice. Lebel and Carthual have prejudiced him against you. But I will stand by you if you are ever unjustly dealt with, as I fear you will be by the present administration of the diocese. I fear we are on the eve of great evils. The scandalous suit which Bishop O'Regan has brought against his predecessor is a disgrace. If he has gained 50,000 dollars by it, he has for ever lost the respect and confidence of all his priests and diocesans. After the mild and paternal ruling of Bishop Vandeveld, neither the priests nor the people of Illinois will long bear the iron chains which the present bishop has in store for us all."

I thanked Mr. Dunn for his kind words, and told him that I had already tasted the paternal love of my bishop, by being twice dragged by Spink before the criminal courts for having refused to live on good terms with the two most demoralised priests I have ever known.

He then, speaking with a more subdued voice, said: "I must tell you, confidentially, that one of those priests, Lebel, will be turned out ignominiously from the diocese during the retreat. Last week, a new fact, which surpasses all his other abominations, has been revealed and proved to the bishop, for which he will be interdicted." At that moment the bell called us to the chapel to hear the regulations of the bishop in reference to the retreat, after which we sang the matins.

At 8 p.m. we had our first sermon by Bishop Spaulding, from Kentucky. He was a fine looking man, a giant in stature, and a good speaker. But the way in which he treated his subject, though very clever, left in my mind the impression that he did not believe a word of what he said. At certain times there was much fire in his elocution, but it was a fire of straw. He delivered two sermons each day, and the Rev. Mr. Vanhulest, a Jesuit, gave us two meditations, each of them lasting from forty to fifty minutes. The rest of the time was spent in reading aloud the life of a saint, reciting the breviary,

examination of conscience and going to confession.

We had half an hour for meals, followed by one hour of recreation. Thus were the days spent. But the nights ! what shall I say of them ? What pen can describe the orgies I witnessed during those dark nights, and who can believe what I shall have to say about them, though I will not and cannot say the half of what I have seen and heard.

The drinking used to begin about 9 o'clock, as soon as the lights were put out. Some were handing the bottles from bed to bed, while others were carrying them to those at a distance, at first, with the least noise possible ; but half an hour had not elapsed before the alcohol was beginning to unloosen the tongues and upset the brains. Then the *bon mote*, the witty stories, at first, were soon followed by the most indecent and shameful recitals. Then the songs, followed by the barking of dogs, the croaking of frogs, the howling of wolves. In a word, the cries of all kinds of beasts, often mixed with the most lascivious songs, the most infamous anecdotes flying from bed to bed, from room to room, till one or two o'clock in the morning. One night three priests were taken with delirium tremens almost at the same time. One cried out that he had a dozen rattle-snakes at his shirt ; the second was fighting against thousands of bats which were trying to tear his eyes from their sockets ; and the third, with a stick, was repulsing millions of spiders which he said were as big as wild turkeys, all at work to devour him. The cries and lamentations of those three priests were really pitiful. To those cries, add the lamentations of some dozen of them whose overloaded stomachs were ejecting in the beds and all around, the enormous quantity of drink they had swallowed.

The third day I was so disgusted and indignant that I determined to leave, without noise, under the pretext that I was sick. It was not a false pretext ; for I was really sick. There was no possibility of sleeping before two or three o'clock. Besides, the stench in the dormitories was horrible. There was, however, another thing which was still more overwhelming me. It was the terrible moral struggle in my soul from morning till night, and from night till morning, when the voice of my conscience, which I had to take for the voice of Satan, was crying in my ears : " Do you not clearly see that your Church is the devil's church—that those priests, instead of being the Lamb's priests, are the successors of the old priests of Bacchus ? Read your Bible a little more attentively, and see if this is not the reign of the great harlot which is defiling the world with her abominations. How can you remain in such a Church ? "

Oh ! what an awful thing it is to resist the voice of God ! To take Him for the evil one when, by His warnings, He seeks to save your soul ! Although the horrible scandal I had seen distressed me more than human words can tell, those mental conflicts were still more distressing. Fearing lest I should

entirely lose my faith in my religion, and become an absolute infidel by remaining any longer in the midst of such profligacy, I determined to leave ; but before doing so I wanted to consult the new friend whom the Providence of God had given me in Mr. Dunn. It seemed the unbearable burden which was on my shoulders would become lighter, by sharing it with such a sympathetic brother priest.

I went to him after dinner and, taking him apart, I told him all about the orgies of the last night, and asked his advice on my determination not to continue that retreat, which was evidently nothing else than a blind and a sacrilegious comedy to deceive the world.

He answered : " You teach me nothing, for I spent last night in the same dormitory where you were. One of the priests told me all about those orgies yesterday. I could hardly believe what he said, and I determined to see and hear for myself what was going on. You do not exaggerate, you do not even mention half the horrors of last night. It baffles any description. It is simply incredible for anyone who has not himself witnessed them. However, I do not advise you to leave. It would for ever ruin you in the mind of the bishop, who is not already too well disposed in your favour. The best thing you can do is to go and say everything to Bishop Spaulding. I have done it this morning, but I felt that he did not believe the half of what I told him. When the same testimony comes from you, then he will believe it, and will probably take some measures, with our own bishop, to put an end to those horrors. I have something to tell you confidentially which surpasses, in a measure, anything you know of the abominations of these last three nights.

" A respectable policeman, who belongs to my congregation, came to me this morning to tell me that the first night six prostitutes, dressed as men, and last night twelve, came to the University after dark, entered the dormitory and went, directed by signals, to those who had invited them, each being provided with the necessary key. I have just reported the thing to Bishop O'Regan, but instead of paying any attention to what I said, he became furious against me, and nearly turned me out of his room, saying, ' Do you think that I am going to come down from my dignity of bishop to hear the reports of degraded policemen or of vile spies ! Shall I become the spy of my priests ? If they want to damn themselves there is no help ; let them go to hell ! I am not more obliged or able than God Himself to stop them ! Does God stop them ? Does He punish them ? No ! Well ! you cannot expect from me more zeal and power than in our common God ! ' "

" With these fine words ringing in my ears," said good Mr. Dunn, " I had to leave his room at the double quick. It is of no use for us to speak to Bishop O'Regan on that matter. It will do no good. He wants to get a large subscription from those priests at the end of the retreat, and he is rather in-

clined to pet than punish them, till he obtains the 100,000 dollars he wants to build his white marble palace on the lake shore."

I replied: "Though you add to my desolation instead of diminishing it, by what you say of the strange principles of our bishop, I will speak to my Lord Spaulding as you advise me." Without a moments delay I went to his room. He received me very kindly, and did not seem at all surprised at what I said. It was as if he had been accustomed to see the same, or still worse abominations. However, when I told him the enormous quantity of liquor drank, and that the retreat would be only a ridiculous comedy if no attempt at reform was tried, he agreed with me; "but it would be advisable to try it," he said. "Though this is not in our programme, we might give one or two sermons on the necessity of priests giving an example of temperance to their people. Will you please come with me to the room of my Lord O'Regan, that we may confer on the matter after you have told him what is going on?"

Although the Bishop of Chicago seemed puzzled at seeing me entering his room with my Lord Spaulding, he was as polite as possible. He listened with more attention than I expected to the narrative I gave of what was going on among the priests. After telling him my sad story, Bishop Spaulding said: "My Lord of Chicago, these facts are very grave, and there cannot be any doubt about the truth of what we have just heard. Two other gentlemen gave me the same testimony this morning."

"Yes!" said Bishop O'Regan, "it is very sad to see that our priests have so little self-respect, even during such solemn days as those of a public retreat. The Rev. Mr. Dunn has just told me the same sad story as Father Chiniquy. But what remedy can we find for such a state of things? Perhaps it might do well to give them a good sermon on temperance. Mr. Chiniquy, I am told that you are called 'the temperance apostle of Canada,' and that you are a powerful speaker on that subject: would you not like to give them one or two addresses on the injury they are doing to themselves and to our holy Church, by their drunkenness?"

"If these priests could understand me in French," I replied, "I would accept the honour you offer me, with pleasure: but to be understood by them, I would have to speak in English; and I am not sufficiently free in that language to attempt it. My broken English would only bring ridicule upon the holy cause of temperance. But my Lord Spaulding has already preached on that subject in Kentucky, and an address from his lordship would be listened to with more attention and benefit from him than from me."

It was then agreed that he should change his programme, and give two addresses on temperance, which he did. But though these addresses were really eloquent, they were pearls

thrown before swine. The drunken priests slept, as usual; and even snored, almost through the whole length of the delivery. It is true that we could notice a little improvement, and less noise the following nights; the change, however, was very little.

The fourth day of the retreat, the Rev. Mr. Lebel came to me, with his bag in hand. He looked furious. He said: "Now you must be satisfied, I am interdicted and turned out ignominiously from this diocese. It is your work! But mind what I tell you; you will, also, soon be turned out from your colony by the mitred tyrant who has just struck me down. He told me several times that he would, at any cost, break your plans of French colonisation, by sending you to the South-west of Illinois, along the Mississippi, to an old French settlement, opposite St. Louis. He is enraged against you, for your refusing to give him your fine property at St. Anne."

I answered him: "You are mistaken when you think that I am the author of your misfortunes. You have disgraced yourself by your own acts. God has given you talents and qualities which, if cultivated, would have exalted you in the Church, but you have preferred to destroy those great gifts, in order to follow the evil inclinations of your poor degraded human nature; you reap to-day what you have sown. Nobody is more sorry than I am for your misfortune, and my most sincere wish is that the past may be a lesson to guide your steps in the future. The desire of the bishop to turn me out of my colony does not trouble me. If it is the will of God to keep me at the head of that great work, the Bishop of Chicago will go down from his episcopal throne before I go down the beautiful hill of St. Anne. Adieu." He soon disappeared. But how the fall of this priest, whom I had so sincerely loved, saddened me!

The next Sabbath was the last day of the retreat. All the priests went in procession to the cathedral, to receive holy communion, and every one of them ate, what we had to believe was the true body, soul and divinity of Jesus Christ. This, however, did not prevent thirteen of them from spending the greater part of the next night in calabosses, to which they had been taken by the police, from houses of ill-fame, where they were rioting and fighting. The next morning they were discharged from the hands of the police by paying pretty round sums of money for the trouble of the night!

The next day, I went to Mr. Dunn's parsonage to ask him if he could give me any explanation of the rumour which was afloat, and to which Mr. Lebel had made allusion, that it was the intention of the bishop to remove me to some distant part of his diocese.

"It is, unfortunately, too true," said he. "Bishop O'Regan thinks that he has a mission from heaven to undo all his predecessor has done, and as one of the best and grandest schemes of Bishop Vandeveld was to secure the possession of this magnificent State of Illinois to our Church, by inducing all the

Roman Catholic emigrants from France, Belgium, and Canada, to settle here, our present bishop does not conceal that he will oppose that plan by removing you to such a distance that your colonisation plans will be at an end.

We had been requested to spend the forenoon of Monday in the University, for an important affair which the bishop had to propose to his clergy. We were all there, in the great hall, at the appointed hour. Even the thirteen priests who had spent the best part of the night at the police station were there, as docile as lambs. We knew beforehand the proposition which was to be put before us. It was to build a palace for our bishop, worthy of the great Illinois State, the cost of which would be about 100,000 dollars. Though every one of us felt that this was most extravagant, in such a young and poor diocese, nobody dared to raise his voice against that act of pride and supreme folly. Every one promised to do all in his power to raise that sum and, to show our good-will, we raised among ourselves, at once, 7,000 dollars, which we gave in cash or in promissory notes.

I was but a few steps from the University, when an Irish priest, unknown to me, ran after me to say: "My Lord O'Regan wants to see you immediately." And, five minutes later, I was alone with my bishop, who, without any preface, told me: "Mr. Chiniquy, I hear very strange and damaging things about you from every quarter. But the worst of all is, that you are a secret Protestant emissary; that, instead of preaching the true doctrines of our holy Church, about the immaculate conception, purgatory, the respect and obedience due to their superiors by the people, auricular confession, etc., you spend part of your time distributing Bibles and New Testaments among your emigrants; I want to know from your own lips if this be true or not?"

I answered: "A part of what the people told you about the matter is not true; the other is true. It is not true that I neglect the preaching of the doctrines of our holy Church. But it is true that I do distribute the Holy Bible and the Gospel of Christ among my people."

"And instead of blushing at such unpriestly conduct, you seem to be proud of it," angrily replied the bishop.

"I do not understand, my lord, why a priest of Christ could blush for distributing the Word of God among his people; as I am bound to preach that Holy Word, it is not only my right, but my duty to give it to them. I am fully persuaded that there is no preaching so efficacious and powerful as the preaching of our God Himself, when speaking to us in His holy Book."

"This is sheer Protestantism, Mr. Chiniquy; this is sheer Protestantism!" he answered me angrily.

"My dear bishop," I answered calmly, "if to give the Bible to the people and invite them to read and meditate on it, is Protestantism, our holy Pope Pius VI. was a good Protestant, for in his letter to Martini, which is probably in the first pages

of the beautiful Bible I see on your lordship's table, he not only blesses him for having translated that holy Book into Italian, but invites the people to read it."

The bishop, assuming an air of supreme contempt, replied: "Your answer shows your complete ignorance on the subject on which you speak so boldly. If you were a little better informed on that grave subject, you would know that the translation by Martini, which the Pope advised the Italian people to read, formed a work of twenty-three big volumes in folio, which, of course, nobody, except the very rich and idle people could read. Not one in ten thousand Italians have the means of purchasing such voluminous work; and not one in twenty thousand have the time or the will to peruse such a mass of endless commentaries.

"Then, my lord, do you positively tell me that the Pope gave permission to read Martini's translation because he knew that the people could never get it on account of its enormous size and price, and do you assure me that he would never have given such an advice had the same people been able to purchase and read that holy work?"

"Yes, sir! it is what I mean," answered the bishop, with an air of triumph, "for I know, positively, that this is a fact."

I replied calmly: "I hope your lordship is unwillingly mistaken: for if you were correct, the stern and unflinching principles of logic would force me to think and say that that Pope, and all his followers, were deceivers, and that encyclical a public fraud in his own hands; for we Catholic priests make use of it all over the world, and reprint it at the head of our own Bibles, and to make the people, both Protestants and Catholics, believe that we approve of their reading our own version of that holy Book."

Had I thrown a spark of fire in a keg of powder the explosion would not have been more prompt and terrible than the rage of that prelate. Pointing his finger to my face, he said: "Now I see the truth of what I have been told, that you are a disguised Protestant, since the very day you were ordained a priest. The Bible! The Bible is your motto! For you, the Bible is everything, and the holy Church, with her Popes and bishops, nothing! What an insolent, I daresay, what a blasphemous word, I have just heard from you! You dare call an encyclical letter of one of our most holy Popes a *fraud*!"

In vain I tried to explain; he would not listen, and he silenced me by saying: "If our holy Church has, in an unfortunate day, appointed you one of her priests in my diocese, it was to preach her doctrines: and not to distribute the Bible! If you forget that, I will make you remember it!"

And with that threat on my head, as a Damocles' sword, I had to take the door which he had opened, without any *au revoir*. Thanks be to God, this first persecution and these outrages I received for my dear Bible's sake, did not diminish my love, my respect for God's Holy Word.

CHAPTER LIII.

I determine to Resist Bishop O'Regan to his face—Drags me as a Prisoner to Urbana in 1856—Abraham Lincoln defends me.

A MONTH had scarcely elapsed since the ecclesiastical retreat, when all the cities of Illinois were filled by the most strange and humiliating clamours against our bishop. From Chicago to Cairo, it would have been difficult to go to a single town, without hearing from the most respectable people, or reading in big letters, in some of the most influential papers, that Bishop O'Regan was a thief or a simoniac, a perjurer, or even something worse. "He has stolen the beautiful and costly vestments we bought for our Church," cried the French-Canadians of Chicago. "He has swindled us out of a fine site given us to build our church; sold it for 40,000 dollars, and pocketed the money, for his own private use, without giving us any notice," said the Germans. "His thirst for money is so great," said the whole Catholic people of Illinois, "that he is even selling the bones of the dead."

My hope, at first, was that there were many exaggerations in those reports. But as they came thicker and thicker, day after day, I thought it my duty to go to Chicago, and see for myself, to what extent those rumours were true. I went directly to the French-Canadian church; and to my unspeakable dismay, I found that it was too true that the bishop had stolen the fine church vestments, which my countrymen had bought for their own priest, for grand festivals; and he had transferred them to the cathedral for his own personal use. The indignation of my poor countrymen knew no bounds. The only way I could find to appease them was to promise them that I would speak to his lordship, and tell him it was their desire to have those vestments restored to them.

The second thing I did was to go to the cemetery, and see for myself to what extent it was true or not that our bishop was selling the very bones of his diocesans, in order to make money. On my way to the Roman Catholic graveyard, I met a great many cart-loads of sand which, I was told by the carters, had been taken from the cemetery; but I did not like to stop them till I was at the very door of the consecrated spot. There I found three carters, who were just leaving the grounds. I asked and obtained from them the permission to search the sand which they carried, to see if there were not some bones. I could not find any in the first cart; and my hope was that it would be the same in the two others. But, to my horror and shame, I found the jaw of a child in the second; and part of the bones of an arm, and almost a whole foot of a human being, in the third cart! I politely requested the carters to show me the very place where they had dug that sand, and they complied with my prayer. To my unspeakable regret and shame, I found that the bishop had told

an unmitigated falsehood when, to appease the public indignation against his sacrilegious trade, he had published that he was selling only the sand which was outside of the fence, on the very border of the lake.

It is true that, to make his case good, he had ordered the old fence to be taken away, in order to make a new one, many feet inside the old one. But this miserable and shameful subterfuge rendered his crime still greater than it had at first appeared. What added to the gravity of that public iniquity was, that the Bishop of Chicago had received that piece of land from the city for a burial ground, only after they had taken a solemn oath to use it only for burying the dead. Every load of that ground sold then, was not only an act of simony, but the breaking of a solemn oath.

Slowly retracing my steps to the city from the cemetery, I went directly to the bishop, to fulfil the promise I made to the French-Canadians. But I was not long with him without seeing that I would gain nothing but his implacable enmity in pleading the cause of my poor countrymen. However, I thought that my duty was to do all in my power to open the eyes of my bishop to the pit he was digging for himself and for all us Catholics, by his conduct.

"My lord," I said, "I will not surprise your lordship, when I tell you that all the true Catholics of Illinois are filled with sorrow by the articles they find, every day, in the press, against their bishop."

"Yes! yes!" he abruptly replied, "the good Catholics must be sad indeed to read such disgusting diatribes against their superior; and I presume that you are one of those that are sorry. But, then, why do you not prevent your insolent and infidel countrymen from writing those things?"

I answered, "It is to try, as much as is in my power, to put an end to those scandals that I am in Chicago to-day, my lord."

"Very well, very well," he replied, "as you have the reputation of having a great influence over your countrymen, make use of it to stop them in their rebellious conduct against me."

I answered, "I hope that I will succeed in what your lordship wants me to do. But there are two things to be done, in order to secure success."

"What are they?" quickly asked the bishop.

"The *first* is, that your lordship give back the fine church vestments which you have taken from the French-Canadian congregation of Chicago. The *second* is, that your lordship abstain, absolutely, from this day, to sell the sand of the burying-ground, which covers the tombs of the dead."

Without answering a word, the bishop struck his fist violently upon the table, and crossed the room at a quick step, two or three times; then, turning towards me, and pointing his finger to my face, he exclaimed in an indescribable accent of rage: "Now, I see the truth of what Mr. Spink told me !

You are not only my bitterest enemy, but you are at the *head* of my enemies. You take sides with them against me. You approve of their libellous writings against me ! I will never give back those church vestments. They are mine, as the French-Canadian Church is mine ! Do you not know, that the ground on which the churches are built, as well as the churches themselves, and all that belongs to the church, belongs to the bishop ? Tell your countrymen to hold their tongues, and respect their bishop, when he is in the right, as I am."

I had, many times, considered the infamy and injustice of the law which the bishops have had passed all over the United States, making every one of them a corporation, with the right of possessing personally all the Church properties of the Roman Catholics. But I had never understood the infamy and tyranny of that law so clearly as in that hour.

I answered: "My lord, I confess that is the law in the United States; but this is a human law, directly opposed to the Gospel. I do not find a single word in the Gospel which gives this power to the bishop. Such a power is an abusive, not a divine power, which will sooner or later destroy our holy Church in the United States, as it has already mortally wounded her in Great Britain, in France, and in many other places. When Christ said, in the Holy Gospel, that He had not enough ground whereon to lay His head, He condemned, in advance, the pretensions of the bishops who lay their hands on our Church properties as their own. Such a claim is a usurpation and not a right, my lord. The Gospel is a long protest against that usurpation; in every page it tells us that the Kingdom of Christ is not of this world. I have myself given 50 dollars to help my countrymen to buy those church vestments. They belong to them, and not to you !"

My words, uttered with an expression of firmness which the bishop had never yet seen in any of his priests, fell upon him, at first, as a thunderbolt. They so puzzled him, that he looked at me a moment, as if he wanted to see if it were a dream or a reality, that one of his priests had the audacity to use such language. But soon recovering from his stupor, he interrupted me by striking his fist again on the table, and saying in anger: "You are half a Protestant ! Your words smell Protestantism ! The Gospel ! the Gospel ! that is your great tower of strength against the laws and regulations of our holy Church ! If you think, Mr. Chiniquy, that you will frighten me with your big words of the Gospel, you will soon see your mistake, at your own expense. I will make you remember that it is *the Church* you must obey, and it is through your bishop that the Church rules you !"

"My lord," I answered, "I want to obey the Church. Yes ! but it is a Church founded on the Gospel; a Church that respects and follows the Gospel, that I want to obey !" These words threw him into a fit of rage, and he answered:

"I am too busy to hear your impertinent babblings any

longer. Please let me alone, and remember that you will soon hear from me again."

The bishop kept his promise. I heard of him very soon after, when his agent, Peter Spink, dragged me again, a prisoner, before the Criminal Court of Kankakee, accusing me falsely of crimes which his malice alone could have invented. My Lord O'Regan had determined to interdict me; but not being able to find any cause in my private or public life as a priest to found such a sentence, he had pressed that land speculator, Spink, to prosecute me again; promising to base his interdict on the condemnation which he had been told would be passed against me by the Criminal Court of Kankakee. But the bishop and Peter Spink were again to be disappointed, for the verdict of the court, given on the 13th November, 1855, was again in my favour.

My heart filled with joy at this new and great victory my God had given me against my merciless persecutors; I was blessing Him, when my two lawyers, Messrs. Osgood and Paddock, came to me and said: "Our victory, though great, is not so decisive as was expected; for Mr. Spink has just taken an oath that he has no confidence in this Kankakee Court, and he has appealed, by a change of venue, to the Court of Urbana, in Champaign County. We are sorry to have to tell you that you must remain a prisoner under bail, in the hands of the sheriff, who is bound to deliver you to the sheriff of Urbana, the 19th of May, next Spring."

I nearly fainted when I heard this. The ignominy of being again in the hands of the sheriff for so long a time; the enormous expenses, far beyond my means, to bring my fifteen to twenty witnesses such a long distance of nearly one hundred miles; the new oceans of insults, false accusations and perjuries, with which my enemies were to overwhelm me again; and the new risk of being condemned, though innocent, at that distant court; all those things crowded themselves in my mind, to crush me. For a few minutes I was obliged to sit down; for I would have surely fallen down, had I continued to stand on my feet. A kind friend had to bring me some cold water, and bathe my forehead, to prevent me from fainting. It seemed that God had forsaken me for the time being, and that He was to let me fall powerless in the hands of my foes. But I was mistaken. That merciful God was near me, in that dark hour, to give me proofs of His loving care.

The very moment I was leaving the court with a heavy heart, a gentleman, a stranger, came to me and said: "I have followed your suit from the beginning. It is more formidable than you suspect. Your prosecutor, Spink, is only an instrument in the hands of the bishop. The real prosecutor is the land shark who is at the head of the diocese, and who is destroying our holy religion by his private and public scandals. As you are the only one among his priests who dares to resist him, he is determined to get rid of you: he will spend all his

treasures, and use the almost irresistible influence of his position to crush you. There was no danger of any verdict against you, in this part of Illinois, where you are too well known for the perjured witnesses they have brought to influence your judges. But when you are among strangers, mind what I tell you: the false oaths of your enemies may be accepted as Gospel truths by the jury, and then, though innocent, you are lost. Though your two lawyers are expert men, you will want something better in Urbana. Try to secure the services of Abraham Lincoln, of Springfield. If that man defends you, you will surely come out victorious from that deadly conflict!" I answered: "I am much obliged to you for your sympathetic words; but would you please allow me to ask your name?"

"Be kind enough to let me keep my incognito, here," he answered. "The only thing I can say is, that I am a Catholic like you, and one who, like you, cannot bear any longer the tyranny of our American bishops. With many others, I look to you as our deliverer, and for that reason I advise you to engage the services of Abraham Lincoln." "But," I replied, "who is that Abraham Lincoln? I never heard of that man before."

He replied: "Abraham Lincoln is the best lawyer and the most honest man we have in Illinois." I went immediately with that stranger to my two lawyers, who were in consultation only a few steps from us, and asked them if they would have any objection that I should ask the services of Abraham Lincoln to help them to defend me at Urbana. They both answered: "Oh! if you can secure the services of Abraham Lincoln, by all means do it. We know him well; he is one of the best lawyers, and one of the most honest men we have in our State."

Without losing a minute, I went to the telegraph office with that stranger and telegraphed to Abraham Lincoln to ask him if he would defend my honour and my life (though I was a stranger to him) at the next May term of the Court at Urbana.

About twenty minutes later, I received the answer:

"Yes, I will defend your honour and your life at the next

May term at Urbana.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN."

My unknown friend then paid the operator, pressed my hand, and said: "May God bless and help you, Father Chiniquy. Continue to fight fearlessly for truth and righteousness against our mitred tyrants, and God will help you in the end." He then took a train for the North, and soon disappeared as a vision from heaven. I have not seen him since, though I have not let a day pass without asking God to bless him. A few minutes later, Spink came to the office to telegraph to Lincoln, asking his services at the next May term of the Court at Urbana. But it was too late.

A few days after my return from St. Louis to my colony, I had to deliver myself again into the hands of the Sheriff of Kankakee, who was obliged by Spink to take me prisoner, and deliver me as a criminal into the hands of the Sheriff of

Champaign County, on the 19th of May, 1856.

It was then that I met Mr. Abraham Lincoln for the first time. He was a giant in stature, but I found him still more a giant in the noble qualities of his mind and heart. It was impossible to converse five minutes with him without loving him. There was such an expression of kindness and honesty in his face, and such an attractive magnetism in the man that, after a few minutes conversation, one felt as tied to him by all the noblest affections of the heart.

When pressing my hand, he told me, "You were mistaken when you telegraphed that you were unknown to me. I know you, by reputation, as the stern opponent of the tyranny of your bishop, and the fearless protector of your countrymen in Illinois; I have heard much of you from two priests; and, last night, your lawyers, Messrs Osgood and Paddock, acquainted me with the fact that your bishop employs some of his tools to get rid of you. I hope it will be an easy thing to defeat his projects, and protect you against his machinations."

He then asked me how I had been induced to desire his services. I answered by giving him the story of that unknown friend who had advised me to have Mr. Abraham Lincoln for one of my lawyers, for the reason that "he was the best lawyer and the most honest man in Illinois." He smiled at my answer, with that inimitable and unique smile, which we may call the "Lincoln smile," and replied, "That unknown friend would surely have been more correct, had he told you that Abraham Lincoln was the ugliest lawyer of the country!" and he laughed outright.

I spent six long days at Urbana as a criminal, in the hands of the sheriff, at the feet of my judges. During the greatest part of that time, all that human language can express of abuse and insult was heaped on my poor head.

I never heard anything like the eloquence of Abraham Lincoln, when he demolished the testimonies of the two perjured priests, Lebel and Carthuvél, who, with ten or twelve other false witnesses, had sworn against me. I would have surely been declared innocent, after that eloquent address, and the charge of the learned Judge Davis, had not my lawyers, by a sad blunder, left a Roman Catholic on the jury. Of course, that Irish Roman Catholic wanted to condemn me, when the eleven honest and intelligent Protestants were unanimous in voting "Not guilty." The Court, having at last found that it was impossible to persuade the jury to give an unanimous verdict, discharged them. But Spink again forced the sheriff to keep me prisoner, by obtaining from the Court the permission to begin the prosecution *de novo* at the term of the fall, the 19th of October, 1856.

Humanly speaking, I would have been one of the most miserable of men, had I not had my dear Bible, which I was meditating and studying day and night, in those dark days of trial.

CHAPTER LIV.

Excommunication by Three Drunken Priests.

THE Holy Scriptures say that an abyss calls for another abyss (*abyssus abyssum invocat*). That axiom had its accomplishment in the conduct of Bishop O'Regan. When once on the declivity of iniquity, he descended to its lowest depths, with more rapidity than a stone thrown into the sea. Not satisfied with the shameful theft of the rich vestments of the French-Canadian Church of Chicago, he planned iniquity, which was to bring upon him, more than ever, the execration of the Roman Catholics of Illinois. It was nothing less than the complete destruction of the thriving congregations of my French-Canadian countrymen of Chicago and St. Anne. The removal of the French-speaking priest of Chicago from his people, as well as my removal from my colony, were determined. Our churches were, at first, to be closed, and after some time sold to the Irish people, or to the highest bidder, for their own use.

Not long after Easter, 1856, the Rev. Mons. Lemaire was turned out, interdicted, and ignominiously driven from the diocese of Chicago, without even the shadow of a reason, and the French-Canadians suddenly found themselves without a pastor. A few days after, the parsonage they had built for their priest in Clarke Street, was sold for 1,200 dollars to an American. The beautiful little church which they had built on the lot next to the parsonage, at the cost of so many sacrifices, was removed five or six blocks South-west, and rented by the bishop to the Irish Catholics for about 2,000 dollars per annum, and the whole money was pocketed, without even a word of notice to my countrymen.

Wherever I went I saw tears of distress among my dear countrymen, and heard cries of indignation against the destroyer. Young and old, rich and poor among them, with one voice, denounced and cursed the heartless mitred brigand, who had dared to commit publicly such a series of iniquities, to satisfy his thirst for gold and his hatred of the French-Canadians. They asked me what they should do; but what could I answer? They requested me to go again to him, and remonstrate. But I showed them that after my complete failure, when I had tried to get back the sacerdotal vestments, there was no hope that he would disgorge the house and the church. The only thing I could advise them was to select five or six of the most influential members of their congregation to go and respectfully ask him by what right he had taken away, not only their priest, but the parsonage and the church they had built, and transferred them to another people. They followed my advice. The bishop answered them:—

“French-Canadians! you do not know your religion! Were you a little better acquainted with it, you would know that I

have the right to sell your churches and your church properties, pocket the money, and go, eat and drink it where I please." After that answer they were ignominiously turned out from his presence into the street.

The very next day, August 19th, 1856, the bishop having heard that I was in Chicago, sent for me. I met him after his dinner. Though not absolutely drunk, I found him full of wine and terribly excited.

"Mr. Chiniquy," he said, "you had promised me to make use of your influence to put an end to the rebellious conduct of your countrymen against me. But I find that they are more insolent and unmanageable than ever; and my firm belief is that it is your fault. You, and the handful of French-Canadians of Chicago, give me more trouble than all the rest of my priests, and my people of Illinois. You are too near Chicago, sir, your influence is too much felt on your people here. I must remove you to a distant place, where you will have enough to do without meddling in my administration. I want your service at Kahokia, in my diocese of Quincy: and if you are not there by the 15th September next, I will interdict and excommunicate you, and forever put an end to your intrigues."

These words fell upon me as a thunderbolt. What could I say or do to appease that mitred despot? After some moments of silence, I tried to make some respectful remonstrances, by telling him that my position was an exceptional one: that I had not come to Illinois as his other priests, to be at the head of any existing congregation. But that I had been invited by his predecessor to direct the tide of the emigration of the French-speaking people of Europe and America. That I had come to a wilderness which, by the blessing of God, I had changed into a thriving country, covered with an industrious and religious people. I further told him that I had left the most honourable position which a priest had ever held in Canada, with the promise from his predecessor that, as long as I lived the life of a good priest I should not be disturbed in my work. As I soon perceived that he was too much under the influence of liquor to understand me and speak with intelligence, I only added:—

"My lord, you speak of interdict and excommunication. I warn your lordship that if you interdict or excommunicate me without holding an inquest I will make use of all means which our Holy Church puts in the hands of her priests, to defend my honour and prove my innocence; I will also appeal to the laws of our great Republic, which protects the character of all her citizens against any one who slanders them. It will then be at your risk and peril that you will pass such a sentence against me."

My calm answer greatly excited his rage. He violently struck the table with his fist, and said: "I do not care a straw about your threats. I repeat it, Mr. Chiniquy, if you are not

at Kahokia by the 15th of next month, I will interdict and excommunicate you."

Feeling that it was folly on my part to argue with a man who was beside himself with passion and excess of wine, I replied: "With the help of God I will never bear the infamy of an interdict or excommunication. I will do all that religion and honour will allow me to prevent such a dark spot from defiling my name, and the man who does try it will learn, at his own expense, that I am not only a priest of Christ, but also an American citizen. I then immediately left the room, to take the train to St. Anne.

Having spent a part of the night praying God to change the heart of my bishop and keep me in the midst of my people, I addressed the following letter to the bishop:—

To the RT. REV. O'REGAN, Bishop of Chicago.

MY LORD,—The more I consider your design to turn me out of the colony which I have founded and of which I am the pastor, the more I believe it a duty which I owe to myself, my friends, and to my countrymen, to protest before God and man against what you intend to do.

Not a single one of your priests stands higher than I do in the public mind, neither is more loved and respected by his people than I am. I defy my bitterest enemies to prove the contrary. And that character which is my most precious treasure you intend to despoil me of by ignominiously sending me away from among my people. Certainly I have enemies, and I am proud of it. The chief ones are well known in this country as the most depraved of men. The cordial reception they say they have received from you has not taken away the stains they have on their foreheads.

By this letter I again request you to make a public and most minute inquest into my conduct. My conscience tells me that nothing can be found against me. Such a public and fair dealing with me would confound my accusers. But I speak of accusers when I do not really know if I have any. Where are they? What are their names? Of what sin do they accuse me? All these questions which I put to you last Tuesday were left unanswered; and would to God that you would answer them to-day by giving me their names. I am ready to meet them before any tribunal. Before you strike the last blow on the victim of the most hellish plot I request you, in the name of God, to give a moment's attention to the following consequences of my removal from this place at present.

You know I have a suit with Mr. Spink, at the Urbana Court, for the beginning of October. My lawyers and witnesses are all in Kankakee and Iroquois counties; and in the very time I want most to be here to prove my innocence and guard my honour, you order me to go to a place more than 300 miles distant. Did you ever realise that by that strange conduct you help Spink against your own priest? When at Kahokia I will have to bear the heavy expenses of travelling more than 300

miles many times to consult my friends, or be deprived of their valuable help. Is it possible that you thus try to tie my hands and feet and deliver me into the hands of my remorseless enemies. Since the beginning of that suit Mr. Spink proclaims that you help him, and that, with the perjured priests, you have promised to do all in your power to crush me down. For the sake of the sacred character you bear do not show so publicly that Mr. Spink's boastings are true. For the sake of your high position in the Church do not so publicly lend a helping hand to the heartless land speculator of L'Erable. He has already betrayed his Protestant friends to get a wife; he will ere long betray you for less. Let me then live in peace here till that suit is over.

If you turn me out or interdict me, as you say you will do, if I disobey your orders, my enemies will proclaim that you treat me with that rigour because you have found me guilty of some great iniquity; and this necessarily will prejudice my judges against me. They will consider me as a vile criminal. For who will suppose, in this free country, that there is a class of men who can judge a man and condemn him as our Bishop of Chicago is doing to-day, without giving him the names of his accusers, or telling him of what crimes he is accused?—Your devoted priest, C. CHINIQUY.

This letter was not yet mailed when we heard that the drunkard priests around us were publishing that the bishop had interdicted me, and they had received orders from him to take charge of the colony of St. Anne. I immediately called a meeting of the whole people and told them: "The bishop has not interdicted me, as the neighbouring priests publish; he has only threatened to do so, if I do not leave this place for Kahokia by the 15th of next month. But though he has not interdicted me, it may be that he does to-day falsely publish that he has done it. We can expect anything from the destroyer of the fine congregation of the French-Canadians of Chicago. He wants to destroy me and you as he has destroyed them. But before he immolates us, I hope that, with the help of God, we will fight as Christian soldiers, for our life, and we will use all the means which the laws of our Church, the holy Word of God, and the glorious Constitution of the United States allow us to employ against our merciless tyrant."

"I ask you as a favour to send a deputation of four members of our colony in whom you place the most implicit confidence, to carry this letter to the bishop. But before delivering it, they will put to him the following questions, the answers of which they will write down with great care in his presence, and deliver them to us faithfully. It is evident that we are now entering into a momentous struggle. We must act with prudence and firmness." Messrs. J. B. Lemoine, Leon Mailloux, Francis Bechard, and B. Allaire, having been unanimously chosen for that important mission, we gave them the following questions to put to the bishop:—

1st. "Have you interdicted Mr. Chiniquy?"

2nd. "Why have you interdicted him? Is Mr. Chiniquy guilty of any crime to deserve to be interdicted? Have those crimes been proved against him in a canonical way?"

3rd. "Why do you take Mr. Chiniquy away from us?"

(Our deputies came back from Chicago, with the following report and answers, which they swore to, some time after, before the Kankakee Court).

1st. "I have suspended Mr. Chiniquy on the 19th inst. on account of his stubbornness and want of submission to my orders, when I ordered him to Kahokia."

2nd. "If Mr. Chiniquy has said mass since, as you say, he is irregular, and the Pope alone can restore him in his ecclesiastical and sacerdotal functions."

3rd. "I take him away from St. Anne, despite his prayers and yours, because he has not been willing to live in peace and friendship with the Revs. Messrs. Lebel and Cartuvel."

(The bishop, being asked if those two priests had not been interdicted by him for public scandals, was forced to say: "Yes!").

4th. "My second reason for taking Mr. Chiniquy from St. Anne, and sending him to his new mission, is to stop the lawsuit Mr. Spink has instituted against him."

(The bishop, being asked if he would promise that the suit would be stopped by the removal of Mr. Chiniquy, answered: "I cannot promise that.").

5th. "Mr. Chiniquy is one of the best priests in my diocese, and I do not want to deprive myself of his services; no accusation against his morality has been proved before me."

6th. "Mr. Chiniquy has demanded an inquest to prove his innocence against certain accusations made against him; he asked me the names of his accusers, to confound them; I have refused to grant his request."

(After the bishop had made those declarations, the deputation presented him the letter of Mr. Chiniquy; it evidently made a deep impression upon him. As soon as he had read it, he said:)

7th. "Tell Mr. Chiniquy to come and meet me to prepare for his new mission, and I will give him the letters he wants, to go and labour there."

(Signed)

FRANCIS BECHARD.

J. B. LEMOINE.

BASILIQUE ALLAIRE.

LEON MAILLOUX.

After the above had been read and delivered to the people, I showed them the evident falsehood and contradictions of the bishop when he said in his second answer: "If Mr. Chiniquy said mass since I interdicted him he is irregular, and the Pope alone can restore him in his ecclesiastical functions," and then in the seventh, "Tell Mr. Chiniquy to come and meet me to

prepare for his new mission, and I will give him the letters he wants to go and labour there."

"The last sentence," I said, "proves that he knew he had not interdicted me, as he said at first. For, had he done so he could not give me letters to administer the sacraments and preach at Kahokia before my going to the Pope, who, alone, as he said himself, could give me such powers, after he (the bishop) knew that I had said mass since my return from Chicago. Now, my friends, here is the law of our holy Church, not the saying, or the law of a publicly degraded man as the Bishop of Chicago: 'If a man has been unjustly condemned, let him pay no attention to the unjust sentence; let him even do nothing to have that unjust sentence removed' (*Canon of St. Gelasius, Pope*).

"If the bishop had interdicted me on the 19th, his sentence would be unjust, for from his own lips we have the confession, 'that no accusation has ever been proved before him; that I am one of his best priests; that he does not want to be deprived of my services.' Yes, such a sentence, if passed, would have been unjust, and our business to-day would be to treat it with the contempt it would deserve. But that unjust sentence has not even been pronounced, since, after saying mass every day since the 19th, the bishop himself wants to give me letters to go to Kahokia and work as one of his best priests! It strikes me to-day for the first time, that it is more your destruction, as a people, than mine, which the bishop wants to accomplish. It is my desire to remain in your midst to defend your rights as Catholics. If you are true to me, as I will be with you, in the impending struggle, we have nothing to fear; for our holy Catholic Church is for us; her laws and canons are in our favour; the Gospel of Christ is for us. The God of the Gospel is for us. Even the Pope, to whom we will appeal, will be for us. For I must tell you a thing which till to-day I kept secret—viz., The Archbishop of St. Louis, to whom I brought my complaint in April last, advised me to write to the Pope and tell him, not all, for it would make too large a volume, but something of the criminal deeds of the roaring lion who wants to devour us. He is to-day selling the bones of the dead which are resting in the Roman Catholic cemetery in Chicago! But if you are true to yourselves as Catholics and Americans, that mitred tyrant will not sell the bones of our friends and relations which rest here in our burying-ground. He has sold the parsonage and the Church which our dear countrymen had built in Chicago. Those properties are to-day in the hands of the Irish; but if you promise to stand by your rights as Christian men and American citizens, I will tell your avaricious bishop: 'Come and sell our parsonage and our Church here, if you dare.'

"Let us be true to ourselves to the end, and our holy Church, which that bishop dishonours, will bless us. Our Saviour Jesus Christ, whose Gospel is despised by that adventurer, will be

for us, and give us a glorious victory. May God bless you for your understanding of your Christian rights. Let all those who want to be free, with me, raise their hands."

"Oh! blessed be the Lord," I said, "there are more than 3,000 hands raised towards heaven to say that you want to be free! Now let those who do not want to defend their rights as Christians, and as American citizens raise their hands. Thanks be to God," I again exclaimed. "There is not a traitor among us! You are all the true, brave, and noble soldiers of liberty, truth and righteousness! May the Lord bless you all!"

It is impossible to describe the enthusiasm of the people. Before dismissing them, I said: "We will, no doubt, very soon witness one of the most ludicrous comedies ever played on this continent; that comedy is generally called excommunication. Some drunken priests, sent by the drunkard Bishop of Chicago, will come to excommunicate us. I expect their visit in a few days. That will be worth seeing."

I was not mistaken. The very next day we heard that the 3rd September had been chosen by the bishop to excommunicate us. I said to the people, "When you see the flag of the free and the brave floating from the top of our steeple, come and rally around that emblem of liberty." There were more than 3,000 people on our beautiful hill when the priests made their appearance. A few moments before I had said to that immense gathering:

"I bless God that you are so many to witness the last tyrannical act of Bishop O'Regan. But I have a favour to ask you—it is that no insult or opposition whatever will be made to the priests who come to play that comedy. Please do not say an angry word, do not move a finger against the performers. They are not responsible for what they will do, for two reasons.

1st. "They will probably be drunk.

2nd. "They are bound to do that work by their master and lord, Bishop O'Regan."

The priests arrived at about 2 p.m., and never such shouting and clapping of hands had been heard in our colony as on their appearance. Never had I seen my dear people so cheerful and good humoured as when one of the priests, trembling from head to foot with terror and drunkenness, tried to read the following sham act of excommunication, which he nailed on the door of the chapel.

"The Reverend Monsieur Chiniquy, heretofore curate of St. Anne, Colony of Beaver, in the Diocese of Chicago, has formally been interdicted by me for canonical causes. The said Mr. Chiniquy, notwithstanding that interdict, has maliciously performed the functions of the holy ministry, in administering the holy sacrament and saying mass. This has caused him to be irregular, and in direct opposition to the authority of the Church, consequently he is a schismatic. The said Mr. Chiniquy, thus named by my letters and verbal injunction, has

absolutely persisted in violating the laws of the Church, and disobeying her authority, is by this present letter excommunicated. I forbid any Catholic having any communication with him in spiritual matters under pain of excommunication. Every Catholic who goes against this defence is excommunicated.

(Signed) ANTHONY, Bishop of Chicago and
September 3rd, 1856. Administrator of Quincy.

As soon as the priests, who had nailed this document to the door of our chapel, had gone away at full speed, I went to see it, and found, what I had expected, that it was not signed by the bishop, neither by his grand vicar, nor any known person and, consequently, it was a complete nullity, according to the laws of the Church. Fearing I would prosecute him, as I threatened, he shrank from the responsibility of his own act, and had not signed it. He was probably ignorant of the fact that he was himself excommunicated, *ipso facto*, for not having signed the document himself, or by his known deputies. I learned, afterwards, that he got a boy twelve years old to write and sign it. In this way, it was impossible for me to bring that document before any court, on account of its want of legal and necessary forms. That act was also a nullity, for being brought by three priests who were not *mentis compos*, from their actual state of drunkenness. And again, it was a nullity, from the evident falsehood which was its base.

The three priests, after leaving, entered the house of one of our farmers, called Bellanger, a short distance from the chapel, and asked permission to rest awhile. But after sitting and smoking a few minutes they all went out to the stables. The farmer finding this very strange, went after them to see what they would do in his stables; to his great surprise and disgust, he found them drinking the last of their spirits. He exclaimed: "Is it not a shame to see three priests in a stable drinking rum?"

They made no answer, but went immediately to their carriage and drove away as quickly as possible, singing with all their might a bacchanalian song! Such was the last act of that excommunication, which has done more than anything else to prepare my people and myself to understand that the Church of Rome is a den of thieves, a school of infidelity, and the very antipodes of the Church of Christ.

CHAPTER LV.

Abraham Lincoln and the Prosecution.

THE Sabbath afternoon after the three drunken priests nailed their unsigned, unsealed, untestified, and consequently null sentence of excommunication, to the door of our chapel, the people had gathered from every part of our colony into the large hall of the Court-house of Kankakee City to hear several addresses on their duties of the day, and they unanimously passed the following resolution:

Resolved.—That we, French-Canadians of the County of Kankakee, do hereby decide to give our moral support to Rev. C. Chiniquy, in the persecution now exerted against him by the Bishop of Chicago, in violation of the laws of the Church, expressed and sanctioned by the Councils.

After this resolution had been voted, Mr. Bechard, who became one of the principal members of the Parliament of Canada, and who was then a merchant of Kankakee City, presented to me the following address, which had also been unanimously voted by the people:—

“DEAR AND BELOVED PASTOR,—For several years we have been witnesses of the persecution of which you are the subject, on the part of the bad priests, your neighbours, and on the part of the unworthy Bishop of Chicago; but we have also been the witnesses of your sacerdotal virtues—of your forbearance of their calumnies—and our respect and affection for your person has but increased at the sight of those trials.

“We know that you are persecuted, not only because you are a Canadian priest, and that you like us, but also because you do us good in making a sacrifice of your own private fortune to build school-houses and to feed our teachers at your own table. We know that the Bishop of Chicago, who resembles more an angry wolf than a pastor of the Church, having destroyed the prosperous congregation of Chicago by taking away from them their splendid church, which they had built at the cost of many sacrifices, and giving it to the Irish population, and having discouraged the worthy population of Bourbonnais Grove in forcing on them drunken and scandalous priests wants to take you away from among us, to please Spink, the greatest enemy of the French population. They even say that the Bishop, carrying iniquity to its extreme bounds, wanted to interdict you. But as our Church cannot, and is not willing to sanction evil and calumny, we know that all those interdicts, based on falsehoods and spite, are null and void.

“We therefore solicit you not to give way in presence of the perfidious plots of your enemies, and not to leave us. Stay among us as our pastor and our father, and we solemnly promise to sustain you in all your hardships to the end, and to defend you against our enemies. Stay among us, to instruct

us in our duties by your eloquent speeches, and to enlighten us by your pious examples. Stay among us, to guard against the perfidious designs of the Bishop of Chicago, who wants to discourage and destroy our prosperous colony, as he has already discouraged and destroyed other congregations of the French-Canadians, by leaving them without a pastor, or by forcing on them unworthy priests."

The stern and unanimous determination of my countrymen to stand by me in the impending struggle is one of the greatest blessings which God has ever given me. It filled me with courage which nothing could hereafter shake. But the people of St. Anne did not think that it was enough to show to the bishop that nothing could ever shake the resolution they had taken to live and die free men. They gathered in a public and immense meeting on the Sabbath after the sham excommunication, to *adopt* the following address to the Bishop of Chicago, a copy of which was sent to every Bishop of the United States and Canada, and to Pope Pius IX.

"TO HIS LORDSHIP, ANTHONY O'REGAN OF CHICAGO.—We, the undersigned, inhabitants of the parish of St. Anne, Beaver Settlement, seeing with sorrow that you have discarded our humble request, which we have sent you by the four delegates, and have persisted in trying to drive away our honest and worthy priest, who has edified us in all circumstances by his public and religious conduct, and having, contrary to the rules of our holy church and common sense, struck our worthy pastor, Mr. Chiniquy, with excommunication, having caused him to be announced as a schismatic priest, and having forbidden us to communicate with him in religious matters, are hereby protesting against the unjust and iniquitous manner in which you have struck him, refusing him the privilege of justifying himself and proving his innocence.

"Consequently, we declare that we are ready at all times, as good Catholics, to obey all your orders and ordinances that are in accordance with the laws of the Gospel and the Church, but that we are not willing to follow you in all your errors of judgment, in your injustices and covetous caprices. Telling you, as St. Jerome wrote to his bishop, that as long as you will treat us as children, we will obey you as a father; but as long as you will treat us as our master, we shall cease to consider you as our father. Considering Mr. Chiniquy as a good and virtuous priest, worthy of the place he occupies, and possessing as yet all his sacerdotal power, in spite of your null and ridiculous sentence, we have unanimously decided to keep him among us as our pastor; therefore praying your Lordship not to put yourself to the trouble of seeking another priest for us. More yet: we have unanimously decided to sustain him and furnish him the means to go as far as Rome, if he cannot have justice in America.

"We further declare that it has been dishonourable and shameful for our bishop and for our holy religion to have seen,

coming under the walls of our chapel, bringing the orders of the prince of the church of a representative of Christ, three men covered with their sacerdotal garments, having their tongues half paralyzed by the effects of brandy, and who, turning their backs to the Church, went into the house and barn of one of our settlers and there emptied their bottles. And from there, taking their seats in their buggies, went towards the settlement of L'Erable, singing drunken songs and howling like wild Indians. Will your lordship be influenced by such a set of men, who seem to have for their mission to degrade the sacros and Catholicism ?

"We conclude, in hoping that your lordship will not persist in your decision, given in a moment of madness and spite ; that you will reconsider your acts, and that you will retract your unjust, null, and ridiculous excommunication, and by these means avoid the scandal of which your precipitation is the cause. We hope then that, changing your determination, you will work to the welfare of our holy religion, and not to its degradation, in which your intolerant conduct would lead us, and that you will not persist in trying to drive our worthy pastor, Rev. Charles Chiniquy, from the flourishing colony that he has founded at the cost of the abandonment of his native land, of the sacrifice of the high position he had in Canada ; that you will bring peace between you and us, and that we shall have in the Bishop of Chicago not a tyrant, but a father, and that you will have in us not rebels, but faithful children, by our virtues and our good example. Subscribing ourselves the obedient children of the Church.

(Signed) THEOPILE DORIEN.
DET. VANIER.
J. B. BELANGER.
CAMILE BETOURNEY.
STAN'LAS GANGE.
ANTOINE ALLAIN.
And five hundred others."

J. B. LEMOINE, N.P.
OLIVER SENECHALL.
BASILQUE ALLAIR.
MICHEL ALLAIR.
JOSEPH GRISI.
JOSEPH ALLARD.

This address, signed by more than five hundred men, all heads of families, and reproduced by almost the whole press in the United States, fell as a thunderbolt on the head of the heartless destroyer of our people. But it did not change his destructive plans. It had just the contrary effect. As a tiger, mortally wounded by sure shots of the hunters, he filled the country with his roaring, hoping to frighten us by his new denunciations. He published the most lying stories to explain his conduct, and to show the world that he had good reasons for destroying the French congregation of Chicago, and trying the same experiment on St. Anne.

In order to refute his false statements, and show more clearly to the whole world the reasons I had, as a Catholic priest, to resist him, I addressed the following letter to his lordship :—

"ST. ANNE, KANKAKEE COUNTY, ILL., Sept. 25th, 1856.

"RT. REV. O'REGAN,—You seem to be surprised that I have

offered the holy sacrifice of mass since our last interview. Here are some of my reasons for so doing.

"1st. You have not suspended me ; far from it, you have given me fifteen days to consider what I should do, threatening only to interdict me after that time if I would not obey your orders.

"2nd. If you have been so ill-advised as to suspend me for the crime of telling you that my intention was to live the life of a retired priest in my little colony, sooner than be exiled at my age, your sentence is ridiculous and null ; and if you were as expert in the *jure Canonico* as in the art of pocketing our money, you would know that you are yourself suspended *ipso facto* for a year, and that I have nothing to fear or to expect from you now.

"3rd. When I bowed down before the altar of Jesus Christ, twenty-four years ago, to receive the priesthood, my intention was to be the minister of the Catholic Church, but not a slave of a lawless tyrant.

"4th. Remember the famous words of Tertullian, '*Nimia potestas nulla postestas.*' For the sake of peace, I have, with many others, tolerated your despotism till now ; but my patience is at an end, and for the sake of our Holy Church, which you are destroying, I am determined with many to oppose an insurmountable wall to your tyranny.

"5th. I did not come here, as you well know, as an ordinary missionary ; but I got from your predecessor the permission to form a colony of my emigrating countrymen. I was not sent here in 1851 to take care of any congregation. It was a complete wilderness ; but I was sent to form a colony of Catholics. I planted my cross in a wilderness. In a great part with my own money I have built a chapel, a college, and a female academy. I have called from everywhere my countrymen—nine-tenths of them came here only to live with me, and because I had the pledged word of my bishop to do that work. And as long as I live the life of a good priest I deny you the right, to forbid me to remain in my colony, which wants my help and my presence.

"6th. You have never shown me your authority (but once) except in the most tyrannical way. But now, seeing that the more humble I am before you the more insolent you grow, I have taken the resolution to stand by my rights as a Catholic priest and as an American citizen.

"7th. You remember, that in our second interview you forbade me to have the good preceptors we have now for our children, and you turned into ridicule the idea I had to call them from Canada. Was that the act of a bishop or of a mean despot ?

"8th. A few days after you ordered me to live on good terms with R. P. Lebel and Carthuval, though you were well acquainted with their scandalous lives, and twice you threatened

me with suspension for refusing to become a friend of those two rogues. And you have so much made a fool of yourself before the four gentlemen I sent to you to be the witnesses of your iniquity and my innocence, that you have acknowledged before them that one of your principal reasons for turning me out of my colony was, that I had not been able to keep peace with three priests whom you acknowledged to be depraved and unworthy priests! Is not that surpassing wickedness and tyranny of anything recorded in the blackest pages of the most daring tyrants? You want to punish by exile a gentleman and a good priest, because he cannot agree to become the friend of two public rogues! I thank you, Bishop O'Regan, to have made that public confession in the presence of unimpeachable witnesses. I do not want to advise you to be hereafter very prudent in what you intend to do against the reputation and character of the priests of St. Anne. If you continue to denounce me as you have done since a few weeks, and to tell the people what you think fit against me, I have awful things to publish of your injustice and tyranny.

"As Judas sold our Saviour to His enemies, so you have sold me to my enemy of L'Erable. But be certain that you shall not deliver up your victim as you like. For withdrawing a suit which you have incited against my honour, and which you shall certainly lose, you drag me out from my home and order me to the land of exile, and you cover that iniquity with the appearance of zeal for the public peace, just as Pilate delivered his victim into the hands of their enemies to make peace with them.

"Shame on you, Bishop O'Regan! For the sake of God, do not oblige me to reveal to the world what I know against you. Do not oblige me, in self-defence, to strike, in you, my merciless prosecutor. If you have no pity for me, have pity on yourself, and on the Church which that coming struggle will so much injure.

"It is not enough for you to have so badly treated my poor countrymen of Chicago—your hatred against the French-Canadians cannot be satisfied except when you have taken away from them the only consolation they have in this land of exile—to possess in their midst a priest of their own nation whom they love and respect as a father! My poor countrymen of Chicago, with many hard sacrifices, had built a fine church for themselves and a house for their priest. *You have taken their church from their hands and given it to the Irish*; you have sold the house of their priest, after turning him out; and what have you done with the 1,500 dollars you got as its price? Public rumour says that you are employing that money to support the most unjust and infamous suit against one of their priests. Continue a little longer and you may be sure that the cursing of my poor countrymen against you will be heard in heaven, and that the God of Justice will give them an avenger.

"You have, at three different times, threatened to interdict and excommunicate me if I would not give you my little personal properties! and as many times you have said in my teeth, that I was a bad priest, because I refused to act according to your rapacious tyranny!

"I neither drink strong wines nor smoke, and the many hours *that others spend in emptying their bottles and smoking their pipes*, I read my dear books—I study the admirable laws of the Church and the Gospel of Christ. I love my books and the holy laws of the Church, because they teach me my rights as well as my duties. They tell me many years ago a general council, which is something above you, has annulled your unjust sentence, and brought upon your head the very penalty you intended to impose upon me. They tell me that any sentence from you, is null, and will fall powerless at my feet.

"But I tell you again, that I desire to live in peace with you. The false reports of Lebel and Carthuval have disturbed that peace; but it is still in your power to have it for yourself and give it to me. I am sure that the sentence you say you have preferred against me comes from a misunderstanding, and your wisdom and charity, if you can hear their voice, can very easily set everything as it was two months ago. It is still in your power to have a warm friend, or an immovable adversary in Kankakee County. It would both be equitable and honourable in you to extinguish the fires of discord which you have so unfortunately enkindled, by drawing back a sentence which you would never have preferred if you had not been deceived. You would be blessed by the Church of Illinois, and particularly by the 10,000 French-Canadians who surround me, and are ready to support me at all hazards.

"Do not be angry at the seeming harsh words which you find in this letter. Nobody but I could tell you these sad truths, though every one of your priests, and particularly those who flatter you most, repeat them every day.

"I tell you again, that no consideration whatever will induce me to surrender my right as a Catholic priest *and as an American citizen*. By the first title you cannot interdict me, as long as I am a good priest, for the crime of wishing to live in my colony and among my people. *By the second title, you cannot turn me out of my home.*—C. CHINQUY"

It was the first time that a Roman Catholic priest, with his whole people, had dared to speak such language to a Bishop of Rome on this continent. Never yet had the unbearable tyranny of those haughty men received such a public rebuke. Our fearless words fell as a bombshell in the camp of the Roman Catholic hierarchy.

With very few exceptions, the press of the State of Illinois, whose columns had so often echoed the cries of indignation raised everywhere against the tyranny of Bishop O'Regan, took sides with me. Hundreds of priests, not only from Illinois, but from every corner of the United States, addressed their warmest

thanks to me for the stand I had taken, and asked me, in the name of God and for the honour of the Church, not to yield an inch of my rights. Many promised to support us at the Court of Rome, by writing themselves to the Pope, to denounce not only the Bishop of Illinois, but several others, who, though not so openly bad, were yet trampling under their feet the most sacred rights of the priests and the people. Unfortunately those priests gave me a saddening knowledge of their cowardice by putting in their letters "*absolutely confidential.*" They all promised to help me when I was storming the strong fortress of the enemy, provided I would go alone into the gap, and that they should keep themselves behind thick walls, far from shot and shell. However, this did not disturb me, for my God knows it, my trust was not in my own strength, but in His protection. I was sure that I was right, that the Gospel of Christ was on my side, that all the canons and laws of the councils were in my favour.

The canonists conclude, from all the laws of the Church on that matter, "That if a priest is unjustly interdicted or excommunicated, he may continue to officiate without any fear of becoming irregular" ("Eccl. Laws," by Hericourt, xxii., No. 51).

Protected by these laws, and hundreds of others too long to enumerate, which my Church had passed in every age, strengthened by the voice of my conscience, which assured me that I had done nothing to deserve to be interdicted or excommunicated; sure, besides, of the testimony brought by our four delegates that the bishop himself had declared that I was one of his best priests, that he wanted to give me my letters to go and perform the functions of my ministry in Kahokia. Above all, knowing the unanimous will of my people that I should remain with them and continue the great and good work so providentially trusted to me in my colony, and regarding this as an indication of the divine will, I determined to remain, in spite of the Bishop of Chicago. All the councils of my Church were telling me that he had no power to injure me, and that all his official acts were null. But if he was spiritually powerless against me, it was not so in temporal matters. His power and desire to injure me had increased with his hatred, since he had read our letters and seen them in all the papers of Chicago.

The first thing he did was to reconcile himself to the priest Lebel, whom he had turned out ignominiously from his diocese some time before. That priest had since obtained a fine situation in the diocese of Michigan. He invited him to his palace, and petted him several days. I felt that the reconciliation of those two men meant nothing good for me. But my hope was, more than ever, that the merciful God who had protected me so many times against them, would save me again from their machinations. The air was, however, filled with the strangest rumours against me. It was said everywhere that Mr. Lebel was to bring such charges against my character that I would

be sent to the penitentiary. What were the new iniquities to be laid to my charge? No one could tell. But the few partisans and friends of the bishop, Messrs. Lebel and Spink, were jubilant and sure that ~~was~~ was to be for ever destroyed.

At last the time arrived when the Sheriff of Kankakee had to drag me again as a criminal and a prisoner to Urbana, and deliver me into the hands of the sheriff of that city. I arrived there on the 20th October, with my lawyers, Messrs. Osgood and Paddock, and a dozen witnesses. Mr. Abraham Lincoln had preceded me only by a few minutes from Springfield. He was in the company of Judge David Davis, since Vice-President of the United States, when I met him.

The jury having been selected and sworn, the Rev. Mr. Lebel was the first witness called to testify and say what he knew against my character.

Mr. Lincoln objected to that kind of testimony, and tried to prove that Mr. Spink had no right to bring his new suit against me by attacking my character. But Judge Davis ruled that the prosecution had that right in the case that was before him. Mr. Lebel had, then, full liberty to say anything he wanted, and he availed himself of his privilege. His testimony lasted nearly an hour, and was too long to be given here. I will only say that he began by declaring that "Chiniquy was one of the vilest men of the day—that every kind of bad rumour were constantly circulating against him." He gave a good number of those rumours, though he could not positively swear if they were founded on truth or not, for he had not investigated them. But he said there was one of which he was sure, for he had authenticated it thoroughly. He expressed a great deal of apparent regret that he was forced to reveal to the world such things, which were not only against the honour of Chiniquy, but, to some extent, involved the good name of a dear sister, Madame Bosse. But as he was to speak the truth before God, he could not help it—the sad truth was to be told. "*Mr. Chiniquy*," he said, "*had attempted to do the most infamous things with my own sister, Madame Bosse. She herself has told me the whole story under oath, and she would be here to unmask the wicked man to-day before the whole world, if she were not forced to silence at home from a severe illness.*"

Though every word of that story was a perjury, there was such a colour of truth and sincerity in my accuser, that his testimony fell upon me and my lawyers and all my friends as a thunderbolt. A man who has never heard such a calumny brought against him before a jury in a Court-house packed with people, composed of friends and foes, will never understand what I felt in this the darkest hour of my life. My God only knows the weight and the bitterness of the waves of desolation which then passed over my soul.

After that testimony was given, there was a lull, and a most profound silence in the court-room. All the eyes were turned upon me, and I heard many voices speaking of me, whispering,

"The villain!" Those voices passed through my soul as poisoned arrows. Though innocent, I wished that the ground would open under my feet and bring me down to the darkest abysses, to conceal me from the eyes of the whole world.

However, Mr. Lincoln soon interrupted the silence by addressing to Lebel such cross-questions that his testimony, in the minds of many soon lost much of its power. And he did still more destroy the effect of his (Lebel's) false oath, when he brought my twelve witnesses, who were among the most respectable citizens of Bourbonnais, formerly parishioners of Mr. Lebel. Those twelve gentlemen swore that Mr. Lebel was such a drunkard and vicious man, that he was so publicly my enemy on account of the many rebukes I had given to his private and public vices, that they would not believe a word of what he said, even upon his oath.

At 10 p.m. the Court was adjourned, to meet again the next morning, and I went to the room of Mr. Lincoln with my two other lawyers, to confer about the morning's work. My mind was unspeakably sad. Life had never been such a burden to me as in that hour.

"My dear Mr. Chiniquy," said Mr. Lincoln, "though I hope, tomorrow, to destroy the testimony of Mr. Lebel against you, I must concede that I see great dangers ahead. There is not the least doubt in my mind that every word he has said is a sworn lie; but my fear is that the jury thinks differently. I am a pretty good judge in these matters. I feel that our jurymen think that you are guilty. There is only one way to perfectly destroy the power of a false witness—it is by another direct testimony against what he has said, or by showing from his very lips that he has perjured himself. I failed to do that last night, though I have diminished, to a great extent, the force of his testimony. Can you not prove an alibi, or can you not bring witnesses who were there in the same house that day, who would flatly and directly contradict what your remorseless enemy has said against you?"

I answered him: "How can I try to do such a thing when they have been shrewd enough not to fix the very date of the alleged crime against me?"

"You are correct, you are perfectly correct, Mr. Chiniquy," answered Mr. Lincoln, "as they have refused to fix the date, we cannot try that. I have never seen two such skilful rogues as those two priests. There is really a diabolical skill in the plan they had concocted for your destruction. It is evident that the bishop is at the bottom of the plot. You remember how I have forced Lebel to confess that he was now on the most friendly terms with the Bishop of Chicago, since he has become the chief of your accusers. Though I do not give up the hope of rescuing you from the hands of your enemies, I do not like to conceal from you that I have several reasons to fear that you will be declared guilty and condemned to a heavy penalty, or to the penitentiary, though I am sure you are per-

fectly innocent. It is very probable that we will have to confront that sister of Lebel to-morrow. Her sickness is probably a feint, in order not to appear here except after the brother will have prepared the public mind in her favour. At all events, if she does not come, they will send some justice of the peace to get her sworn testimony, which will be more difficult to rebut than her own verbal declarations. That woman is evidently in the hands of the bishop and her brother priest, ready to swear anything they order her, and I know nothing so difficult as to refute such female testimonies, particularly when they are absent from the court. The only way to be sure of a favourable verdict to-morrow is, that God Almighty would take our part and show your innocence ! Go to Him and pray, for He alone can save you." Mr. Lincoln was exceedingly solemn when he addressed those words to me, and they went very deep into my soul.

I have often been asked if Abraham Lincoln had any religion, but I never had any doubt about his profound confidence in God since I heard those words falling from his lips in that hour of anxiety. I had not been able to conceal my deep distress. Burning tears were rolling down my cheeks when he was speaking, and there was on his face the expression of friendly sympathy which I shall never forget. Without being able to say a word I left him to go to my little room. It was nearly eleven o'clock. I locked the door and fell on my knees to pray, but I was unable to say a single word.

At last the fountains of tears were opened, and it relieved me to weep ; I could then speak and cry : " Oh ! my God ! have mercy upon me ! Thou knowest my innocence ; hast Thou not promised that those who trust in Thee cannot perish ? Oh ! do not let me perish when Thou art the only One in whom I trust. Come to my help. Save me."

What an awful night I spent. I hope none of my readers will ever know by their own experience the agony of spirit I endured. I had no other expectation than to be for ever dishonoured and sent to the penitentiary the next morning.

But God had not forsaken me. He had again heard my cries and was once more to show me His infinite mercy.

At three o'clock, a.m., I heard three knocks at my door, and I quickly went to open it. Who was there ? Abraham Lincoln—with a face beaming with joy.

I could hardly believe my eyes. But I was not mistaken. It was my noble hearted friend, one of the noblest men Heaven has ever given to earth. It was Abraham Lincoln who had been given to me as my Saviour. On seeing me bathed with tears he exclaimed : " Cheer up, Mr. Chiniquy, I have the perjured priests in my hands. Their diabolical plot is all known, and if they do not fly away before the dawn of day they will surely be lynched. Bless the Lord, you are saved ! "

The sudden passage of extreme desolation to an extreme joy came near killing me. I felt as suffocated, and unable to

utter a single word. I took his hand, pressed it to my lips, and bathed it with tears of joy. I said: "May God for ever bless you, dear Mr. Lincoln. But please tell me how you can bring me such glorious news."

Here is the simple but marvellous story, as told me by that great and good man whom God had made the messenger of His mercies towards me:—

"As soon as Lebel had given his perjured testimony against you yesterday," said Mr. Lincoln, "one of the agents of the Chicago press telegraphed to some of the principal papers, of Chicago: 'It is probable that Mr. Chiniquy will be condemned; for the testimony of the Rev. Mr. Lebel seems to leave no doubt that he is guilty.' And the little Irish boys, to sell their papers, filled the streets with the cries, 'Chiniquy will be hung! Chiniquy will be hung!' The Roman Catholics were so glad to hear that, that ten thousand extra copies have been sold. Among those who bought those papers was a friend of yours, called Terrien, who went to his wife and told her that you were to be condemned, and when the woman heard that she said: 'It is too bad, for I know Mr. Chiniquy is not guilty.'

"'How do you know that?' said the husband. She answered: 'I was there when the priest Lebel made the plot, and promised to give his sister two eighties of good land if she would swear a false oath—and accuse him of a crime which that woman said he had not even thought of with her.'

"'If it be so,' said Terrien, 'we cannot allow Mr. Chiniquy to be condemned. Come with me to Urbana.'

"But that woman, being quite unwell, said to her husband: 'You know well I cannot go: but Miss Philomene Moffat was with me then. She knows every particular of that wicked plot as well as I do. She is well: go and take her to Urbana. There is no doubt that her testimony will prevent the condemnation of Mr. Chiniquy.'

"Narcisse Terrien started immediately: and when you were praying God to come to your help, He was sending your deliverer at the full speed of the railroad cars. Miss Moffatt has just given me the details of that diabolical plot. I have advised her not to show herself before the Court is opened. I will then send for her, and when she has given, under oath, before the Court, the details she has just given me, I pity Spink with his perjured priests. As I told you, I would not be surprised if they were lynched: for there is a terrible excitement in town among many people, who, from the beginning, suspect that the priests have perjured themselves to destroy you.

"Now your suit is gained, and to-morrow you will have the greatest triumph a man ever got over his confounded foes. But you are in need of rest, as well as myself. Good-bye."

After thanking God for that marvellous deliverance, I went to bed and took the needed rest.

But what was the priest Lebel doing at that very moment?

Unable to sleep after the awful perjury he had just made, he had watched the arrival of the trains from Chicago with an anxious mind, for he was aware, through the confessions he had heard, that there were two persons in that city who knew his plot and false oath; and though he had the promises from them that they would never reveal it to anybody, he was not without some fearful apprehension that I might, by some way or other, become acquainted with his abominable conspiracy. Not long after the arrival of the trains from Chicago, he came down from his room to see, in the book where travellers register their names, if there were any new comers from Chicago, and what was his dismay when he saw the first name entered was "*Philomene Moffatt*"! That very name, Philomene Moffatt, who, some time before, had gone to confess to him that she had heard the whole plot from his own lips, when he had promised 160 acres of land to persuade his sister to perjure herself in order to destroy me. A deadly presentiment chilled the blood in his veins! "Would it be possible that this girl was here to reveal and prove my perjury before the world?" He immediately sent for her, when she was just coming from meeting Mr. Lincoln.

"Miss Philomene Moffatt, here! What are you coming here for, this night?" he exclaimed when he saw her.

"You will know it, sir, to-morrow morning," she answered.

"Ah! wretched girl! you come to destroy me," he exclaimed.

She replied: "I do not come to destroy you, for you are already destroyed. Mr. Lincoln knows everything."

"Oh! my God! my God!" he exclaimed, striking his forehead with his hands. Then taking a big bundle of bank-notes from his pocket-book, he said: "Here are one hundred dollars for you, if you take the morning train and go back to Chicago."

"If you would offer me as much gold as this house could contain, I would not go," she replied.

He then left her abruptly, ran to the sleeping-room of Spink, and told him: "Withdraw your suit against Chiniquy; we are lost; he knows all."

Without losing a moment, he went to the sleeping-room of his co-priest, and told him: "Make haste—dress yourself and let us take the morning train; we have no business here, Chiniquy knows all our secrets."

When the hour of opening the Court came there was an immense crowd, not only inside, but outside its walls. Mr. Spink, pale as a man condemned to death, rose before the Judge and said: "Please the Court, allow me to withdraw my prosecution against Mr. Chiniquy. I am now persuaded that he is not guilty of the faults brought against him before this tribunal."

Abraham Lincoln having accepted that reparation in my name, made a short, but one of the most admirable speeches I have ever heard, on the cruel injustices I had suffered from my merciless persecutors, and denounced the rascally priests

who had perjured themselves, with such terrible colours, that it had been very wise on their part to fly away and disappear before the opening of the Court. For the whole city was ransacked for them by hundreds, who blamed me for forgiving them and refusing to have my revenge for the wrong they had done me. But I really thought that my enemies were sufficiently punished by the awful disclosures of their infernal plot. It seemed that the dear Saviour, who had so visibly protected me, was to be obeyed, when He was whispering to my soul, "Forgive them and love them as thyself."

Was not Spink sufficiently punished by the complete ruin which was brought upon him by the loss of the suit? For having gone to Bishop O'Regan to be indemnified for the enormous expenses of such a long prosecution, at such a distance, the bishop coldly answered him: "I had promised to indemnify if you would put Chiniquy down, as you promised me. But as it is Chiniquy who has put you down, I have not a cent to give you."

Abraham Lincoln had not only defended me with the zeal and talent of the ablest lawyer I have ever known, but as the most devoted and noblest friend I ever had. After giving me more than a year of his precious time to my defence, when he had pleaded during two long sessions of the Court at Urbana without receiving a cent from me, I considered that I was owing him a great sum of money. My two other lawyers, who had not done the half of his work, asked me a thousand dollars each, and I had not thought that too much. After thanking him for the inappreciable services he had rendered me, I requested him to show me his bill, assuring him that, although I would not be able to pay the whole cash, I would pay him to the last cent, if he had the kindness to wait a little for the balance.

He answered me with a smile and an air of inimitable kindness which was peculiar to him: "My dear Mr. Chiniquy, I feel proud and honoured to have been called to defend you. But I have done it less as a lawyer than as a friend. The money I should receive from you would take away the pleasure I feel at having fought your battle. Your case is unique in my whole practice. I have never met a man so cruelly persecuted as you have been, and who deserves it so little. Your enemies are devils incarnate. The plot they had concocted against you is the most hellish one I ever knew. But the way you have been save from their hands, the appearance of that young and intelligent Miss Moffatt, who was really sent by God in the very hour of need, when, I confess it again, I thought everything was nearly lost, is one of the most extraordinary occurrences I ever saw. It makes me remember what I have too often forgotten, and what my mother often told me when young—that our God is a prayer-hearing God. This good thought, sown into my young heart by that dear mother's hand, was just in my mind when I told you, 'Go and pray,

God alone can save you.' But I confess to you that I had not faith enough to believe that your prayer would be so quickly and marvellously answered by the sudden appearance of that interesting young lady last night. Now let us speak of what you owe me. Well ! well ! how much do you owe me ? You owe me nothing ! for I suppose you are quite ruined. Your expenses of such a suit, I know, must be enormous. The enemies want to ruin you. Will I help them to finish your ruin, when I hope I have the right to be put among the most sincere and devoted of your friends ?"

"You are right," I answered ; "you are the most devoted and noblest friend God ever gave me, and I am nearly ruined by my enemies. But you are the father of a pretty large family ; you must support them. Your travelling expenses in coming twice here for me from Springfield ; your hotel bills, during the two terms you have defended me, must be very considerable. It is not just that you should receive nothing in return for such work and expenses."

"Well ! well !" he answered, "I will give you a promissory note which you will sign." Taking then a small piece of paper, he wrote. He handed me the note, saying, "Can you sign that ?"

"URBANA, MAY 23RD, 1856

DUE A. LINCOLN

FIFTY DOLLARS

FOR VALUE RECEIVED.

C. CHINIQUEY."

After reading it, I said, "Dear Mr. Lincoln, this is a joke. It is not possible that you ask only fifty dollars for services which are worth at least two thousand dollars."

He then tapped me with the right hand on the shoulder and said : "Sign that ; it is enough. I will pinch some rich men for that and make them pay the rest of the bill," and he laughed outright.

When Abraham Lincoln was writing the due-bill, the relaxation of the great strain upon my mind, and the great kindness of my benefactor and defender in charging me so little for such a service, and the terrible presentiment that he would pay with his life for what he had done for me, caused me to break into sobs and tears.

As Mr. Lincoln had finished writing the due-bill, he turned round to me and said, "Father Chiniquey, what are you crying for ?" Ought you not to be the most happy man alive ? You have beaten your enemies and gained a most glorious victory, and you will come out of all your troubles in triumph."

"Dear Mr. Lincoln," I answered, "allow me to tell you that the joy I should naturally feel for such a victory is destroyed in my mind by the fear of what it may cost you. There were, then, in the crowd not less than ten or twelve Jesuits from Chicago and St. Louis, who came to hear my sentence of condemnation to the penitentiary. But it was on their heads

that you have brought the thunders of heaven and earth ! nothing can be compared to the expression of their rage against you, when you not only wrenched me from their cruel hands, but you were making the walls of the Court-house tremble under the awful and superhumanly eloquent denunciations of their infamy, diabolical malice, and total want of Christian and human principle, in the plot they had formed for my destruction. What troubles my soul just now, and draws my tears, is that it seems to me that I have read your sentence of death in their bloody eyes. How many other noble victims have already fallen at their feet ! ”

He tried to divert my mind at first with a joke. “ Sign this,” said he, “ it will be my warrant of death.”

But after I had signed he became more solemn, and said, “ I know that Jesuits never forget or forsake. But man must not care how and where he dies, provided he dies at the post of honour and duty,” and he left me.

Here is the sworn declaration of Miss Philomene Moffat, now Mrs. Philomene Schwartz.

“ STATE OF ILLINOIS, Cook County.

“ Philomene Schwartz, being first duly sworn, deposes and says: That she is of the age of forty-three years, and resides at 484 Milwaukee Avenue, Chicago; that her maiden name was Philomene Moffatt; that she knew Father Le Belle, the Roman Catholic priest of the French Catholics of Chicago during his lifetime, and knows Rev. Father Chiniquy; that about the month of May, A.D. 1854, in company with Miss Eugenia Bossey, the housekeeper of her uncle, the Rev. Mr. Le Belle, who was then living at the Parsonage on Clark-street, Chicago, while we were sitting in the room of Miss Bossey, the Rev. Mr. Le Belle was talking with his sister, Mrs. Bossey, in the adjoining room, not suspecting that we were there hearing his conversation, through the door which was partly opened; though we could neither see him nor his sister, we heard every word of what they said together, the substance of which is as follows: Rev. Mr. Le Belle said in substance, to Mrs. Bossey, his sister: ‘ You know that Mr. Chiniquy is a dangerous man, and he is my enemy, having already persuaded several of my congregation to settle in his colony. You must help me to put him down, by accusing him of having tried to do a criminal act with you.’

“ Madame Bossey answered: ‘ I cannot say such a thing against Mr. Chiniquy, when I know it is absolutely false.’

“ Rev. Mr. Le Belle replied: ‘ If you refuse to comply with my request, I will not give you the one hundred and sixty acres of land I intended to give you; you will live and die poor.’

“ Madame Bossey answered: ‘ I prefer never to have that land, and I like better to live and die poor than to perjure myself to please you.’

“ The Rev. Mr. Le Belle several times urged his sister, Mrs.

Bossey, to comply with his desires, but she refused. At last, weeping and crying, she said, 'I prefer never to have an inch of land than to damn my soul for swearing a falsehood.'

"The Rev. Mr. Le Belle then said: 'Mr. Chiniquy will destroy our holy religion and our people if we do not destroy him. If you think that the swearing I ask you to do is a sin, you will come to confess to me, and I will pardon it in the absolution I will give you.'

" 'Have you the power to forgive a false oath?' replied Mrs. Bossey to her brother, the priest.

" 'Yes,' he answered, 'I have that power; for Christ has said to all His priests, "What you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and what you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven." "

"Mrs. Bossey then said: 'If you promise that you will forgive that false oath, and if you will give me the one hundred and sixty acres of land you promised, I will do what you want.'

"The Rev. Mr. Le Belle then said: 'All right!' I could not hear any more of that conversation, for in that instant Miss Eugenia Bossey, who had kept still and silent with us, made some noise and shut the door.

"Affiant further states: That some time later, I went to confess to Rev. Mr. Le Belle, and I told him that I had lost confidence in him. He asked me why? I answered: 'I lost my confidence in you since I heard your conversation with your sister, when you tried to persuade her to perjure herself in order to destroy Father Chiniquy.'

"Affiant further says: That in the month of October, A.D. 1856, the Rev. Mr. Chiniquy had to defend himself before the civil and criminal court of Urbana, Illinois, in an action brought against him by Peter Spink; some one wrote from Urbana to a paper of Chicago, that Father Chiniquy was probably to be condemned. The paper which published that letter was much read by the Roman Catholics, who were glad to hear that the priest was to be punished. Among those who read that paper was Narcisse Terrien. He had lately been married to Miss Sara Chaussey, who told him that Father Chiniquy was innocent; that she was present with me when Rev. Mr. Le Belle prepared the plot with his sister, Mrs. Bossey; had promised her a large piece of land if she would swear falsely against Father Chiniquy. Mr. Narcisse Terrien wanted to go with his wife to the help of Father Chiniquy, but she was unwell and could not go. He came to ask me if I remembered well the conversation of Rev. Mr. Le Belle, and if I would consent to go to Urbana to expose the whole plot before the Court, and I consented.

"We started that same evening for Urbana, where we arrived late at night. I immediately went to Mr. Abraham Lincoln, one of the lawyers of Father Chiniquy, and told him all that I knew about the plot.

"That very same night the Rev. Mr. Le Belle, having seen

my name on the hotel register, came to me much excited and troubled, and said, 'Philomene, what are you here for?'

"I answered him: 'I cannot exactly tell you that; but you will probably know it to-morrow morning at the Court-house.'

" 'Oh, wretched girl!' he exclaimed, 'you have come to destroy me.'

" 'I do not come to destroy you,' I replied, 'for you are already destroyed!'

"Then drawing from his portmonnaie-book a big bundle of bank notes, which he said was worth one hundred dollars, he said: 'I will give you all this money if you will leave by the morning train and go back to Chicago.'

"I answered him: 'Though you would offer me as much gold as this room can contain, I cannot do what you ask.'

"He then seemed exceedingly distressed, and he disappeared. The next morning Peter Spink requested the Court to allow him to withdraw his accusations against Father Chiniquy, and to stop his prosecutions, having, he said, found out that he, Father Chiniquy, was innocent of the things brought against him, and his request was granted. Then the innocence and honesty of Father Chiniquy was acknowledged by the Court after it had been proclaimed by Abraham Lincoln who was afterwards elected President of the United States.

(Signed) PHILOMENE SCHWARTZ.

"I, Stephen R. Moore, a Notary Public in the County of Kankakee, in the State of Illinois, and duly authorised to administer oaths, do hereby certify that, on this 21st day of October, A.D. 1881, Philomene Schwartz personally appeared before me, and made oath that the above affidavit by her subscribed is true, as therein stated. In witness whereunto, I have hereunto set my hand and notarial seal.

STEPHEN R. MOORE, Notary Public."

CHAPTER LVI.

**My sad Previsions about my Defender, Abraham Lincoln—
Rome the Implacable Enemy of the United States.**

WHEN it became evident, in 1851, that my plan of forming a grand colony of Roman Catholic French-speaking people on the prairies of Illinois was to be a success, D'Arcy McGee, then editor of *The Freeman's Journal*, official journal of the Bishop of New York, wrote me to know my views, and immediately determined to put himself at the head of a similar enterprise in behalf of the Irish Roman Catholics. He published several able articles to show that the Irish people, with very few exceptions, were demoralised, degraded, and kept poor, around their groggeries, and showed how they would thrive, become respectable and rich, if they could be induced to exchange their grog-shops for the fertile lands of the West. Through his influence, a large assembly, principally composed of priests, to which I was invited, met at Buffalo, in the Spring of 1852. But what was his disappointment, when he saw that the greatest part of those priests were sent by the Bishops of the United States to oppose and defeat his plans !

He vainly spoke with a burning eloquence for his pet scheme. The majority coldly answered him : " We are determined, like you, to take possession of the United States, and rule them ; but we cannot do that without acting secretly and with the utmost wisdom. If our plans become known, they will surely be defeated. What does a skilful general do when he wants to conquer a country ? Does he scatter his soldiers over the farm lands, and spend their time and energy in ploughing the fields and sowing grain ? No ! He keeps them well united around his banners, and marches at their head, to the conquest of the strongholds, the rich and powerful cities. The farming countries then submit and become the price of his victory without moving a finger to subdue them. So it is with us. Silently and patiently we must mass our Roman Catholics in the great cities of the United States, remembering that the vote of the poor journeyman, though he be covered with rags, has as much weight in the scale of power as the millionaire Astor, and that if we have two votes against his one, he will become as powerless as an oyster. Let us, then, multiply our votes ; let us call our poor but faithful Irish Catholics from every corner of the world, and gather them into the very hearts of those proud citadels which the Yankees are so rapidly building under the names of Washington, New York, Boston, Chicago, Buffalo, Albany, Troy, Cincinnati, etc. Under the shadows of those great cities, the Americans consider themselves as a giant and unconquerable race. They look upon the poor Irish Catholic people with supreme contempt, as only fit to dig their canals, sweep their streets, and work in their kitchens. Let no one awake those sleeping lions to-day. Let

us pray God that they may sleep and dream their sweet dreams a few years more. How sad will their awakening be, when, with our out-numbering votes, we will turn them, for ever, from every position of honour, power and profit ! What will those hypocritical and godless sons and daughters of the fanatical Pilgrim Fathers say, when not a single judge, not a single teacher, not a single policeman will be elected if he be not a devoted Irish Roman Catholic ? What will those so-called giants think of their matchless shrewdness and ability, when not a single Senator or member of Congress will be chosen, if he be not submitted to our holy father the Pope ? What a sad figure those Protestant Yankees will cut when we will not only elect the President, but fill and command the armies, man the navies, and hold the keys of the public treasury ? It will then be time for our faithful Irish people to give up their grog-shops, in order to become judges and governors of the land. Then our poor and humble mechanics will leave their damp ditches and muddy streets to rule the cities in all their departments, from the stately mansion of Mayor to the more humble, though not less noble position of teacher.

"Then, yes ! then, we will rule the United States, and lay them at the feet of the Vicar of Jesus Christ, that he may put an end to their godless system of education, and sweep away those impious laws of liberty of conscience which are an insult to God and man !"

D'Arcy McGee was left almost alone when the votes were taken. From that time the Catholic priests, with the most admirable ability and success, have gathered their Irish legions into the great cities of the United States ; and the American people must be very blind indeed, if they do not see that if they do nothing to prevent it, the day is very near when the Jesuits will rule their country, from the magnificent White House at Washington, to the humblest civil and military department of this vast Republic. They are already the masters of New York, Baltimore, Chicago, St. Paul, New Orleans, Mobile, Savannah, Cincinnati, Albany, Troy, Milwaukee, St. Louis, San Francisco, etc. Yes ! San Francisco, the rich, the great queen of the Pacific, is in the hands of the Jesuits !

From the very first days of the discovery of the gold mines of California, the Jesuits had the hopes of becoming masters of those treasures, and they secretly laid their plans with the most profound ability and success.

The consequence is, that while you find only a few Americans, Germans, Scotch and English millionaires in San Francisco, you find more than fifty Catholic Irish millionaires in that city. Its richest bank (Nevada Bank) is in their hands, and so are all the street railways. The principal offices of the city are filled with Irish Roman Catholics. Almost all the police are composed of the same class, as well as the volunteer military associations. Their compact unity in the hands of the Jesuits, with their enormous wealth, make them almost supreme

masters of the mines of California and Nevada.

When one knows the absolute, abject submission of the Irish Roman Catholics, rich or poor, to their priests ; how the mind, the soul, the will, the conscience are firmly and irrevocably tied to the feet of their priests, he can easily understand that the Jesuits of the United States form one of the richest and most powerful corporations the world ever saw.

It is well known that those fifty Catholic millionaires, with their myriads of employees, are, through their wives, and by themselves, continually at the feet of the Jesuits, who swim in a golden sea.

No one, if he be not a Roman Catholic, or one of the so-called Protestants who give their daughters to the nuns and their sons to the Jesuits to be educated, has much hopes, where the Jesuits rule, of having a lucrative office in the United States to-day.

The Americans, with few exceptions, do not pay any attention to the dark cloud which is rising at their horizon from Rome. Though that cloud is filled with rivers of tears and blood, they let it grow and rise without even caring how they will escape from the impending hurricane.

Rome is in constant conspiracy against the rights and liberties of man all over the world ; but she is particularly so in the United States. Long before I was ordained a priest I knew that my Church was the most implacable enemy of this Republic. My professors of philosophy, history, and theology had been unanimous in telling me that the principles and laws of the Church of Rome were absolutely antagonistic to the laws and principles which are the foundation stones of the Constitution of the United States.

1st. The most sacred principle of the United States Constitution is the equality of every citizen before the law. But the fundamental principle of the Church of Rome is the denial of that quality.

2nd. Liberty of conscience is proclaimed by the United States a most sacred principle, which every citizen must uphold, even at the price of his blood. But liberty of conscience is declared by all the Popes and Councils of Rome, a most godless, unholy, and diabolical thing, which every good Catholic must abhor and destroy at any cost.

3rd. The American Constitution assures the absolute independence of the civil from the ecclesiastical or Church power ; but the Church of Rome declares, through all her Pontiffs and Councils, that such independence is an impiety and a revolt against God.

4th. The American Constitution leaves every man free to serve God according to the dictates of his conscience ; but the Church of Rome declares that no man has ever had such a right, and that the Pope alone can know and say what man must believe and do.

5th. The Constitution of the United States denies the right

in anybody to punish any other for differing from him in religion. But the Church of Rome says that she has a right to punish with the confiscation of their goods, or the penalty of death, those who differ in faith from the Pope.

6th. The United States have established schools all over their immense territories, where they invite the people to send their children, that they may cultivate their intelligence and become good and useful citizens. But the Church of Rome has publicly cursed all those schools, and forbidden their children to attend them, under pain of excommunication in this world and damnation in the next.

7th. The Constitution of the United States is based on the principle that the people are the primary source of all civil power. But, hundreds of times, the Church of Rome has proclaimed that this principle is impious and heretical. She says that "all government must rest upon the foundation of the Catholic faith; with the Pope alone as the legitimate and infallible source and interpreter of the law."

I could cite many other things, proving that the Church of Rome is an absolute and irreconcilable enemy of the United States; but it would be too long. These are sufficient to show to the American people that Rome is a viper, which they feed and press upon their bosom. Sooner or later that viper will bite to death and kill this Republic. This was foretold by Lafayette, and is now promulgated by the greatest thinkers of our time.

The great inventor, or rather the immortal father of electric telegraphy, Samuel Morse, found it out when in Rome, and published it in 1834, in his remarkable work, *Conspiracies against the Liberties of the United States*. The learned Dr. S. Ireneus Prime, in his life of Professor Morse, says: "When Mr. Morse was in Italy, he became acquainted with several ecclesiastics of the Church of Rome, and he was led to believe, from what he learned from them, that a political conspiracy, under the cloak of a religious mission, was formed against the United States. When he came to Paris and enjoyed the confidence and friendship of Lafayette, he stated his convictions to the General, who fully concurred with him in the reality of such a conspiracy."

That great statesman and patriot, the late Richard W. Thompson, Secretary of the Navy, in his admirable work, *The Papacy and the Civil Power*, says: "Nothing is plainer than that, if the principles of the Church of Rome prevail here, our Constitution would necessarily fall. The two cannot exist together. They are in open and direct antagonism with the fundamental theory of our government and of all popular government everywhere."

But why ask the testimony of Protestants or Liberals to warn the American people against that conspiracy, when we have the public testimony of all the bishops and priests to prove it? With the most daring impudence the Church of Rome,

through her leading men, is boasting of her stern determination to destroy all the rights and privileges which have cost so much blood to this American people. Let the Americans, who have eyes to see and intelligence to understand, judge for themselves of what will become of their country if Rome is allowed to grow strong enough to execute her threats.

"The Church is of necessity intolerant. Heresy, she endures when and where she must, but she hates it, and directs all her energies to destroy it."

Everyone knows that one of the first and most solemn acts of Pope Leo XIII., was to order that the theology of St. Thomas Aquinas should be taught in all the colleges, seminaries, and universities of the Church of Rome, throughout the whole world, as the most accurate teaching of the doctrines of the Church. Well, on the 30th of December, 1880, I forced the Right Rev. Foley, Bishop of Chicago, to translate from Latin into English, before the Court of Kankakee, and to swear that the following law was among those promulgated by St. Thomas as one of the present and unchangeable laws of the Church of Rome:

"Though heretics must not be tolerated because they deserve it, we must bear with them, till, by a second admonition, they may be brought back to the faith of the Church. But those who, after a second admonition, remain obstinate in their errors, must not only be excommunicated, but they must be delivered to the secular power to be exterminated."—St. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologia*, vol. iv., p. 90.

After the bishop had sworn that this was the true doctrine of the Church of Rome, expressed by St. Thomas, and taught in the colleges, seminaries and universities of the Church of Rome, I forced him to declare, under oath, that he, and every priest of Rome, once a year, under the pain of eternal damnation, is obliged to say, in the presence of God, in his Breviarum (his official prayer book), that that doctrine was so good and holy, that every word of it has been inspired by the Holy Ghost to St. Thomas.

The same Bishop Foley was again forced by me, before the same Court, to translate from Latin into English, the following decree of the 4th Council of Lateran, and to acknowledge under oath that it was as much the law of the Church of Rome to-day, as on the day it was passed in the year 1215.

"We excommunicate and anathematise every heresy that exalts itself against the holy orthodox and Catholic faith, condemning all heretics, by whatever name they may be known, for though their faces differ, they are tied together by their tails. Such as are condemned are to be delivered over to the existing secular powers to receive due punishment. If laymen, their goods must be confiscated. If priests, they shall be degraded from their respective orders, and their property applied to the church in which they officiated. Secular powers of all ranks and degrees are to be warned, induced, and, if necessary,

compelled by ecclesiastical censure, to swear that they will exert themselves to the utmost in the defence of the faith, and extirpate all heretics denounced by the Church, who shall be found in their territories. And whenever any person shall assume government, whether it be spiritual or temporal, he shall be bound to abide by this decree."

"If any temporal lord, after having been admonished and required by the Church, shall neglect to clear his territory of heretical depravity, the Metropolitan and Bishop of the Province shall unite in excommunicating him. Should he remain contumacious a whole year, the fact shall be signified to the Supreme Pontiff, who will declare his vassals released from their allegiance from that time, and will bestow his territory on Catholics, to be occupied by them, on condition of exterminating the heretics and preserving the said territory in the faith."

Cardinal Manning, speaking in the name of the Pope, said: "I acknowledge no civil power; I am the subject of no prince; and I claim more than this. I claim to be the supreme judge and director of the consciences of men. Of the peasants that till the fields, and of the prince that sits upon the throne; of the household that lives in the shade of privacy, and the legislator that makes laws for kingdoms. I am sole, last, supreme judge of what is right and wrong. Moreover we declare, affirm, define, and pronounce it to be necessary to salvation to every human creature, to be subject to the Roman Pontiff." (*Tablet*, October 9th, 1864).

"Undoubtedly it is the intention of the Pope to possess this country. In this intention he is aided by the Jesuits, and all the Catholic prelates and priests." (*Brownson's Review*, May, 1864).

"For our own part we take this opportunity to express our hearty delight at the suppression of the Protestant Chapel in Rome. This may be thought intolerant; but when, we ask, did we profess to be tolerant of Protestantism, or to favour the question that Protestantism ought to be tolerated? On the contrary, we hate Protestantism. We detest it with our heart and soul, and we pray our aversion for it may never decrease."—*Pittsburg Catholic Visitor*, July, 1848 (official journal of the Bishop).

"If the liberties of the American people are ever destroyed, they will fall by the hands of the Catholic clergy."—*Lafayette*.

"If your son or daughter is attending a State School, you are violating your duty as a Catholic parent, and concurring to the everlasting anguish and despair of your child. Take him away. Take him away if you do not wish your deathbed to be tormented with the spectre of a soul which God has given you as a sacred trust, surrendered to the great enemy of mankind. Take him away, rather than incur the wrath of his God, and the loss of his soul."—*Western Tablet*, official paper of the Bishop of Chicago.

All the echoes of the United States are still repeating the same denunciations against our public schools made by Mgr. Capel, a prelate attached to the household of the Pope. That Roman Catholic dignitary has not only passed again the sentence of death against the schools of the United States; but he has warned the Americans that the time is not far away when the Roman Catholics, at the order of the Pope, will refuse to pay their school tax, and will send bullets to the breasts of the government agents, rather than pay it. "The order can come any day from Rome," said the prelate." It will come as quickly as the click of the trigger, and it will be obeyed, of course, as coming from God Almighty Himself."

Lord Acton, one of the Roman Catholic peers of England, reproaching her bloody and anti-social laws to his own Church, wrote: "Pope Gregory VII. decided it was no murder to kill excommunicated persons. This rule was incorporated in the canon law. During the revision of the code, which took place in the sixteenth century, and which produced a whole volume of corrections, the passage was allowed to stand. It appears in every reprint of the *Corpus Juris*. It has been for 700 years, and continues to be, part of the ecclesiastical law. Far from being a dead letter, it obtained a new application in the days of the Inquisition; and one of the later Popes has declared that the murder of a Protestant is so good a deed that it atones, and more than atones, for the murder of a Catholic."—*The Times*, July 20th, 1872.

Those bloody and anti-social laws were written on the banners of the Roman Catholics when slaughtering 100,000 Waldenses in the mountains of Piedmont, and more than 50,000 defenceless men, women, and children, in the City of Beziers. It was under the inspiration of those diabolical laws of Rome, that 75,000 Protestants were massacred, the night and the following week of St. Bartholomew. It was to obey those bloody laws that Louis XIV. revoked the Edict of Nantes, caused the death of half-a-million men, women, and children, who perished in all the highways of France, and caused twice that number to die in the land of exile.

Those anti-social laws, to-day, are written on her banners with the blood of ten millions of martyrs. It is under those bloody banners that 6,000 Roman Catholic priests, Jesuits, and bishops, in the United States, are marching to the conquest of the Republic.

These diabolical and anti-social laws of Rome caused a Roman Catholic (Beauregard) to be the man chosen to fire the first gun at Fort Sumter, against the flag of liberty, on April 12th, 1861. Those anti-Christian and anti-social laws caused the Pope of Rome to be the only crowned prince in the whole world so depraved as to publicly shake hands with Jeff Davis, and proclaim him president of a legitimate government.

These are the laws which led the assassins of Abraham

Lincoln to the house of a rabid Roman Catholic woman, Mary Suratt, which was not only the rendezvous of the priests of Washington, but the very dwelling-house of some of them. That woman, gifted by God to be an angel of peace and mercy on earth, was changed by those laws into a bloodthirsty tigress ; for she had smelt the blood which, everywhere, comes from the robe, the hands, and the lips of the priest of Rome.

Those bloody and infernal laws of Rome nerved the arm of the Roman Catholic Booth, when he slaughtered one of the noblest men God has ever given to the world. Those bloody and anti-social laws of Rome, after having covered Europe with ruins, tears, and blood for ten centuries, have crossed the oceans to continue their work of slavery and desolation, blood and tears, ignorance and demoralisation, on this continent. Under the mask and name of Democracy, they have raised the standard of rebellion of the South against the North, and caused more than half a million of the most heroic sons of America to fall on the fields of carnage.

In a very near future, if God does not miraculously prevent it, those laws of dark deeds and blood will cause the prosperity, the rights, the education, and the liberties of this too confident nation, to be buried under a mountain of smoking bloody ruins. On the top of that mountain, Rome will raise her throne and plant her victorious banners.

CHAPTER LVII.

The Fundamental Principles of the Constitution of the United States drawn from the Gospel of Christ.**EQUALITY AND FRATERNITY OF MEN PROCLAIMED BY CHRIST.**

"Be ye not called Rabbi. For one is your Master, even Christ. And all ye are brethren" (Matthew xxiii: 8).

"God is no respecter of persons. But in every nation, he that feareth Him and worketh righteousness is accepted with Him" (Acts x: 34, 35).

"Jesus called them unto Him and said: Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

"But it shall not be so among you: But whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister: And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

"Even as the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and give His life a ransom for many" (Matt. xx: 25-28).

PRINCIPLES OF LIBERTY PROCLAIMED BY CHRIST.

"If ye continue in My word, then are ye My disciples indeed, and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. If the Son shall make you free, you shall be free indeed" (John viii: 32).

"The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me, because He hath anointed Me to preach the Gospel to the poor! He hath sent Me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised" (Luke iv: 18).

"Where the Spirit of God is, there is liberty" (2 Cor. iii: 17).

TOLERANCE AND LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE PROCLAIMED BY CHRIST.

"And they did not receive Him (Christ) because His face was as though He would go to Jerusalem. And when His disciples, James and John, saw this, they said: Wilt Thou that we command fire to come down from heaven and consume them, even as Elias did?"

"But He turned and rebuked them, and said: Ye know not what spirit ye are of.

"For the Son of Man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them" (Luke ix: 53-56).

"Then Simon Peter, having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus.

"Then Jesus said unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which My Father hath given Me, shall I not drink it? For all that take the sword, shall perish by the sword" (Matthew xxvi: 52; John xviii: 10).

It is no wonder that the people of Judea, filled with admira-

tion at these sublime doctrines of equality, fraternity, liberty, and tolerance, should exclaim "Never man spake like this Man!"

Is it on those admirable principles that the Church of Rome is founded? No! For she has, thousands of times, proclaimed that her mission was to destroy them all, even if she had to wade in the blood of those who support them.

But just as the Roman Catholic Church is not only the very antipodes and the most implacable enemy of those admirable doctrines and principles, so the Constitution of the United States is the ripe fruit of this divine seed, sown by the Son of God Himself in the bosom of humanity, eighteen hundred years ago, to save the world.

Yes, in reference to those principles of fraternity, equality, liberty, and tolerance, the Constitution of the United States is to the Gospel of Christ what the fruit is to the tree which has given it. And this is the verdict given by the whole world, the Church of Rome excepted.

Why is it that the poor, the bruised, the wounded and the oppressed from every land, turn their eyes, their hearts, and their steps, towards this country? It is because all the echoes of heaven and earth have told them that the United States Republic is, *par excellence*, the land of fraternity, fair-play, equality, and liberty, as the Saviour of the world has revealed them.

The Pope of Rome and his Jesuits know this better than any one. Hence their constant and supreme efforts to destroy this Republic. Believing and preaching that it is their duty to exterminate the individuals who differ from them in religion, they assume that it is their duty to destroy the governments and the nations who refuse to submit to her yoke, when they can do it safely.

From the very beginning she sowed the germs of division and hatred between the two great sections of this country, and she felt an unspeakable joy when she saw that she had succeeded in dividing its South from the North, on the burning question of slavery. She looked upon that division as her golden opportunity. To crush one party by the other, and reign over the bloody ruins of both, has invariably been her policy. She hoped that the hour of her supreme triumph over this continent had come. She ordered her eldest son, the Emperor of France, to keep himself ready to help her crush the North, by having an Army in Mexico ready to support the South, and she bade all the Roman Catholic bishops, priests, and people, to enroll themselves under the banners of slavery, by joining themselves to the party of "Democracy." And everybody knows how the Roman Catholic bishops and priests, almost to a man, obeyed that order. Only one bishop dared to disobey. Above everything, it was ordered to oppose the election of Lincoln at any cost. For, from the first day his eloquent voice had been heard, a thrill of terror had gone

through the hearts of the partisans of slavery. The Democratic press, which was then, as it is still now, almost entirely under the control of Roman Catholics, and the devoted tool of the Jesuits, deluged the country with the most fearful denunciations against him. They called him an ape, a stupid brute, a most dangerous lunatic, a bloody monster, a merciless tyrant, etc., etc. In a word, Rome exhausted all her resources of language, she ransacked the English dictionary to find the expressions to fill the people with contempt, hatred, and horror against him. But it was written in the decrees of God that the honest Abraham Lincoln should be proclaimed President of the United States on the 4th March, 1861.

At the end of August, having known from a Roman Catholic priest, whom, by the mercy of God, I had persuaded to leave the errors of Popery, that there was a plot among them to assassinate the President, I thought it was my duty to go and tell him what I knew, at the same time giving him an assurance of gratitude for what he had done for me.

Knowing that I was among those who were waiting in the ante-chamber, he sent immediately for me, and received me with greater cordiality and marks of kindness than I could expect. "I am so glad to meet you again," he said. "You see that your friends, the Jesuits, have not yet killed me. But they would have surely done it when I passed through their most devoted city, Baltimore, had I not defeated their plans by passing incognito a few hours before they expected me. We have proof that the company which had been selected and organised to murder me, was led by a rabid Roman Catholic called Byrne. It was almost entirely composed of Roman Catholics. More than that, there were two disguised priests among them to lead and encourage them. I am sorry to have so little time to see you, but I will not let you go before telling you that, a few days ago, I saw Mr. Morse, the learned inventor of electric telegraphy. He told me that, when he was in Rome not long ago, he found out the proofs of a most formidable conspiracy against this country and all its institutions. It is evident that it is to the intrigues and emissaries of the Pope that we owe, in great part, the horrible civil war which is threatening to cover the country with blood and ruins.

"I am sorry that Professor Morse had to leave Rome before he could know more about the secret plans of the Jesuits against the liberties and the very existence of this country. But do you know that I want you to take his place and continue that investigation? My plan is to attach you to my ambassador of France, as one of the secretaries. In that honourable position you would go from Paris to Rome, where you might find, through the directions of Mr. Morse, an opportunity of reuniting the broken threads of his researches. 'It takes a Greek to fight a Greek.' As you have been twenty-five years a priest of Rome, I do not know any man in the United States so well acquainted as you are with the tricks of the

Jesuits, and on the devotedness of whom I could better rely. And when once on the staff of my ambassador, even as one of the secretaries, might you not soon yourself become the ambassador? I am in need of Christian men in every department of the public service, but more in those high positions. What do you think of that?"

"My dear President," I answered, "I feel overwhelmed by your kindness. Surely nothing could be more pleasant to me than to grant your request. The honour you want to confer upon me is much above my merit, but my conscience tells me that I cannot give up the preaching of the Gospel to my poor French-Canadian countrymen, who are still in the errors of Popery. For I am about the only one who, by the Providence of God, has any real influence over them. I am, surely, the only one the bishops and priests seem to fear in that work. The many attempts they have made to take away my life are a proof of it. Besides that, though I consider the present President of the United States much above the Emperors of France, Russia, and Austria, much above the greatest kings of the world, I feel that I am the servant, the ambassador of One who is as much above even the good and great President of the United States, as the heavens are above the earth. I appeal to your own Christian and honourable feelings to know if I can forsake the one for the other."

The President became very solemn, and replied: "You are right! You are right! There is nothing so great under heaven as to be the ambassador of Christ."

But, then, coming back to himself, with one of his fine jokes, which he always had ready, he added:—

"Yes! Yes! You are the ambassador of a greater Prince than I am; but He does not pay you with so good cash as I would do." He then added: "I am exceedingly pleased to see you. However, I am so pressed just now, by the most important affairs, that you must excuse me if I ask you to give your place to one of my generals, who is waiting for me. Please come again, tomorrow, at ten o'clock; I have a very important question to ask you, on a matter which has been constantly before my mind these last few weeks."

The next day I was, at the appointed hour, with my noble friend, who said: "I could not give you more than ten minutes yesterday, but I will give you twenty to-day. I want your views about a thing which is exceedingly puzzling to me, and you are the only one to whom I like to speak on that subject. A great number of Democratic papers have been sent to me lately, evidently written by the Roman Catholics, publishing that I was born a Roman Catholic, and baptized by a priest. They call me a renegade, an apostate, on account of that; and they heap on my head mountains of abuses. At first I laughed at that, for it is a lie. Thanks be to God, I have never been a Roman Catholic. No priest of Rome has ever laid his hand on my head. But the persistency of the Romish press to pre-

sent this falsehood to their readers as a gospel truth must have a meaning. Please tell me, as briefly as possible, what you think about that."

"My dear President," I answered, "it was just this strange story published about you which brought me here yesterday. I wanted to say a word about it, but you were too busy. Let me tell you that I wept as a child when I read that story for the first time. For not only is it my impression that it is your sentence of death, but I have it from the lips of a converted priest, that it is in order to excite the fanaticism of the Roman Catholic murderers, whom they hope to find sooner or later, to strike you down, that they have invented that false story of your being born in the Church of Rome, and of your being baptized by a priest. They want, by that, to brand your face with the ignominious mark of apostacy. Do not forget that in the Church of Rome an apostate is an outcast, who has no place in society, and who has no right to live. The Jesuits want the Roman Catholics to believe that you are a monster, an open enemy of God and of His Church, that you are an excommunicated man. For every apostate is, *ipso facto* excommunicated. I have brought to you the theology of one of the most learned and approved Jesuits of his time, Bussembaum, who, with many others, says that the man who will kill you will do a good and holy work. More than that, here is a copy of a decree of Gregory VII., proclaiming that the killing of an apostate, or a heretic and excommunicated man, as you are declared to be, is not a murder; nay that it is a good, a Christian action. That decree is incorporated in the canon law, which every priest must study, and which every good Catholic must follow. My dear President, I must repeat to you what I said at Urbana, in 1856. My fear is that you will fall under the blows of a Jesuit assassin, if you do not pay more attention than you have done, till now, to protect yourself. The unanimity with which the Catholic hierarchy of the United States is on the side of the rebels, is an incontrovertible evidence that Rome wants to destroy this republic, and as you are, by your personal virtues, your popularity, your love of liberty, your position, the greatest obstacle to their diabolical schemes, their hatred is concentrated upon you; you are the daily object of their maledictions—it is at your breast they will direct their blows. My blood chills in my veins, when I contemplate the day which may come, sooner or later, when Rome will add to all her other iniquities the murder of Abraham Lincoln."

When saying these things to the President I was exceedingly moved. But the President was perfectly calm. When I had finished speaking, he took the volume of Bussembaum from my hand, read the lines I had marked with red ink, and I helped him to translate them into English. He then gave me back the book and said:

"I will repeat to you what I said at Urbana, when for the

first time you told me your fears lest I would be assassinated by the Jesuits. 'Man must not care where and when he will die, provided he dies at the post of honour and duty.' But I may add to-day that I have a presentiment that God will call me to Him through the hand of an assassin. Let His will and not mine be done!" He then looked at his watch and said: "I am sorry that the twenty minutes I had consecrated to our interview have almost passed away; I will be for ever grateful for the warning words you have addressed to me about the dangers ahead to my life from Rome. I know that they are not imaginary dangers. If I were fighting against a Protestant South, as a nation, there would be no danger of assassination. The nations who read the Bible fight bravely on the battlefields, but they do not assassinate their enemies. The Pope and the Jesuits, with their infernal Inquisition, are the only organised power in the world which have recourse to the dagger of the assassin to murder those whom they cannot convince with their arguments, or conquer with the sword.

"Unfortunately, I feel more and more every day that it is not against the Americans of the South alone I am fighting, it is more against the Pope of Rome, his perfidious Jesuits and their blind and blood-thirsty slaves, than against the real American Protestants, that we have to defend ourselves. Here is the real danger of our position. So long as they will hope to conquer the North they will spare me; but the day we will rout their armies (and that day will surely come, with the help of God), take their cities, and force them to submit, then it is my impression that the Jesuits, who are the principal rulers of the South, will do what they have almost invariably done in the past. The dagger, or the pistol of one of their adepts, will do what the strong hands of the warriors could not achieve. This civil war seems to be nothing but a political affair to those who do not see, as I do, the secret springs of that terrible drama. But it is more a religious than a civil war. It is Rome who wants to rule and degrade the North, as she has ruled and degraded the South from the very day of its discovery. Even the Protestant ministers are under the influence of the Jesuits without suspecting it. To keep her ascendancy in the North, as she does in the South, Rome is doing here what she has done in Mexico, and in all the South American Republics: she is paralysing, by civil war, the arms of the soldiers of Liberty. She divides our nation in order to weaken, subdue, and rule it.

"Surely we have some brave and reliable Roman Catholic officers and soldiers in our armies, but they form an insignificant minority when compared with the Roman Catholic traitors against whom we have to guard ourselves day and night. The fact is that the immense majority of Roman Catholic bishops, priests, and laymen, are rebels at heart when they cannot be in fact; for, with very few exceptions, they are in favour of slavery. For it is a fact, which is now evident to

me, that, with very few exceptions, every priest and every Roman Catholic is a determined enemy of Liberty. Their extermination, in France, was one of those terrible necessities which no human wisdom could avoid; it looks to me now as an order from heaven to save France. May God grant that the same terrible necessity be never felt in the United States. But there is a thing which is very certain—it is, that if the American people could learn what I know of the fierce hatred of the generality of the priests of Rome against our institutions, our schools, our most sacred rights, and our dearly bought liberties, they would drive them away to-morrow from among us, or they would shoot them as traitors. But I keep those sad secrets in my heart; you are the only one to whom I reveal them, for I know that you learned them before me. Please accept my sincere thanks for the new light you have given me on the dangers of my position, and come again. I will always see you with new pleasure."

My next visit to Abraham Lincoln was at the beginning of June, 1862. The grand victory of the Monitor over the Merrimac, and the conquest of New Orleans, by the brave and Christian Farragut had filled every heart with joy; I wanted to unite my feeble voice to that of the whole country to tell him how I blessed God for that glorious success. But I found him so busy that I could only shake hands with him.

The third and last time I went to pay my respects to the doomed President, and warn him against the impending dangers which I knew were threatening him, was on the morning of June 8th, 1864, when he was absolutely besieged by people who wanted to see him. After a kind and warm shaking of hands he said:—

"I am much pleased to see you again. But it is impossible, to-day, to say anything more than this: Tomorrow afternoon I will receive a delegation of the deputies of all the loyal States, sent to officially announce the desire of the country that I should remain the President four years more. I invite you to be present with them at that interesting meeting. You will see some of the most prominent men of our Republic, and I will be glad to introduce you to them. You will not present yourself as a delegate of the people, but only as a guest of the President: and that there may be no trouble, I will give you this card with a permit to enter with the delegation. But do not leave Washington before I see you again; I have some important matters on which I want to know your mind."

The next day it was my privilege to have the greatest honour ever received by me. The good President wanted me to stand at his right hand when he received the delegation, and hear the address presented by Governor Dennison, the President of the Convention, to which he replied in his own admirable simplicity and eloquence; finishing with one of his most witty anecdotes. "I am reminded in this conversation of a story of an old Dutch farmer, who remarked to a companion,

wisely, 'that it was not best to swap horses when crossing a stream.' "

The next day, he kindly took me with him in his carriage, when visiting the 30,000 wounded soldiers picked up on the battlefields. The only thought which seemed to occupy the mind of the President was the part which Rome had in that horrible struggle. Many times he repeated: "This war would never have been possible without the sinister influence of the Jesuits. We owe it to Popery that we now see our land red-dened with the blood of her noblest sons. Though there were great differences of opinion between the South and North, on the question of slavery, neither Jeff Davis nor any one of the leading men of the Confederacy would have dared to attack the North, had they not relied on the promise of the Jesuits, that, under the mask of Democracy, the money and the arms of the Roman Catholics, even the arms of France, were at their disposal if they would attack us."

When the President was speaking thus, we arrived at the door of his mansion. He invited me to go with him to his study, and said: "Though I am very busy, I must rest an hour with you. I am in need of that rest. My head is aching, I feel as crushed under the burden of affairs which are on my shoulders. There are many important things about the plots of the Jesuits that I can learn only from you. Please wait just a moment, I have just received some dispatches from General Grant, to which I must give an answer. My secretary is waiting for me. I go to him. Please amuse yourself with those books during my short absence."

Twenty-five minutes later, the President returned, with his face flushed with joy.

"Glorious news! General Grant has again beaten Lee, and forced him to retreat towards Richmond, where he will have to surrender before long. Grant is a real hero. But let us come to the questions I want to put to you. Have you read the letter of the Pope to Jeff Davis, and what do you think of it?"

"My dear President," I answered, "it is just that letter which brought me to your presence again, the day before yesterday. I wanted to come and see you, from the very day I read it. But I knew you were so overwhelmed with the affairs of your government, that I would not be able to see you. However, the anxieties of my mind were so, that I determined to go over every barrier to warn you against the new dangers and plots which I knew would come out from that perfidious letter, against your life.

"By this letter of the Pope to Jeff Davis you are not only an apostate, as you were thought before, whom every man had the right to kill, according to the canonical laws of Rome; but you are more vile, criminal, and cruel than the horse-thief, the public banditti, and the lawless brigand, robber, and murderer, whom it is a duty to stop and kill, when we take them

in their acts of blood, and that there is no other way to put an end to their plunders and murders.

"And, my dear President, the meaning I give you of this perfidious letter of the Pope to Jeff Davis, is not a fancy of imagination on my part, it is the unanimous explanation given me by a great number of the priests of Rome, with whom I have had occasion to speak on that subject. In the name of God and in the name of our dear country, which is so much in need of your services, I conjure you to pay more attention to protect your precious life, and not to continue to expose it as you have done till now."

The President listened to my words with breathless attention. He replied: "You confirm me in the views I had taken of the letter of the Pope. Professor Morse is of the same mind with you. It is, indeed, the most perfidious act which could occur under present circumstances. You are perfectly correct when you say that it was to detach the Roman Catholics who had enrolled themselves in our armies. Since the publication of that letter a great number of them have deserted their banners and turned traitors; very few, comparatively, have remained true to their oath of fidelity. It is, however, very lucky that one of those few, Sheridan, is worth a whole army by his ability, his patriotism, and his heroic courage. It is true also that Meade has remained with us and gained the bloody battle at Gettysburgh. But how could he lose it when he was surrounded by such heroes as Howard, Reynolds, Buford, Wadsworth, Cutler, Slocum, Sickles, Hancock, Barnes, etc. But it is evident that his Romanism superseded his patriotism after the battle. He let the army of Lee escape, when it was so easy to cut off his retreat and force him to surrender, after having lost nearly half of his soldiers in the last three days' carnage. When Meade was to order the pursuit after the battle, a stranger came, in haste, to the headquarters, and that stranger was a disguised Jesuit. After a ten minutes' conversation with him, Meade made such arrangements for the pursuit of the enemy that he escaped almost untouched, with the loss of only two guns.

"You are right," said the President, "when you say that this letter of the Pope has entirely changed the nature and the ground of the war. Before they read it the Roman Catholics could see that I was fighting against Jeff Davis and his Southern Confederacy. But now they must believe that it is against Christ and His holy vicar, the Pope, that I am raising my sacrilegious hands; we have daily proofs that their indignation, their hatred, their malice against me are an hundredfold intensified. New projects of assassination are detected almost every day, accompanied with such savage circumstances, that they bring to my memory the massacres of St. Bartholomew and the Gunpowder Plot. We feel, at their investigation, that they have come from the same masters in the art of murder—the Jesuits.

"The New York riots were evidently a Romish plot from beginning to end. We have proofs in hand, that they were the work of Bishop Hughes and his emissaries. No doubt can remain in the minds of the most incredulous about that bloody attempt of Rome to destroy New York, when we know the easy way it was stopped. I wrote to Bishop Hughes telling him that the whole country would hold him responsible for it, if he would not stop it at once. He then gathered the rioters around his palace, called them his 'dear friends,' invited them to go back home peacefully, and all was finished ! So Jupiter of old used to raise a storm, and stop it with a nod of his head !

"From the beginning of our civil war, there has been, not a secret, but a public alliance, between the Pope of Rome and Jeff Davis ; and that alliance has followed the common laws of this world's affairs. The Pope and his Jesuits have advised, supported, and directed Jeff Davis on the one hand, from the first gunshot, at Fort Sumter, by the rabid Roman Catholic, Beauregard. They are helping him on the sea, by guiding and supporting the other rabid Roman Catholic pirate, Semmes, on the ocean. And they will help the rebellion when firing their last gun to shed the blood of the last soldier of liberty, who will fall in this fratricidal war. In my interview with Bishop Hughes, I told him 'that every stranger who had sworn allegiance to our government by becoming a United States citizen, as himself, was liable to be shot or hung as a perjured traitor, and an armed spy, as the sentence of the court martial may direct. And he will be so shot and hanged accordingly, as there will be no exchange of such prisoners.' After I had put this flea in the ears of the Romish bishop, I requested him to go and report my words to the Pope. Seeing the dangerous position of his bishops and priests when siding with the rebels, my hope was that he would advise them, for their own interests, to become loyal and true to their allegiance, and help us through the remaining part of the war. But the result has been the very contrary. The Pope has thrown away the mask, and shown himself the public partisan and the protector of the rebellion, by taking Jeff Davis by the hand, and impudently recognizing the Southern States as a legitimate government. Now, I have the proof in hand that that very Bishop Hughes, whom I sent to Rome that he might induce the Pope to urge the Roman Catholics, of the North at least, to be true to their oath of allegiance, and whom I thanked publicly, when, under the impression that he had acted honestly, according to the promise he had given me, is the very man who advised the Pope to recognize the legitimacy of the Southern Republic, and put the whole weight of his tiara in the balance against us, in favour of our enemies. Such is the perfidy of those Jesuits !

"Till lately, I was in favour of the unlimited liberty of conscience as our constitution gives it, to the Roman Catholics. But now, it seems to me that, sooner or later, the people will

be forced to put a restriction to that clause towards the Papists. Is it not an act of folly to give absolute liberty of conscience to a set of men who are publicly sworn to cut our throats the very day they have their opportunity for doing it? Is it right to give the privilege of citizenship to men who are the sworn and public enemies of our constitution, our laws, our liberties, and our lives? Is it not an absurdity to give to a man a thing which he has sworn to hate, curse and destroy? And does not the Church of Rome hate, curse, and destroy the liberty of conscience, whenever she can do it safely?

"I am for liberty of conscience in its noblest, broadest, highest sense. But I cannot give liberty of conscience to the Pope and to his followers, the Papists, so long as they tell me, through all their councils, theologians, and canon laws, that their conscience orders them to burn my wife, strangle my children, and cut my throat when they find their opportunity!

"This does not seem to be understood by the people to-day. But sooner or later the light of common sense will make it clear to every one that no liberty of conscience can be granted to men who are sworn to obey a Pope who pretends to have the right to put to death those who differ from him in religion.

"You are not the first to warn me against the dangers of assassination. My ambassadors in Italy, France and England, as well as Professor Morse, have many times warned me against the plots of the murderers whom they have detected in those different countries. But I see no other safeguard against those murderers but to be always ready to die as Christ advises it. As we must all die sooner or later, it makes very little difference to me whether I die from a dagger plunged through my heart or from an inflammation of the lungs. Let me tell you that I have lately read a passage in the Old Testament which has made a profound and, I hope, a salutary impression upon me. Here is that passage."

The President took his Bible, opened it at the third chapter of Deuteronomy, and read from the 22nd to the 28th verses: "Ye shall not fear them: for the Lord your God He shall fight for you. And I besought the Lord at that time, saying, O Lord God, Thou hast begun to shew Thy servant Thy greatness, and Thy mighty hand: for what God is *there* in heaven or in earth, that can do according to Thy works, and according to Thy might? I pray Thee, let me go over, and see the good land that is beyond Jordan, that goodly mountain, and Lebanon. But the Lord was wroth with me for your sakes, and would not hear me: and the Lord said unto me, Let it suffice thee; speak no more unto Me of this matter. Get thee up unto the top of Pisgah, and lift up thine eyes westward, and northward, and southward, and eastward, and behold *it* with thine eyes: for thou shalt not go over this Jordan."

After the President had read these words with great solemnity, he added: "My dear Father Chiniquy, let me tell you that

I have read these strange and beautiful verses several times, these last five or six weeks. The more I read them, the more it seems to me that God has written them for me as well as for Moses. Has He not taken me from my poor log cabin by the hand, as He did Moses in the reeds of the Nile, to put me at the head of the greatest and most blessed of modern nations, just as He put that prophet at the head of the most blessed nation of ancient times? Has not God granted me the privilege, which was not granted to any living man, when I broke the fetters of 4,000,000 of men and made them free? Has not our God given me the most glorious victories over our enemies? Are not the armies of the Confederacy so reduced to a handful of men when compared to what they were two years ago, that the day is fast approaching when they will have to surrender?

"Now I see the end of this terrible conflict, with the same joy of Moses, when, at the end of his trying forty years in the wilderness; and I pray my God to grant me to see the days of peace, and untold prosperity, which will follow this cruel war, as Moses asked God to see the other side of Jordan and enter the Promised Land. But do you know, that I hear in my soul, as the voice of God, giving me the rebuke which was given to Moses. Yes! every time that my soul goes to God to ask the favour of seeing the other side of Jordan and eating the fruits of that peace, after which I am longing with such an unspeakable desire, do you know that there is a still but solemn voice which tells me that I will see those things only from a long distance, and that I will be among the dead, when the nation, which God granted me to lead through those awful trials, will cross the Jordan, and dwell in that Land of Promise, where peace, industry, happiness and liberty will make everyone happy—and why so? Because He has already given me favours which He never gave, I dare say, to any man, in these latter days.

"Now, would it not be the greatest of honours and privileges bestowed upon me, if God, in His infinite love, mercy and wisdom, would put me between His faithful servant Moses, and His eternal Son, Jesus, that I might die as they did, for my nation's sake! My God alone knows what I have already suffered for my dear country's sake. But my fear is, that the justice of God is not yet paid. When I look upon the rivers of tears and blood drawn by the lashes of the merciless masters from the veins of the very hearts of those millions of defenceless slaves, these two hundred years; when I remember the agonies, the cries, the unspeakable tortures of those unfortunate people to which I have, to some extent, connived with so many others, a part of my life, I fear that we are still far from the complete expiation. For the judgments of God are true and righteous.

"But just as the Lord heard no murmur from the lips of Moses when He told him that he had to die, before crossing

the Jordan, for the sins of his people ; so I hope and pray that He will hear no murmur from me when I fall for my nation's sake. The only two favours I ask of the Lord, are, first, that I may die for the sacred cause in which I am engaged, and when I am the standard bearer of the rights and liberties of my country.

"The second favour I ask from God is, that my dear son, Robert, when I am gone, will be one of those who lift up that flag of Liberty which will cover my tomb, and carry it with honour and fidelity to the end of his life, as his father did, surrounded by the millions who will be called to fight and die for the defence and honour of our country."

Never had I heard such sublime words ; never had I seen a human face so solemn and so prophet-like as the face of the President when uttering these things. Every sentence had come to me as a hymn from heaven, reverberated by the echoes of the mountains of Pisgah and Calvary. I was beside myself. Bathed in tears, I tried to say something, but could not utter a word. I knew the hour to leave had come ; I asked from the President permission to fall on my knees and pray with him that his life might be spared, and he knelt with me. But I prayed more with my tears and sobs than with my words.

Then I pressed his hand on my lips and bathed it with my tears, and with a heart filled with unspeakable desolation, I bade him Adieu ! It was for the last time ! for the hour was fast approaching when he was to fall by the hand of a Jesuit assassin, for his nation's sake.

CHAPTER LVIII.

Abraham Lincoln's Assassination by a Tool of the Priests.

EVERY time I met President Lincoln I wondered how such elevation of thought and such childlike simplicity could be found in the same man. After my interviews with him, many times, I said to myself: "How can this rail-splitter have so easily raised himself to the highest range of human thought and philosophy?"

The secret of this was, that Lincoln had spent a great part of his life at the school of Christ, and that he had meditated His sublime teachings to an extent unsuspected by the world. I found in him the most perfect type of Christianity I ever met.

Professedly, he was neither a strict Presbyterian, nor a Baptist, nor a Methodist; he was the embodiment of all which is more perfect and Christian in them. His religion was the very essence of what God wants in man. It was from Christ Himself he had learned to love his God and his neighbour, as it was from Christ he had learned the dignity and the value of man. "Ye are all brethren, the children of God," was his great motto.

It was from the Gospel that he had learned his principles of equality, fraternity, and liberty, as it was from the Gospel he had learned that sublime, childish simplicity, which, alone, and for ever, won the admiration and affection of all those who approached him. I could cite many facts to illustrate this, but I will give only one, not to be too long. It is taken from the Memoirs of Mr. Bateman, Superintendent of Public Instruction for the State of Illinois.

"Mr. Lincoln paused: for long minutes, his features surcharged with emotion. Then he rose and walked up and down the reception room, in the effort to retain, or regain his self-possession. Stopping at last, he said with a trembling voice, and his cheeks wet with tears:—

" 'I know there is a God, and that he hates injustice and slavery. I see the storm coming, and I know that His hand is in it. If He has a place and work for me—and I think He has—I believe I am ready! I am nothing, but truth is everything! I know I am right, because I know that liberty is right; for Christ teaches it, and Christ is God. I have told them that a house divided against itself cannot stand, and Christ and reason say the same thing, and they will find it so.

" 'Douglas does not care whether slavery is voted up or down. But God cares, and humanity cares, and I care. And with God's help I will not fail. I may not see the end, but it will come, and I shall be vindicated; and those men will see that they have not read their Bible right!

" 'Does it not appear strange that men can ignore the *moral aspect* of this contest? A revelation could not make it plainer to me that slavery, or the Government, must be destroyed.

The future would be something awful, as I look at it, but for this ROCK on which I stand.' (Alluding to the Gospel book he still held in his hand). 'It seems as if God had borne with slavery until the very teachers of religion had come to defend it from the Bible, and to claim for it a divine character and sanction. And now the cup of iniquity is full, and the vials of wrath will be poured out.' "

The effect of this conversation upon the mind of Mr. Bateman, a Christian gentleman, whom Mr. Lincoln profoundly respected, was to convince him that Mr. Lincoln had, in his quiet way, found a path to the Christian stand-point, that he had found God, and rested on the eternal truth of God. As the two men were about to separate, Mr. Bateman remarked :

"I had not supposed that you were accustomed to think so much upon this class of subjects ; certainly your friends, generally, are ignorant of the sentiments you have expressed to me."

"He quickly replied : "I know they are, but I think more on these subjects than upon all others, and I have done so for years ; and I am willing you should know it."—*The Inner Life of Lincoln*, by Carpenter, pp. 193-195.

More than once I felt as if I were in the presence of an old prophet, when listening to his views about the future destinies of the United States. In one of my last interviews with him, I was filled with admiration which it would be difficult to express, when I heard the following views and predictions :—

"It is with the Southern leaders of this civil war, as with the big and small wheels of our railroad cars. Those who ignore the laws of mechanics are apt to think that the large, strong, and noisy wheels they see, are the motive power, but they are mistaken. The real motive power is not seen ; it is noiseless and well concealed in the dark, behind its iron walls. The motive power are the few well concealed pails of water heated into steam, which is itself directed by the noiseless, small but unerring engineer's finger."

"The common people see and hear the big noisy wheels of the Southern Confederacy's cars, they call them Jeff Davis, Lee, Toombs, Beauregard, Semmes, etc., and they honestly think that they are the motive power, the first cause of our troubles. But it is a mistake. The true motive power is secreted behind the thick walls of the Vatican, the colleges and schools of the Jesuits, the convents of the nuns, and the confessional-boxes of Rome."

"There is a fact which is too much ignored by the American people, and with which I am acquainted only since I became President ; it is that the best, the leading families of the South, have received their education in great part, if not in whole, from the Jesuits and the nuns. Hence those degrading principles of slavery, pride, cruelty, which are as a second nature among so many of those people. Hence that strange want of fair play, humanity ; that implacable hatred against the ideas

of equality and liberty, as we find them in the Gospel of Christ. You do not ignore that the first settlers of Louisiana, Florida, New Mexico, Texas, South California, and Missouri, were Roman Catholics, and that their first teachers were Jesuits. It is true that those states have been conquered or bought by us since. But Rome had put the deadly virus of her anti-social and anti-Christian maxims into the veins of the people before they became American citizens. Unfortunately, the Jesuits and nuns have, in great part, remained the teachers of those people since. They have continued, in a silent but most efficacious way, to spread their hatred against our institutions, our laws, our schools, our rights, and our liberties, in such a way, that this terrible conflict became unavoidable between the North and the South. As I told you before, it is to Popery that we owe this terrible civil war.

"I would have laughed at the man who would have told me that before I became President. But Professor Morse has opened my eyes on that subject. And now I see that mystery, I understand that engineering of hell which, though not seen or even suspected by the country, is putting in motion the large, heavy, and noisy wheels of the state cars of the Southern Confederacy. Our people are not yet ready to learn and believe those things, and perhaps it is not the proper time to initiate them to those dark mysteries of hell; it would throw oil on a fire which is already sufficiently destructive.

"You are almost the only one with whom I speak freely on that subject. But sooner or later, the nation will know the real origin of those rivers of blood and tears, which are spreading desolation and death everywhere. And then those who have caused those desolations and disasters will be called to give an account of them."

Many of those who approached Abraham Lincoln felt that there was a prophetic spirit in him, and that he was continually walking and acting with the thought of God in his mind, and only in view to do His will and work for His glory. Speaking of the slaves he said, one day, before the members of his Cabinet: "I have not decided against a proclamation of liberty to the slaves, but I hold the matter under advisement. And I can assure you that the subject is on my mind, by day and by night, more than any other. Whatever shall appear to be God's will, I will do."—*Six Months in the White House*, by Carpenter.

A few days before that proclamation, he said, before several of his counsellors: "I made a solemn vow before God, that if General Lee was driven back from Pennsylvania, I would crown the result by the declaration of freedom to the slaves."—*Six Months in the White House*.

* * *

But I would have volumes to write, instead of a short chapter, were I to give all the facts I have collected of the sincere and profound piety of Abraham Lincoln.

I cannot, however, omit his admirable and solemn act of faith

in the eternal justice of God, as expressed in the closing words OF LINCOLN'S LAST INAUGURAL SPEECH, 4TH MARCH, 1865.

"Fondly do we hope, fervently do we pray, that this mighty scourge of war may speedily pass away. Yet, if God wills that it continue until all the wealth piled by the bondsmen's 250 years of unrequited toil shall be sunk, and until every drop of blood drawn by the lash shall be paid by another drawn by the sword, as was said 3,000 years ago, so, still, it must be said: 'The judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether.'"

These sublime words, falling from the lips of the greatest Christian whom God ever put at the head of a nation, only a few days before his martyrdom, sent a thrill of wonder through the whole world.

The 6th April, 1865, President Lincoln was invited by General Grant to enter Richmond, the capital of the rebel states, which he had just captured. The ninth, the beaten army of Lee, surrounded by the victorious legions of the soldiers of liberty, were forced to lay down their arms and their banners at the feet of the generals of Lincoln. The tenth, the victorious President addressed an immense multitude of the citizens of Washington, to invite them to thank God and the armies for the glorious victories of the last few days, and for the blessed peace which was to follow these five years of slaughter.

But he was on the top of the mountain of Pisgah, and though he had fervently prayed that he might cross the Jordan, and enter with his people into the Land of Promise, after which he had so often sighed, he was not to see his request granted. The answer had come from heaven: "You will not cross the Jordan, and you will not enter the Promised Land, which is there, so near. You must die for your nation's sake!" the lips, the heart, and the soul of the New Moses were still repeating the sublime words: "The judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether," when the Jesuit assassin—Booth—murdered him, on 14th April, 1865, at 10 o'clock, p.m.

LINCOLN IS MURDERED !

Let us hear the eloquent historian, Abbott, on the sad event: "In the midst of unparalleled success, and while all the bells of the land were ringing with joy, a calamity fell upon us which overwhelmed the country in consternation and awe. On Friday evening, April 14th, President Lincoln attended Ford's Theatre, in Washington. He was sitting quietly in his box, listening to the drama, when a man entered the door of the lobby leading to the box, closing the door behind him. Drawing near to the President, he drew from his pocket a small pistol, and shot him in the back of the head. As the President fell, senseless and mortally wounded, and the shriek of his wife, who was seated at his side, pierced every ear, the assassin leaped from the box, and, as he rushed across the stage, bare-headed, brandished a dagger, exclaiming, '*Sic semper tyrannis!*' and disappeared behind the side scenes.

There was a moment of silent consternation. Then ensued a scene of confusion which it is vain to attempt to describe.

"The dying President was taken into a house near by, and placed upon a bed. What a scene did that room present ! The chief of a mighty nation lay there, senseless, drenched in the blood from his wounds. Sumner, Farwell, and Colfax, and Stanton, and many others were there, filled with grief and consternation. The surgeon, General Barnes, solemnly examined the wound. There was silence as of the grave, the life and death of the nation seemed dependent on the result. General Barnes looked up sadly and said : 'The wound is mortal !'

" 'Oh ! no ! General, no ! no !' cried out Secretary Stanton, and sinking into a chair, he covered his face, and wept like a child. Senator Sumner tenderly held the head of the unconscious martyr. Though all unused to weep, he sobs as though his great heart would break. In his anguish, his head falls upon the blood-stained pillow, and his black locks blend with those of the dying victim, which care and toil has rendered grey, and which blood has crimsoned. What a scene ! Sumner, who had lingered through months of agony, having himself been stricken down by the bludgeon of slavery, now sobbing in anguish over the prostrate form of his friend, whom slavery had slain ! This vile rebellion, after deluging the land in blood, has culminated in a crime which appals all nations.

"Noble Abraham, true descendant of the father of the faithful ; honest in every trust, humble as a child, tender-hearted as a woman, who could not bear to injure even his most envenomed foes ; who, in the hour of triumph was saddened lest the feelings of his adversaries should be wounded by their defeat, with 'charity for all, malice towards none,' endowed with 'common sense,' intelligence never surpassed, and with power of intellect which enabled him to grapple with the most gigantic opponents in debates, developing abilities as a statesman, which won the gratitude of his country and the admiration of the world, and with graces and amiability which drew to him all generous hearts ; dies by the bullet of the assassin !"—*History of the Civil War*, by Abbot, vol. ii., p. 594.

Who was that assassin ? Booth was nothing but the tool of the Jesuits. It was Rome who directed his arm, after corrupting his heart and damning his soul.

After I had mixed my tears with those of the grand country of my adoption, I fell on my knees and asked God to grant me to show to the world what I knew to be the truth—viz., that that horrible crime was the work of Popery. And, after twenty years of constant and most difficult researches, I come fearlessly, to-day, before the American people, to say and prove that the President, Abraham Lincoln, was assassinated by the priests and the Jesuits of Rome.

In the book of the testimonies given in the prosecution of the assassin of Lincoln, published by Ben Pitman, and in two volumes of the trial of John Surratt in 1867, we have the legal

and irrefutable proof that the plot of the assassins of Lincoln was matured, if not started, in the house of Mary Surratt, No. 561, H. Street, Washington City, D.C. But who were living in that house, and who were visiting that family? The legal answer says: "The most devoted Catholics in the city!" The sworn testimonies show more than that. They show that it was the common rendezvous of the priests of Washington. Several priests swear that they were going there "sometimes," and when pressed to answer what they meant by "sometimes," they were not sure if it was once a week, or once a month. One of them, less on his guard, swore that he seldom passed before that house without entering; and he said he never passed there less than once each week. The devoted Roman Catholic (an apostate from Protestantism) called L. J. Weichmann, who was himself living in that house, swears that Father Wiget *was very often* in that house, and Father Lahiman swears that he was living with Mrs. Surratt, in the same house!

What does the presence of so many priests in that house reveal to the world? No man of common sense, who knows anything about the priests of Rome, can entertain any doubt that, not only did they know all that was going on inside those walls, but that they were the advisers, the counsellors, the very soul of that infernal plot. Why did Rome keep one of her priests under that roof from morning till night, and from night to morning? Why did she send many others, almost every day of the week, into that dark nest of plotters against the very existence of the great Republic, and against the life of her President, her principal generals and leading men, if it were not to be the advisers, the rulers, the secret motive power of the infernal plot.

No one, if he is not an idiot, will think and say that those priests, who were the personal friends and the father confessors of Booth, John Surratt, Mrs. and the Misses Surratt, could be constantly there without knowing what was going on, particularly when we know that every one of those priests was a rabid rebel in heart. Every one of those priests, knowing that his infallible Pope had called Jeff Davis his dear son, and had taken the Southern Confederacy under his protection, was bound to believe that the most holy thing a man could do was to fight for the Southern cause, by destroying those who were its enemies.

Compare the last hour of the Jesuit Ravallac, the assassin of Henry IV., who absolutely refused to repent, though suffering the most horrible tortures on the rack, with Booth, who suffering also the most horrible tortures from his broken leg, writes in his daily memorandum, the very day before his death: "I can never repent, though we hated to kill. Our country owed all her troubles to him (Lincoln), and God simply made me the instrument of His punishment."—*Trial of Surratt*, vol. i., p. 310.

Yes! Compare the bloody deeds of those two assassins, and

you will see that they had been trained in the same school; they had been taught by the same teachers. Evidently the Jesuit Ravallac, calling all the saints of heaven to his help at his last hour; and Booth pressing the medal of the Virgin Mary on his breast, when falling mortally wounded (*Trial of Surratt*, p. 310), are both coming out from the same Jesuit mould.

Who has lost his common sense enough to suppose that it was Jeff Davis who had filled the mind and the heart of Booth with that religious and so exalted fanaticism! Surely Jeff Davis had promised the money to reward the assassins and nerve their arms, by the hope of becoming rich. The testimonies on that account say that he had promised one million dollars.—*Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, pp. 51, 52.

That arch-rebel could give the money; but the Jesuits alone could select the assassins, train them, and show them a crown of glory in heaven, if they would kill the author of the bloodshed, the famous renegade and apostate—the enemy of the Pope and the Church—Lincoln.

Who does not see the lessons given by the Jesuits to Booth, in their daily intercourse in Mary Surratt's house, when he reads those lines written by Booth a few hours before his death: "I can never repent, God made me the instrument of His punishment!"

And that pious Miss Surratt who, the very next day after the murder of Lincoln said, without being rebuked, in the presence of several other witnesses: "The death of Abraham Lincoln is no more than the death of any nigger in the army," where did she get that maxim, if not from her Church? Had not that Church recently proclaimed, through her highest legal and civil authority, the devoted Roman Catholic Judge Taney, in his Dred-Scott decision, that negroes have no right which the white is bound to respect. By bringing the President on a level with the lowest nigger, Rome was saying that he had no right, even to his life; for this was the maxim of the rebel priests, who, everywhere, had made themselves the echoes of the sentence of their distinguished co-religionist—Taney.

It was from the very lips of the priests who were constantly coming in and going out of their house, that those young ladies had learned those anti-social and anti-christian doctrines. Read in the testimony concerning Mrs. Mary E. Surratt (pp. 122, 123), how the Jesuits had perfectly drilled her in the art of perjuring herself. In the very moment when the government officer orders her to prepare herself with her daughter to follow him as prisoners at about 10 p.m., Payne, the would-be murderer of Seward, knocks at the door and wants to see Mrs. Surratt. But instead of having Mrs. Surratt to open the door, he finds himself confronted face to face with the government detective, Major Smith, who swears:—

"I questioned him in regard to his occupation, and what business he had at the house at this late hour of the night.

He stated that he was a labourer, and had come to dig a gutter at the request of Mrs. Surratt. I went to the parlour door and said: 'Mrs. Surratt, will you step here a minute?' She came out and I asked her: 'Do you know this man, and did you hire him to come and dig a gutter for you?' She answered, raising her right hand: 'Before God, sir, I do not know this man, I have never seen him, and I did not hire him to dig a gutter for me.'—*Assassination of Abraham Lincoln*, p. 122.

But it was proved after by several unimpeachable witnesses, that she knew very well that Payne was a personal friend of her son, who many times had come to her house in company of his friend and pet, Booth. She had received communion just two or three days before that public perjury. Just a moment after making it, the officer ordered her to step into the carriage. But before doing it, she asked permission to kneel down and pray, which was granted. (p. 123).

I ask it from any man of common sense, could Jeff Davis have imparted such a religious calm and self-possession to that woman when her hands were just reddened with the blood of the President, and she was on her way to trial.

There is a fact to which the American people have not yet given a sufficient attention. It is that, without a single exception, the conspirators were Roman Catholics. The learned and great patriot, General Baker, in his admirable report, struck and bewildered by that strange, mysterious, and portentous fact, said: "I mention, as an exceptional and remarkable fact, that every conspirator in custody is, by education, a Catholic."

Those words which, if well understood by the United States, would have thrown so much light on the true causes of their untold and unspeakable disasters, fell as if on the ears of deaf men. Very few, if any, paid attention to them. As General Baker says, all the conspirators were attending Roman Catholic Church services and were educated Roman Catholics. It is true that some of them, as Atzeroth, Payne, and Harold, asked for Protestant ministers, when they were to be hung. But they had been considered till then, as converts to Romanism. At page 437 of *The Trial of John Surratt*, Louis Weichmann tells us that he was going to St. Aloysius' Church with Atzeroth, and that it was there he introduced him to Mr. Brothy, another Roman Catholic.

It is a well authenticated fact that Booth and Weichmann, who were themselves Protestant perverts to Romanism, had proselytised a good number of semi-Protestants and infidels who, either from conviction, or from hope of the fortunes promised to the successful murderers, were themselves very zealous for the Church of Rome. Payne, Atzeroth, and Harold, were among those proselytes. But when those murderers were to appear before the country, and receive the just punishment of their crime, the Jesuits were too shrewd to ignore that if they were all coming on the scaffold as Roman Catholics, and accompanied by their father confessors, it would at once open

the eyes of the American people, and clearly show that this was a Roman Catholic plot. They persuaded three of their proselytes to avail themselves of the theological principles of the Church of Rome, that a man is allowed to conceal his religion—nay, that he may say that he is an heretic, a Protestant, though he is a Roman Catholic, when it is for his own interest, or in the best interests of his Church, to conceal the truth and deceive the people. Here is the doctrine of Rome on that subject:—

“It is more often to the glory of God, and the good of our neighbour to conceal our religious faith, as when we live among heretics, we can more easily do them good in that way ; or if, by declaring our religion, we cause some disturbances, or deaths, or even the wrath of the tyrant.”—*Liguori Theologia*, t. ii., p. 117, n. 14.

It is evident that the Jesuits had never had better reasons to suspect that the declaration of their religion would damage them and excite the wrath of their tyrant—viz., the American people.

Lloyds, in whose house Mrs. Surratt concealed the carbine which Booth wanted for protection, when after the murder he was to flee towards the Southern States, was a firm Roman Catholic. Dr. Mudd, at whose place Booth stopped to have his broken leg dressed, was a Roman Catholic, and so was Garrett, in whose barn Booth was caught and killed. Why so ? Because, as Jeff Davis was the only man to pay one million dollars to those who would kill Abraham Lincoln, the Jesuits were the only men to select the murderers and prepare everything to protect them after their diabolical deed, and such murderers could not be found except among their blind and fanatical slaves.

The great, the fatal mistake of the American Government in the prosecution of the assassins of Abraham Lincoln was to constantly keep out of sight the religious element of that terrible drama. Nothing would have been more easy, then, than to find out the complicity of the priests, who were not only coming every week and every day, but who were even living in that den of murderers. But this was carefully avoided from the beginning to the end of the trial.

Several Government men, in whom I had more confidence, told me: “We had not the least doubt that Jesuits were at the bottom of that great iniquity ; we even feared, sometimes, that this would come out so clearly before the military tribunal, that there would be no possibility of keeping it out of the public sight. This was not through cowardice, as you think, but through a wisdom which you ought to approve, if you cannot admire it. Had we been in days of peace, we know that, with a little more pressure on the witnesses, many priests would have been compromised : for Mrs. Surratt’s house was their common rendezvous : it is more than probable that several of them might have been hung. But the civil war was

hardly over. The Confederacy, though broken down, was still living in millions of hearts; murderers and formidable elements of discord were still seen everywhere, to which the hanging or exiling of those priests would have given a new life. Riots after riots would have accompanied and followed their execution. We thought we had had enough of blood, fires and devastations and bad feelings. We were all longing after days of peace: the country was in need of them. We concluded that the best interest of humanity was to punish only those who were publicly and visibly guilty; that the verdict might receive the approbation of all, without creating any new bad feelings. Allow us to tell you that this policy was that of our late President. For you know it well, there was nothing which that good and great man feared so much as to arm the Protestants against the Catholics and the Catholics against the Protestants."

If anyone has still any doubts of the complicity of the Jesuits in the murder of Abraham Lincoln, let them give a moment of attention to the following facts, and their doubts will be for ever removed. It is only from the very Jesuit accomplices' lips that I take my sworn testimonies.

It is evident that a very elaborate plan of escape had been prepared by the priests of Rome to save the lives of the assassins and the conspirators. It would be too long to follow all the murderers, when, Cain-like, they were fleeing in every direction, to escape the vengeance of God and man. Let us fix our eyes on John Surratt, who was in Washington on the 14th of April, helping Booth in the perpetration of the assassination. Who will take care of him? Who will protect and conceal him? Who will press him on their bosom, put their mantles on his shoulders to conceal him from the justice of the human and divine laws? The priest, Charles Boucher (*Trial of John Surratt*, vol. ii., pp. 904-912), swears that only a few days after the murder, John Surratt was sent to him by Fr. Lapierre of Montreal; that he kept him concealed in his parsonage of St. Libiore from the end of April to the end of July, then he took him back secretly to Father Lapierre, who kept him secreted in his own father's house, under the very shadow of the Montreal bishop's palace. He swears (pp. 905 to 914) that Father Lapierre visited him (Surratt) often, when secreted at St. Libiore, and that he (Father Boucher) visited him, at least twice a week, from the end of July to September, when concealed in Father Lapierre's house in Montreal.

The same father, Charles Boucher, swears that he accompanied John Surratt in a carriage, in the company of Father Lapierre, to the steamer "Montreal" when starting for Quebec: that Father Lapierre kept him (John Surratt) under lock during the voyage from Montreal to Quebec, and that he accompanied him, disguised, from the Montreal steamer to the ocean steamer, "Peruvian."—*Trial of John Surratt*, p. 910.

The doctor of the steamer "Peruvian," L. I. A. McMillan

swears (vol. i., p. 460), that Father Lapierre introduced him to John Surratt, under the false name of McCarthy, whom he kept locked in his state room, and whom he conducted disguised to the ocean steamer "Peruvian" and with whom he remained till she left Quebec for Europe, the 15th September, 1865.

Who is that Father Lapierre who takes such a tender, I dare say a paternal care of Surratt ? It is not a less personage than the Canon of Bishop Bourget, of Montreal. He is the confidential man of the bishop. He lives with the bishop, eats at his table, assists him with his counsel, and has to receive his advice in every step of life. According to the laws of Rome the canons are to the bishop what the arms are to the body.

Now, I ask : Is it not evident that the bishops and the priests of Washington have trusted this murderer to the care of the bishops and priests of Montreal, that they might conceal, feed and protect him for nearly six months, under the very shadow of the bishop's palace ? Would they have done that if they were not his accomplices ? Why did they so continually remain with him day and night, if they were not in fear that he might compromise them by an indiscreet word ? Why do we see those priests (I ought to say, those two ambassadors, and anointed representatives of the Pope) alone in the carriage, which takes that culprit from his house of concealment to the steamer ? Why do they keep him there, under lock, till they transfer him under a false name to the oceanic steamer the "Peruvian," the 15th of July, 1865 ? Why such tender sympathies for that stranger ? Why going through such trouble and expense for that young American, among the bishops and priests of Canada ? There is only one answer. He was one of their tools, one of their selected men to strike the great Republic of Equality and Liberty to the heart. For more than six months before the murder, the priests had lodged, eaten, conversed, slept, with him under the same roof in Washington. They had trained him to his deed of blood, by promising him protection on earth, and a crown of glory in heaven, if he would only be true to their designs to the end.

Now the great crime is accomplished ! Lincoln is murdered ! Jeff Davis, the dear son of the Pope, is avenged ! The great Republic has been struck to the heart ! The soldiers of Liberty all over the world are weeping over the dead form of the one who had led them to victory : a cry of desolation goes from earth to heaven.

Do you see that man fleeing from Washington towards the North ? He has the mark of Cain on his forehead, his hands are reddened with blood, he is pale and trembling, for he knows it ; a whole outraged nation is after him for her just vengeance ; he hears the thundering voice of God : "Where is thy brother ?" Where will he find refuge ?

Where will those bishops and priests of Canada send John Surratt, when they find it impossible to conceal him any longer

from the thousands of detectives of the United States, who are ransacking Canada to find out his retreat? Who will conceal, feed, lodge, and protect him after the priests of Canada pressed his hand for the last time, on board the "Peruvian," the 15th September, 1865? Who can have any doubt about that? Who can suppose that any one but the Pope himself and his Jesuits will protect the murderer of Abraham Lincoln in Europe?

If you want to see him, after he has crossed the ocean, go to Vitry, at the door of Rome, and there you will find him enrolled under the banners of the Pope, in the 9th Company of his Zouaves, under the false name of Watson. Of course, the Pope was compelled to withdraw his protection over him, after the Government of the United States had found him there, and he was brought back to Washington to be tried.

On his arrival as a prisoner in the United States, his Jesuit father confessor whispered in his ear, "Fear not, you will not be condemned! Through the influence of a high Roman Catholic lady, two or three of the jurymen will be Roman Catholics, and you will be safe."

Those who have read the two volumes of the trial of John Surratt, know that never more evident proofs of guilt were brought against a murderer than in that case. But the Roman Catholic jurymen had read the Theology of St. Thomas, a book which the Pope has ordered to be taught in every college, academy, and university of Rome; they had learned that it is the duty of the Roman Catholics to exterminate all the heretics.—*St. Thomas' Theology*, vol. iv., p. 90.

After such teaching, how could the Roman Catholic jurymen find John Surratt guilty of murder for killing the heretic Lincoln? The jury having disagreed, no verdict could be given. The government was forced to let the murderer go unpunished.

But when the irreconcilable of all the rights and liberties of men were congratulating themselves on their successful efforts to save the life of John Surratt, the God of heaven was stamping again on their faces the mark of murder, and in such a way that all eyes will see it.

"Murder will out," is a truth repeated by all nations, from the beginning of the world. It is the knowledge of that truth which has sustained me in my long and difficult researches of the true authors of the assassination of Lincoln, and which enables me to-day to present to the world a fact, which seems almost miraculous, to show the complicity of the priests of Rome in the murder of the martyred President.

Some time ago I providentially met the Rev. F. A. Conwell, at Chicago. Having known that I was in search of facts about the assassination of Abraham Lincoln, he told me he knew one of those facts which might perhaps throw some light on the subject of my researches.

"The very day of the murder," he said, "he was in the Roman Catholic village of St. Joseph, Minnesota State, when, at about six o'clock in the afternoon he was told by a Roman

Catholic of the place, who was a purveyor of a great number of priests who lived in that town, where they have a monastery, that the State Secretary, Seward, and President Lincoln had just been killed. This was told me," he said, "in the presence of a most respectable gentleman, called Bennett, who was not less puzzled than me. As there were no railroad lines nearer than 40 miles, nor telegraph offices nearer than 80 miles, from that place we could not see how such news was spread in that town. The next day, the 15th April, I was at St. Cloud, a town about 12 miles distant, where there was neither railroad nor telegraph, I said to several people that I had been told in the priestly village of St. Joseph, by a Roman Catholic, that Abraham Lincoln and the Secretary Seward had been assassinated. They answered me that they had heard nothing about it. But the next Sabbath, the 16th April, when going to the Church of St. Cloud to preach, a friend gave me a copy of a telegram sent to him on the Saturday, reporting that Abraham Lincoln and Secretary Seward had been assassinated the very day before, which was Friday, the 14th, at 10 p.m. But how could the Roman Catholic purveyor of the priests of St. Joseph have told me the same thing, before several witnesses, just four hours before its occurrence? I spoke of that strange thing to many, that same day, and the very next day I wrote to the *St. Paul Press*, under the heading of "A Strange Coincidence." Sometime later the editor of the *St. Paul Pioneer*, having denied what I had written on that subject, I addressed him the following note, which he had printed, and which I have kept. Here it is, you may keep it as an infallible proof of my veracity."

"TO THE EDITOR OF 'THE ST. PAUL PIONEER.'

"You assume the non-truth of a short paragraph furnished by me to the *St. Paul Press*—viz.:

"A STRANGE COINCIDENCE !

" 'At 6.30 p.m., Friday last, April 14th, I was told an item of news, eight miles West of this place, that Lincoln and Seward had been assassinated. This was three hours after I had heard the news.'

ST. CLOUD, 17th April, 1865.

"The integrity of history requires that the above coincidence be established. And if anyone calls it in question, then proofs more ample than reared their sanguinary shadows to confront a traitor can now be given.

"Respectfully,

"F. A. CONWELL."

I asked that gentleman if he would be kind enough to give me the fact under oath, that I might make use of it in the report I intended to publish about the assassination of Lincoln. And he kindly granted my request, in the following form.

STATE OF ILLINOIS, COOK COUNTY,

s. s.

Rev. F. A. Conwell, being sworn, deposes and says that he is seventy-one years old, that he is a resident of North Evan-

ston, in Cook County, State of Illinois, that he has been in the ministry for fifty-six years, and is now one of the chaplains of the "Seamen's Bethel Home," in Chicago; that he was chaplain of the First Minnesota Regiment, in the war of the rebellion. That on the 14th day of April, A.D. 1865, he was in St. Joseph, Minnesota, and reached there so early as six o'clock of the evening, in company with Mr. Bennett who, then and now, is a resident of St. Cloud, Minnesota. That on that date there was no telegraph nearer than Minneapolis, about eighty miles from St. Joseph; and there was no railroad communication nearer than Avoka, Minnesota, about forty miles distant. That when he reached St. Joseph, on the 14th day of April, 1865, one, Mr. Linneman, who then kept the hotel of St. Joseph, told affiant that President Lincoln and Secretary Seward were assassinated; and then the same Mr. Linneman reported the same conversation to Mr. Bennett in my presence. That during that time, Mr. Linneman told me that he had charge of the friary or college for young men, under the priests, who were studying for the priesthood at St. Joseph. That there was a large multitude of this kind at St. Joseph at this time. Affiant says that, on Saturday morning, April 15th, 1865, he went to St. Cloud, a distance of about ten miles, and reached there about eight o'clock in the morning. That there was no railroad nor telegraph communication to St. Cloud. When he arrived at St. Cloud he told Mr. Haworth, the hotel keeper, that he had been told that President Lincoln and Secretary Seward had been assassinated, and asked if it was true. He further told Henry Clay, Wait, Charles Gilman (who was afterwards Lieutenant Governor of Minnesota), and Rev. Mr. Tice, the same thing, and inquired of them if they had any such news; and they replied that they had not heard anything of the kind.

Affiant says, that on Sunday morning, April 16th, 1865, he preached in St. Cloud, and on the way to the church a copy of a telegram was handed him, stating that the President and Secretary were assassinated Friday evening at about 9 o'clock. This telegram had been brought to St. Cloud by Mr. Gorton, who had reached St. Cloud by stage; and this was the first intelligence that had reached St. Cloud of the event.

Affiant says further, that on Monday morning, April 17th, 1865, he furnished the *Press*, a paper of St. Paul, with a statement that three hours before the event took place, he had been informed, at St. Joseph, Minnesota, that the President had been assassinated, and this was published in the *Press*.

FRANCIS ASBURY CONWELL.

Subscribed and sworn to by Francis A. Conwell, before me a Notary Public of Kankakee County, Illinois, at Chicago, Cook County, this 6th day of September, 1883.

STEPHEN R. MOORE, Notary Public.

Though this document was very important and precious to me, I felt that it would be much more valuable if it could be

corroborated by the testimonies of Messrs. Bennett and Linneman, themselves, and I immediately sent a magistrate to find out if they were still living, and if they remembered the facts of the sworn declaration of Rev. Mr. Conwell. By the good providence of God, both of these gentlemen were found living, and both gave the following testimonies:—

STATE OF MINNESOTA, STERNS COUNTY, CITY OF ST. CLOUD.

Horace P. Bennett, being sworn, deposes and says that he is aged sixty-four years; that he is a resident of St. Cloud, Minnesota, and has resided in this county since 1856; that he is acquainted with the Rev. F. A. Conwell, who was Chaplain of the 1st Minnesota Regiment in the war of the rebellion; that on the 14th April, 1865, he was in St. Joseph, Minnesota, in company with Mr. Francis A. Conwell; that they reached St. Joseph about sundown of the said April 14th; and there was no railroad or telegraph communication with St. Joseph at that time, nor nearer than Avoka, about forty miles distant. That affiant, on reaching the hotel kept by Mr. Linneman, went to the barn while Rev. F. A. Conwell entered the hotel; and shortly afterwards, affiant had returned to the hotel, Mr. Conwell told him that Mr. Linneman had reported to him the assassination of President Lincoln; that Linneman was present and substantiated the statement.

That on Saturday morning, April 15th, affiant and Rev. Conwell came to St. Cloud, and reported that they had been told at St. Joseph about the assassination of President Lincoln, that no one at St. Cloud had heard of the event at this time, that the first news of the event which reached St. Cloud was on Sunday morning, April 16th, when the news was brought by Leander Gorton, who had just come up from Avoka, Minnesota; that they spoke to several persons of St. Cloud, concerning the matter, when they reached there on Sunday morning, but affiant does not now remember who those different persons were, and further affiant says not.

HORACE P. BENNETT.

Sworn before me, and subscribed in my presence, this 18th of October, A.D. 1883.

ANDREW C. ROBERTSON, Notary Public.

Mr. Linneman having refused to swear on his written declaration, which I have in my possession, I take only from it what refers to the principal fact—viz., that three or four hours before Lincoln was assassinated at Washington, the 14th of April, 1865, the fact was told as already accomplished, in the priestly village of St. Joseph, Minnesota.

“He (Linneman) remembers the time that Messrs. Conwell and Bennett came to this place (St. Joseph, Minnesota), on Friday evening before the President was killed, and he asked them if they had heard he was dead, and they replied that they had not. He heard this rumour in his store from people who came in and out. But he cannot remember from whom.

October 20th, 1883.

J. H. LINNEMAN.”

I here present to the world a fact of the greatest gravity, and that fact is so well authenticated that it cannot allow even the possibility of a doubt.

Three or four hours before Lincoln was murdered in Washington, the 14th April, 1865, that murder was not only known by someone, but it was circulated and talked of in the streets, and in the houses of the priestly and Romish town of St. Joseph, Minnesota. The fact is undeniable; the testimonies are unchallengeable: and there was no railroad nor any telegraph communication nearer than 40 or 80 miles from the nearest station to St. Joseph.

Naturally everyone asked: "How could such news spread? Where is the source of the rumour?" Mr. Linneman, who is a Roman Catholic, tells that though he heard this from many in his store, and in the streets, he does not remember the name of a single one who told him that. And when we hear this from him, we understand why he did not dare to swear upon it, and shrank from the idea of perjuring himself.

For everyone feels that his memory cannot be so poor as that, when he remembers so well the names of two strangers, Messrs. Conwell and Bennett, to whom he announced the assassination of Lincoln, just 17 years before. But if the memory of Mr. Linneman is so deficient on that subject, we can help him.

You got the news from your priests of St. Joseph! The conspiracy which cost the life of the martyred President was prepared by the priests of Washington in the house of Mary Surratt, No. 541, H Street. The priests of St. Joseph were often visiting Washington, and boarding, probably, at Mrs. Surratt's as the priests of Washington were often visiting their brother priests at St. Joseph.

How could the priests conceal such a joyful event from their bosom friend, Mr. Linneman? He was their confidential man; he was their purveyor; he was their right hand man among the faithful of St. Joseph. They thought that they would be guilty of a want of confidence in their bosom friend, if they did not tell him all about the glorious event of that great day. But, of course, they requested him not to mention their names, if he would spread the joyful news among the devoted Roman Catholics who, almost exclusively, formed the people of St. Joseph. Mr. Linneman has honourably and faithfully kept his promise never to reveal their names, and to-day we have, in our hand, the authentic testimonies signed by him that, though somebody told him that President Lincoln was assassinated, he does not know who told him!

There is not a man of sound judgment who will have doubt about that fact. On the 14th April, 1865, the priests of Rome knew and circulated the death of Lincoln four hours before its occurrence in their Roman Catholic town of St. Joseph, Minnesota. But they could not circulate it without knowing it, and they could not know it without belonging to the band of conspirators who assassinated President Lincoln.

CHAPTER LIX.

The Bishop is Wrong and We are Right.

WHEN alone, on my knees, in the presence of God, on the 1st of January, 1855, I took the resolution of opposing the acts of simony and tyranny of Bishop O'Regan, I was far from understanding the logical consequence of my struggle with that high dignitary. My only object was to force him to be honest, just and Christian towards my people. That people, with me, had left their country and had bid an eternal adieu to all that was dear to them in Canada, in order to live in peace in Illinois, under what we then considered the holy authority of the Church of Christ.

If anyone, at that hour, could have shown me that this struggle would lead me to a complete separation from the Church of Rome, I would have shrank from the task. My only ambition was to purify my Church from the abuses which, one after the other, had crept everywhere about her as noxious weeds. I felt that those abuses were destroying the precious truths which Jesus Christ and His apostles had revealed to us.

In the Autumn of 1856, our struggle against the Bishop of Chicago had taken proportions which could not have been anticipated either by me or by the Roman Catholic hierarchy of America. The whole press of the United States and Canada, both political and religious, were discussing the causes and the probable result of the contest.

At first the bishops were indignant at the conduct of my lord O'Regan. They had seen with pleasure that a priest of his own diocese would probably force him to be more cautious and less scandalous in his public and private dealings with the clergy and the people. But they also hoped that I should be paralysed by the sentence of excommunication, and that the people, frightened by those fulminations, would withdraw the support that they had at first given me. They were assured by Spink that I would lose my suit at Urbana, and should, when lodged in the penitentiary, become powerless to do any mischief in the Church.

But their confidence was soon changed into dismay when they saw that the people laughed at the excommunication; that I had gained my suit, and that I was triumphing on that very battle-field from which no priest, since Luther and Knox, had come out unscathed. Everywhere the sound of alarm was heard, and I was denounced as a rebel and schismatic. The whole body of the bishops prepared to hurl their most terrible fulminations at my devoted head. But before taking their last measure to crush me a supreme effort was made to show us what they considered our errors. The Rev. Mr. Brassard, curate of Longueuil, and the Rev. Isaac Desaulnier, President of St. Hyacinthe College, were sent by the people and the bishops of Canada to show me what they called the scandal

of my proceedings, and press me to submit to the will of the bishop, by respecting the so-called sentence of excommunication.

The choice of those two priests was very wise. They were certainly the most influential that could be sent. Mr. Brassard had not only been my teacher at the college of Nicolet, but my benefactor, as I have already said. When the want of means, in 1825, had forced me to leave the college and bid adieu to my mother and my young brothers, in order to go to a very distant land in search of a position; he stopped me on the road of exile and brought me back to the college; and along with the Rev. Mr. Leprohon, he paid all my expenses to the end of my studies. He had loved me since as his own child, and I cherished and respected him as my own father. The other, Mons. I. Desaulnier, had been my class-mate in the college from 1822 to 1829, and we had been united during the whole of that period, as well as since, by the bonds of the sincerest esteem and friendship. They arrived at St. Anne on November 24th, 1856.

I heard of their coming only a few minutes before their arrival; and nothing can express the joy I felt at the news. The confidence I had in their honesty and friendship gave me at once the hope that they would soon see the justice and holiness of our cause, and they would bravely take our side against our aggressor. But they had very different sentiments. Sincerely believing that I was an unmanageable schismatic, who was creating an awful scandal in the Church, they had not only been forbidden by the bishops to sleep in my house, but also to have any friendly and Christian communication with me. With no hatred against me they were yet so filled with horror at the thought that I should be so scandalous a priest, and so daring as to trouble the peace and destroy the unity of the Church.

On their way from Canada to St. Anne, they had often been told that I was not the same man as they knew me formerly to be, and that I had become sour and gloomy, abusive, insolent, and haughty; that also I would insult them, and perhaps advise the people to turn them away from my premises as men who had no business to meddle in our affairs. They were pleasantly disappointed, however, when they saw me running to meet them as far as I could see them, to press them to my heart with the most sincere marks of affection and joy. I told them that all the treasures of California brought to my house would not make me half so happy as I was made by their presence.

I at once expressed my hope that they were the messengers sent by God to bring us peace and put an end to the deplorable state of things which was the cause of their long journey. Remarking that they were covered with mud, I invited them to go to their sleeping-rooms to wash and refresh themselves.

"Sleeping rooms! sleeping rooms!" said Mr. Desaulnier, "but our written instructions from the bishops who sent us

forbid us to sleep here on account of your excommunication."

Mr. Brassard answered: "I must tell you, my dear Mr. Desaulnier, a thing which I have kept secret till now. After reading that prohibition of sleeping here, I said to the bishop that if he would put such a restraint upon me, he might choose another one to come here. I requested him to let us both act according to our conscience and common-sense, when we should be with Chiniquy.

"And to-day my conscience and common-sense tells me that we cannot begin our mission of peace by insulting a man who gives us such a friendly and Christian reception. The people of Canada have chosen us as their deputies because we are the sincere friends of Chiniquy. It is by keeping that character that we will best fulfil our sacred and solemn duties. I accept with pleasure the sleeping room offered me."

Mr. Desaulnier rejoined: "I accept it also, for I did not come here to insult my best friend, but to save him."

These kind words of my guests added to the joy I experienced at their coming. I told them: "If you are here to obey the voice of your conscience and the dictates of your common-sense, there is a glorious task before you. You will soon find that the people and priest of St. Anne have also done nothing, but listened to the voice of their honest conscience, and followed the laws of common-sense in their conduct towards the bishop. But," I added, "this is not the time to explain my position, but the time to wash your dusty faces and refresh yourselves. Here are your rooms, make yourselves at home."

After supper, which had been spent in the most pleasant way, and without any allusion to our troubles, they handed me the letters addressed to me by the bishop of Montreal, London, and Toronto, to induce me to submit to my superior, and offer me the assurance of their most sincere friendship and devotedness, if I would obey.

Mr. Desaulnier then said: "Now, my dear Chiniquy, we have been sent here by the people of Canada to take you away from the bottomless abyss into which you have fallen with your people. We have only one day and two nights to spend here; we must lose no time, but begin at once to fulfil our solemn mission."

I answered: "If I have fallen into a bottomless abyss, as you say, and that you will draw me out of it, not only God and men will bless you, but I will also for ever bless you for your charity. The first thing, however, you have to do here is to see if I am really fallen, with my people, into that bottomless abyss of which you speak."

"But are you not excommunicated?" quickly rejoined Mr. Desaulnier, "and, notwithstanding that excommunication, have you not continued to say your mass, preach, and hear the confessions of your people? Are you not then fallen into that state of irregularity and schism which separate you entirely from the Church, and to which the Pope alone can restore you."

"No, my dear Desaulnier," I answered, "I am not more excommunicated than you are; for the simple reason that an act of excommunication which is not signed and certified is a public nullity, unworthy of any attention. Here is the act of the so-called excommunication which makes so much noise in the world! Examine it yourself; look if it is signed by the bishop or anyone else you know; consider with attention if it is certified by anybody." And I handed him the document.

After he had examined it, and turned it every way for more than half-an-hour, with Mr. Brassard, without saying a word, he at last broke his silence, and said:

"If I had not seen it with my own eyes, I could never have believed that the bishop can play such a sacrilegious comedy in the face of the world. You have, several times, published it in the press, but I confess that your best friends, and I among the rest, did not believe you. It could not enter our minds that a bishop should be so devoid, I do not say of every principle of religion, but of the most common honesty, as to have proclaimed before the whole world, that you were excommunicated, when he had to offer us only that ridiculous piece of rag to support his assertion. But in the name of common-sense, why is it that he has not signed his sentence of excommunication, or got it signed and countersigned by some authorised people, when it is so evident that he wanted to excommunicate you?"

"His reason for not putting his name, nor the name of any known person at the bottom of that so-called excommunication is very clear," I answered. "Though our bishop is one of the most accomplished rogues of Illinois, he is still more a coward than a rogue. I had threatened to bring him before the civil court of the country, if he dared to destroy my character by a sentence of interdict or excommunication; and he found that the only way to save himself, in the same time that he was outraging me, was not to sign that paper; he thereby took away from me the power of prosecuting him. For the first thing I would have to do in a prosecution, in that case, would be to prove the signature of the bishop. Where could I find a witness who would swear that this is his signature? Would you swear it yourself, my dear Desaulnier?"

"Oh! no, for surely, it is not his signature, nor that of his grand vicar or secretary." But without going any further, added he, "We must confess to you that we have talked to the bishop, when passing through Chicago, asking him if he had made any public or private inquest against you, and if he had found you guilty of any crime. As he felt embarrassed by our questions, we told him that it was in our public character as deputies of the bishops and people of Canada towards you, that we were putting to him those questions. That it was necessary for us to know all about your public and private character, when we were coming to press you to reconcile yourself to your bishop."

"He answered that he had never made any inquest about you, though you had requested him, several times, to do it, for the simple reason that he was persuaded that you were one of his best priests. Your only defect, he said, was a spirit of stubbornness, and want of respect and obedience for your superior, and your meddling with his dealings with his diocessans, with which you had no business. He told us also that you refused to go to Kahokia. But his face became so red, and his tongue was so strangely lisping when he said that, that I suspected it was a falsehood; and we have now, before our eyes, that document, signed by four unimpeachable witnesses, that it was more than a falsehood—it was a lie. He proffered another lie also, we see it now, when he said that he had signed, himself, the act of excommunication: for surely, this is not his handwriting. Such conduct from a bishop is very strange. If you would appeal to the Pope, and go to Rome with such documents in hand against that bishop, you would have an easy victory over him. For the canons of the Church are clear and unanimous on that subject. A bishop who pronounces such grave sentences against a priest, and makes use of false signatures to certify his sentences, is himself suspended and excommunicated, *ipso facto*, for a whole year."

Mr. Brassard added: "Cannot we confess to Chiniquy that the opinion of the bishops of Canada is, that Bishop O'Regan is a perfect rogue, and that if he (Chiniquy) would submit, at once, under protest, to those unjust sentences, and appeal to the Pope, he would gain his cause, and soon be reinstated by a public decree of his holiness?"

Our discussion about the troubles I had had; and the best way to put an end to them, having kept us up till three o'clock in the morning, without being able to come to any satisfactory issue, we adjourned to the next day, and went to take some rest, after a short prayer.

The 25th November, at 10 a.m., after breakfast and a short walk in our public square, to breathe the pure air and enjoy the fine scenery of our beautiful hill of St. Anne, we shut ourselves up in my study, and resumed the discussion.

To show them my sincere desire of stopping those noisy and scandalous struggles without compromising the sacred principles which had guided me from the beginning of our troubles, I consented to sacrifice my position as pastor of St. Anne, provided Mr. Brassard would be installed in my place. It was decided, however, that I should remain with him, as his vicar, and help in the management of the spiritual and temporal affairs of the colony. The promise was given me that on that condition the bishop would withdraw his so-called sentence, give back to the French-Canadians of Chicago the church he had taken away from them, put a French-speaking priest at the head of the congregation, and forgive and forget what he might consider our irregular conduct towards him, after we should have signed the following document:—

TO HIS LORDSHIP O'REGAN, BISHOP OF CHICAGO.

MY LORD,—As my actions and writing in opposition to your orders, have since a few months, given some scandals, and caused some people to think that I would rather prefer to be separated from our Holy Church than to submit to your authority, I hasten to express the regret I feel for such acts and writings. And to show to the world, and to you, my bishop, my firm desire to live and die a Catholic, I hasten to write to your lordship that I submit to your sentence, and that I promise, hereafter, to exercise the holy ministry only with your permission. In consequence, I respectfully request your lordship to withdraw the censures and interdicts you have pronounced against me, and those who have had any spiritual communication with me.

I am, my lord, your devoted son in Christ,

C. CHINIQUEY.

It was eleven o'clock at night, when I consented to sign this document, which was to be handed to the bishop and have any value only on the above conditions. The two deputies were besides themselves with joy at the success of their mission, and at my readiness to sacrifice myself for the sake of peace. Mons. Desaulnier said: "Now we see, evidently, that Chiniquy has been right with his people from the beginning, that he never meant to create a schism and to put himself at the head of a rebellious party, to defy the authority of the Church."

After thanking them for what they had done and said, I asked Mr. Desaulnier if he would be brave enough to repeat before my whole people what he had just said before me and Mr. Brassard, in the presence of God.

"Surely, I would be most happy to repeat before your whole people, that it is impossible to find fault with you in what you have done till now. But, you know very well, I will never have such an opportunity, for it is now 11 o'clock at night, your people are soundly sleeping, and I must start to-morrow morning, at six o'clock, to take the Chicago train at Kankakee at 8 a.m."

I answered, "All right!"

We knelt together to make a short prayer, and I led them to their rooms, wishing them refreshing sleep, after the hard work of the day. Ten minutes later, I was in the village, knocking at the doors of six of my most respectable parishioners, and telling them: "Please do not lose a moment, go with your fastest horse to such and such a part of the colony; knock at every door and tell the people to be at the church at 5 o'clock in the morning, to hear with their own ears, what the deputies from Canada have to say about our struggles with the Bishop of Chicago. Tell them to be punctual at 5 o'clock in their pews, where the deputies will address them words which they must hear at any cost."

A little before five the next morning, Mr. Desaulnier, full of surprise and anxiety, knocked at my door and said: "Chiniquy,

do you not hear the strange noise of buggies and carriages which seem to be coming from every quarter of the globe? What does it mean? Have your people become crazy to come to church at this dark hour, so long before the dawn of day?"

"What! what!" I answered. "I was sleeping so soundly that I have heard nothing yet. What do you mean by this noise of carriages and buggies around the chapel? Are you dreaming?"

"No, I am not dreaming," he answered, "not only do I hear the noise of a great many carriages, waggon, and buggies; but, though it is pretty dark, I see several hundreds of them around the chapel. I hear voices of a great multitude of men, women, and even children, putting questions to each other, and giving answers which I cannot understand. They make such a noise by their laughing and jokes! Can you tell me what it means? I have never been so puzzled in my life?"

I answered him: "Do you not see that you are dreaming? Let me dress myself that I may go and see something of that strange and awful dream."

Mr. Brassard, though a little more calm than Desaulnier, was not himself without some anxiety at the strange noise of that multitude of carriages, horses, and people, at my house and chapel at such an hour. Knocking at my door, he said: "Please, Chiniquy, explain that strange mystery. Do that people come to play us some bad trick, and punish us for our intruding in their affairs?"

"Be quiet, my dear friends," I answered. "You have nothing to fear from that good and intelligent people. Do you not remember that last night, a few minutes before 11 o'clock, Desaulnier said that he would be honest and brave enough to repeat before my whole people what he had said before you and me, and in the presence of God. I suppose that some of the angels of heaven have heard those words, and have carried them this night to every family, inviting them to be here at the chapel, that they might hear from your own lips what you think of the grand and glorious battle they are fighting in this distant land, for the principles of truth and justice, as the Gospel secures them to every disciple of Christ."

"Well, well!" said Desaulnier, "there is only one Chiniquy in the world to take me in such a trap, and there is only one people under heaven to do what this people is doing here. I would never have given you that answer had I not been morally sure that I would never have had the opportunity to fulfil it. Who would think that you would play me such a trick? But," he added, "though I know that this will terribly compromise me before certain parties, it is too late to retract, and I will fulfil my promise."

Tears of joy were rolling down every cheek when they heard Mr. Desaulnier telling them, which Mr. Brassard confirmed after, that the bishop had no possible right to interdict their pastor, since he had told them that he was one of his

best priests; and that they had done well not to pay any attention to an act of excommunication which was a sham and sacrilegious comedy, not having been signed nor certified by any known person. Both deputies said:

"Mr. Brassard will be your pastor, and Mr. Chiniquy, as his vicar, will remain in your midst. He has signed an act of submission, which we have found sufficient, on the condition that the bishop will let you live in peace, and withdraw the sentence he says he has fulminated against you. If he does not accept those conditions we will tell him, it is not Mr. Chiniquy, but himself, who wants a schism, and we will go with Mr. Chiniquy to Rome, to plead his cause and prove his innocence before his holiness."

At six o'clock a.m., Mr. Desaulnier was on his way back to Chicago, to present my conditional act of submission to the bishop, and press him, in the name of the Bishops of Canada, and in the name of all the most sacred interests of the Church, to accept the sacrifice and the submission of the people of St. Anne, and to give them the peace they wanted and were purchasing at such a price. The Rev. Mr. Brassard had remained with me, waiting for a letter from the bishop to accompany me and put the last seal to our reconciliation. The next day he received the following note from Mr. Desaulnier:

Bishopric of Chicago, Nov. 26th, 1856.

THE REV. MR. BRASSARD, MONSIEUR—

It is advisable and indispensable that you should come here, with Mr. Chiniquy, as soon as possible. In consequence I expect you both the day after to-morrow, in order to settle that matter definitely.

Respectfully yours, ISAAC DESAULNIER.

After reading that letter with Mr. Brassard, I said: "Do you not feel that these cold words mean nothing good? I regret that you have not gone with Desaulnier to the bishop."

We arrived at the Illinois Central Depot of Chicago, the 28th, at about 10 a.m. Mr. Desaulnier was there, waiting for us. He was as pale as a dead man. The marks of Cain and Judas were on his face. Having taken him a short distance from the crowd, I asked him: "What news?"

He answered: "The news is, that you and Mr. Brassard have nothing to do but to take your bags and go away from St. Anne, to Canada. The bishop is unwilling to make any arrangements with you. He wants me to be the pastor of St. Anne, *pro tempore*, and he wants you, with Mr. Brassard, to go back quietly to Canada, and tell the bishops to mind their own business."

"And what has become of the promise you have given me and to my people, to go with me and Mr. Brassard to Rome, if the bishop refused the proposed arrangements you had fixed yourselves?"

"Tat! tat! tat!" answered he. "The bishop does not care a straw about your going, or not going to Rome. He has put

me as his grand vicar at the head of the colony of St. Anne, from which you must go in the shortest time possible."

"Now, Desaulnier," I answered, "you are a traitor and a Judas, and if you want to have the pay of Judas, I advise you to go to St. Anne. There you will receive what you deserve. The beauty and importance of that great colony have tempted you, and you have sold me to the bishop, in order to become a grand vicar and eat the fruits of the vine I have planted there. But you will soon see your mistake. If you have any pity for yourself, I advise you never to put your feet into that place any more."

Desaulnier answered: "The bishop will not make any arrangements with you unless you retract publicly what you have written against him, on account of his taking possession of the church of the French-Canadians at Chicago, and you must publish, in the press, that he was right and honest in what he did in that circumstance."

"My dear Mr. Brassard," I said, "can I make such a declaration conscientiously and honourably?" That venerable man answered me: "You cannot consent to do such a thing."

"Desaulnier," I said, "do you hear? Mr. Brassard and your conscience, if you have any, tell you the same thing. If you take sides against me with a man whom you yourself declared to be a sacrilegious thief, you are not better than he is. Go and work for him. As for me, I go back into the midst of my dear and noble people of St. Anne."

"What will you do there," answered Mr. Desaulnier, "when the bishop has forbidden you to remain?"

"What will I do?" I answered. "I will teach those true disciples of Jesus Christ to despise and shun the tyrants and the traitors, even though wearing a mitre or a square bonnet. Go, traitor! and finish your Judas work! Adieu!"

I then threw myself into the arms of Mr. Brassard, who was almost speechless, suffocated in his sobs and tears. I pressed him to my heart and said: "Adieu! my dear Mr. Brassard. Go back to Canada and tell my friends how the cowardice and ambition of that traitor has ruined the hope we had of putting an end to this deplorable state of affairs. I go back among my brethren of St. Anne, with more determination than ever to protect them against the tyranny and impiety of our despotic rulers. It will be more easy than ever to show them that the Son of God has not redeemed us on the Cross that we might be the slaves of those heartless traders in souls."

"I will more earnestly than ever teach my people to shun the modern gospel of the bishops, in order to follow the old Gospel of Jesus Christ, as the only hope and life of our poor fallen humanity."

Mr. Brassard wanted to say something; but his voice was suffocated by his sobs. The only words he could utter, when pressing me to his heart, were: "Adieu, dear friend, adieu!"

CHAPTER LX.

M. Desaulnier is named Vicar-General of Chicago to crush us.

IT was evident that the betrayal of Mr. Desaulnier would be followed by new efforts on the part of the bishop to crush us. Two new priests were sent from Canada, Mr. Mailloux, Vicar-General, and Mr. Campo, to strengthen his hands, and press the people to submit. Mr. Brassard wrote me from Canada in December:—

“All the bishops are preparing to hurl their thunders against you and your people, on account of your heroic resistance to the tyranny of the Bishop of Chicago. I have told them the truth, but they don't want to know it. My lord Bourget told me positively, that you must be forced, at any cost, to yield to the authority of your bishop; and he has threatened to excommunicate me, if I tell the people what I know of the shameful conduct of Desaulnier. If I were alone I would not mind his excommunication, and would speak the truth; but such a sentence against me would kill my poor old mother. I hope you will not find fault with me, if I remain absolutely mute. I pray you to consider this letter confidential. You know very well the trouble you would put me into by its publication.”

The French-Canadians of Chicago saw at once that their bishop, strengthened by the support of Desaulnier, would be more than ever obstinate in his determination to crush them. They thought that the best way to force him to do them justice was to publish a manifesto of their grievances against him, and make a public appeal to all the bishops of the United States, and even to the Pope.

On January 22nd, 1857, *The Chicago Tribune* was requested by them to publish the following document:—

At a public meeting of the French and Canadian Catholics of Chicago, held in the hall of Mr. Bodicar, on January 22nd, 1857—Mr. Rofinot being called to preside, and Mr. Franchere acting as secretary—the following addresses and resolutions being read, have been unanimously approved:—

“EDITORS OF ‘THE TRIBUNE.’—Will you allow a thousand voices from the dead to speak to the public through your valuable paper?

“Everybody in Chicago knows that, a few years ago, there was a flourishing congregation of French people coming from France and Canada in this city. They had their priest, their church, their religious meeting. All that is now dispersed and destroyed. The present Bishop of Chicago has breathed his deadly breath upon us. Instead of coming to us as a father, he came as a savage enemy; instead of helping us as a friend, he has put us down as a revengeful foe. He has done the very contrary to what was commanded him by the Gospel. ‘The bruised reed he shall not break, and the smoking flax he shall not extinguish.’ Instead of guiding us with the cross

of the meek Jesus, he has ruled over us with an iron rod.

"The French people are the only ones now who have no priest and no church. They are the only ones whose beautiful language is prohibited, and which is not heard from any pulpit in Chicago. And is it from lack of zeal and liberality? Ah! no. We take the whole city of Chicago as a witness of what we have done. There was not in Chicago a better-looking little church than the French-Canadian church called St. Louis. But alas! we have been turned out of it by our very bishop. As he is now publishing many stories to contradict that fact, we owe it to ourselves and to our children to raise from the tomb, where Bishop O'Regan has buried us, a voice to tell the truth.

"As soon as Bishop O'Regan came to Chicago, he was told that the French priest was too popular, that his church was attended not only by his French-Canadian people, but that many Irish and Germans were going daily to him for their religious duties. It was whispered in the ears of his Right Reverence, that on account of this, many dollars and cents were going to the French priest, which would be better stored in his Right Reverence's purse.

"Till that time, the bishop was not, in appearance, taking much trouble about us. But as soon as he saw that there were dollars and cents at stake, we had the honour to occupy his thoughts day and night. Here are the facts, the undeniable public facts. He (the bishop) began by sending for our priest, and telling him that he had to prepare himself to be removed from Chicago to some other place. As soon as we knew that determination a deputation was sent to his Right Reverence, to get the promise that we would get another French priest, and we received from him the assurance that our just request would be granted. But the next Sunday, an Irish priest having been sent to officiate, instead of a French one, we sent a deputation to ask where the French priest was that had been promised us. He answered: 'That we ought to take any priest we could get, and be satisfied.' This short and sharp answer raised our French blood, and we began speaking more boldly to his Reverence, who got up and walked through the room in a rage, saying some half-dozen times: 'You insult me!' But seeing that we were a fearless people, and determined to have no other priest but one whom we could understand, he at last promised us again a French priest, if we were ready to pay the debt of our church and priest-house. We said we would pay them, but our verbal promise was nothing to his Reverence. He immediately wrote an agreement, though it was Sunday, and we signed it. But to attain, sooner or later, his object, he imposed upon that unfortunate priest a condition that he knew no Christian could obey. This condition was, that he should not receive in his church anyone but the French. This was utterly impossible, as many Irish, German and American Catholics had been in the habit, for years past, of coming

to our church; it was impossible to turn them out at once.

"We did everything in our power to help our priest in the matter, by taking all the seats in the church, against the will of the respectable people of the different nations who had occupied them for years. Finding themselves turned out of the church, and unable to conceive the reason for so gross an insult from a fellow-Christian people, they said to us: 'Have we not paid for our seats in your church till this day? Double the rent if you like, we are ready to pay for it, but, for God's sake, permit us to come and pray with you at the foot of the same altars.' We explained to them the tyrannical orders of the bishop, and they, too, commenced cursing the bishop and the ship that brought him over.

"They continued, however, to come to our church, though they had no seat. They attended divine service in the aisles of the church, and we did not like to disturb them; but our feelings were too Christian for the bishop. He kept watch over our priest, and of course found out that he was receiving many who were forbidden by him to attend our religious meetings.

"The bishop then thought once more of his dear French priest: so he came in person to his house and asked him if he had kept his orders. The priest answered and said that it was quite impossible to obey such orders, and remain a Christian. He acknowledged that, in many instances, he had been obliged, by the laws of charity, to give religious help to some who were not French people.

" 'Well, then,' answered the bishop, 'from this moment I silence you, and forbid you the functions of priest in my diocese.'

"The poor trembling priest, thunderstruck, could not say a word. He went to some friends to relate what had just happened to him; and he was advised by them to go back to the bishop immediately to beg the privilege of remaining at the head of his congregation till Lent was over. The bishop said: 'I will consent to your request, if you will pay me one hundred dollars.'

" 'I will give you the sum as soon as I can collect it, and will give you my note for thirty days,' answered the priest.

" 'I want the money cash down,' answered the bishop. 'Go to some of your friends: you can easily collect that amount.'

"The poor priest went away in search of the almighty dollars: but he could not find them as soon as he wished, and did not return to his lordship that day. The bishop started that night for St. Louis, but he did not forget his dear French people in his long journey. As soon as he arrived in St. Louis, he wrote to his grand vicar, Rev. Mr. Dunn, that the French priest pay him 100 dollars or remain suspended.

"But alas! the bargain did not last very long; for as soon as the bishop returned, the watch that he had left behind him performed his duty well, and told him that the French priest

was going on as before. So the poor priest had to go again to the bishop to explain his conduct. But this time he could not bear the idea of officiating any longer under such a tyrant. He left us to fight the hardest battles ourselves against the bishop.

"As the church and the house of our priest were on leased grounds, the lease had to be renewed or the buildings removed. We went to the bishop, who advised us to buy a lot and remove the church on it, and sell the house to help pay for the lot. Suspecting nothing wrong in that advice, we followed it. We bargained for a lot, agreed to sell the house and went to report our progress.

"But we were going too fast. The bishop must stop us, or he would be frustrated in his calculations, for he had a lot himself to put the church on. He opposed our removing our church, by telling us that there was another lot adjoining the one we had bargained for, and that we must buy it also. We went immediately and bought the lot on ninety days' time. But he objected to this again, saying that he would not allow us to touch the church, unless he had the whole lot paid for, and the deed put in his hands, and that the deed should be made to himself personally.

"This had the effect desired by the bishop. He had collected all the money that could be collected then, in our small congregation; it was impossible for us to do any more, so we concluded to give up the battle. The bishop then went on, and took the money we had sold the house for (1,200 dollars). A Catholic lady, whose husband had bought the house, had subscribed 100 dollars for removing the church, providing the bishop would promise that it should remain in the hands of the French, and attended by a French priest. The bishop proffered again to that lady the lie, which he so often uttered to us, everywhere, even from the altar, that upon his word as a bishop, it should remain a French Church, and that they should have a French priest. (This we shall call lie number one). He then moved the church to another lot of his own, sent an Irish priest to officiate in it, put the money in his pocket, and made the congregation, which is now Irish, pay for the lot, the moving and repairing of the church, and he takes quarterly revenues, which are no less than 2,000 dollars a year.

"This is the way we have been swindled out of our church, of the house of our priest, and of our all, by the tyrant, Bishop O'Regan: and when a French priest visits our city he forbids him to address us in our mother tongue. This is the way we, French Catholics, as a society, have been blotted out of the book of the living.

"And when Rev. Father Chiniquy has publicly accused Bishop O'Regan to have deprived us most unjustly of our church, he has proffered a truth which has as many witnesses as there are Catholics and Protestants in Chicago.

"We know well that Bishop O'Regan is proclaiming that he has not deprived us of our church, that if it is in the hands of the Irish, it is because the Irish and not the French built it. 'This is lie number two, which can be proven by more than a thousand witnesses.'

"We would like to know if he has forgotten the agreement (mentioned above) which he made us sign in bargaining for a French priest. He has the receipts for every cent that was due up to the time he took possession of our church. He then proffered these words to the French gentlemen who brought him the receipts: 'It takes the French to collect money quick these hard times' (being in the winter).

"We must also add that we French people have paid for the very vestments that the bishop uses in his cathedral, which he has taken from our church. But he uses them only on some high feasts, thinking too much of stolen property to use them on a common day.

"Will it be out of place here to say that the Cathedral of Chicago was built by the French, and that the lot which it is built on was given by a Frenchman? It is very reluctantly that we expose all these facts before the eyes of the public: but having waited patiently during two long years, and having used all the influence we could command in France and Canada to no purpose, we must resort to the sympathy of the public for justice, through the free press of the United States."

"RESOLUTIONS."

"*Resolved* (1st) That the Right Rev. O'Regan, Bishop of Chicago, has entirely lost the confidence of the French and Canadian population of Chicago since he has taken away from us our church.

"*Resolved* (2nd) That the Right Rev. O'Regan has published a base slander against the French and Canadian population of Chicago, when he said he took our church from our hands on the pretence that we could not pay for it.

"*Resolved* (3rd) That the Right Rev. O'Regan, having said to our deputies, who went to inquire of him by what right he was taking our church from us to give it to another congregation: 'I have the right to do what I like with your church, and your church properties; I can sell them and put the money in my pocket, and go where I please with it'—assumed a power too tyrannical to be obeyed by a Christian and a free people.

"*Resolved* (4th) That the nature of the different suits which the Right Rev. O'Regan has had before the civil courts of this state, and which he has almost invariably lost, have proved to the whole people of Illinois that he is quite unworthy of the position he holds in the Catholic Church.

"*Resolved* (5th) That the Right Rev. O'Regan is here publicly accused of being guilty of simony for having extorted 100 dollars from a priest to give him permission to officiate and administer the sacraments among us.

"*Resolved* (6th) That the Right Rev. O'Regan, in forbidding the Irish and German Catholics to communicate with the French Catholic Church, and allowing the French and Canadians to communicate with the Irish and German Churches, has acted with a view to deprive the French Church of religious fees and other donations, which acts we consider unjust and against the spirit of the Church, and more resembling a mercantile transaction than a Christian work.

"*Resolved* (7th) That the French and Canadian people of Illinois have seen with feelings of grief and surprise that the Rev. Mr. Desaulnier has made himself the humble valet of the merciless and shameless persecutor of his countrymen.

"*Resolved* (8th) That the Rev. Mr. Chiniquy, pastor of St. Anne, deserves the gratitude of every Catholic of Illinois, for having been the first to put a stop to the rapacious tyranny of the Bishop of Chicago.

"*Resolved* (9th) That the French Catholics of Chicago are determined to give all the support in their power to the Rev. Mr. Chiniquy in his struggle against the Bishop of Chicago.

"*Resolved* (10th) That a printed copy of these resolutions be sent to every bishop and archbishop of the United States and Canada, that they may see the necessity of giving the Church of Illinois a bishop more worthy of that high position.

"*Resolved* (11th) That a copy of these Resolutions be sent to His Holiness Pius IX., that he may be incited to make inquiries about the humiliated position of the Church of Illinois, since the present bishop is among us.

"*Resolved* (12th) That the independent and liberty-loving press of the United States be requested to publish the above address and resolutions all over the country.

"P. F. ROFINOT, *President.*"

"DAVID FRANCHERE, *Secretary.*"

That cry of more than two thousand Roman Catholics of Chicago, which was reproduced by almost the whole press of Illinois, and the United States, fell as a thunderbolt upon the head of my Lord O'Regan and Desaulnier. They wrote to all the bishops of America to hasten to their rescue, and for several months the pulpits of the Roman Catholic Churches had no other mission than to repeat the echoes of the episcopal fulminations hurled against my devoted head. Many bishops letters and mandaments were published, denouncing me and my people as infamous schismatics, whose pride and obstinacy were troubling the peace of the Church. But the most bitter of all these was a letter from my Lord Bourget, Bishop of Montreal, who thought the best, if not the only way to force the people to desert me, was by for ever destroying my honour. But he had the misfortune to fall into the pit he had dug for me in 1851.

The miserable girl he had associated with himself, to satisfy his implacable hatred, was dead. But he had still in hand the lying accusations obtained from her against me. Having pro-

bably destroyed her sworn recantation written by the Jesuit Father Schneider, and not having the least idea that I had kept three other sworn copies of her recantations—he thought he could safely publish that I was a degraded man, who had been driven from Canada by him, after being convicted of some enormous crime and interdicted.

This declaration was brought before the public for the first time by him, with an hypocritical air of compassion and mercy for me, which added much to the deadly effect he expected to produce by it. Here are his own words, addressed to the people of Bourbonnais, and through them to the whole world:

“I must tell you that on 27th of September, 1851, I withdrew all his powers, and interdicted him, for reasons I gave him in my letter addressed to him; a letter which he has probably kept. Let him publish that letter, if he finds that I have persecuted him unjustly.”

I could hardly believe my eyes when I read this ignominious act of perfidy on the part of that high dignitary. It seemed incredible, and surpassed anything I had ever seen, even in Bishop O'Regan. I cannot say, however, that it took me entirely by surprise, for I had anticipated it. When Father Schneider asked me why I had taken four sworn copies of the recantation of the unfortunate girl whose tears of regret were bowing before us, I told him that I knew so much of the meanness and perfidy of Bishop Bourget, that I thought he might destroy the copy we were sending him, in order to pierce me again with his poisonous arrows, whilst if I kept three other copies—one for him, one for Mr. Brassard, and one for myself—I would have nothing to fear. I am convinced that my merciful God knew the malice of that bishop against me, and gave me that wisdom to save me.

I immediately sent him, through the press, the following answer:—

St. Anne, April 18, 1857.

TO MONSIGNOR BOURGET.

MY LORD,—In your letter of the 19th March, you assure the public that you interdicted me a few days before my leaving Canada for the United States, and you invite me to give the reason of that sentence. I will satisfy you. On the 28th of September, 1851, I found a letter on my table from you, telling me that you had suspended me from my ecclesiastical offices, on account of a great crime that I had committed, and of which I was accused. But the name of the accuser was not given, nor the nature of the crime. I immediately went to see you, and protesting my innocence, I requested you to give me the names of my accusers, and allow me to be confronted by them, promising that I would prove my innocence. You refused to grant my request.

Then I fell on my knees, and with tears, in the name of God, I requested you again to allow me to meet my accusers and prove my innocence. You remained deaf to my prayer and

unmoved by my tears ; you repulsed me with a malice and air of tyranny which I had thought impossible in you.

During the twenty-four hours after this, sentiments of an inexpressible wrath crossed my mind. I tell it to you frankly, in that terrible hour, I would have preferred to be at the feet of a heathen priest, whose knife would have slaughtered me on his altars, to appease his infernal gods, rather than be at the feet of a man who, should dare to commit such a cruel act. You had taken away my honour, you had destroyed me with the most infamous calumny—and you had refused me every means of justification ! You had taken under your protection the cowards who were stabbing me in the dark !

Though it is hard to repeat it, I must tell it here, publicly—I cursed you on that horrible day.

With a broken heart, I went to the Jesuit college, and I showed the wounds of my bleeding soul to the noble friend who was generally my confessor, the Rev. Father Schneider, the director of the college.

After three days, having providentially got some reasons to suspect who was the author of my destruction, I sent someone to ask her to come to the college without mentioning my name. When she was in the parlour, I said to Father Schneider : “ You know the horrible iniquity of the bishop against me ; with the lying words of a prostitute, he has tried to destroy me ; but please come and be the witness of my innocence.”

When in the presence of that unfortunate female, I told her : “ You are in the presence of Almighty God and two of His priests. They will be witnesses of what you say. Speak the truth. Say in the presence of God and this venerable priest, if I have ever been guilty of what you have accused me to the bishop.”

At these words, the unfortunate female burst into tears ; she concealed her face in her hands, and with a voice half suffocated with her sobs, she answered : “ No, sir ; you are not guilty of that sin ! ”

“ Confess here another truth,” I said to her : “ Is it not true that you have come to confess to me more with the desire to tempt me than to reconcile yourself to God ? ”

She said, “ Yes, sir, that is the truth.” Then I said again, “ Continue to say the truth, and I will forgive you, and God also will forgive your iniquity. Is it not through revenge for having failed in your criminal designs, that you have tried to destroy me by that false accusation to the bishop ? ”

“ Yes, sir, it is the only reason which has induced me to accuse you falsely.”

And all I say here, at least in substance, has been heard, written, and signed by the Right Rev. Schneider, one of your priests, and the present director of the Jesuit College. That venerable priest is still living in Montreal ; let the people of Canada go and interrogate him. Let the people of Canada also go to the Rev. Mr. Brassard, who has in his hands an

authenticated copy of that declaration.

Your lordship gives the public to understand that I was disgraced by that sentence some days before I left Canada for Illinois. Allow me to give you my reasons for differing from you in this matter.

There is a canon law of the Church which says: "If a censure is unjust and unfounded, let the man against whom the sentence has been passed pay no attention to it. For, before God and His Church, no unjust sentence can bring any injury against anyone. Let the one against whom such unfounded and unjust judgment has been pronounced even take no step to annul it, for it is a nullity by itself."

You know very well that the sentence you had passed against me was null and void for many good reasons; that it was founded on false testimony. Father Schneider is there, ready to prove it to you if you have any doubt.

The second reason I had to believe that you had yourself considered your sentence a nullity, and that I was not suspended by it from my ecclesiastical dignity and honour is founded, on a good testimony, I hope—the testimony of your lordship himself.

A few hours before my leaving Canada for the United States, I went to ask your benediction, which you gave me with every mark of kindness. I then asked your lordship to tell me frankly if I had to leave with the impression that I was disgraced in his mind? You gave me the assurance of the contrary.

Then I told you that I wanted to have a public and irrefutable testimony of your esteem, written with your own hand, and you gave me the following letter:—

MONTREAL, CANADA, October 13th, 1851.

SIR,—You ask my permission to leave my diocese to go and offer your services to the Bishop of Chicago. As you belong to the diocese of Quebec, I think it belongs to my lord the archbishop to give you the dismissal you wish. As for me, I cannot but thank you for your labours among us and I wish you, in return, the most abundant blessings from heaven. You shall ever be in my remembrance and in my heart, and I hope that divine providence will permit me at a future time to testify all the gratitude I owe you.

Meanwhile, I remain your very humble and obedient servant,

IGNATIUS, Bishop of Montreal.

MR. CHINIQUY, Priest.

I then asked you to give me some other tangible token of your esteem, which I might show everywhere I should go.

You answered that you would be happy to give me one, and you said: "What do you wish?" "I wish," I said, "to have a chalice from your hands to offer the holy sacrifice of the mass the rest of my life."

You answered: "I will do that with pleasure," and you gave an order to one of your priests to bring you a chalice that you

might give it to me. But that priest had not the key of the box containing the sacred vases; the key was in the hands of another priest, who was absent for a few hours.

I had not the time to wait; the hour of the departure of the train had come; I told you: "Please, my lord, send that chalice to Rev. Mr. Brassard, of Longueuil, who will forward it to me in a few days to Chicago. And the next day one of your secretaries went to the Rev. Mr. Brassard, gave him the chalice you had promised me, which is still in my hands. And the Rev. Mr. Brassard is there, still living, to be the witness of what I say, and to bring that fact to your memory if you have forgotten it.

Well, my lord, I do believe that a bishop will never give a chalice to a priest to say mass, when he knows that priest is interdicted. And the best proof that you know very well that I was not interdicted by your rash and unjust sentence, is that you gave me that chalice as a token of your esteem, and of my honesty, etc. —Respectfully,—C. CHINIQUEY.

Ten thousand copies of this exposure of the depravity of the bishop were published in Montreal. I asked the whole people of Canada to go to the Rev. Mr. Schneider and to the Rev. Mr. Brassard to know the truth, and many went. The bishop remained confounded. It was proved that he had committed against me a most outrageous act of tyranny and perfidy; and that I was perfectly innocent and honest, and that he knew it, in the very hour that he tried to destroy my character.

A few days after the publication of that letter in Canada, Mr. Brassard wrote me:—

"Your last letter has completely unmasked our poor Bishop, and revealed to the world his malice, injustice, and hypocrisy. He felt so confounded by it, that he has been three days without being able to eat or drink anything, and three nights without sleeping. Everyone says that the chastisement you have given him is a terrible one, when it is in the face of the whole world; but he deserved it."

When I received that last friendly letter from Mr. Brassard on the 1st April, 1857, I was far from suspecting that on the 15th of the same month, I should read in the press of Canada the following lines from him:—

"ST. ROCHE D' L'ACHIGAN, DE 9 AUVRIL, 1857.

"MESSIEURS,—I request you to insert the following lines in your journal: As some people suspect that I am favouring the schism of Mr. Chiniquy, I think it is my duty to say that I have never encouraged him by my words or writings in that schism. I must say that last November, when I went to St. Anne, accompanied by Mr. Desaulnier, Superior of St. Hyacinthe College, my only object was to persuade that old friend to leave the bad ways in which he was walking; and in Chicago I pressed him to put himself in a canonical way.

"I, more than anyone else, deplore the fall of a man whom,

I confess, I loved much, but for the sake of whom I will not sacrifice the sacred ties of Catholic unity, I hope that all the Canadians who were attached to Mr. Chiniquy when he was united to the Church will withdraw from him in horror of his schism; for before anything else, we must be truly and faithfully Catholic.

"However, we have a duty to perform towards the man who has fulfilled such a holy mission in our midst, by establishing the society of temperance. It is to call back with our prayers that stray sheep who has left the true Pastor's fold. I request all journals to reproduce this declaration.

"Truly yours,—MOSES BRASSARD, *Pastor.*

"M.M. the Editors of the *Courrier du Canada.*

I felt that there was not a line, not a sentiment of Mr. Brassard in that letter. I smelt Bishop Bourget's hand, from the beginning to the end. I thought, however, that it was my duty to address him a letter, dated 23rd April, 1857.

"MY DEAR MR. BRASSARD,

"I will tell you again, my dear Mr. Brassard, that if, in order to obey the Bishop of Montreal, you should strip me of the little honour which surrounds my name in Canada, I shall still never forget the good you have done me. Yes! command my friends to betray me, to trample me under their feet, to turn away from me in horror. Never will you be able to weaken my sentiments of respect and gratitude for you!

"I will still love and bless you; for I know the hand which forced yours to do so. I will always know that your own heart was first struck and wounded by the blows they commanded you to give to your friend and son in Jesus Christ."

"C. CHINIQUEY."

The effect of that letter upon Mr. Brassard was still more powerful than I had expected. It forced him to blush at his own cowardice, and to ask my pardon for the unjust sentence he had passed upon me to obey the bishop. Here are the parts of the letter bearing on that subject.

"St. Roch, 29 May, 1857.

"MON CHER CHINIQUEY,—I am more than ever convinced that you have never been legally interdicted, since Bishop Bourget told me that Bishop O'Regan had interdicted you privately, '*viva voce*' in his private room. Liguori says that it is a nullity, and that it can have no effect. I beg your pardon for what I wrote against you. I have been forced to do it. Because I had not yet sufficiently condemned you, and that my name, which you were citing in your writings, was giving you too much power, and a too clear condemnation of Bishop O'Regan. The Bishop of Montreal, abusing his authority over me, forced me to sign that document against you. I would not do it to-day if it were to be done again. Keep silence on what I tell you in this letter. It is all confidential. You understand it.

"Your devoted friend,—J. M. BRASSARD."

No priest in Canada had more deservedly enjoyed the repu-

tation of a man of honour than Mr. Brassard. Not one had ever stood so high in my esteem and respect. His sudden and unexpected fall filled my heart with an unspeakable sadness. I may say that it snapped the last thread which held me to the Church of Rome. Till then, it was not only my hope, but my firm conviction, that there were many honest, upright priests in that Church, and Mr. Brassard was, to me, the very personification of honesty.

How can I describe the shock I felt when I saw there, in the mud, a monument of the unspeakable corruption of my Church !

The perfidious Delilah had seduced and destroyed this modern Samson, enchained, as a trembling slave, at the feet of the new implacable Moloch, "The authority of the bishop !" He had not only lost the fear of God, and the respect he owed to himself, by publicly declaring that I was guilty, when he knew that I was innocent, but he had so completely lost every sentiment of honesty, that he wanted me to keep secret his declaration of my innocence, at the very moment he was inviting my whole country, through the press, to abhor and condemn me as a criminal !

I read again and again the strange letter. Every word of it was destroying the last illusions which had concealed from my mind the absolute and incurable perversity of the Church of Rome. I had no hard feelings against this last friend whom she had poisoned with the wine of her prostitutions. I felt only a profound compassion for him. I pitied and forgave him from the bottom of my heart. But every word of his letter sounded in my ears, as the warning voice of the angel sent to save Lot from the doomed city of Sodom, "Escape for thy life. Look not behind thee ; neither stay thou in all the plain. Escape thou to the mountain, lest thou be consumed."

CHAPTER LXI.

I Write to the Pope Pius IX.

I HAD not forgotten the advice given me by Archbishop Kenrick, of St. Louis, April 9, 1856, to address my complaints to the Pope himself. But the terrible difficulties and trials which had constantly followed each other, had made it impossible to follow his advice. The betrayal of Mons. Desaulnier and the defection of Mons. Brassard, however, had so strangely implicated my position, that I felt the only way to escape the wreck which threatened myself and my colony, and to save the holy cause God had entrusted me with, was to strike such a blow at our haughty persecutor that he could not survive it. I determined to send to the Pope all the public accusations which had been legally proved and published against the bishop, with a copy of the numerous and infamous suits which he had sustained before the civil courts, and had almost invariably lost, with the sentences of the judges who had condemned him. This took me nearly two months of the hardest labour of my life. I had gathered all those documents, which covered more than 200 pages of foolscap. I mailed them to Pope Pius IX., accompanied by only the following words: "Holy Father, for the sake of your precious lambs which are slaughtered and devoured in this vast diocese by a ravening wolf, Bishop O'Regan, and in the name of our Saviour Jesus Christ, I implore your Holiness to see if what is contained in these documents is correct or not. If everything is found correct, for the sake of the blood shed on Calvary, to save our immortal souls, please take away from our midst the unworthy bishop, whose daily scandals cannot longer be tolerated by a Christian people."

In order to prevent the Pope's servants from throwing my letter with those documents into their waste paper baskets, I sent a copy of them all to Napoleon III., Emperor of France, respectfully requesting him to see, through his ambassador at Washington, and his consul at Chicago, whether these papers contained the truth or not. I told him how his countrymen were trampled under the feet of Bishop O'Regan, and how they were ruined and spoiled to the benefit of the Irish people; how the churches built by the money of the French were openly stolen and transferred to the emigrants from Ireland. Napoleon had just sent an army to punish the Emperor of China on account of some injustice done to a Frenchman. I told him "the injustice done to that Frenchman in the Chinese Empire is nothing to what is done here every day not against one, but hundreds of your majesty's countrymen. A word from the Emperor of France to His Holiness will do here what your armies have done in China; force the unjust and merciless oppressor of the French of Illinois to do them justice."

I ended my letter by saying:—

"My grandfather, though born in Spain, married a French lady, and became, by choice and adoption, a French citizen. He became a captain in the French navy, and for gallant service was awarded lands in Canada, which by the fate of war fell into the hands of Great Britain. Upon retiring from the service of France he settled upon his estates in Canada, where my father and myself were born. I am thus, with other Canadians who have come to this country, a British subject by birth, and American citizen by adoption, but French still in blood and Roman Catholic in religion. I, therefore, on the part of a noble French people, humbly ask your majesty to aid us by interceding with His Holiness, Pope Pius IX., to have these outrages and wrongs righted."

The success of this bold step was more prompt and complete than I had expected. The Emperor was then all powerful at Rome. He had not only brought the Pope from Civita Vecchia to Rome, after taking that city from the hands of the Italian Republicans, a few years before, but he was still the very guardian of the Pope.

A few months later, when in Chicago, the Grand Vicar Dunn showed me a letter from Bishop O'Regan, who had been ordered to go to Rome and give an account of his administration, in which he had said: "One of the strangest things which has occurred to me in Rome is that the influence of the Emperor Napoleon is against me here. I cannot understand what right he has to meddle in the affairs of my diocese."

I had learned since that it was really through the advice of Napoleon that Cardinal Bidini, who had previously been sent to the United States to inquire about the scandal given by Bishop O'Regan, gave his opinion in our favour. The cardinal, having consulted the bishops of the United States, who unanimously denounced O'Regan as unfit and unworthy of such a high position, immediately ordered him to go to Rome, where the Pope unceremoniously transferred him from the bishopric of Chicago to a diocese extinct more than 1,200 years ago, called "Dora." This was as good as a bishopric in the moon. He consoled himself in his misfortune by drawing the hundreds of thousands of dollars of stolen money he had sent at different times, to be deposited in the banks of Paris, and went to Ireland, where he established a bank, and died in 1865.

On the 11th March, 1858, at about 10 o'clock p.m., I was not a little surprised and pleased to hear the voice of my devoted friend, Rev. Mr. Dunn, grand vicar of Chicago, asking my hospitality for the night. His first words were:

"My visit here must be absolutely incognito. In ordering me to come and see you, the Bishop of Dubuque, who is just named administrator of Chicago, advised me to come as secretly as possible. He said: 'Your triumph at Rome is perfect. You have gained the greatest victory a priest ever won over his unjust bishop: but you must thank the Emperor Napoleon for it. It is to his advice which, under the present circum-

stances, is equal to an order, that you owe the protection of the Cardinal Bidini. His report to the Pope is, that all the documents you sent to Rome were correct. The inquiry of the cardinal has brought facts to the knowledge of the Pope still more compromising than what you have written against him. Several bishops of the United States have unanimously denounced Bishop O'Regan as a most depraved man, entirely unworthy of his position, and have advised the Pope to take him away and choose another bishop for Chicago. It is acknowledged in Rome that all the sentences pronounced by that bishop against you, are unjust and null. Our good administrator has been advised to put an end at once to all the troubles of your colony, by treating you as a good and faithful priest.

"I come here, not only to congratulate you on your victory, but also to thank you, in my name, and in the name of the Church, for having saved our diocese from such a plague; for Bishop O'Regan was a real plague. A few more years of such administration would have destroyed our holy religion in Illinois. However, as you handled the poor bishop pretty roughly, it is suspected, at a distance, that you and your people are more Protestants than Catholics. We know better here; for, from the beginning, it was evident that the act of excommunication, posted at the door of your chapel by three priests too drunk to know what they were about, is a nullity, having never been signed by the bishop. It was a shameful and sacrilegious comedy. But, in many distant places, that excommunication was accepted as valid, and you are considered by many as a real schismatic. Bishop Smith has thought it advisable to ask you to give him a written and canonical act of submission, which he will publish to show the world that you are still a good Roman Catholic priest."

I thanked the grand vicar for his kind words, and the good news he was giving me, and I asked him to help me to thank God for having so visibly protected and guided me through all these terrible difficulties. We both knelt and repeated the sublime words of gratitude and joy of the old prophet: "Bless the Lord, O my soul, and all that is within me, bless His holy name," etc., (Psalm ciii.). I then said that I had no objection to give the renewed act of my faith and submission to the Church, that it might be published. I took a piece of paper, and with emotion of joy and gratitude to God, which it would be impossible to express, I slowly prepared to write. But as I was considering what form I should give to that document, a sudden, strange thought struck my mind: "Is this not the golden opportunity to put an end to the terrible temptations which have shaken my faith and distressed me for so many years?" I said to myself.

"Is not this a providential opportunity to silence those mysterious voices which are troubling me almost every hour? That in the Church of Rome we do not follow the Word of

God, but the lying traditions of men ? ”

I determined then to frame my act of submission in such a way that I would silence those voices, and be, more than ever, sure that my faith, the faith of my dear Church, which had just given me such a glorious victory at Rome, was based upon the Holy Word of God, on the divine doctrines of the Gospel. I then wrote down, in my own name and in the name of my people :—

“ My lord Bishop Smith, Bishop of Dubuque and administrator of the diocese of Chicago :—We want to live and die in the holy Catholic, Apostolic and Roman Church, out of which there is no salvation, and to prove this to your lordship, we promise to obey the authority of the Church according to the Word and commandments of God, as we find them expressed in the Gospel of Christ.—C. CHINIQUY.”

I handed this writing to Mr. Dunn, and said : “ What do you think of this act of submission ? ” He quickly read it and answered :

“ It is just what we want from you.”

“ All right,” I rejoined. “ But I fear the bishop will not accept it. Do you not see that I have put a condition to our submission ? I say that we will submit ourselves to the bishop’s authority, but only according to the Word of God and the Gospel of Christ.”

“ Is not that good ? ” quickly replied Mr. Dunn.

“ Yes, my dear Mr. Dunn ; this is good, very good indeed,” I answered ; “ but my fear is that it is too good for the bishop and the Pope ! ”

“ What do you mean ? ” he replied.

“ I mean that though this act of submission is very good, I fear lest the Pope and the bishop reject it.”

“ Please explain yourself more clearly,” answered the grand vicar. “ I do not understand the reason for such a fear.”

“ My dear Mr. Dunn,” I continued, “ I must confess to you here, a thing which is known only to God. I must show you a bleeding wound which has been in my soul for many years—a wound which has never been healed by any of the remedies I have applied to it. It is a wound which I never dared to show to any man, except to my confessor, though it has often made me suffer almost the tortures of hell. You know well that there is not a living priest who has studied the Holy Scriptures and the Holy Fathers, with more attention and earnestness these last few years, than I have. It was not only to strengthen my own faith, but also, the faith of our people, and to be able to fight the battles of our Church against her enemies that I spent so many hours of my days and nights in those studies.

“ But, though I am confounded and ashamed to confess it to you, I must do it. The more I have studied and compared the Holy Scriptures and the Holy Fathers with the teachings of our Church, the more my faith has been shaken, and the

more I have been tempted to think, in spite of myself, that our Church has, long ago, given up the Word of God and the Holy Fathers, in order to walk in the muddy and crooked ways of human and false traditions. Yes ! the more I study, the more I am troubled by the strange and mysterious voices which haunt me day and night, saying: "Do you not see that in your Church of Rome, you do not follow the Word of God, but only the lying traditions of men?"

Mr. Dunn promptly replied: "You are mistaken, my dear Mr. Chiniquy. I am sure that our bishop will accept this document as canonical, and sufficient to show your orthodoxy to the world."

"If that be so," I replied, "I will be a most happy man." It was agreed that on the 25th of March, I would go with him to Dubuque, to present my act of submission to the administrator of the diocese, after the people had signed it. Accordingly, at 7 p.m. on that day, we both took the train at Chicago for Dubuque, where we arrived next morning. At 11 a.m., I went to the palace of the bishop, who received me with marks of the utmost cordiality and affection. I presented him our written act of submission with a trembling hand, fearing he would reject it. He read it twice, and throwing his arms around me, he pressed me to his heart.

"How happy I am to see that submission!" he said. "How happy the Pope and all the bishops of the United States will be to hear it, for I will not conceal it from you; we feared that both you and your people would separate from the Church by refusing to submit to her authority."

I answered that I was not less happy to see the end of those painful difficulties.

While engaged in that pleasant conversation, the dinner hour came. He gave me the place of honour on his right, before the two grand vicars, and nothing could be more pleasant than the time we spent around the table, which was served with a good and well prepared, though frugal meal. I was happy to see that the bishop, with his priests, were teetotalers. No wine or beer to tempt the weak. Before dinner was over, the bishop said to Mr. Dunn:

"You will accompany Mr. Chiniquy to St. Anne, in order to announce, in my name, to the people, the restoration of peace."

Then, addressing himself to me, the bishop said: "The only condition of that peace is, that you will spend fifteen days in retreat and meditation in one of the religious houses you will choose yourself. I think, that after so much noise and exciting controversies, it will do you good to pass those days in meditation and prayer, in some of our beautiful and peaceful solitudes."

I answered him: "If your lordship had not offered me the favour of those days of perfect and Christian rest, I would have asked you to grant it. I consider it as a crowning of all your acts of kindness to offer me those few days of calm and

meditation, after the terrible storms of these last three years. If your lordship has no objection to my choice, I will go to the beautiful solitude where M. Saurin has built the celebrated Monastery, the College and University of St. Joseph Indiana."

"You cannot make a better choice," answered the bishop.

"But, my lord," I rejoined, "I hope your lordship will have no objection to give me a written assurance of the perfect restoration of that long-sought peace. There are people who, I know, will not believe me, when I tell how quickly and nobly your lordship has put an end to all those deplorable difficulties."

"Certainly," said the bishop, "you are in need of such a document from your bishop, and you shall have it. I will write it at once."

He had not yet written two lines when Mr. Dunn looked at his watch and said: "We have not a minute to lose, if we want to be in time for the Chicago train."

I then said to the bishop: "Please my lord, address me that important document to Chicago, where I will get it at the post office on my way to the University of St. Joseph, next Monday." The bishop having consented, I hastily took leave of him, with Mr. Dunn, after having received his benediction.

On our way back to St. Anne, the next day, we stopped at Bourbonnais to see the Grand Vicar Mailloux, one of the priests who had been sent by the bishops of Canada to help my lord O'Regan to crush me. We found him as he was going to his dining-room to take his dinner. He was visibly humiliated by the complete defeat of Bishop O'Regan at Rome. After Mr. Dunn had told him that he was sent to proclaim peace to the people of St. Anne, he coldly asked for the written proof of that strange news.

Mr. Dunn answered him: "Do you think, sir, that I would be mean enough to tell you a lie?"

"I do not say that you are telling me a lie," replied Mr. Mailloux, "I believe what you say. But I want to know the condition of that unexpected peace. Has Mr. Chiniquy made his submission to the Church?"

"Yes, sir," I replied, "here is a copy of my act of submission." He read it, and coldly said: "This is not an act of submission to the Church, but only to the authority of the Gospel, which is a very different thing. This document can be presented by a Protestant, but it cannot be offered by a Catholic priest to his bishop. I cannot understand how our bishop did not see that at once."

Mr. Dunn answered him: "My dear Grand Vicar Mailloux, I have always been told that it does not do to be more loyal than the king. My hope was, that you would rejoice with us at the news of the peace. I am sorry to see that I was mistaken. However, I must tell you, that if you want to fight, you will have nobody to fight against; for Father Chiniquy was, yesterday, accepted as a regular priest of our holy Church by the administrator. This ought to satisfy you."

I listened to the unpleasant conversation of those two grand vicars, with painful feelings, without saying a word. For I was troubled by those mysterious voices which were reiterating in my mind the cry: "Do you not see that in the Church of Rome you do not follow the Word of God, but only the lying traditions of men?"

I felt much relieved when I left the house of that so badly disposed *confrère* to come to St. Anne, where the people had gathered on the public square to receive us.

There was an immense concourse to hear the deputy sent by their bishop to proclaim peace. He did it in a most elegant English address, which I translated into French. He presented me with a blessed palm, and I offered him another loaded with beautiful flowers.

That my Christian readers may understand my blindness and the mercies of God towards me, I must confess here, to my shame, that I was glad to have made my peace with those sinful men, which was not peace with my God. But that great God had looked down upon me in mercy. He was soon to break that peace with the great apostate Church.

CHAPTER LXII.

Christ offers Himself as a Gift.—I am forgiven, rich, happy, and saved.—Back to my people.

BISHOP SMITH had fulfilled his promise in addressing to me a testimonial letter, which would show to both friends and foes that the most honourable and lasting peace between us was to succeed the deplorable years of strife through which we had just passed. I read it with Grand Vicar Dunn, who was not less pleased than I with the kind expressions of esteem towards my people and myself with which it was filled. I had never had a document in which my private and public character were so kindly appreciated. I put it in my portfolio as the most precious treasure I had ever possessed, and my gratitude to the bishop who had written such friendly lines was boundless. I at once addressed a short letter to thank and bless him: and I requested him to pray for me during the happy days I was to spend at the monastery of St. Joseph.

The venerable Grand Vicar Saurin, and his assistant, Rev. M. Granger, received me as two Christian gentlemen receive a brother priest, and I may say that, during my stay in the monastery, they constantly overwhelmed me with the most sincere marks of kindness. I found them both the very best types of priests of Rome. A volume, and not a chapter, would be required were I to tell what I saw there of the zeal, devotedness, ability and marked success of their labours. Suffice it to say that Grand Vicar Saurin is justly considered one of the largest and highest intellects Rome has ever given to the United States. There is not, perhaps, a man who has done so much for the advancement of that Church in this country as that highly gifted priest. My esteem, respect, I venture to say my veneration for him, increased every time I had the privilege of conversing with him. The only things which pained me were:

1st. When some of his inferior monks came to speak to him they had to kneel and prostrate themselves as if he had been a god, and they had to remain in that humble and degrading posture till, with a sign of his hand or a word from his lips, they were told to rise.

2nd. Though he promised to the numerous Protestant parents who entrusted their boys and girls to his care for their education, never to interfere with their religion, he was, nevertheless, incessantly proselytising them. Several of his Protestant pupils were received into the Church of Rome, and renounced the religion of their fathers, in my presence, on the eve of Easter of that year.

While, as a priest, I rejoiced in the numerous conquests of my Church over her enemies in all our colleges and nunneries, I objected to the breach of promise, always connected with those conversions. I, however, then thought, as I think to-day,

that a Protestant who takes his children to a Roman Catholic priest or a nun for their education, had no religion.

It is simply an absurdity to promise that we will respect the religion of a man who has none. How can we respect that which does not exist ?

As a general thing, there are too few people who understand the profound meaning of our Saviour's words to His disciples : "Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place and rest awhile." These words uttered after the apostles had gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told Him all things, both what they had done and taught, ought to receive more attention. on the part of those whom the Son of God has chosen to continue the great work of preaching His Gospel to the World. I had never before so well realised how good it was to be alone with Christ, and tell Him all I had done, said, and taught.

My principal occupation was to read and meditate on the Gospel. That divine Book had never been so precious to me as since God had directed me to put it as the fundamental stone of my faith in the act of submission I had just given to my bishop : and my Church had never been so dear to me as since she had accepted that conditional submission. I felt a holy pride and joy at having finally silenced the voice of the enemy which so often troubled my faith by crying to my soul : "Do you not see that in your Church of Rome you do not follow the Word of God, but only the lying traditions of men ?" My Church, through her bishop, had just given me what I considered an infallible assurance of the contrary, by accepting the document signed by me and by my people, where we had clearly said that we would never obey any authority or any superior, except when "their orders or doctrines would be based upon the Gospel of Christ." My soul was rejoicing in those thoughts, when on the 5th April (Monday after Easter) Grand Vicar Saurin handed me a letter from Mr. Dunn, telling me that a new storm, brought by the Jesuits, and more formidable than the past ones, was about to break on me ; that I had to prepare for new and more serious conflicts than I had ever experienced.

The next morning, Mr. Saurin handed me another letter from the Bishop of Dubuque, and with a sympathy which I will never forget, he said : "I am sorry to see that you are not at the end of your troubles, as you expected. Bishop Smith orders you back to Dubuque with words which are far from being friendly."

But, strange to say, this bad news, which would have saddened and discouraged me, in other circumstances, left me perfectly calm and cheerful on that day. In my dear Gospel, which had been my daily bread for the last eight days, I had found the helmet for my head, the breastplate and the shield to protect me, and the unconquerable sword with which to fight. From every page, I heard my Saviour's voice : "Fear not, I am with thee."

—When on my way back to Dubuque, I stopped at Chicago, to know from my faithful friend, Mr. Dunn, the cause of the new storm. He said: "You remember how Grand Vicar Mailoux was displeased with the conditional submission you had given to the bishop. As soon as we had left him, he sent a young priest who is with him, to the Jesuits of Chicago, to tell them that the authority of the Church and of the bishop would be forever lost if Chiniquy were allowed to submit on such a condition. He wanted them to notice that it was not to the authority of the bishops and the Church you had submitted; but only to the authority of the Bible. The Jesuits were of the same mind. They immediately sent to Dubuque, and said to the bishop: 'Do you not see that Chiniquy is a disguised Protestant; that he has deceived you by presenting you such an act of submission? Does not your lordship see that Chiniquy has not submitted himself to your authority, but to the authority of the Bible alone? Do you not fear that the whole body of the bishops and the Pope himself will condemn you for having fallen into the trap prepared by the disguised Protestant?'

"Our administrator, though a good man when left to himself, is weak, and like soft wax, can be manipulated in every way.

"The Jesuits who want to rule the priests and the Church with an iron rod, and who are aiming to change the Pope and the bishops into the most heartless tyrants, have advised the administrator to force you to give an unconditional act of submission. It is not the word of God which must rule us now, but 'the authority of the bishops.' The administrator and the Jesuits have telegraphed your submission to several bishops, who have unanimously answered that it must be rejected. What will you do?"

I replied: "I do not know what I will do, but be sure of this, my dear Mr. Dunn, I will do what God will tell me."

"Very well, very well," he answered, "may God help you."*

After warmly shaking hands with me, I left him to take the train for Dubuque, where I arrived next morning. I went immediately to the bishop's palace and found him in the company of a Jesuit.

"Your lordship wants to see me again," I said.

"Yes, sir, I do want to see you again," he answered.

"What do you want from me, my lord?" I inquired.

"Have you the testimonial letter I addressed to you, at Chicago, last week?"

"Yes, my lord, I have it with me."

"Will you show it to me?" he replied.

*—That same Mr. Dunn was also excommunicated, not long after, by his bishop, and died after publicly refusing to be relieved from that sentence.

"With pleasure, here it is," and I handed him the precious document.

As soon as he had assured himself that it was the very letter in question, he ran to the stove and threw it into the fire. I felt so puzzled at the action of my bishop, that I remained almost paralysed; but soon coming to myself, I ran to save from the flames that document which was more valuable and precious to me than all the gold in California; but it was too late. It was in ashes.

I turned to the bishop, and said: "How can you take from me a document which is my property, and destroy it without my permission?"

He answered me with an impudence that cannot be expressed on paper: "I am your superior, and have no account to give you."

"I replied: "Yes, my lord, you are my superior indeed. You are a great bishop in our Church, and I am nothing but a poor miserable priest. But, there is an Almighty God in heaven who is as much above you as He is above me. That great God has granted me rights which I will never give up to please any man. In the presence of that God, I protest against your iniquity."

"Have you come to lecture me?" rejoined the bishop.

"No, my lord, I did not come to lecture you; I came at your command; but I want to know if it were to insult me as you have just done, that you requested me to come here again."

"I ordered you to come here again because you deceived me the last time you were here," he answered; "you gave me an act of submission which you know very well is not an act of submission. I accepted it then, but I was mistaken; I reject it to-day."

I answered: "How can you say that I deceived you? The document I presented you with is written in good plain English. It is there, on your table, I see it: you read it twice, and understood it well. If you were deceived by its contents, you deceived yourself. You are then a self-deceiver, and you cannot accuse me of having deceived you."

He then took the document, read it slowly: and when at the words, "we submit ourselves to your authority, according to the Word of God as we find it in the Gospel of Christ," he stopped and said: "What do you mean by this?"

I answered, "I mean what you see there. I mean that neither I nor my people will ever submit ourselves to anybody, except according to the eternal laws of truth, justice and holiness to God, as we find them expressed in the Bible."

He angrily answered: "Such language on your part is sheer Protestantism. I cannot accept such a conditional submission from any priest."

Then, again, I seemed to hear the mysterious voice, "Do you not see that in your Church of Rome you do not follow

the Word of God, but the lying traditions of men ? ”

Thanks be to God, I did not silence the voice in that solemn hour. An ardent, though silent prayer, went from the bottom of my heart to the mercy seat. With all the fervour of my soul I said, “Oh, my God ! speak, speak again to Thy poor servant, and grant me the grace to follow Thy Holy Word ! ” I then said to the bishop :

“ You distress me by rejecting this act of submission, and asking another. Please explain yourself more clearly, and tell me the nature of the new one you require from me and my people.”

Taking then a more subdued and polite tone, the bishop said : “ I hope Mr. Chiniquy, that, as a good priest, you do not want to rebel against your bishop, and that you will give me the act of submission I ask from you. Take away these ‘ Words of God,’ ‘ Gospel of Christ,’ and ‘ Bible,’ from your present document, and I will be satisfied.”

“ But my lord ; with my people, I have put these words because we want to obey only the bishops who follow the Word of God. We want to submit only to the Church which respects and follows the Gospel of Christ.”

In an irritated manner, he quickly answered : “ Take away from your act of submission those ‘ Words of God,’ and ‘ Gospel of Christ,’ and ‘ Bible ’ ! or I will punish you as a rebel.”

“ My lord,” I replied, “ those expressions are there to show us and to the whole world, that the Word of God, the Gospel of Christ and the Bible, are the fundamental stones of our Holy Church. If we reject those precious stones, on what foundations will our Church and our faith rest ? ”

He answered angrily : “ Mr. Chiniquy, I am your superior, I do not want to argue with you. You are my inferior, your business is to obey me. Give me, at once, an act of submission, in which you will simply say that you and your people will submit yourselves to my authority, and promise to do anything I will bid of you.”

I calmly answered : “ What you ask me is not an act of submission, it is an act of adoration. I do absolutely refuse to give it.”

“ If it be so, sir,” he answered, “ you can no longer be a Roman Catholic priest.”

I raised my hands to heaven, and cried with a loud voice : “ May God Almighty be for ever blessed.”

I took my hat, and left to go to my hotel. When alone in my room, I locked the door and fell on my knees to consider, in the presence of God, what I had just done. There, the awful, undeniable truth stared me in the face. My Church could not be the Church of Christ ! That sad truth had not been revealed to me by any Protestant, nor by any other enemy of the Church. It was from her own lips I had got it ! It had been told me by one of her most learned and devoted bishops. My Church was the deadly, the irreconcilable enemy of the

Word of God, as I had so often suspected ! I was not allowed to remain a single day longer in that Church without positively giving up the Gospel of Christ !

There on my knees, and alone with God, it was evident to me that the voice which had so often troubled and shaken my faith, was the voice of my dear Saviour, who wanted to bring me out of the ways of perdition in which I was walking. And I had tried so often to silence that voice.

"My God ! My God !" I cried, "The Church of Rome is not Thy Church. To obey the voice of my conscience, which is Thine, I gave it up. When I had the choice between giving up that Church or the Bible, I did not hesitate. I could not give up Thy Holy Word. I have given up Rome. But, O Lord, where is Thy Church ? Oh ! speak ! Where must I go to be saved ?"

For more than one hour I cried to God in vain ; no answer came. In vain I cried for a ray of light to guide me. The more I prayed and wept the greater was the darkness that surrounded me. I then felt as if God had forsaken me, and an unspeakable distress was the result of that horrible thought. To add to that distress, the thought flashed across my mind that by giving up the Church of Rome, I had given up the Church of my dear father and mother, of my brothers, my friends, and my country !

I hope that none of my readers will ever experience what it is to give up friends, relatives, parents, honour, country—everything ! I did not regret the sacrifice, but I felt as if I could not survive it.

Then I felt that an implacable war was to be declared against me, which would end only with my life. The Pope, the bishops, and priests, all over the world would denounce and curse me. They would attack and destroy my character, my name, and my honour in their press, from their pulpit, and in their confessionals, where the man they strike can never know whence the blow is coming. Almost in despair, I tried to think of someone who would come to my help in that formidable conflict, but could find none. Every one of the millions of Roman Catholics were bound to curse me. My best friends—my own people—even my brothers were bound to look upon me with horror as an apostate, a vile outcast. Could I hope for help and protection from Protestants ? No ; for my priestly life had been spent in writing and preaching against them.

Though I felt the pangs of that desolation for more than two hours I constantly cried to God for a ray of His saving light, for a word telling me what to do, where to go to be saved. At last drops of cold sweat began to cover again my face and my whole body. The pulsations of my heart began to be very slow and weak : I felt so feeble that I expected to faint at any moment, or fall dead. At first I thought that death would be a great relief, but then I said to myself : "If I die where will I go, when there is no faith, nor a ray of light to illumine my poor perishing soul ? Oh, my dear Saviour," I cried, "come

to my help ! Lift up the light of Thy reconciled countenance upon me."

In that very instant I remembered that I had my dear New Testament with me, which I used to carry everywhere. The thought flashed across my mind that I would find in that divine Book the answer to my prayer, and light to guide me through that dark night to that house of refuge and salvation, after which my soul was ardently longing. With a trembling hand and a praying heart, I opened the Book at random ; but no ! not I, my God Himself opened it for me. My eyes fell on these words : " YE ARE BOUGHT WITH A PRICE. BE NOT YE SERVANTS OF MEN." (I. Corinthians vii : 23).

Strange to say ! those words came to my mind more as a light than an articulated sound. They suddenly, but most beautifully and powerfully, gave me, as much as a man can know it, the knowledge of the great mystery of a perfect salvation through Christ alone. They at once brought a great and delightful calm to my soul. I said to myself : " Jesus has bought me, then I am His ; for when I have bought a thing it is mine, absolutely mine ! Jesus has bought me ! I, then, belong to Him ! He alone has a right over me. I do not belong to the bishops, to the Popes ; not even to the Church, as I have been told till now. I belong to Jesus and to Him alone ! His Word must be my guide, and my light by day and by night. Jesus has bought me, I said again to myself ; then He has saved me ! and if so, I am saved, perfectly saved, for ever saved ! for Jesus cannot save me by half. Jesus is my God ; the works of God are perfect. My salvation must, then, be a perfect salvation. But how has He saved me ? What price has He paid for my guilty soul ? " The answer came as quick as lightning : " He bought you with His blood shed on the cross ! He saved you by dying on Calvary ! "

I then said to myself again : " If Jesus has perfectly saved me by shedding His blood on the cross, I am not saved as I have thought and preached till now, by my penances, my prayers to Mary and the saints, my confessions and indulgences, not even by the flames of purgatory ! "

In that instant, all things which, as a Roman Catholic, I had tried to believe to be saved—all the mummeries by which the poor Roman Catholics are so cruelly deceived, the chaplets, indulgences, scapularies, auricular confession, invocation of the virgin, holy water, masses, purgatory, etc., given as a means of salvation, vanished from my mind as a huge tower, when struck at the foundation, crumbles to the ground. Jesus alone remained in my mind as the Saviour of my soul !

Oh ! what a joy I felt at this simple, but sublime truth ! But it was the will of God that this joy should be short. It suddenly went away with the beautiful light which had caused it ; and my poor soul was wrapped in the most awful darkness. However profound that darkness was, a still darker object presented itself before my mind. It was a very high moun-

tain ; but not composed of sand or stones, it was the mountain of my sins. I saw them all standing before me. And still more horrified was I when I saw it moving towards me as if, with a mighty hand, to crush me. I tried to escape, but in vain. I felt tied to the floor, and the next moment it rolled over me. I felt as if crushed under its weight ; for it was as heavy as granite. I could scarcely breathe ! My only hope was to cry to God for help. With a loud voice, heard by many in the hotel, I cried : " O my God, have mercy upon me ! My sins are destroying me ! I am lost, save me ! " But it seemed God could not hear me. The mountain was between to prevent my cries from reaching Him, and to hide my tears. I suddenly thought that God would have nothing to do with such a sinner, but to open the gates of hell to throw me into that burning furnace prepared for His enemies, and which I had so richly deserved !

I was mistaken. After eight or ten minutes of unspeakable agony, the rays of a new and beautiful light began to pierce through the dark cloud which hung over me. In that light I clearly saw my Saviour. There He was, bent under the weight of His heavy cross. His face was covered with blood, the crown of thorns was on His head and the nails in His hands. He was looking to me with an expression of compassion, of love, which no tongue can describe. Coming to me, He said : " I have heard thy cries, I have seen thy tears, I come to offer Myself to thee as a gift. I offer thee My blood and My bruised body as a gift to pay thy debts ; wilt thou give Me thy heart ? Wilt thou take My Word for the only lamp of thy feet and the only light of thy path ? I bring thee eternal life as a gift ! "

I answered : " Dear Jesus, how sweet are Thy words to my soul ! Speak, oh ! speak again ! Yes, beloved Saviour, I want to love Thee ; but dost Thou not see that mountain which is crushing me ? Oh ! remove it ! Take away my sins ! "

I had not done speaking when I saw His mighty hand stretched out. He touched the mountain, and it rolled into the deep and disappeared. At the same time, I felt as if a shower of the blood of the Lamb were falling upon me to purify my soul. And suddenly my humble room was transformed into a real paradise. The angels of God could not be more happy than I was in that most mysterious and blessed hour of my life. With an unspeakable joy I said to my Saviour : " Dear Jesus, the gift of God, I accept Thee ! Thou hast offered the pardon of my sins as a gift, I accept the gift ! Thou hast brought me eternal life as a gift, I accept it ! Thou hast redeemed and saved me, beloved Saviour ; I know it, I feel it ! But this is not enough. I do not want to be saved alone. Save my people also. Save my whole country ! I feel rich and happy in that gift ; grant me to show its beauty and preciousness to my people, that they may accept it, and rejoice in its possession.

The sudden revelation of that marvellous truth of salvation

as a gift had so completely transformed me that I felt quite a new man ! The unutterable distress of my soul had been changed into an unspeakable joy. My fears had gone away, to be replaced by a courage and a strength such as I had never experienced. The Popes, with their bishops and priests, and millions of abject slaves, might now attack me ; I felt that I was a match for them all. My great ambition was to go back to my people and tell them what the Lord had done for my soul. I washed my tears away, paid my bill, and took the train which brought me back into the midst of my dear countrymen. At that very same hour they were very anxious and excited, for they had just received, at Kankakee City a telegram from the Bishop of Dubuque, telling them : "Turn away your priest, for he has refused to give me an unconditional act of submission."

They had gathered in great numbers to hear the reading of that strange message. But they unanimously said : "If Mr. Chiniquy has refused to give an unconditional act of submission, he has done right ; we will stand by him to the end. However, I knew nothing of that admirable resolution. I arrived at St. Anne on a Sabbath day at the hour of the morning service. There was an immense crowd at the door of the chapel. They rushed to me and said : "You have just come from the bishop ; what good news have you to bring us ?"

I answered : "No news here, my good friends ; come to the chapel and I will tell you what the Lord has done for my soul."

When they had filled the large building, I told them : "Our Saviour, the day before His death, said to His disciples : 'I will be a scandal to you this night.' I must tell you the same thing. I will be to-day, I fear, the cause of a very great scandal to every one of you. But as the scandal which Christ gave to His disciples has saved the world, I hope that, by the great mercy of God, the scandal I will give you will save you. I was your pastor till yesterday ; but I have no more honour to-day, for I have broken the ties by which I was bound as a slave at the feet of the bishops and of the Pope."

This sentence was scarcely finished, when a universal cry of surprise and sadness filled the church. "Oh ! What does that mean ?"

"My dear countrymen," I added, "I have not come to tell you to follow me ! I did not die to save your immortal souls : I have not shed my blood to buy you a place in heaven ; but Christ has done it. Then follow Christ, and Him alone ! Now, I must tell you why I have broken the ignominious and unbearable yoke of men to follow Christ. You remember that, on the 21st of March last, you signed, with me, an act of submission to the authority of the Bishop of the Church of Rome, with the conditional clause that we would obey them only in matters which were according to the teachings of the Word of God as found in the Gospel of Christ. In that act of submission we did not want to be slaves of any man, but the

servants of God, the followers of the Gospel. It was our hope then that our Church would accept such a submission. And your joy was great when you heard that Grand Vicar Dunn was here on the 28th of March to tell you that Bishop Smith had accepted the submission. But that acceptance was revoked. Yesterday I was told, in the presence of God, by the same bishop, that he ought not to have accepted an act of submission from any priest or people based on the Gospel of Christ ! Yes ! yesterday, Bishop Smith rejected, with the utmost contempt, the act of submission we had given him, and which he had accepted only two weeks ago, because 'the Word of God' was mentioned in it ! When I respectfully requested him to tell me the nature of the new act of submission he wanted from us, he ordered me to take away from it 'the Word of God, the Gospel of Christ, and the Bible,' if we wanted to be accepted as good Catholics ! We had thought till then that the sacred Word of God and the holy Gospel of Christ were the fundamental and precious stones of the Church of Rome. We loved her on that account, we wanted to remain in her bosom, even when we were forced to fight as honest men against that tyrant, O'Regan. Believing that the Church of Rome was the child of the Word of God, that it was the most precious fruit of the divine tree planted on the earth under the name of the Gospel, we would have given the last drop of our blood to defend her !

"But, yesterday, I have learned, from the very lips of a Bishop of Rome, that we were a band of simpletons in believing those things. I have learned that the Church of Rome has nothing to do with the Word of God, except to throw it overboard, to trample it under her feet, and to forbid us even to name it in the solemn act of submission we had given. I have been told that we could no longer be Roman Catholics, if we persisted in putting the Word of God and the Gospel of Christ as the foundation of our religion, our faith and our submission. When I was told by the bishop, that I had either to renounce the Word of God as the base of my submission, or the title of priest of Rome, I did not hesitate. Nothing could induce me to give up the Gospel of Christ ; and so I gave up the title and position of priest in the Roman Catholic Church. I would rather suffer a thousand deaths than renounce the Gospel of Christ. I am no longer a priest of Rome ; but I am more than ever a disciple of Christ, a follower of the Gospel. That Gospel is for me, what it was for Paul : 'The power of God unto salvation.' It is the bread of my soul. In it we can satisfy our thirst with the waters of eternal life ! No ! no ! I could not buy the honour of being any longer a slave to the bishops and Popes of Rome, by giving up the Gospel of Christ !

"When I requested the bishop to give me the precise form of submission he wanted from us, he answered : 'Give me an act of submission, without any condition, and promise that you will do anything I bid you.'

"I replied: 'This is not an act of submission, it is an act of adoration! I will never give it to you!'

" 'If so,' said he, 'you can no longer be a Roman Catholic priest.'

"I raised my hands to heaven and with a loud and cheerful voice I said: 'May God almighty be forever blessed.' "

I then told them something of my desolation, when alone in my room; of the granite mountain which had been rolled over my shoulders, of my tears and of my despair. I told them also how my bleeding, dying, crucified Saviour had brought me the forgiveness of my sins; how He had offered me eternal salvation as a gift, and how rich, happy, and strong I felt in that gift. I then offered them the gift and besought them to accept it.

My address lasted more than two hours, and God blessed it in a marvellous way. Its effects were profound and lasting, but it is too long to be described here. In substance, I said: "I respect you too much to impose myself upon your honest consciences, or to dictate what you ought to do on this most solemn occasion. I feel that the hour has come for me to make a great sacrifice; I must leave you! but no! I will not go away before you tell me to do so. You will yourselves break the ties so dear which have united us. Please pay attention to these, my parting words: "If you think it is better for you to follow the Pope than to follow Christ; that it is better to trust in the works of your hands, and in your own merits, than in the blood of the Lamb, shed on the cross, to be saved; if you think it is better for you to follow the traditions of men than the Gospel; and if you believe that it is better for you to have a priest of Rome, who will keep you tied as slaves to the feet of the bishops, and who will preach to you the ordinances of men, rather than have me preach to you nothing but the pure Word of God, as we find it in the Gospel of Christ, tell it to me by rising up, and I will go!" But to my great surprise nobody moved. The chapel was filled with sobs; tears were flowing from every eye; but no one moved to tell me to leave them! I was puzzled. For though I had hoped that many, enlightened by the copies of the New Testament I had given them, tired of the tyranny of the bishops, and disgusted with the superstitions of Rome, would be glad to break the yoke with me, to follow Christ, I was afraid that the greatest number would not dare to break their allegiance to the Church and publicly give up her authority. After a few minutes of silence, during which I mixed my tears and my sobs with those of my people, I told them: "Why do you not, at once, rise up and tell me to go? You see that I can no longer remain your pastor after renouncing the tyranny of the bishops, and the traditions of men, to follow the Gospel of Christ as my only rule. Why do you not bravely tell me to go away?"

This new appeal was still without any answer. I was filled with astonishment. However it was evident to me that a great

and mysterious change was wrought in that multitude. Their countenances and their manners were completely changed. They were speaking to me with their eyes filled with tears, and their manly faces beaming with joy. Their sobs, in some way, told me that they were filled with new light; that they were full of new strength, and ready to make the most heroic sacrifices, and break their fetters to follow Christ, and Him alone. There was something in those brave, honest and happy faces which was telling me more effectually than the most eloquent speech: "We have accepted the gift, we want to be rich, happy, free, and saved in the gift, we do not want anything else; remain among us and help us to love both the gift and the Giver."

A thought suddenly flashed across my mind, and with an inexpressible sentiment of hope and joy, I told them:

"My dear countrymen! the mighty God, who gave me His saving light yesterday, can grant you the same favour to-day. He can as well save a thousand souls as one. I see in your noble and Christian faces that you do not want to be slaves of men. You want to be the free children of God, intelligent followers of the Gospel! The light is shining, and you like it. The gift of God has been offered to you, and you have accepted it. With me you will break the fetters of a captivity, worse than that of Egypt, to follow the Gospel of Christ, and take possession of the Promised Land; let all those who think it is better to follow Jesus Christ than the Pope, better to follow the Word of God than the traditions of men; let all those of you who want me to remain here and preach to you nothing but the Word of God, as we find it in the Gospel of Christ, tell it to me by rising up. I am your man! Rise up!"

Without a single exception that multitude arose! More than a thousand of my countrymen had for ever broken their fetters.

CHAPTER LXIII.

**The Solemn Responsibilities of my New Position—
We give up the name of Roman Catholics to call ourselves
Christian Catholics.**

WHERE shall I find words to express the sentiments of surprise, admiration, and joy I felt when after the divine service, alone in my humble study I considered, in the presence of God, what His mighty hand had wrought under my eyes.

My joy was, however, suddenly changed to confusion, when I considered the unworthiness of the instrument which God had chosen to do that work. I felt this was only the beginning of the most remarkable religious reform which had ever occurred on this continent of America, and I was dismayed at the thought of such a task! I saw, at a glance, that I was called to guide my people into regions entirely new and unexplored. The terrible difficulties which Luther, Calvin, and Knox had met, at almost every step, were to meet me! Though giants, they had, at many times, been brought low and almost discouraged in their new positions. What would become of me, seeing that I was so deficient in knowledge, wisdom, and experience?

Many times, during the first night after the deliverance of my people from the bondage of the Pope, I said to my God in tears: "Why hast Thou not chosen a more worthy instrument of Thy mercies towards my brethren?" I would have shrunk before the task had not God said to me in His Word, "For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called; but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise. And God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty, and base things of the world and things which are despised, hath God chosen; yea, the things which are not, to bring to naught the things which are, that no flesh should glory in His presence."—I. Corinthians i: 26-30.

These words calmed my fears and gave me new courage. Next morning I said to myself, "Is it not God alone who has done the great things of yesterday? Why should I not rely upon Him for the things which remain to be done? I am weak, it is true, but He is strong and mighty. I am unwise, but He is the God of light and wisdom; I am sinful, but He is the God of holiness: He wants the world to know that He's the worker."

It would make the most interesting book, were I to tell all the marvellous episodes of the new battle my dear countrymen and I had to fight against Rome, in those stormy but blessed days. Let me ask my readers to come with me to that Roman Catholic family and see the surprise and desolation of the wife and children when the father returned from public service and said: "My dear wife and children, I have forever left the

Church of Rome, and hope that you will do the same. The ignominious chains by which we were tied, as the slaves of the bishops and of the Pope, are broken. Christ Jesus alone will reign over us now. His Holy Word alone will rule and guide us. Salvation is a gift. I have accepted it and am happy in its possession."

In another house, the husband had not been able to come to Church, but the wife and children had. It was now the wife who announced to her husband that she had forever renounced the usurped authority of the bishops and the Pope, and that it was her firm resolution to obey no other master than Christ, and accept no other religion than the one taught in the Gospel.

At first this was considered only a joke, but as soon as it was realised to be a fact, there were, in many places, confusion, tears, angry words, and bitter discussions. But the God of truth, light, and salvation was there, and as it was His work, the storms were soon calmed, the tears dried, and peace restored.

A week had scarcely passed when the Gospel cause had achieved one of the most glorious victories over its implacable enemy, the Pope. In a few days 405 out of 500 families, which were around me in St. Anne, had not only accepted the Gospel of Christ as their only authority in religion, but had publicly given up the name of Roman Catholics to call themselves Christian Catholics.

A few months later, a Romish priest, legally questioned on the subject by the judge of Kankakee, had to swear that only fifteen families had remained Roman Catholics in St. Anne.

A most admirable feature of this religious movement was the strong determination of those who had never been taught to read, to lose no time in acquiring the privilege of reading for themselves the Divine Gospel which had made them free from the bondage of man. Half of the people had never been taught to read while in Canada; but as their children were attending the schools we had established in different parts of the colony, every house, as well as our chapel, on Sabbath days was turned into a school-house, where our schoolboys and girls were the teachers, and the fathers and mothers the pupils. In a short time there were but few, except those who refused to leave the Church of Rome, who could not read for themselves the Holy Word of God.

But however great the victory we had gained over the Pope, it was not yet complete. It was true that the enemy had received a deadly wound. The beast with the seven heads had its principal one severed. The usurped authority of the bishops had been destroyed, and the people had determined to accept none but the authority of God. But many false notions had been retained. Many errors and superstitions still remained in their minds, as a mist after the rising of the sun, to prevent them from seeing clearly the saving light of the Gospel.

It was my duty to destroy these superstitions and root out

these noxious weeds. But I knew the formidable difficulties the reformers of the fifteenth century had met, the deplorable divisions which had spread amongst them, and the scandals which had so seriously retarded and compromised the reformation.

I cried to God for wisdom and strength. Never had I understood so clearly as I did in that most solemn and difficult epoch of my life the truth that prayer is to the troubled mind what oil is to the raging waves of the sea.

My people and I, as are all Roman Catholics, were much given to the worship of images and statues. There were fourteen beautiful pictures hung on the walls of our chapel, called, "The Way of the Cross," on which the circumstances of the passion of Jesus Christ were represented, each surmounted with a cross. One of our favourite devotional exercises was to kneel, three or four times a week, before them, prostrate ourselves and say with a loud voice: "Oh! holy cross, we adore thee."

We used to address our most fervent prayers to them, as if they could hear us, asking them to change our hearts and purify our souls! Our blind devotions were so sincere that we used to bow our heads to the ground before them. I may say the same of a beautiful statue, or rather idol, of the Virgin Mary, represented as a child learning to read at the feet of her mother, St. Anne.

The group was a masterpiece of art, sent to me by some rich friends from Montreal not long after I had left that city to form the Colony of St. Anne in 1852. We had frequently addressed our most fervent prayers to those statues, but after the blessed Pentecost on which we had broken the yoke of the Pope, I never entered my church without blushing at the sight of those idols.

I would have given much to have the pictures, crosses and images removed, but dare not lay hands suddenly on them; I was afraid lest I should do harm to some of my people, who, it seemed to me, were yet too weak in their religious views to bear it. I was just then reading how Knox and Calvin had made bonfires of all those relics of old Paganism, and I wished I could do the same; but I felt like Jacob, who could not follow the rapid march of his brother, Esau, towards the land of Seir. "The children were tender and the flocks and herds were young. If men had overdriven them one day all the flocks would have died."—Genesis xxxiii: 13

Our merciful God saw the perplexity in which I was, and taught me how to get rid of those idols without harming the weak.

One Sabbath, on which I preached on the Second Commandment: "Thou shalt not make unto thyself any graven image," etc., I remained in the chapel to pray after the people had left. I looked up to the group of statues on the altar, and said to them: "My good ladies, you must come down from

that high position: God Almighty alone is worshipped here now; if you could walk out of this place I would politely invite you to do it. But you are nothing but mute, deaf, blind and motionless idols. You have eyes, but you cannot see; ears, but you cannot hear; feet, but you cannot walk. What will I do with you now? Your reign has come to an end."

It suddenly came to my mind, that when I had put these statues on their high pedestals, I had tied them with a very slender but strong silk cord, to prevent them from falling. I said to myself: "If I were to cut that string, the idols would surely fall the first day the people would shake the floor when entering or going out." Their fall and destruction would then scandalise no one. I took my knife and scaled the altar, cut the string, and said: "Now, my good ladies, take care of yourselves, especially when the chapel is shaken by the wind, or the coming in of the people."

I never witnessed a more hearty laugh than at the beginning of the religious service on the next Sabbath. The chapel being shaken by the action of the whole people who fell on their knees to pray, the two idols, deprived of their silk support, after a couple of jerks which, in former days, we might have taken for a friendly greeting, fell down with a loud crash, and broke into fragments. Old and young strong and weak, and even babes in the faith, after laughing to their heart's content at the sad end of the idols, said to each other: "How foolish and blind were we to put our trust in, and pray to those idols, that they might protect us, when they cannot take care of themselves!"

This last vestige of idol-worship among our dear converts, disappeared for ever with the dust and broken fragments of those poor helpless statues. The very next day the people themselves took away all the images, before which they had so often abjectly prostrated themselves, and destroyed them.

From the beginning of this movement, it had been my plan to let the people draw their own conclusions, as much as possible, from their own study of the Holy Scriptures. I used to direct their steps in such a way, that they might understand that I was myself led with them by the mighty and merciful arm of God, in our new ways. It was also evident to me, that from the beginning, the great majority, after searching the Scriptures with prayerful attention, had found out that purgatory was a diabolical invention used by the priests of Rome to enrich themselves, at the expense of their poor, blind slaves. But I was also convinced that a number were not yet free from that imposture.

I did not know how to attack and destroy that error without wounding and injuring some of the weak children of the Gospel. After much praying, I thought that the best way to clear the clouds which were still hovering around the feeblest intelligences was to have recourse to the following device.

The All Souls' Day (November 2) had come, when it was the

usage to take up collections for the sake of having prayers and masses said for the souls in purgatory. I then said to the people, from the pulpit: "You have been used, from your infancy, to collect money to-day in order to have prayers said for the souls in purgatory. Since we have left the Church of Rome, for the Church of Christ, we have spent many pleasant hours together in reading and meditating upon the Gospel; you know that we have not found in it a single word about purgatory. From the beginning to the end of that Divine Book we have learned that it was only through the blood of the Lamb, shed on the cross, that our guilty souls could be purified from their sins. I know, however, that a few of you have retained something of the views taught to you, when in the Church of Rome, concerning purgatory. I do not want to trouble you by useless discussions on the subject, or by refusing the money you want to give for the souls of your dear departed parents and friends. The only thing I want to do is this: You used to have a small box passed to you to receive that money; to-day, instead of one box, two boxes will be passed, one white, the other black. Those who, like myself, do not believe in purgatory, will put their donations in the white box, and the money will be given to the poor widows and orphans of the parish, to help them to get food and clothing for next winter. Those of you who still believe in purgatory, will put their money into the black box, for the benefit of the dead. The only favour I ask of them is, that they should tell me how to convey their donations to their departed friends. I tell you frankly, that the money you give to the priests never goes to the benefit of the souls of purgatory; the priests, everywhere, keep that money for their own bread and butter."

My remarks were followed by a general smile. Thirty-five dollars were put in the white box for the orphans and widows, but not a cent fell into the box for the souls in purgatory.

From that day, by the great mercy of God, our converts were perfectly rid of the ridiculous and sacrilegious belief in purgatory. That is the way I dealt with all the errors and idolatries of Rome. We had two public meetings every week, when our chapel was well filled as on the Sabbath. After the religious exercises, everyone had the liberty to question me and argue on the various subjects announced at the last meeting.

The doctrine of auricular confession, prayers in an unknown language, the mass, holy water and indulgences, were calmly examined, discussed and thrown overboard, one after the other, in a very short time. The good done in those public discussions was incalculable. Our dear converts, not only learned the great truths of Christianity, but they learned also how to defend and preach them to their relations, friends, and neighbours. Many would come from long distances to see for themselves that strange religious movement which was making so much noise all over the country. It is needless to say that

few of them went back without having received some rays of the saving light which the Sun of Righteousness was so abundantly pouring upon me and my dear brethren of St. Anne.

Three months after our exit from the land of bondage, we were not less than six thousand French-Canadians marching towards the Promised Land.

How can I express the joy of my soul, when, under cover of the darkness of night, I was silently pacing the streets of our town. I heard, from almost every house, sounds of reading the Holy Scriptures, or the melodies of our delightful French hymns! How many times did I then, uniting my feeble voice with that old prophet, say in the rapture of my joy: "Bless the Lord, O! my soul: and all that is within me, bless His holy name."

But it was necessary that such a great and blessed work should be tried. Gold cannot be purified without going through the fire.

On the 27th July, a devoted priest, through my friend Mr. Dunn, of Chicago, sent me the following copy of a letter, written by the Roman Catholic Bishop of Illinois, my Lord Duggan, to several of his co-bishops.

"The schism of the apostate, Chiniquy, is spreading with an incredible and most irresistible velocity. I am told that he has not less than ten thousand followers from his countrymen. Though I hope that this number is an exaggeration, it shows that the evil is great; and that we must not lose any time in trying to open the eyes of the deluded people he is leading to perdition. I intend (D.V.) to visit the very citadel of that deplorable schism, next Tuesday, the 3rd of August. As I speak French almost as well as English, I will address the deluded people of St. Anne in their own language. My intention is to unmask Chiniquy, and show what kind of man he is. Then I will show the people the folly of believing that they can read and interpret the Scriptures, by their own private judgment. After which, I will easily show them that out of the Church of Rome there is no salvation. Pray to the blessed Virgin Mary that she may help me reclaim that poor deceived people."

Having read that letter to the people on the first Sabbath of August, I said: "We know a man only after he has been tried. So we know the faith of a Christian only after it has been through the fire of tribulations. I thank God that next Tuesday will be the day chosen by Him to show the world that you are worthy of being in the front rank of the great army Jesus Christ is gathering to fight His implacable enemy, the Pope, on this continent.

"Let every one of you come and hear what the bishop has to say. Not only those who are in good health must come, but even the sick must be brought to hear and judge for themselves. If the b'shop fulfils his promise to show you that I am a depraved and wicked man, you must turn me out. You

must give up, or burn your Bibles, at his bidding, if he proves that you have neither the right to read, nor the intelligence to understand them; and if he shows you that, out of the Church of Rome, there is no salvation, you must, without an hour's delay, return to that Church and submit yourselves to the Pope's bishops. But if he fails (as he will surely do), you know what you have to do. Next Tuesday will be the most glorious day for us all. A great and decisive battle will be fought here, such as this continent has never witnessed, between the great principles of Christian truth and liberty, and the principles of lies and tyranny of the Pope. I have only one more word to say: From this moment, to the solemn hour of the conflict, let us humbly, but fervently, ask our great God, through His beloved and eternal Son, to look down upon us in His mercy, enlighten and strengthen us, that we may be true to Him, to ourselves, and His Gospel: and then the angels of heaven will unite with all the elect of God on earth to bless you for the great and glorious victory you will win."

Never had the sun shone more brightly on our beautiful hill than on the 3rd August, 1858. The hearts had never felt so happy, and the faces had never been so perfectly the mirrors of joyful minds, as on that day, among the multitudes which began to gather from every corner of the colony, a little after 12 o'clock, noon.

Seeing that our chapel, though very large, would not be able to contain half the audience, we had raised a large and solid platform, ten feet high, in the middle of the public square, in front of the chapel. We covered it with carpets and put a sofa, with a good number of chairs for the bishop, his long suite of priests, and one for myself, and a large table for the different books of reference I wanted to have at hand, to answer the bishop.

At about 2 o'clock p.m., we perceived his carriage, followed by several others filled with priests. He was dressed in his white surplice, and his official *bonnet quarré* on his head, evidently to more surely command the respect and awe of the multitude. I had requested the people to keep silence and show him all the respect and courtesy due to a gentleman who was visiting them for the first time.

As soon as his carriage was near the chapel I gave a signal, and up went the American flag to the top of a mast put on the sacred edifice. It was to warn the ambassador of the Pope that he was not treading the land of the holy Inquisition and slavery, but the land of Freedom and Liberty. The bishop understood it; for, raising his head to see that splendid flag of stripes and stars, waving to the breeze, he became pale as death. And his uneasiness did not abate when the thousands around him rent the air with the cry: "Hurrah for the flag of the free and the brave!" The bishop and his priests thought this was the signal I had given to slaughter them; for they had been told several times that I and my people were so

depraved and wicked that their lives were in great danger among us. Several priests, who had not much relish for the crown of martyrdom, jumped from their carriages and ran away, to the great amusement of the crowd. Perceiving the marks of the most extreme terror on the face of the bishop, I ran to tell him that there was not the least danger, and assured him of the pleasure we had to see him in our midst.

I offered my hand to help him down from his carriage, but he refused it. After some minutes of trembling and hesitation, he whispered a few words in the ear of his Grand Vicar Mailloux, who was well known by my people, and of whom I have already spoken. I knew that it was by his advice that the bishop was among us, and it was by his instigation that Bishop Smith had refused the submission we had given him.

Rising slowly, he said with a loud voice: "My dear French-Canadian countrymen, here is your holy bishop: kneel down and he will give you his benediction."

But to the great disgust of the poor grand vicar, this so well laid plan for beginning the battle entirely failed. Not a single one of that immense multitude cared for the benediction—nobody knelt.

Thinking that he had not spoken loudly enough, he raised his voice to the highest pitch, and cried: "My dear fellow countrymen, this is your holy bishop; he comes to visit you; kneel down and he will give you his benediction."

But nobody knelt, and what was worse, a voice from the crowd answered: "Do you not know, sir, that we no longer bend the knee to any man? It is only before God we kneel."

The whole people cried, "Amen!" to that noble answer. I could not refrain a tear of joy from falling down my cheek when I saw how this first effort of the ambassador of the Pope to entrap my people had signally failed. But though I thanked God from the bottom of my heart for this first success He had given to His soldiers, I knew the battle was far from over. I implored Him to abide with us, to be our wisdom and our strength to the end. I looked at the bishop, and seeing his countenance as distressed as before, I offered him my hand again, but he refused it the second time with supreme disdain, but accepted the invitation I gave him to come on the platform.

When half way up the stairs he turned, and seeing me following him he put forth his hand to prevent me from ascending any further and said: "I do not want you on this platform: go down and let my priests alone accompany me."

I answered him: "It may be that you do not want me there: but I want to be at your side, to answer you. Remember that you are not on your own ground here; but on mine!"

He then, silently and slowly walked up. When on the platform, I offered him a good arm chair, which he refused, and sat on one of his own choice, with his priests around him. I then addressed him as follows: "My lord, the people and pastor of St. Anne are exceedingly pleased to see you in their

midst. We promise to listen attentively to what you have to say, on condition that we have the privilege of answering you."

He answered angrily: "I do not want you to say a word here."

Then, stepping to the front, he began his address in French, with a trembling voice. But it was a miserable failure from beginning to end. In vain did he try to prove that out of the Church of Rome there is no salvation. He failed still more miserably to prove that the people have neither the right to read the Scriptures, nor the intelligence to understand them. He said such ridiculous things on that point, that the people went into fits of laughter, and some said: "This is not true. You do not know what you are talking about. The Bible says the very contrary."

But I stopped them by reminding them of the promise they had made of not interrupting him.

A little before closing his address, he turned to me and said: "You are a wicked, rebel priest against your holy Church. Go from here into a monastery to do penance for your sins. You say that you have never been excommunicated in a legal way! Well, you will not say that any longer, for I excommunicate you now before this whole people."

I interrupted him and said: "You forget that you have no right to excommunicate a man who has publicly left your Church, long ago."

He seemed to realise that he had made a fool of himself in uttering such a sentence, and stopped speaking for a moment. Then, recalling his lost courage, he took a new and impressive manner of speaking. He told the people how their friends, their relatives, their very dear mothers and fathers, in Canada, were weeping over their apostacy. He spoke for a time with great earnestness of the desolation of all those who loved them, at the news of their defection from their holy mother Church. Then, resuming, he said:—

"My dear friends, please tell me what will be your guide in the ways of God after you have left the holy Church of your fathers, the Church of your country, who will lead you in the ways of God?"

Those words, which had been uttered with great emphasis and earnestness, were followed by a most complete and solemn silence. Was that silence the result of a profound impression made on the crowd, or was it the silence which always precedes the storm?

I must confess that, though I had not lost confidence in God, I was not without anxiety. Though silent and ardent prayers were going up to the mercy-seat from my heart, I felt that that poor heart was troubled and anxious, as it had never been before. I could have easily answered the bishop and confounded him in a few words; but I thought it was much better to let the answer and rebuke come from the people.

The bishop, hoping that the long and strange silence was a

proof that he had touched the sensitive cords of the hearts, and that he was to win the day, exclaimed a second time, with still more power and earnestness:

"My dear French-Canadian friends, I ask you, in the name of Jesus Christ your Saviour and mine, in the name of your desolated mothers, fathers, and friends, who are weeping along the banks of your beautiful St. Lawrence River—I ask it in the name of your beloved Canada—answer me! Now that you refuse to obey the holy Church of Rome, who will guide you in the ways of salvation?"

Another solemn silence followed that impassionate and earnest appeal. But this silence was not to be long. When I had invited the people to come and hear the bishop, I requested them to bring their Bibles. Suddenly we heard the voice of an old farmer, who, raising his Bible over his head with his two hands said: "This Bible is all we want to guide us in the ways of God. We do not want anything but the pure Word of God to teach us what we must do to be saved. As for you, sir, you had better go away, and never come here any more."

And more than 5,000 voices said: "Amen!" to that simple and yet sublime answer. The whole crowd filled the air with cries: "The Bible! the Holy Bible! The Holy Word of God is our only guide in the ways of eternal life! Go away, sir, and never come again!"

These words, time and again repeated by the thousands of people who surrounded the platform, fell upon the poor bishop's ears as claps of thunder. The battle was over and he had lost it.

Bathed in his tears, suffocated by his sobs, he sat, or, to speak more correctly, he fell into the arm chair, and I feared at first lest he should faint. When I saw that he was recovering, and strong enough to hear what I had to say, I stepped to the front of the platform. But I had scarce said two words when I felt as if the claws of a tiger were on my shoulders. I turned and found that it was the clenched fingers of the bishop, who was shaking me and saying with a furious voice: "No! no! Not a word from you."

As I was about to show him that I had a right to refute what he had said, my eyes fell on a scene which baffles all description. Those only who have seen the raging waves of the sea, suddenly raised by a hurricane, can have an idea of it. The people had seen the violent hand of the bishop raised against me, they had heard his insolent and furious words, forbidding me to say a single word in answer; and a universal cry of indignation was heard.

"The infamous wretch! Down with him! He wants to enslave us again! He denies us the right of free speech; he refuses to hear what our pastor has to reply! Down with him!"

At the same time a rush was made by many toward the platform to scale it, and others were at work to tear it down. The whole multitude, absolutely blinded by their uncontrollable

rage, were as a drunken man who does not know what he does. I had *read* that such things had occurred before, but I hope I shall never see it again. I rushed to the head of the stairs and, with great difficulty, repulsed those who were trying to lay hands on the bishop. In vain I raised my voice to calm them and make them realise the crime they wanted to commit. No voice could be heard in the midst of such terrible confusion. It was providential that we had built the platform with strong materials.

Happily we had in our midst a very intelligent young man, called Bechard, who was held in great esteem and respect. His influence, I venture to say, was irresistible over the people. I called him to the platform and requested him, in the name of God, to appease the blind fury of that multitude. Strange to say his presence and a sign from his hand acted like magic.

"Let us hear what Bechard has to say," whispered everyone to his neighbour, and suddenly the most profound calm succeeded the most awful noise and confusion I had ever witnessed. In a few appropriate and eloquent words that young gentleman showed the people that, far from being angry, they ought to be glad at the exhibition of the tyranny and cowardice of the bishop. Had he not confessed the weakness of his address when he refused to hear the answer? Had he not confessed that he was the vilest and most impudent of tyrants, when he had come into their very midst to deny them the sacred right of speech and reply? Had he not proved, before God and man, that they had done well to reject for ever the authority of the Bishop of Rome, when he was giving them such an unanswerable proof that that authority meant the most unbounded tyranny on his part, and the most degraded and ignominious moral degradation on the part of his blind slave?"

Seeing that they were anxious to hear me, I then told them: "Instead of being angry, you ought to bless God for what you have heard and seen from the Bishop. You have heard, and you are witnesses that he has not given us a single argument to show that we were wrong when we gave up the words of the Pope to follow the Words of Christ. Was he not right when he told you that there was no need on my part to answer him? Do you not all agree that there was nothing to answer, nothing to refute in his long address? Has not our merciful God brought that bishop into our midst to-day, to show you the truthfulness of what I have so often told you, that there was nothing manly, nothing honest, or true in him? Have you heard from his lips a single word which could have come from the lips of Christ? A word which could have come from that great God who so loved the world that He sent His eternal Son to save it, on the simple condition that we should repent, love and trust in Him. Was there a single sentence in all you have heard which would remind you that salvation through Christ was a gift? That eternal life was a free gift offered to all those who accepted Him as their true

and only Saviour? Have you heard anything from him to make you regret that you are no longer his obedient and abject slaves?"

"No! no!" they replied.

"Then, instead of being angry with that man, you ought to thank him and let him go in peace," I added.

"Yes! yes!" replied the people, "but on condition that he shall never come again."

Then Mons. Bechard stepped to the front, raised his hat, and cried with his powerful voice: "People of St. Anne! you have just gained the most glorious victory which has ever been won by a people against their tyrants. Hurrah for St. Anne, the grave of the tyranny of the Bishops of Rome in America!"

That whole multitude, filled with joy, rent the air with the cry: "Hurrah for St. Anne, the grave of the tyranny of the Bishops of Rome in America!"

I then turned towards the poor bishop and his priests, whose distress and fear were beyond description, and told them: "You see that the people forgive you the indignity of your conduct by not allowing them to answer you; but I advise you not to repeat that insult here. Please take the advice they gave you; go away as quickly as possible. I will go with you to your carriage, through the crowd, and I pledge myself that you will be safe, provided you do not insult them again."

Opening their ranks, the crowd made a passage, through which I led the bishop and his long suite of priests to their carriages. This was done in a most profound silence. Only a few women whispering to the prelate, as he was hurrying by: "Away with you. Henceforth we follow nothing but Christ."

Crushed by waves of humiliation such as no bishop had ever met with on this continent, the weight of the ignominy which he had reaped in our midst completely overpowered his mind and ruined him. He left us, to wander every day nearer the regions of lunacy. That bishop, whose beginning had been so brilliant, after his shameful defeat at St. Anne, on 3rd of August, 1858, was soon to end his broken career in the lunatic asylum of St. Louis.

CHAPTER LXIV.

Bird's Eye View of the Principal Events from my Conversion.

THE marvellous power of the Gospel to raise a man above himself and give him a supernatural strength and wisdom in the presence of the most formidable difficulties has seldom been more gloriously manifested than on the 3rd of August, 1858, on the hill of St. Anne, Illinois.

Surely the continent of America had never seen a more admirable transformation of a whole people than was then and there accomplished. With no other help than the reading of the Gospel that people had suddenly exchanged the chains of the most abject slavery for the royal sceptre of Liberty which Christ offers to those who believe in Him !

By the strength of their faith they had pulverised the gigantic power of Rome, put to flight the haughty representative of the Pope, and had raised the banners of Christian Liberty on the very spot marked by the bishop as the future citadel of the empire of Popery in the United States.

Such work was so much above my capacity, so much above the calculation of my intelligence, that I felt that I was more its witness than its instrument. The merciful and mighty hand of God was too visible to let any other idea creep into my mind ; and the only sentiments which filled my soul were those of an unspeakable joy and gratitude to God.

I felt that the greater the favours bestowed upon us from heaven, the greater were the responsibilities of my new position.

The news of that sudden religious reformation spread with lightning speed all over the continents of America and Europe, and an incredible number of inquiring letters reached me from every corner. Episcopalians, Methodists, Congregationalists, Baptists, and Presbyterians, of every rank and colour, kindly pressed me to give them some details.

Feeling too young and inexpert in the ways of God to give a correct appreciation of the Lord's doings among us, I generally answered those kind enquirers by writing them : "Please come and see with your own eyes the marvellous things our merciful God is doing in the midst of us, and you will help us to bless Him."

In less than six months, more than one hundred venerable ministers of Christ, and prominent Christian laymen of different denominations, visited us. Among those who first honoured us with their presence was the Right Rev. Bishop Helmuth, of London, Canada ; then the learned Dean of Quebec, so well known and venerated all over Great Britain and Canada. He visited us twice, and was one of the most blessed instruments of the mercies of God towards us.

I am happy to say that those eminent Christians, without any exception, after having spent from one to twenty-one days

in studying for themselves this new religious movement, declared that it was the most remarkable and solid evangelical reformation among Roman Catholics they had seen. The Christians of the cities of Chicago, Baltimore, Washington, Philadelphia, New York, Boston, etc., having expressed the desire to hear from me the doings of the Lord among us, I addressed them in the principal churches, and was received with such marks of kindness and interest, for which I shall never be able sufficiently to thank God.

I have previously said we had at first adopted the beautiful name of Christian Catholics, but we soon perceived that unless we joined one of the Christian denominations of the day we were in danger of forming a new sect.

After many serious and prayerful considerations, it seemed that the wisest thing we could do was to connect ourselves with that branch of the vine which was the nearest, if not identical with that of the French Protestants, which gave so many martyrs to the Church of Christ. Accordingly, it was our privilege to be admitted in the Presbyterian Church of the United States. The Presbytery of Chicago had the courtesy to adjourn their meeting from that city to our humble town, on the 15th April, 1860, when I presented them with the names of nearly 2,000 converts, who, with myself, were received into full communion with the Church of Christ.

This solemn action was soon followed by the establishment of missions and congregations in the cities and towns of Chicago, Aurora, Kankakee, Middleport, Watseka, Momence, Sterling, Manteno, etc., where the light of the Gospel had been received by large numbers of our French-Canadian emigrants, which I had previously visited.

The census of the converts taken then gave us about 6,500 precious souls already wrenched from the iron grasp of Popery. It was a result much beyond my most sanguine hopes, and it would be difficult to express the joy it gave me. But my joy was not without a mixture of anxiety. It was impossible for me, if left alone, to distribute the bread of life to such multitudes, scattered over a territory of several hundred miles. I determined, with the help of God, to raise a college, where the children of our converts would be prepared to preach the Gospel.

Thirty-two of our young men having offered themselves, I added, at once, to my other labours, the daily task of teaching them the preparatory course of study for their future evangelical work.

That year (1860) had been chosen by Scotland to celebrate the tercentenary anniversary of her Reformation. The committee of management, composed of Dr. Guthrie, Professor Cunningham, and Dr. Begg, invited me to attend their General Assembly in Edinburgh. On the 16th of August, it was my privilege to be presented by those venerable men to one of the grandest and noblest assemblies which the Church of Christ

has ever seen. After the close of that great council, which I addressed twice, I was invited, during the next six months, to lecture in Great Britain, France and Switzerland, and to raise the funds necessary for our college. It was during that tour that I had the privilege of addressing, at St. Etienne, the Synod of the Free Protestant Church of France, lately established through the indomitable energy and ardent piety of the Rev. Felix Monod.

Those six months' efforts were crowned with the most complete success, and more than 15,000 dollars were handed me for our college, by the disciples of Christ.

But it was the will of God that I should pass through the purifying fires of the greatest tribulations. On my return from Europe into my colony, in the beginning of 1861, I found everything in confusion. The ambition of the young man I had invited to preach in my place, and in whom I had so imprudently put too much confidence, encouraged by the very man I had chosen for my representative and my attorney during my absence, came very near ruining that great evangelical work, by sowing the seeds of division and hatred among our dear converts. Through the dishonest and false reports of those two men, the money I had collected and left in England (in the hands of a gentleman who was bound to send it at my order) was retained nearly two years, and lost in the failure of the Gelpeck New York Bank, through which it was sent. The only way we found to save ourselves from ruin was to throw ourselves into the hands of our Christian brothers of Canada.

A committee of the Presbyterian Church, composed of Revs. Dr. Kemp, Dr. Cavan, and Mr. Scott, was sent to investigate the causes of our troubles and they soon found them. Dr. Kemp published a critical résumé of their investigations, which clearly showed where the trouble lay. Our integrity and innocence were publicly acknowledged, and we were solemnly and officially received as members of the Presbyterian Church of Canada on the 11th of June, 1863.

We may properly acknowledge here that the Christian devotedness, the admirable ability and zeal of the late Dr. Kemp in performance of that work, secured him our eternal gratitude.

In 1874, I was again invited to Great Britain by the committee appointed to prepare the congratulatory address of the English people to the Emperor of Germany and Bismarck, for their noble resistance to the encroachments of Popery. I addressed the meeting held for that purpose in Exeter Hall, under the Presidency of Lord John Russell, on the 27th of January, 1874. The next day, several Gospel ministers pressed me to publish my 25 years' experience of auricular confession, as an antidote to the criminal and too successful efforts of Dr. Pusey, who wanted to restore that infamous practice among the Protestants of England.

After much hesitation and many prayers, I wrote the book, entitled, *The Priest, the Woman and the Confessional*, which God has so much blessed to the conversion of many, that very many editions have been published.

I spent the next six months in lecturing on Romanism in the principal cities of England, Scotland, and Ireland.

On my return, pressed by the Canadian Church to leave my colony of Illinois, for a time at least, to preach in Canada, I went to Montreal where, in the short space of four years, we had the unspeakable joy to see seven thousand French-Canadian Roman Catholics and emigrants from France publicly renouncing the errors of Popery to follow the Gospel of Christ.

In 1878, exhausted by the previous years of incessant labours, I was advised by my physicians to breathe the bracing air of the Pacific Ocean. I crossed the Rocky Mountains and spent two months lecturing in San Francisco, Portland, Oregon, and in Washington Territory, where I found a great many of my French countrymen, many of whom received the light of the Gospel with joy.

After this, I visited the Sandwich Islands, where I preached on my return, crossed the Pacific and went to the Antipodes, lecturing two years in Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand. It would require a large volume to tell the great mercies of God towards me during that long, perilous, but interesting voyage. During those two years, I gave 610 public lectures, and came back to my colony of St. Anne with such perfectly restored health, that I could say with the Psalmist: "Bless the Lord, O my soul, thy youth is renewed like the eagle's."

The reader has a right to know something of the dangers through which it has pleased God to make me pass.

Rome is the same to-day as she was when she burned John Huss and Wishart, and when she caused 70,000 Protestants to be slaughtered in France, and 100,000 to be exterminated in Piedmont and Italy.

On the 31st of December, 1869, I forced the Right Rev. Bishop Foley of Chicago to swear before the civil court at Kankakee, that the following sentence was an exact translation of the doctrine of the Church of Rome as taught to-day in all Roman Catholic seminaries, colleges, and universities, through the *Summa Theologica* of Thomas Aquinas (vol. iv., p. 90): "Though heretics must not be tolerated because they deserve it, we must bear with them till, by a second admonition they may be brought back to the faith of the Church. But those who, after a second admonition, remain obstinate to their errors, must not only be excommunicated, but they must be delivered to the secular power to be exterminated."

It is on account of this law of the Church of Rome, which is to-day in full force, as it was promulgated for the first time, that not less than thirty public attempts have been made to kill me since my first conversion.

The first time I visited Quebec, in the Spring of 1859, fifty

men were sent to force me to swear that I would never preach the Bible, or to kill me in case of my refusal.

At 4 o'clock a.m., sticks were raised above my head, a dagger stuck in my breast, and the cries of the furious mob were ringing in my ears: "Infamous apostate! Now you are in our hands, you are a dead man if you do not swear that you will never preach your accursed Bible."

Never had I seen such furious men around me. Their eyes were more like the eyes of tigers than of men. I expected, every moment, to receive a deadly blow, and I asked my Saviour to come and receive my soul. But the would-be murderers, with more horrible imprecations, cried again:

"Infamous renegade! Swear that you will never preach any more of your accursed Bible, or you are a dead man!"

I raised my eyes and hands towards heaven and said: "Oh! my God! Hear and bless the last words of Thy poor servant: I solemnly swear, that so long as my tongue can speak I will preach Thy Word, as I find it in the Holy Bible."

Then opening my vest and presenting my naked breast, I said: "Now! Strike!"

But my God was there to protect me: they did not strike. I went through their ranks into the streets, where I found a carter, who drove me to Mr. Hall, then Mayor of the city. I showed him my bleeding breast and said:

"I have just escaped, almost miraculously, from the hands of men sworn to kill me, if I preach again the Gospel of Christ. I am, however, determined to preach again to-day, at noon, even if I have to die in the attempt. I put myself under the protection of the British flag.

Soon after, more than 1,000 British soldiers were around me, with fixed bayonets. They formed themselves into two lines along the streets, through which the Mayor took me, in his own sleigh to the lecture-room. I could then deliver my address on "The Bible," to at least 10,000 who crowded inside and outside the walls of the large building. After this, I had the joy of distributing between five and six hundred Bibles to that multitude, who received them as thirsty and hungry people receive fresh water and pure bread, after many days of starvation.

I have been stoned twenty times. The principal places in Canada where I was struck and wounded, and almost miraculously escaped, were Quebec, Montreal, Ottawa, Charlotte Town, Halifax, Antigonish, etc. In the last mentioned, on the 10th of July, 1873, the pastor, the Rev. P. Goodfellow, standing by me when going out of his church, was also struck several times with stones, which missed me. At last, his head was so badly cut, that he fell on the ground bathed in blood. I took him up in my arms, though wounded and bleeding myself. We would surely have been slaughtered there, had not a noble Scotsman, named Cameron, opened the door of his house, at the peril of his own life, to give us shelter against the assassins of the Pope. The mob, furious that we had escaped, broke the

windows and besieged the house from ten a.m. till three next morning. Many times they threatened to set fire to Mr. Cameron's house, if he did not deliver me into their hands to be hung. They were prevented from doing so, only from fear of burning the whole town, composed in part of their own dwellings. Several times they put up long ladders against the walls, with the hope of reaching the upper rooms, where they could find and kill their victims. All this was done under the very eyes of five or six priests, who were only at a distance of a few rods.

At Montreal, in the winter of 1870, one evening, coming out of Cote Street Church, where I had preached, accompanied by Principal MacVicar, we fell into a kind of ambushade, and received a volley of stones which would have seriously, if not fatally, injured the doctor, had he not been protected from head to foot by a thick fur cap and overcoat, worn in the cold days of Winter in Canada.

After a lecture given at Paramenta, near Sydney, Australia, I was again attacked with stones by Roman Catholics. One struck my left leg with such force that I thought it was broken, and I was lame for several days.

In New South Wales, Australia, I was beaten with whips and sticks, which left marks upon my shoulders. At Marsham, in the same province, on 1st April, 1879, the Romanists took possession of the church where I was speaking, rushed towards me with daggers and pistols, crying: "Kill him! Kill him!"

In the tumult, I providentially escaped through a door. But I had to crawl on hands and knees a pretty long distance, in a ditch filled with mud, not to be seen and escape death.

At Ballarat, in the same province, three times houses where I lodged were attacked. Rev. Mr. Englis, one of the most eloquent ministers of the city, was one of the many who were wounded by my side. The wife of the Rev. Mr. Quick came also nearly being killed while I was under their hospitable roof.

In the same city, as I was waiting for a train at the station, a well dressed woman came as near as possible and spat in my face. I was blinded, and my face covered with filth. She immediately fled, but was soon brought back by my secretary and a policeman, who said: "Here is the miserable woman who has just insulted you, what shall we do with her?"

I was then almost done cleaning my face with my handkerchief and some water, brought by some sympathetic friends. I answered: "Let her go home in peace. She has not done it of her own accord, she was sent by her confessor; she thinks she has done a good action. When they spat in the Saviour's face, He did not punish those who insulted Him. We must follow His example." And she was set at liberty, to the great regret of the crowd.

The very next day (21st April) at Castlemain, I was again fiercely attacked and wounded on the head, as I came from

addressing the people. One of the ministers who was standing by me was seriously wounded and lost much blood.

At Geelong, I had again a very narrow escape from stones thrown at me in the street.

In 1879, while lecturing in Melbourne, the splendid capital of Victoria, Australia, I received a letter from Tasmania, signed by twelve ministers of the Gospel, saying :

"We are much in need of you here, for though the Protestants are in the majority, they leave the administration of the country almost entirely in the hands of the Roman Catholics, who rule us with an iron rod. The Governor is a Roman Catholic. We wish to have you among us, though we do not dare to invite you to come. For we know that your life will be in danger day and night while in Tasmania. The Roman Catholics have sworn to kill you, and we have too many reasons to fear that they will fulfil their promises. But though we do not dare to ask you to come, we assure you that there is a great work for you here, and that we will stand by you with our people. If you fall, you will not fall alone."

I answered: "Are we not soldiers of Christ, and must we not be ready and willing to die for Him, as He did for us? I will go."

On the 24th of June, as I was delivering my first lecture in Hobart, the Roman Catholics, with the approbation of their bishop, broke the door of the hall, and rushed towards me, crying: "Kill him! kill him!" The mob was only a few feet from me, brandishing their daggers and pistols, when the Protestants threw themselves between them and me, and a furious hand-to-hand fight occurred, during which many wounds were received and given. The soldiers of the Pope were overpowered, but the Governor had to put the city under martial law for four days, and call the whole militia to save my life from the assassins drilled by the priests.

In a dark night, as I was leaving the steamer to take the train, on the Ottawa river, Canada, twice the bullets of the murderers whistled at no more than two or three inches from my ears. Several times in Montreal and Halifax, the churches where I was preaching were attacked and windows broken by the mobs sent by the priests, and several of my friends were wounded (two of whom, I believe, died from the effects of their wounds) whilst defending me.

On the 17th June, 1884, after I had preached, in Quebec, on the text, "What must I do to have Eternal Life?" a mob of more than 1,500 Roman Catholics, led by two priests, broke the windows of the church and attacked me with stones, with the evident object to kill me. More than one hundred stones struck me, and I would surely have been killed there had I not had, providentially, two heavy overcoats, which I put one around my head and the other around my shoulders. Notwithstanding that protection I was so much bruised and wounded from head to feet, that I had to spend the three

following weeks on a bed of suffering, between life and death. A young friend, Zotique Lefevore, who had heroically put himself between my would-be assassins and me, escaped only after receiving six wounds in the face.

When the bishops and priests saw that it was so difficult to put me out of the way with stones, sticks, and daggers, they determined to destroy my character by calumnies, spread everywhere and sworn before civil tribunals as Gospel truths.

During eighteen years they kept me in the hands of sheriffs, a prisoner, under bail, as a criminal. Thirty-two times my name has been called before the civil and criminal courts of Kankakee, Joliet, Chicago, Urbana, and Montreal, among the names of the vilest and most criminal of men.

I have been accused by Grand Vicar Mailloux of having killed a man and thrown his body into a river to conceal my crime. I have been accused of having set fire to the Church of Bourbonnais and destroying it. Not less than seventy-two false witnesses have been brought by the priests of Rome to support these false accusations.

But thanks be to God, at every time, from the very lips of the perjured witnesses, we got the proof that they were swearing falsely at the instigation of their father confessors. And my innocence was proven by the very men who had been paid to destroy me. In this last suit, I thought it was my duty, as a Christian and citizen, to have one of those priests punished for having so cruelly and publicly trampled under his feet the most sacred laws of society and religion. Without any vengeance on my part, I asked the protection of my country against those incessant plots. Father Brunet, found guilty of having invented those calumnies and supporting them by false witnesses, was condemned to pay 2,500 dollars, or go to gaol for fourteen years. He preferred the last punishment, having the promise from his Roman Catholic friends that they would break the doors of his prison and let him go free to some remote place. He was incarcerated at Kankakee; but on a dark and stormy night, six months later, he was rescued and fled to Montreal (distant about 900 miles). There he made the Roman Catholics believe that the blessed Virgin Mary, dressed in a beautiful white robe, had come in person to open for him the gates of the prison.

I do not mention these facts to create bad feeling against the poor blind slaves of the Pope. It is only to show the world that the Church of Rome of to-day is absolutely the same as when she reddened Europe with the blood of millions of martyrs.

My motive in speaking of those murderous attacks is to induce the readers to help me to bless God who has so mercifully saved me from the hands of the enemy. More than any living man, I can say with the old prophet: "The Lord is my Shepherd, I shall not want." With St. Paul I could often say: "We are troubled on every side, yet, not distressed. We are

perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be manifest in our body."

Those constant persecutions, far from hindering the onward march of the evangelical movement to which I consecrated my life, gave it a new impulse and a fresher life. I have even remarked that the very day after I had been bruised and wounded, the number of converts had invariably increased. I will never forget the day, after the terrible night when more than a thousand Roman Catholics had come to stone me, and on which I received a severe wound, more than one hundred of my countrymen asked me to enroll their names under the banner of the Gospel, and publicly sent their recantation of the errors of Rome to the bishop. So the Gospel of Christ advanced with an irresistible power among the French-Canadians, from the Atlantic to the Pacific Oceans. We find numbers of converts in almost every town and city, from New York to San Francisco. Rallied around the banner of Christ, they form a large army of fearless soldiers of the Cross. Among those converts, we count twenty-five priests, and more than fifty young, zealous ministers born in the Church of Rome. In hundreds of places the Church of Rome has lost her past prestige, and the priests are looked upon with indifference, if not contempt, even by those who have not yet accepted the light.

A very remarkable religious movement was also inaugurated among the Irish Roman Catholics, under the leadership of the Revs. McNamara, O'Connor, and Quinn.

To-day, more than ever, we hear the good Master's voice: "Lift up your eyes and look on the fields, for they are white already to harvest." Oh! may the day soon come when my dear countrymen will hear the voice of the Lamb, and come to wash their robes in His blood! Shall I see the blessed hour when the dark night, in which Rome keeps Canada, will be exchanged for the bright and saving light of the Gospel?

At all events, I cannot but bless God for what mine eyes have seen and mine ears have heard of His mercies towards me and my countrymen. From my infancy He has taken me into His arms, and led me most mercifully through ways I did not know, from the darkest regions of superstition, to the blessed regions of light, truth, and life. From the day He granted me to read His Divine Word on my dear mother's knee, to the hour He came to me as "the Gift of God," He has not let a single day pass without speaking to me some of His warning and saving words. I have not always paid sufficient attention to His sweet voice—I confess it to my shame. My mind was so filled with the glittering sophism of Rome, that many times I refused to yield to the still voice which was almost night and day heard in my soul. But my God was not repelled by my infidelities. When driven away in the morning,

He came back in the silent hours of the night. For more than twenty-five years He forced me to see, as a priest, the abominations which exist inside the walls of the modern Babylon. I may say, He took me by the lock of mine head, as He did with the prophet of old, and said :

"Son of man, lift up thine eyes now the way towards the north and behold, northward at the gate of the altar, this image of jealousy in the entry." He said furthermore unto me: "Son of man, seest thou what they do, even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here, that I should go far from My sanctuary? But turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations. And He brought me to the door of the court; and when I looked, behold a hole in the wall. Then said He unto me, son of man, dig now in the wall; and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. And He said: Go in and see the wicked abominations that they do here. So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel portrayed upon the walls round about. And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah, the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up.

"Then said He unto me: Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark every man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say the Lord hath forsaken the earth. He said also unto me: Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations that they do. Then he brought me to the door of the gate of the Lord, and, behold there sat women weeping for Tammuz.

"Then said He unto me: Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations than these. And He brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house and, behold, at the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five-and-twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the East; and they worshipped the sun toward the East.

"Then He said unto me: Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence and have returned to provoke Me unto anger; and lo! they put the branch to their nose. Therefore, will I also deal in fury; Mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity; and they cry in Mine ears, with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them."—Ezekiel viii: 5-18.

I can say, with John: "One of the seven angels said unto me: I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters; with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornications.

So he carried me away into the wilderness; and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: and upon her forehead was a name written: 'Mystery, Babylon the Great, the mother of harlots and abominations of the earth.' And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her I wondered with great admiration."—Revelation xvii: 1-6.

And after the Lord had shown me all these abominations, He took me out as an eagle takes his own young ones on his wings. He brought me into His beautiful and beloved Zion, and He set my feet on the rock of my salvation. There He quenched my thirst with the pure waters which flow from the fountains of eternal life, and He gave me to eat the true bread which comes from heaven.

Oh, that I might go all over the world, through this book, and say with the Psalmist: "Come, all ye that fear God, and I will declare what He hath done for my soul."

Let all the children of God who read this book lend me their tongues to praise the Lord. Let them lend me their hearts, to love Him. For alone, I cannot praise Him, I cannot love Him, as He deserves. When I look upon the seventy-six years which have passed over me, my heart leaps for joy, for I find myself at the end of my trials. I have nearly crossed the desert.

Only the narrow stream of Jordan is between me and the new Jerusalem. I already hear the great voice out of heaven, saying: "Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them and they shall be His people, and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things have passed away. He that overcometh shall inherit all things."—Revelation xxi: 3, 4, 7.

Rich with the unspeakable gift which has been given me, and pressing my dear Bible to my heart, as the richest treasure! I hasten my steps with an unspeakable joy toward the Land of Promise. I already hear the angel's voice telling me: "Come: the Master calls thee."

A few days more, and the Bridegroom will say to my soul: "Surely I come quickly." And I will answer: "Even so, come, Lord Jesus." Amen.

